

# STAR TREK



# ΩMEGA

# **STAR TREK**

## **THE MOVIES**



**Star Trek I: The Motion Picture**  
Originally Aired: 1979-12-7

**My  
Rating**  
- 7

**Official Synopsis From  
StarTrek.com:**

*A mysterious entity threatens to destroy Earth, while Kirk and the crew of the U.S.S. Enterprise are recalled to help save the planet.*

#### **Problems:**

- Kirk orders "warp 0.5". That's a little absurd. There's nothing impossible about such an order, but he should have said half impulse seeing as how you wouldn't (and didn't) use the warp drive. Indeed, they actually are using the impulse drive in this film, but the dialog throughout the film is consistently misleading.

#### **Factoids:**

- This film was inspired by 2001: A Space Odyssey.
- This film was the first Star Trek production to use the "TNG style" opening music.
- This film was the first Star Trek production to feature ridge headed Klingons.
- This film was the first Star Trek production to feature the Klingon language.
- This film was the first Star Trek production to mention that starfleet command was located in San Francisco.
- This film was the first Star Trek production to use a modern style visual effect for a ship accelerating to warp speed.
- This film was the first Star Trek production to feature a sonic shower.
- This film was created to replace the prospective new series Star Trek Phase II, which never got off the ground.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene is really great; Klingons and Klingon ships have never looked so cool.
- Kirk is an admiral now!
- Scotty flying Kirk to his refit Enterprise via shuttle.
- It's good to see Mr. Chekov again, after 22 episodes of TAS in all of which he was absent.
- Kirk retaking his ship.
- The transporter failure. It's nice to see technology isn't infallible even in the 23rd century.
- Starfleet Command, regarding the transporter failure: "Enterprise. What we got back didn't live long. Fortunately."
- The space station being engulfed and destroyed.
- McCoy's reluctance to use the transporter.
- McCoy with a huge (unix) beard and a decidedly 70s disco outfit! Many might insult this as being too much a reference to the date of the movie, but I find this hilarious.
- McCoy: "Why is any object we don't understand always called a 'thing'!"
- McCoy: "They probably redesigned the whole sickbay too! I know engineers, they love to change things!"
- The flyby through Earth's solar system.
- Kirk angrily questioning why his phaser order was countermanded, then humbly accepting Decker's completely valid explanation.
- Spock's appearance and overly cold reactions; even for him.
- Spock: "Who is the creator?" Ilia: "The creator is that which created V'Ger." Kirk: "Who is V'Ger." Ilia: "V'Ger is that which seeks the creator."
- Ilia busting through a wall!
- Decker: "Jim, V'Ger expects an answer." Kirk: "An answer? I don't know the question."
- Spock: "V'ger is a child. I suggest you treat it as such."
- McCoy: "Spock! This child is about to wipe out every living thing on Earth! Now, what do you

suggest we do? Spank it?"

- The revelation that V'Ger was in fact the Voyager 6 probe.
- Text at the end of the film: "The human adventure is just beginning."

#### Comments:

Star Trek: The Slow Motion Picture... Many insults are thrown at this film for having too slow a plot. Perhaps well deserved. The story seems stretched out. The actual development is probably only enough to cover a single hour long episode. The film also bears a close resemblance to episode TOS: The Changeling (though a much improved version of that plot). Finally, Lt. Ilia happens to belong to an alien species that looks exactly like humans! Okay, so the women of their species don't grow hair; my complaint is still valid. Despite all this, it is still a fine film. Most remarkable are the visual effects which are superb, especially for the time. Many people complain about there being too many visual effects, or that they take too long. This is a valid complaint, but I still like them nonetheless. Additionally, there are complaints about the uniforms being too drab. Again, I liked them. Gene Roddenberry has made claims that many elements of TMP were in fact Star Trek as it was meant to be. One particularly noticeable detail is the uniforms for women are no longer sexist. Another fine detail is the redesigned set of the Enterprise. Incredible, she was absolutely stunning, especially the engineering section and the sight of the absolutely beautiful warpcore. Another good detail about the ship is the new deflector dish. The silly looking outward protruding dish is replaced by a futuristic, blue, glowing, cool looking dish. Another nice detail in this film is the multiple points of contention between Kirk and Decker, all of which are intelligently done. The resolution of the plot in this film is something of an anticlimax, but the intent of the movie was that it be viewed as a whole. A work of art, not a Star Trek episode in the traditional sense. In that respect, the film is highly successful. Notably, it was a commercial success as well. It is fitting that Decker and Ilia should be reunited in the end by both joining with V'Ger. It creates something of a happy ending out of their brief but decidedly tragic loss of one another. Indeed, the human adventure is just beginning. A fantastic film true to the spirit of Star Trek.



#### **Star Trek II: The Wrath of Khan**

**Originally Aired:** 1982-6-4

**My  
Rating**  
- 8

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Exiled by Kirk, Khan returns to seek revenge on the man who banished him and his followers to a dying planet 15 years ago.*

#### **Problems:**

- How could Chekov remember anything about Khan? And how could Khan remember anything about Chekov? Chekov wasn't aboard ship in TOS: Space Seed...
- How are they talking during transport?

#### **Factoids:**

- This film establishes that starfleet has kept the peace in the Federation for about 100 years.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The simulation at the beginning.
- Kirk to Spock: "Aren't you dead?"
- Khan sticking the little alien parasites in Chekov's and Captain Terrell's ears.
- Spock and Saavik speaking to each other in Vulcan about Kirk.
- Chekov under Khan's control.
- McCoy: "Who's been holding up the damn elevator?!"
- Spock: "The needs of the many outweigh the needs of the few."
- The overview of the Genesis Device.
- McCoy: "According to myth, the earth was created in six days. Now watch out, here comes

Genesis! We'll do it for you in six minutes!"

- Khan: "Ah Kirk, my old friend. Do you know the old Klingon proverb that tells us revenge is a dish that is best served cold? Well, it is very cold in space."
- Khan attacking the Enterprise.
- Kirk using the Reliant's access codes to drop the shields on Khan's ship.
- Captain Terrell killing one of the people down on the planet. I love the vaporization effect.
- Kirk: "Khan!!!"
- The revelation that David was Kirk's son.
- Kirk declaring that he made it through the training scenario by cheating.
- Kirk egging Khan on.
- The battle in the nebula. Wow!
- Spock Vulcan neck pinching McCoy and mild melding with him.
- Genesis device exploding.
- Spock: "I have been and always shall be your friend."
- Spock's "death".

#### Comments:

This film is a wild ride and a fan favorite. One of my favorite details is how well they handle the aging actors; everybody was getting old in the 1980s. One of the first things the film does is have all the characters lament about their ages. Gives it a sense of realism. Just about everything in this film is spectacular. I only take off points for the fact that Spock's death was contrived in that he's brought back to life. The film would have been far more moving if it weren't for the blatantly obvious setup for his resurrection in the next film. Besides that, there are a few small problems as well. There's the obvious problem with how Chekov would have remembered Khan and visa versa, but there's also other issues as well. Most notably, the Genesis Device is an extremely powerful bit of technology. Why do they just blatantly stop working on it? Why do we never see or hear anything about it again? Finally, Khan's overzealous devotion toward killing Kirk is a little overdone. That said, these things do little to trample on such a great film.



#### **Star Trek III: The Search for Spock**

Originally Aired: 1984-6-1

**My  
Rating**  
- 7

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock, who had died saving the Enterprise from Khan's wrath, is found alive on the Genesis planet where his body was sent to rest.*

#### Problems:

- This film features the first "transwarp" drive; the first of many contradictory engine principles of the same name. Maybe this version was flawed by design, as it we never used again.

#### Factoids:

- This is the first Star Trek production to feature a Klingon Bird of Prey.
- This is the first Star Trek production to feature a targ.
- This is the first Star Trek production to feature a fullsize starbase, in which a fullsize starship can dock within. Always an impressive sight.
- This film hints at the Pon Farr being something that only happens to Vulcan males.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kirk: "Mr. Scott, have you always multiplied your repair estimates by a factor of 4?" Scotty: "Certainly, sir. How else can I keep my reputation as a miracle worker?"
- Our first sight of a Klingon Bird of Prey!
- The Klingon Bird of Prey firing on the ship it just bought its information from.
- Sarek's appearance.

- Seeing no Spock in his coffin.
- Kirk: "The answer is no. I am therefore going anyway."
- McCoy acting like Spock in the bar.
- McCoy arguing with his "backwards friend."
- McCoy: "I'll discuss what I like. And who in the hell are you?" Morrow: "Could I offer you a ride home Dr. McCoy?" McCoy: "Where's the logic in offering me a ride home you idiot? If I wanted a ride home would I be trying to charter a space flight."
- McCoy trying to Vulcan neck pinch Morrow.
- Kirk and crew's operation to steal the Enterprise.
- Scotty to the Excelsior computer: "Up your shaft."
- Uhura's handling of "Mr. Adventure".
- Scotty sabotaging the transwarp drive of the Excelsior.
- Kirk: "I should recommend you all for a promotion! In whatever fleet we end up serving..."
- The Klingon commander executing his gunner for destroying the science ship.
- The revelation that Genesis is a fundamentally flawed concept.
- Saavik mentioning that Spock will undergo the Pon Farr. Good continuity there.
- The Enterprise battling the Klingon Bird of Prey.
- The Klingons killing Kirk's son.
- Kirk: "You Klingon bastard, you killed my son!"
- The destruction of the Enterprise.
- Kirk: "My god Bones. What the hell have I done?"
- Kirk extending a hand of friendship to the Klingon commander only to have him grab his leg and try to take Kirk with him to his death. Kirk kicks his face in and lets the Klingon die. Awesome.
- Kirk stealing the Klingon Bird of Prey.
- Scotty, Chekov, and Sulu trying to figure out Klingon technology.

#### Comments:

This film is remarkable in that it takes place directly after the events of the previous movie, as if no time had passed which is a rare treasure. Additionally, leaking the Genesis Device information to the Klingons is exactly what they needed to do. We needed to see more of the Genesis Device and its effects on politics and we needed to see more of the Klingons. Bravo there. This film also nicely resolves the "Genesis Issue" in that the design is fundamentally flawed. It still acts as a fantastic weapon, of course, and it's still a problem that we never see it again. Just not as big a problem. We might further infer that that the "unstable" fuel source it uses is extremely rare or was deemed too dangerous to use. Also, what the hell is with the two completely different looking actresses for Saavik? That's extremely annoying. Overall, this film excellently does what it attempted to do. Certainly, the destruction of the Enterprise was sad; moreso in my opinion than Spock's death. (Because we knew Spock would be coming back.) Though overall a better executed film than Star Trek II, I must mark it down for its basic premise being highly contrived.



#### **Star Trek IV: The Voyage Home**

Originally Aired: 1986-11-26

**My  
Rating**  
- 6

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Using a Klingon ship, the crew of the Enterprise return to 1980's Earth to retrieve two whales in an effort to help save the planet from a probe.*

#### Problems:

- Kirk and Scotty take measurements in English Imperial Units.
- Ugh, another use of the slingshot effect.
- How are whales able to communicate through space?
- How could Taylor scream during transport?

**Factoids:**

- This film establishes that the humpback whale will be extinct in the 21st century. Though with all the time travel fudging around in this film, that may not actually pan out.
- Brock Peters plays Admiral Cartwright (though we don't actually hear the name of this admiral until Star Trek VI). He later plays Joseph Sisko on DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sarek's appearance.
- McCoy, regarding the Klingon ship: "I just wish we could cloak the stench."
- Spock testing himself. The computer asking him, "How do you feel?"
- Spock's mother's discussion with him on Vulcan.
- Kirk: "May fortune favor the foolish."
- Spock's method of covering his ears.
- The cloaked Klingon Bird of Prey landing by the garbage men.
- The cast's entrance into the 1980s.
- Chekov asking people how to find "nuclear wessels". Hilarious! A Russian asking Americans in a city street how to find American nuclear secrets...
- Spock Vulcan neck pinching the punk rocker.
- Spock continually calling Kirk "admiral" in front of the commoners.
- Spock: "To hunt a race to extinction is not logical." Taylor: "Whoever said the human race was logical?"
- Spock Vulcan mind melding with the whale inside the aquarium.
- Woman: "Maybe he's singing to that man!" Taylor: "What the hell?"
- Taylor: "All right, who the hell are you and what were you doing in there?" Spock: "Attempting the hell to communicate."
- Spock clumsily integrating curses into his speech.
- Kirk clumsily trying to "explain" Spock by passing him off as a former hippy who did too much "LDS".
- Taylor questioning Kirk and Spock in her truck.
- McCoy's and Scotty's performance at Plexicorp.
- Scotty talking to the computer.
- Oh man. I love the random typing on the computer keyboard and the random nonsensical screens they bring up.
- Kirk spilling the beans to Taylor.
- Chekov, a Russian, captured in an American nuclear submarine. Just golden.
- Chekov's reaction to the interrogation.
- McCoy's disgust with 20th century medicine.
- McCoy: "It sounds like the goddamn Spanish inquisition to me!"
- McCoy taking over Chekov's surgery.
- McCoy: "My god, man! Drilling holes in his head's not the answer! The artery must be repaired! Now put away your butcher knives and let me save this patient before it's too late!"
- Kirk: "Scotty, beam me up!" Another very close line to the famous and much parodied but never actually uttered, "Beam me up, Scotty!"
- The Klingon Bird of Prey decloaking in front of the whale hunter ship.
- The Klingon Bird of Prey crashing into the sea in the 23rd century.
- Spock is clearly smiling and laughing with the rest of the cast at the end of this film.

**Comments:**

I like the opening of this film, with the Klingons in diplomatic contention with the Federation council. Unfortunately, the plot goes sour fast as the clichés abound. Another alien probe, more time travel, and more slingshot effect magic time travel calculation nonsense. Having said that, the rest of the film redeems itself nicely. The humor is excellent and the ecology issue is original. Also, this film was regarded as the most successful Trek film of all time in terms of the level of appeal to non-Trek fans; for perhaps obvious reasons. Unfortunately, the time travel issues are extensive. There is a lot of minor contamination, and some major; for example Chekov left a phaser on board the nuclear vessel, though the radiation seems to have rendered it useless, it is still a futuristic device the 1980s has never seen before. These things can all be rationalized, but they weigh badly on the film; it shows carelessness. Ultimately, the entire story of the alien probe, the travel into Earth's past, and the whales is completely superfluous. As fantastic as the humor is, I can think of a dozen different and better ways to have used the stolen Klingon ship. I give the film an A for effort though, and I must admit it is one of the most memorable of the Trek films, despite my misgivings regarding its premise.

---



## **Star Trek V: The Final Frontier**

Originally Aired: 1989-6-9

**My  
Rating  
- 0**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock's half-brother Sybok goes on a spiritual quest to find "God" and hijacks the Enterprise to the Great Barrier at the center of the galaxy.*

### **Problems:**

- Kirk's fall off the mountain was stopped immediately with next to no slowdown by Spock and his rocket boots.
- Uhura takes measurements in English Imperial Units...
- Impossible travel to the center of the galaxy.
- Another mention of the fictional silly barrier at the center of the galaxy, similar to the fictional silly barrier at the edge of the galaxy. We can rationalize this by saying that some alien race created this particular barrier to trap "god" there.
- Kirk claims no one has gone into the center of the galaxy, but in fact, he actually did in TAS: The Magicks of Megas-Tu.
- Here's a big one: In the scene where Spock uses his rocket boots to take Kirk and McCoy up the turbolift shaft, the decks count up to 78 when there should only be 20 or 30, in the wrong direction, and they pass one deck at least twice...
- Why is there a single planet with no star system at the center of the galaxy? A rogue, maybe? Still seems unlikely.
- How could McCoy talk during transport?

### **Factoids:**

- This film is the winner of my "Worst Star Trek Film Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Worst Episode Ever Award".

### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock: "Concentration is vital. You must be one with the rock."
- Scotty's displeasure with the Enterprise A.
- McCoy: "You really piss me off, Jim."
- McCoy: "It's a song, you green-blooded Vulcan! You sing it! The words aren't important. What's important is that you have a good time singing it!" Spock: "Oh, I am sorry Doctor. Were we having a good time?" McCoy: "God I liked him better before he died!"
- The "disaster" Enterprise.
- "Captain" Chekov.
- Kirk: "Spock! Be one with the horse!"
- Spock Vulcan neck pinching a horse.
- Spock formally placing Sybok under arrest despite being the captive one and having no power to carry out his arrest duty.
- Kirk ordering Spock to shoot Sybok and Spock not complying.
- Kirk to Spock: "I ought to knock you on your god damn ass!" Spock: "If you think it would help."
- Scotty's morse code: "S.T.A.N.D. B.A.C.K." The wall then explodes.
- Kirk agreeing to team up with Sybok after they lived through the barrier.
- Kirk: "What does god need with a starship?"
- Kirk demanding proof of ID from "god".
- Sybok's noble death.
- Spock to the Klingon ambassador: "Damn you sir. You will try!"
- Nice to see Klingons working together with the Federation.

### **Comments:**

Many insults are thrown at this film. With good reason. It's the worst Star Trek film in existence



and one of the worst Star Trek productions of all time. The biggest problem with the film is the careless writing; there are blatant inconsistencies everywhere. Little details everywhere are just wrong. Like Spock's "rocket" boots blatantly defying the laws of physics, and the deck numbering in the turbolift shaft (see problems section on this one...). And some big problems too. Such as impossible travel to the center of the galaxy in a matter of a few hours without an explanation (and the return trip!) and an impossible energy barrier protecting an impossible planet with no solar system at the center of the galaxy. Beyond the technical problems, the basic premise is just bad. The planet of galactic peace with Federation, Klingon, and Romulan ambassadors was a silly idea to begin with; in 1940 would the Soviets have colonized a remote area in the wilderness and invited the Americans and the Germans to set up a colony with them? No, because they were frigging enemies! Sybok is a tougher nut to crack. In some scenes he comes off as a total idiot; such as the scene on the shuttlecraft where he didn't know anything about shields or battle tactics. In another scene he comes off as a pure genius, using Vulcan mind melds to brainwash people. He looks like an idiot again when he starts professing that he knows "god" will be at the center of the galaxy. Then he looks like a cool guy again when he admits he's wrong and sacrifices himself to save Kirk, Spock, and McCoy. All things considered, Sybok would have been a great character if he weren't wasted on such a meager plot. Indeed, there are many nice details about the film as well, all of which are documented in my "remarkable scenes" part of the review. I might also add in this film's favor that once again Star Trek "proves" that there is no god; though this has been done better before and will be done better again. The good details of the film die a miserable death drowning under the weight of some of the worst writing Star Trek has ever seen.



**Star Trek VI: The Undiscovered Country**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-12-6

**My Rating**  
- 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Klingons seek help to save their world by turning to their former enemy, the Federation. Some, however, do their best to sabotage the peace efforts.*

**Problems:**

- We all know Klingon technology is different and all, but I have no idea what level of "different" would cause Praxis to explode in such an impossible manner.
- Spock claims the Federation has had hostile relations with the Klingon Empire for "almost 70 years." I'd put it at approximately 150 years.
- This is the only Star Trek production in which Klingon blood is a bright pinkish color.
- Why was Worf in this film? I know it was supposed to be something of an in-joke because this film was produced during the TNG era. Maybe Defense Attorney Worf was supposed to be one of Worf's ancestors or something. But the least they could have done was give him another name or something...
- Did Chekov get demoted or something? He appears to be in the navigator's position again...
- Martia claims no one has ever escaped from Rura Penthe, yet Captain Archer did just that in the second season of Star Trek Enterprise. Maybe the Klingons struck his imprisonment and subsequent escape from the records.

**Factoids:**

- Brock Peters plays Admiral Cartwright. He later plays Joseph Sisko on DS9.
- Rene Auberjainis plays Colonel West. He later plays Odo in DS9.
- According to Spock, Klingons have no tear ducts.
- General Chang's line "Don't wait for the translation" is a reference to what the UN delegate from the US demanded from the Soviet delegate during the Cuban Missile Crisis.
- The speech made by the warden outside Rura Penthe is a reference to the novel War and Peace where Siberia is Rura Penthe.
- This film is the first canonical indication that the Romulan and Klingon Empires are in the Beta

quadrant.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Captain Sulu!
- Officer: "Do we report this, sir?" Sulu: "Are you kidding?"
- Spock: "There is an old Vulcan proverb: Only Nixon could go to China."
- Kirk: "They're animals!" Spock: "Jim, there is an historic opportunity here." Kirk: "Don't believe them! Don't trust them!" Spock: "They are dying." Kirk: "Let them die!"
- Kirk: "Captain's log, stardate 9522.6. I've never trusted Klingons, and I never will. I've never been able to forgive them for the death of my boy. It seems to me our mission to escort the Chancellor of the Klingon High Council to a peace summit is problematic at best. Spock says this could be an historic occasion, and I'd like to believe him. But how on earth can history get past people like me?"
- Spock: "Logic, logic, logic. Logic is the beginning of wisdom, Valeris, not the end."
- Chang quoting Shakespeare in Klingon.
- Chang: "We need breathing room!" Kirk: "Earth, Hitler, 1938."
- The crew lamenting about the dinner after it was over.
- The mystery murderers attacking the Klingon ship and beaming over and murdering people. I love the ensuing chaos and confusion.
- Scotty: "I bet that Klingon bitch killed her father!"
- McCoy: "He was the last best hope in the universe for peace."
- Valeris' phaser demonstration and Uhura's and Scotty's reaction.
- Chekov: "If shoe fits, wear it."
- Uhura attempting to respond in Klingon.
- Kirk's extremely, extremely, lucky escape.
- Kirk bitching about Spock's rescue having been two seconds too early.
- Spock's mind meld "rape" of Valeris.
- McCoy, regarding Chang's attack on the Enterprise: "This is fun..."
- Officer, regarding the Excelsior flying too fast: "She'll fly apart!" Sulu: "Fly her apart then!"
- The space battle at the end. Awesome.
- Spock: "If I were human, I believe my response would be, 'Go to hell.'"
- "Captain's Log, stardate 9529.1. This is the final cruise of the Starship Enterprise under my command. This ship and her history will shortly become the care of a new generation. To them and their posterity will we commit our future. They will continue the voyages we have begun, and journey to all the undiscovered countries, boldly going where no man--where no one has gone before."

### Comments:

This film an impressive and for once a fitting end to the series. Granted it isn't the last time we'll see Kirk and a few of the other characters, it is the last bona fide TOS film. There are some idiotic details in this movie, such as another shapeshifter, or another Kirk double, or the discussion about dismantling Starfleet because of the possible peace with the Klingons. Are we led to believe that Starfleet is only a military organization? What happened to the whole exploration thing? Even if so, what about the Romulans? With the Klingons out of the way the Romulans are of course still a major threat... Thankfully Starfleet is not dismantled of course and this idiotic detail is quickly forgotten. Also annoying was Chang's incessant quoting of Shakespeare. At least Spock told him to shut up! One thing I was fond of was an alien president of the Federation. Something we will see again. Another good detail was the way the Klingon language was handled in this film. Additionally, this film presents a convincing mystery concerning who's trying to accomplish what clear up to the climax which is pleasing. The final nice detail is how this film parallels the the cold war. Praxis' explosion parallels Chernobyl, the Klingon ecological problem parallels the collapse of the Soviet Union, and the plot to disrupt the peace talks mirrors rumor that people would disrupt the American-Soviet peace to keep the military budgets high. Overall a very fine film.

---



**Star Trek VII: Generations**  
Originally Aired: 1994-11-18

**My  
Rating -  
10**

**Official Synopsis From  
StarTrek.com:**

*Captains Kirk and Picard meet in a strange "Nexus" that defies time. Together, they save a planet from destruction.*

#### **Problems:**

- The uniforms are rather confused in this film. And I'm not talking about the sailor uniforms on the bridge or the old style uniforms worn by the characters from the past. The Enterprise D appears to have some crewmembers wearing DS9 uniforms and others wearing TNG uniforms! Even Riker's uniform magically changes from TNG to DS9 style as the film progresses! As does Data's! And Picard's... And Geordi's... Picard even reverts back to his old uniform in the final scenes of the film!
- In TNG: Relics, Scotty, upon hearing the name Enterprise, says: "Jim Kirk got it out of mothballs!" Why would Scotty say this knowing Kirk was dead? Maybe the long term transporter buffer stasis induced some kind of temporary transporter psychosis?

#### **Factoids:**

- This film is nominated for my "Best Star Trek Film Award" award.
- This is the first of the TNG films and the last of the TOS films.
- Tim Russ, who plays an officer aboard the Enterprise B in this film, goes on to play Tuvok on Voyager. He easily could have been, but he is not Tuvok in this film as his ears are not pointed.
- The Enterprise D appears to have installed a new type of transporter since TNG: All Good Things... based on the visual effect.
- According to Riker and Worf, the Romulans, Breen, and Klingons all use type 3 disruptors. This is also one of many mentions of the yet unseen Breen species who will finally show up in late DS9.
- The door chime in Picard's ready room has changed; it is the one which will be used on Voyager.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- A look at the Enterprise B! Now we've seen them all! The first one built by the Federation was commanded by Pike, then Kirk. That one was destroyed, another was built: the A. Then the B, featured in this film. Then the C, featured in TNG: Yesterday's Enterprise. Finally the D in TNG. Of course there are more later, but I love how the writers filled in the gaps for us finally. :)
- Guinan aboard the Enterprise B!
- Kirk lost saving the Enterprise B.
- The damage to the Enterprise B was extremely well done.
- Worf's promotion ceremony. Worf defeats the ceremony's challenge to retrieve the hat, but Riker deletes the plank from the holodeck program and Worf splashes into the water!
- Data pushing Beverly off the ship to be "funny and spontaneous."
- Picard receiving the bad news about his family. His brother and nephew have died.
- Data considering using the emotion chip. Excellent continuity with TNG: Descent.
- Data, up and about with his new emotion chip. Data enjoys hating the drink because he's never felt true emotion before. Hilarious!
- Soran: "They say time is the fire in which we burn."
- Data joking around with Geordi while they investigate the space station then being unable to stop laughing. I'm particularly fond of "Mr. Tricorder."
- Picard looking through photos of his family and discussing his family along with the tragic loss of his brother and nephew with Troi. Excellent continuity with TNG: Family.
- The Duras' sisters' appearance. They are recurring characters from many previous TNG/DS9 episodes. They never know when to quit!
- The scenes in which Soran and Guinan's history are discussed bear nice continuity with TNG: The Best of Both Worlds, and other episodes.
- Data and Picard in Stellar Cartography.

- The Klingons using Geordi's visor to spy on the Enterprise.
- Soran: "Ah, captain. You must think I'm quite the madman." Picard: "The thought had crossed my mind."
- Riker: "Can you find a way to scan the planet for life forms?" Data: "I would be happy to sir! I just love scanning for life forms!" Data then begins singing and playing a tune with the computer terminal button sounds. Data: "Life forms... you tiny little life forms... you precious little life forms... where are you?" Easily one of the funniest moments in all of Star Trek history.
- The battle between the Klingon ship and the Enterprise. Spectacular!
- The destruction of the Klingon ship and the death of the Duras sisters!
- The destruction of the Enterprise drive section!
- As the Enterprise hurls toward the planet, Data says: "Oh shit!"
- The crashing of the Enterprise saucer section!
- Picard's meeting with Kirk.
- Kirk to Picard: "I was out saving the galaxy when your grandfather was in diapers!"
- Picard killing Soran.
- Kirk's death. His final words: "It was... fun... oh my..."
- Troi discovering Data's cat Spot, still alive.
- Picard: "Somehow I doubt this will be the last ship to carry the name Enterprise."

### **Comments:**

This is a very special film. It is very epic, for we have big things happening! The convergence of two timelines that span a century, the destruction of stars, the destruction of a beloved ship; The Enterprise D, and the death of a beloved character; James Kirk. Soran was a great villain because his goals were realistic. He wasn't a madman, just a bit unscrupulous and greedy. The film is extremely intelligently written, using Guinan's longevity appropriately and giving us some more much needed backstory on her people and giving us an appropriate tie in between Kirk and Picard's time all at the same time! The highlights of the movie are extensive, but probably the best part is the acting throughout the movie is fantastic, particularly in Picard's scenes regarding the loss of his family, later with Kirk, and finally the loss of his ship, along with Data's emotional scenes. The two characters spend very little time with one another, but the issues they each face are nicely paralleled throughout the film. Another highlight is the special effects. It's nice to see the Enterprise D rendered in such high quality. Even the Enterprise B looked pretty badass. And needless to say, Enterprise D's death was spectacular. Another nice detail is the film is filled with fantastic continuity with tons of other episodes, far, far too many to list, but much, much appreciated. One important one: Data's emotion chip is finally activated, tying up a loose end of the TNG series. Many people bash this film as a terrible way to kill off Kirk, but I disagree. Kirk agreed to leave the Nexus to help Picard so that he could "make a difference" one last time. Many ask why Picard and Kirk didn't return to a not so crucial time so as to save the Enterprise and in fact Kirk's life. Well, neither Picard nor Kirk knew what happened to the Enterprise. And I think Kirk wanted to die. The Nexus wasn't real, and he knew he'd be a man out of time after he assisted Picard. While the logical flaws do abound, I think Kirk deliberately chose the moment they went to and he deliberately died an honorable man, saving Picard's life. That said, this film is exiting clear up to the end with the Enterprise's destruction and Kirk's heroic death. The film is a fantastic send-off for both TOS and the Enterprise D and one of the best films in Star Trek history.

---



**Star Trek VIII: First Contact**  
Originally Aired: 1996-11-22

My  
Rating -  
10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard orders the Enterprise to follow the Borg back in time to stop them from destroying the Phoenix, Earth's first warp-speed vessel.*

**Problems:**

- In TOS: Metamorphosis, we meet a much older Zefram Cochrane played by a much younger actor. Maybe the alien in that episode rejuvenated him?
- Lt. Hawk is killed in this film, but for some reason appears in later Star Trek films.

**Factoids:**

- This film is the winner of my "Best Star Trek Film Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Best Episode Ever Award".
- This film introduces a new style of uniforms which will be adopted by DS9, but not by Voyager.
- This film further establishes that the Eugenics war and WWII were separate events.
- The Enterprise arrived ten years after the third world war, on April 4th, 2063. This puts the third world war circa 2053. Most of the major cities have been destroyed and there are very few governments left. 600,000,000 dead.
- First Contact occurred on April 5th, 2063.
- This film features a new transporter effect.
- According to Picard, there are over 150 planets in the Federation spread across 8000 light years.
- The Enterprise-E has 24 decks and it's almost 700 meters long.
- It took Lily 4 months to scrounge up enough titanium just to build a four meter cockpit for the Phoenix.
- Ethan Phillips, otherwise known on Voyager as Neelix, plays the holographic maitre d' who greets the Borg when Picard takes Lily to the holodeck.
- Data's a faithful companion! When the Borg Queen asks Data when the last time he used his sexual programming was, Data's response was: "Eight years, seven months, sixteen days, four minutes, and 22 seconds." That date puts it right about during the events of TNG: The Naked Now when Data had sex with Yar.
- There are 50 million people living on the moon in the 24th century.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise-E. Gorgeous.
- Geordi without a visor!
- Listening to the battle as it starts.
- Data: "I believe I speak for everyone here, sir, when I say to hell with our orders."
- The battle with the Borg cube.
- Worf: "Perhaps today is a good day to die!"
- Riker regarding the Defiant: "Tough little ship." Worf: "Little?"
- Data diving down several meters of the silo to talk to Lily.
- Data, after being shot repeatedly by Lily's machine gun: "Greetings!"
- Beverly regarding the EMH: "I swore I'd never use one of these."
- EMH: "I'm a doctor, not a doorstop." Count 21 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Drunk Troi: "Timeline? This is no time to argue about time. We don't have the time."

- Data: "Captain, I believe I am feeling anxiety. It is an intriguing sensation. A most distracting--"
- Picard: "Data, I'm sure it is a fascinating experience, but perhaps you should deactivate your emotion chip for now." Data: "Good idea, sir." Data twitches his head. Data: "Done." Picard: "Data, there are times I envy you."
- Picard regarding the Borg: "Don't let them touch you!"
- Data's conversation with the Borg queen.
- Cochrane: "And you people... you're all astronauts on some kind of star trek?"
- Picard: "Maximum setting. If you had fired this, you would have vaporized me." Lily: "It's my first ray gun."
- Data questioning who and what the Borg queen is and her subsequent assemblage.
- Borg Queen: "I am the beginning. The end. The one who is many. I am the Borg." Data: "Greetings. I am curious. Do you control the Borg Collective?" Borg Queen: "You imply a disparity where none exists. I am the Collective." Data: "Perhaps I should rephrase the question. I wish to understand the organizational relationships. Are you their leader?" Borg Queen: "I bring order to chaos." Data: "An interesting if cryptic response."
- Borg Queen: "We too are on a quest to better ourselves. Evolving toward a state of perfection." Data: "Forgive me, but the Borg do not evolve. They conquer." Borg Queen: "By assimilating other beings into our Collective, we are bringing them closer to perfection." Data: "Somehow I question your motives."
- Lily: "Borg... sounds Swedish." Upon seeing a Borg, after screaming a few times, Lily says: "Definitely not Swedish."
- The whole Dixon Hill holodeck scene.
- Barclay's appearance.
- Geordi to Cochrane: "You're standing almost on the exact spot where your statue's gonna be!"
- The zero gravity space suit scene, walking upside down on the Enterprise traveling to the deflector.
- Worf's hand to hand combat with the Borg in space.
- Picard releasing the deflector emitter.
- Worf saving Picard, having tied the leak in his suit with components from dead Borg. :)
- Worf: "Assimilate this!"
- Cochrane: "You think I want to go to the stars? I don't even like to fly! I take trains!"
- Riker: "Someone once said don't try to be a great man, just be a man and let history make it's own judgements." Cochrane: "That's rhetorical nonsense. Who said that?" Riker: "You did. Ten years from now."
- Worf's response to being called a coward by Picard: "If you were any other man, I would kill you where you stand!"
- Lily accusing Picard of being another Captain Ahab from Moby Dick. Picard smashes the glass container holding the model ships and the Enterprise-D falls...
- Picard: "I will not sacrifice the Enterprise. I've made too many compromises already. Too many retreats. They invade our space and we fall back. They assimilate entire worlds and we fall back. Not again. The line must be drawn here! This far, no farther! I will make them pay for what they've done!"
- Beverly: "So much for the Enterprise-E." Picard: "We barely knew her." Beverly: "Think they'll build another one?" Picard: "Plenty of letters left in the alphabet."
- The Phoenix lift off, to Steppenwolf's Magic Carpet Ride.
- Cochrane: "Engage!"
- Data to the Borg Queen: "Resistance is futile!"
- The First Contact scene.

### Comments:

My only real complaint about the film is the beginning, believe it or not. Yes, the Borg battle was spectacular. So what was wrong with it? It was too bloody short! They should have scrapped the entire tidbit about Starfleet not trusting Picard to fight the Borg and given all that extra time to the battle itself. Would have been perhaps less dramatic, but a showdown between the Borg and the Federation fleet certainly deserved more of a fight than that. Why, we didn't even get to see Wolf 359 until DS9's pilot, and we didn't get to see much of the battle even with that. Aside from that, the Enterprise-E was, as I've said above, gorgeous. She is everything a next-next generation Enterprise should be. Sleeker, more elegant, more powerful, etc. One interestingly funny in-joke regarding this movie is the method by which Worf was introduced as a crewmember aboard the Enterprise. Obviously he was stationed aboard DS9, so he must have been given command of the Defiant to fight the Borg. When his ship was crippled, Picard beamed his crew to the Enterprise. Very convenient and very effective. The only annoying quality surrounding this is the fact that the only DS9 crewmember aboard the Defiant was Worf. Everyone else was a redshirt. Personally, I wouldn't have minded seeing a few more DS9 guests in this film. But alas, like the episode TNG:

Birthright, the film screams "I'm a TNG film, not a DS9 film!" Also remarkable is the music of Jerry and Joel Goldsmith in this film. Fantastic throughout, but my favorite scene (both musically and otherwise) is toward the beginning of the film when the Borg cube first pans over the camera. In the end, all things considered, this is easily the best Star Trek film ever done; many people would say the best Star Trek production period.



**Star Trek IX: Insurrection**  
Originally Aired: 1998-12-11

**My  
Rating**  
- 9

**Official Synopsis From  
StarTrek.com:**

*Picard fights a Starfleet admiral who is complicit in the relocation of an indigenous people in order to exploit their planet's natural properties.*

**Problems:**

- How could Ru'afo and crew not notice \*immediately\* that they were beamed to the holoship? Being transported is not synonymous to seeing a big flash of light!

**Factoids:**

- The Son'a are known to have produced mass quantities of Ketracel White, presumably for the Dominion.  
- Data's legs are 87.2 centimeters in length.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data freaking out at the Ba'ku village.
- Picard lamenting about the Enterprise no longer being a ship of exploration but a ship of diplomacy instead, because of the Dominion war.
- I love the way they handled introducing Worf into the Enterprise crew again. You can't hear a single word of his explanation because Riker talks over him. But does it really matter? :)
- Picard hating every moment of the party.
- The shuttle battle.
- The whole singing thing.
- The docking.
- Worf deactivating Data.
- The kids playing haki sack. Extraordinary coordination there.
- The revelation that the Baku have warp capability.
- Picard and Geordi waking up Data.
- Data: "I am the personification of everything they reject."
- Data just casually walking into the lake.
- Data: "In the event of a water landing, I have been designed to serve as a floatation device."
- Picard: "Have you been in a fight, Mr. Worf?" Worf: "No sir, it is a gorch." Picard: "Gorch?" Data, whispering: "A pimple, sir." Picard: "Oh, well, it's uh, hardly noticeable."
- A clean shaven Riker!
- Riker regarding Worf's pimple: "Klingons never do anything small, do you?"
- Picard: "Some of the darkest chapters in the history of my world involve the forced relocation of a small group of people to satisfy the demands on a large one."
- Dougherty: "We're only moving 600 people." Picard: "How many people does it take, admiral, before it becomes wrong? Hmm? A thousand? Fifty thousand? A million? How many people does it take, admiral?"
- Seeing the Captain's Yacht.
- The Baku running from their village and the sequential beam outs.
- The whole time slowing down scene between Picard and Anij
- Riker: "A photon torpedo. Isn't that the universal greeting when communications are down?"
- Geordi: "I think that's the universal greeting you don't like someone."

- Worf: "I have an odd craving for the blood of a live Kolar Beast." Data's response, attempting to imitate Troi's and Beverly's conversation: "And have you noticed how your boobs have started to firm up?"
- The Enterprise battling the Son'a ships.
- The Enterprise dumping the warpcore.
- Daniels: "We did it commander! The tear has been sealed!" Geordi: "Yeah, but there's nothing to stop them from doing it again and we're fresh outta warpcores!"
- Riker: "We're through running from these bastards."
- The "Riker maneuver."
- Picard revealing that the Son'a and the Ba'ku are the same race.
- Ru'afo murdering Dougherty.
- Data attacking Ru'afo's ship in the Captain's Yacht.
- I love Ru'afo's blood curdling scream of failure.
- Picard's showdown with Ru'afo and the Enterprise's showdown with Ru'afo's ship.
- Worf: "Captain, the Son'a crew would like to negotiate a cease fire. It may have something to do with the fact that we have three minutes of air left."

**Comments:**

A stunningly beautiful film that has the best combination of landscaping, visual effects, and directing shown so far. Everything from the once again marvelous musical score by Jerry Goldsmith, to the Ba'ku planet, to the external view shots of space in the Briar Patch were just overwhelmingly gorgeous. In my opinion, *Insurrection* is the first Star Trek film to take a truly artistic approach to telling a story since *TMP*. In accordance with that ideal, the film is portrayed from a very unique and appropriate standpoint. The Federation in alliance with the Son'a want to move the Ba'ku, population 600, off their planet so they can exploit its natural resources. Admiral Dougherty said, "it's only 600 people!" But as Picard said, "how many people does it take before it becomes wrong?" And so the point of the film is well made. 600 people have just as many rights as the entire Federation itself. The overall plot isn't very complicated, if anything it's a rehash of *TNG: Homeward* from a slightly different perspective. Some negative things, it's pretty absurd that in a film with the budget they had that the Ba'ku should look exactly like humans. Also, some of the fight, stop, rest, fight repetition started to feel a bit redundant after a while, the film would have been better served to teach us more about the Ba'ku and the Son'a's history and spend less time on the fighting. A lot of fans complained that *Star Trek IX* was not "First Contact Part II" or a depiction of the Enterprise in a showdown with the Dominion, and in some ways I agree with that complaint. But in reality, *Insurrection* just isn't that kind of a film. *Insurrection* is an art film, trying to send a profound message against racial discrimination and force relocations. And I think when looked at it from that perspective, it is one of the most successful Star Trek films ever written.



**Star Trek X: Nemesis**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-12-13

**My Rating**  
- 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Romulan clone of Picard's seeks revenge and threatens the destruction of the Federation with a powerful weapon.*

**Problems:**

- Why did Picard to blatantly break the Prime Directive when he retrieved B4?
- I'm not one to nitpick too much about looks, but we've seen photos of young Picard before. The one they show here (with Shinzon in the picture...) looks nothing like the ones we've seen in various *TNG* episodes.

**Factoids:**

- Picard has represented the Federation in first contact with 27 alien species.



- Riker now commands the USS Titan.
- Worf seems to be back at his old job! I guess life as a diplomat didn't suit him. :)
- Remans are considered an undesirable caste in the hierarchy of the Romulan Empire.
- In the Dominion war, Reman troops were used as assault forces in the most violent encounters.
- Shinzon fought in twelve major engagements in the Dominion war, all successful.
- Some perhaps non canon things that were in the script but not the movie... Dr. Crusher was to leave the ship and go back to Starfleet Medical. Picard's new first officer was to be a Commander Madden. B4 was originally named B9. Wesley had lines which were cut.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The gradual zoom from space into the Romulan senate. Great graphics and great music.
- The assassination of the Romulan senate.
- The wedding scene.
- Admiral Janeway. Wow, her return from the delta quadrant sure earned her some pips!
- The briefing on the Remans.
- The appearance of the Scimitar.
- Shinzon's appearance.
- Shinzon telling Picard about his origins.
- The revelation that Data was pretending to be B4 during Picard's capture.
- The Enterprise firing phasers randomly to try and locate the Scimitar.
- The Romulans joining the battle.
- The Scimitar playing dead, ambushing the Romulan ships.
- The hull breach on the bridge. Wow! Gotta love how that forcefield waited to activate until a redshirt was lost. ;)
- Shinzon when he realized the Enterprise was about to hit his ship: "Hard to port!"
- Picard ramming the Enterprise into the Scimitar. Some damn nice graphics there.
- Data's jump across space.
- Picard's fight with Shinzon
- Data sacrificing himself.
- Riker recalling the first time he saw Data in TNG: Encounter At Farpoint.
- Picard chatting with B4, trying to make him understand Data.

#### **Comments:**

This film was not at all timed correctly. But with the Dominion war over and the Borg Collective all but rendered impotent, the only major villain the writers had left was the Romulan Empire. In this respect, the right political players were picked. But the story of Shinzon vs. Picard was a poor choice, even if well executed. A better film would have shown us real progress between the Federation and the Romulan Empire instead of this comparative filler. Granted, it looks as though relations between the Federation and the Romulan Empire will improve after this film, but instead of showing us the likely progress, we're shown a lot of unnecessary fighting instead. And let's not forget that whole Argo scene. That's about as unnecessary as it gets, Prime Directive violation and all! Additionally, a better film would have been a film which did more to address the finales of DS9 and Voyager. I would have liked to have seen DS9 again as a cameo in this film. I would have liked to have known more about what happened to Sisko. I would have liked a current status report on the Dominion. I would have liked a current status report on the Borg Collective. And perhaps most importantly, I would have liked to have known exactly what happened to all that technology Janeway brought to the Federation from the future. Star Trek X: Nemesis features no use of the futuristic armor or transphasic torpedoes. I wonder if Janeway classified it all as soon as she became an admiral. ;) Due to all of these important omissions, I have to subtract points from the film. All of that being said, Star Trek X: Nemesis is really a solid film. It was every bit the action sequel to Star Trek VIII: First Contact the fans wanted. This film featured the longest starship battle sequence in history. It's about time we got to see the Enterprise E flex its muscles! The battle may not have the numbers DS9 had, but it is easily the most impressive one ever done. I'm getting the impression that Star Trek X: Nemesis was intended to wrap up TNG the same way Voy: Endgame was intended to wrap up Voyager and DS9: What You Leave Behind was intended to wrap up DS9. With Data dead, B4 being shown as unlikely to pull a Spock style Data resurrection (or at least, I hope not), and Riker and Troi leaving the Enterprise, it's just all too clear that this is the final TNG production. Besides, it's been hinted numerous times behind the scenes that this is the final TNG film. As a finale, Star Trek X: Nemesis is adequate in some ways, inadequate in others. I've already complained about the lack of closure we've seen with the other shows, an opportunity wasted here. But I'm reasonably pleased with the closure that Star Trek X: Nemesis offers TNG. Data's death was extremely touching. The wedding scene was fantastic. It's kind of annoying that we don't get to see Riker's new ship, but that's definitely not a show stopper. I may not have liked Star Trek X: Nemesis as much as DS9's finale, the last three TNG films, or TNG's TV

finale but I liked it better than Voy: Endgame and I thought it was a fitting conclusion to the series. Just like the last four TNG productions, this one is open ended. Captain Picard will never retire as captain. No promotions. No stopping. He'll keep on exploring long past the end of the series until he dies of old age, because he's just as stubborn and stuffy as he was in TNG: Encounter At Farpoint. That's what makes him such a great captain.

---

# **STAR TREK**

**THE ORIGINAL SERIES**



## **Star Trek TOS - 1x00 - The Cage**

**Originally Aired:** 1964-12-12

**My Rating**

**- 6**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Captain Pike and his crew are lured to Talos IV by a race capable of creating powerful illusions.*

### **Problems:**

- In this episode, Spock isn't the logical Vulcan we've come to know. He displays emotions fluidly.
- Warp speed is referred to as a "time warp" in this episode.
- Pike calls his first officer a Lieutenant, when she should hold the rank of a Commander.
- Pike referred to his ship as the United Starship Enterprise instead of the Federation Starship Enterprise.
- The colonists mention that they are Americans, but the United States (and all Earth governments) would have reformed into United Earth by this time period.
- Pike claims that the Enterprise is "from the other end of this galaxy." No early Earth colony ship would have ever made it that far...
- Spock calls the warp drive a "hyper drive" and the impulse engines "rockets".
- Phasers are called lasers in this episode.
- The Yeoman hands Pike a paper report...

### **Factoids:**

- This episode was rejected as the pilot by the TV networks for being "too cerebral." Gene Roddenberry was asked to get rid of the female first officer (played by his wife) and Spock because the TV networks didn't believe the audience would accept a female in a high ranking position nor an alien as a main character. Roddenberry compromised, getting rid of the female first officer but keeping Spock. Despite the politics, and despite all its flaws, this episode is the one true pilot for Star Trek.
- The nickname "Number One" for Pike's first officer would be reused by Picard in TNG to refer to Riker.

### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Christopher Pike doubting his ability to command the Enterprise.
- Pike, to Number One briefly forgetting that his first officer is a female: "I can't get used to having a woman on the bridge."
- The aliens belittling Pike.
- Pike being transported into the memory he bemoaned about to the doctor.
- Pike's illusionary battle with the savage.
- Number One using the phaser cannon thing against the alien door.
- Pike needling information out of his fantasy woman about his captors.
- Pike discovering that intense anger blocks their telepathy.
- I like the reference in fantasy lands that the punishments are "headaches".
- Pike: "We're in a menagerie, a cage!" Both episode names these scenes are in are mentioned there. ;)
- Pike transported into a fantasy with Orion slave girls.
- Pike being presented with a "selection."
- Pike capturing one of the aliens.
- Pike discovering that the phaser not working was also an illusion.
- The humans preparing to destroy themselves rather than live in slavery.
- Yeoman asking Pike who would have been Eve and Number One quickly striking her down.
- Pike: "Engage!"

### **Comments:**

This episode sets itself up nicely. A weary captain of the Enterprise, Pike, falls into an illusionary world, which he could easily let himself slip into, but he regains his vigor, solves the mystery, and causes a happy ending. It was fun to see in action the memory Pike was bemoaning about to the doctor early on in the episode. Being forced to relive it seems to have reluctantly brought up some of the old feelings. Granted, his newfound confidence is short lived. He eventually does decide to retire, and Kirk is promoted captain of the Enterprise. The whole episode is fantastic character development for Pike. It really is a shame that he doesn't remain captain. Sure, Kirk is likable and

all, but Pike had potential. Great potential. As a pilot, this episode is highly successful, but plagued by inconsistencies and politics. Such is life.



---

### **Star Trek TOS - 1x01 - The Man Trap**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-9-8

**My Rating -**  
**3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A shape-shifting, salt-craving creature terrorizes the crew of Enterprise.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This was the first episode of Star Trek to air on national television. The true pilot, The Cage, was never aired during the show's original run.
- Vulcan has no moon according to Spock in this episode.
- The "great bird of the galaxy" Sulu referred to in this episode is actually a reference to Gene Roddenberry.
- This episode establishes that Buffalo on Earth are extinct in the 23rd century.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy and Kirk arguing over how young McCoy's old girlfriend looks.
- McCoy: "He's dead, Jim." Count 1.
- Uhura toying with Spock.
- Kirk yelling at McCoy for changing the subject to his old girlfriend again just after discussing the dead crewman.
- McCoy and Kirk needling Crater for information concerning the connection between his desire for salt and the crewman's death.
- Sulu: "May the great bird of the galaxy bless your planet."
- Kirk and Spock coordinating a stun attack on Crater.
- Crater and "McCoy" trying to defend the salt monster's right to live.

#### **Comments:**

This episode has a painfully slow plot, what with four extras dying and Crater before Kirk figures out what's going on. We know there's a malicious shape shifter running amuck since the very beginning of the episode, so most of the show is nothing but us watching the main cast figure it all out at a terribly slow pace. I like the scene where Kirk and Spock coordinate a stun attack on Crater. It shows that a violent situation can be contained without causing death. A great detail, unfortunately contrasted by the extreme amount of death in this episode.



---

### **Star Trek TOS - 1x02 - Charlie X**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-9-15

**My Rating -**  
**4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A powerful teenage boy wreaks havoc aboard the U.S.S. Enterprise.*

#### **Problems:**

- Kirk's uniform mysteriously changes during his turbolift trip with Charlie.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there are 428 people on board the Enterprise. This number is up from 203 that were aboard when Pike was in command.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Charlie: "Is that a girl?" Kirk: "That's a girl."
- Normally I wouldn't list this, but the musical score in this episode is quite good.
- Charlie slapping Rand on the ass.
- Kirk and McCoy arguing over who will mentor the boy.
- Uhuru singing to Spock's harp playing.
- Kirk trying to explain why you don't slap women on the ass to Charlie and utterly failing at it.
- Rand trying to hand Charlie off to Yeoman Tina.

- The athletic scene with Charlie and Kirk.
- Charlie making Spock say things.
- Kirk taking on Charlie gambling his powers were taxed.
- Charlie begging to stay on board when the non coporeal green aliens come to take him away.

**Comments:**

The premise of this episode is fantastic, but turns sour as Charlie turns out to be malicious and supernatural. Once again it's a shame that more senseless death has to come about before the cast figures out that our guest has malicious intentions. Fortunately, the interaction between Kirk and Charlie was well conceived. Kirk is good at this father figure stuff. McCoy was right! Even when Charlie misbehaves, Kirk handles it well.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x03 - Where No Man Has Gone Before**

**My Rating -**  
**1**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-9-22

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk's friend Gary Mitchell is transformed into a god-like entity.*

**Problems:**

- There is a reference to the ship being at the edge of the galaxy and leaving the galaxy. How could they be so far from Earth? How could the ship from 200 years ago traveled so far from Earth?
- Why is there an enormous forcefield preventing the Enterprise from leaving the galaxy? Why are we never given an explanation for why the Enterprise was attempting to leave the galaxy in the first place?
- Gary mentions the love sonnet he read was written by a human on a planet other than Earth in 1996. There were no Earth colonies in 1996 though...
- The fictional grave made for Kirk got his middle initial wrong.

**Factoids:**

- The uniforms in this episode are slightly different because this was the second episode to actually be produced.
- Spock's eyebrows are also a little different.
- This episode establishes that Spock is part human.
- This episode did not have the "Space, the final frontier" introduction.
- Dr. McCoy is notably absent in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Gary "sensing" trouble with the engines.
- Gary reading people's thoughts.
- Kirk and Spock ambushing Gary as he stands.
- Kirk: "I didn't order any..." (Spock walks in with the phaser rifle Scotty was referring to.) Kirk: "Affirmative, landing party out."
- Kirk trying to convince Elizabeth to realize that god-like power was never meant for humans because they lack the wisdom to use it properly.
- Kirk defeating Gary.

**Comments:**

Most of this episode's premise doesn't make sense. Much like Star Trek V, the Enterprise seems to have traveled an impossible distance. We'll just have to ignore that little inconsistency for the sake of sanity. Though the distance isn't the central topic of the episode; Gary is. How he became god-like is immaterial. Unfortunately, this is already becoming a cliché. We just got done watching an episode with a guest who has god-like abilities, and abuses them, and now another. And why does Elizabeth believe Gary is the future of humanity? Earth just got done with a huge Eugenics war a few hundred years ago. Fortunately she realizes her error in judgement, though it costs her her life. My poor rating for this episode mostly stems from the enormous technical / logical / continuity problems. This episode features a whole slew of annoying ones. This episode is saved from a zero only because I enjoyed Kirk's moral dilemma, and Elizabeth's sudden realization that she should help Kirk stop Gary.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x04 - The Naked Time**  
Originally Aired: 1966-9-29

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew catch a virus that removes their inhibitions.*

**Problems:**

- The magic time travel formula is a little absurd. This episode implies that traveling backward through time is as easy as punching a few buttons into a warp engine. Fortunately, later episodes, especially TNG era and later, never use this technique. We can assume it was deemed far too dangerous to actually use and that Kirk et al were extremely lucky to have survived so many times.

**Factoids:**

- A sequel to this episode was written during the TNG era. Episode TNG: The Naked Now.  
- This is the first episode to mention that the engines are powered by a matter-antimatter reaction.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sulu rampaging through the Enterprise with a fencing sword.  
- Spock using the Vulcan neck pinch on Sulu.  
- Nurse Chapel trying to seduce Spock.  
- Spock losing his emotional control after being infected by Nurse Chapel.  
- Scotty: "I can't change the laws of physics!" A famous Scotty quote.  
- Kirk fighting Spock.  
- Kirk becoming infected while Spock regains his control.

**Comments:**

This episode has a slow beginning and a bad ending. The only particularly entertaining part is the climax, where the crew is at the height of the infection. My rating would have been higher except that the time warp Spock creates to get the ship away from the dying planet unleashes a huge can of worms. I don't consider this a technical problem only because the extreme danger involved in using warp engine implosion to travel backward through time. It's kind of trite that Spock would just spontaneously invent a magic time travel formula, and even more trite that they casually imply that they'll be using this technique again with ease. TOS' casual use of time travel is its single greatest flaw, and it all begins here...



**Star Trek TOS - 1x05 - The Enemy Within**  
Originally Aired: 1966-10-6

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A transporter malfunction creates an evil Kirk.*

**Problems:**

- Um? Hello? Shuttles? Rescue Sulu with a shuttle? Hello?  
- At one point, evil Kirk's scratches were on the wrong side of his face.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which we see the phasers used to turn rocks into heaters.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Evil kirk... being evil.  
- Rand telling her story in the presence of good Kirk.  
- Kirk confronting his other half.  
- Spock Vulcan neck pinching evil Kirk.  
- McCoy: "He's dead, Jim." Count 2.  
- Spock and McCoy arguing over whether the dog died of terror or some technical malfunction with the transporter reintegrating its two halves.  
- Evil Kirk pretending to be good Kirk.  
- Kirk's reintegration.

**Comments:**

I like how one of the first things evil Kirk does is pursue Rand. It's good continuity with TOS: The Naked Time where Kirk expressed hidden desires for Rand. I also like the general premise of this episode. Kirk being split into good and evil halves makes for interesting story, evil if the physics behind the whole thing are a little shady. The biggest criticism of this episode is usually the shuttle problem, they never tried to send a shuttle down to save the away team. It really doesn't wreck the episode much though. They could have ruled shuttles out with an easy one liner, such as the atmosphere having a corrosive effect on shuttle hulls, so the transporter would be the only option. That said, this episode was sufficiently entertaining and enjoyable.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 1x06 - Mudd's Women**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-10-13

**My Rating -**  
**1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise rescues con artist Harry Mudd and his "beautiful" female cargo.*

**Problems:**

- Mudd's criminal record the computer brings up mentions one of his crimes as "Purchase of space vessel with counterfeit currency." But there's no currency in the Federation...
- Why was Uhura wearing a yellow uniform?
- The placebo pill was a cool idea but the make up effects showed a clear effect on the women...

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to mention that the ship's power source is lithium based (later to be referred to as "dilithium"). Presumably the lithium is the raw material for the matter-antimatter reaction.
- Kirk's middle initial is established as T in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Mudd: "You'll find out that ships' captains are already married, girl, to their vessels. You'd find that out the first time you came between him and the ship."
- Mudd's customers fighting over his women.

**Comments:**

This episode is offensive. It depicts women being sold into slavery, blatant sexism, currency in a supposedly greedless Federation, and even the mining techniques are overly primitive. Why not use phaser drills or something? All of these problems are irrelevant really, as they don't disturb continuity much, if it all, but they do make the episode less enjoyable.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 1x07 - What Are Little Girls Made Of?**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-10-20

**My Rating -**  
**3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Nurse Chapel's long lost fiance is found.*

**Problems:**

- How could Kirk have strangled an android Korby?

**Factoids:**

- McCoy has no part in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk killing an android.
- Kirk being "cloned" into an android.
- Kirk debating with his android counterpart.
- Android Kirk calling Spock a half-breed.

**Comments:**

Another Kirk double. Another idealistic guest with a hidden intent who dies in the end. Cliche++! The androids are the interesting part of this episode. The implications of their existence are wasted and forgotten in favor of an action plot. Though I liked Kirk's method of clueing in Spock to the imposter, filling his thoughts with hate for Spock during the creation of the Kirk android. In the



end, these incredibly significant advances in android technology are lost. The topic won't be revisited for another century in TNG. Imagine what Dr. Soong could have done with even Korby's notes! A shame.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x08 - Miri**  
**Originally Aired:** 1966-10-27

**My Rating -**  
**0**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A strange group of children are discovered on an Earth-like planet.*

**Problems:**

- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial units...
- A planet forming exactly like Earth in every detail, as shown in this episode, is completely impossible. I MIGHT have accepted this if they attempted some kind of explanation. But we're given none.
- Why does Kirk order Spock to make a helm adjustment at the end of this episode? Did he have something against the helmsman or something?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Worst Episode of TOS Award".
- William Shatner's daughter is one of the children in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene. "Hey look! It's a planet exactly like Earth! We don't particularly care why there's a planet exactly like Earth 100 light years away, complete with humans and everything, so we'll just beam down and start a fight..." Sheer absurdity.
- Spock: "It could be a beaker full of death." I like the wording there. :)

**Comments:**

This episode is absurd. We're not given any reason for why this planet is exactly like Earth. The crew doesn't even attempt to investigate why the planet is exactly like Earth. Instead the episode focuses on the strange virus afflicting the children of the planet. Even without the Earth detail, the plot is meager and doesn't make much sense. For example, we're not told how the children get enough food to sustain themselves for hundreds of years or what's going on in all the other countries of this mirror Earth. Children in Star Trek have always been somewhat annoying for some reason, but the ones in this episode are just dreadful with their squeaking and plotting and scheming and screaming. This one-two combo of bad storytelling makes this one of the worst episodes of Star Trek ever written. A one redeeming quality of this episode is how Kirk deals with the children. He has a true talent for it. If it weren't for the enormous problems with this episode, I'd give it points for this detail.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x09 - Dagger of the Mind**  
**Originally Aired:** 1966-11-3

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A new treatment for the criminally insane has deadly results.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature a mind meld.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Gelder, what disturbing eyes!
- McCoy and Kirk arguing over Gelder.
- McCoy forcing Kirk to launch an investigation.
- Kirk annoyed with McCoy's selection for his assistant.
- Adams' toast: "To all mankind. May we never find space so vast, planets so cold, heart and mind so empty that we cannot fill them with love and warmth."
- Spock mind melding with Gelder.

- Noel planting hunger in Kirk's mind.
- Noel planting fond memories of Noel in Kirk's mind.
- Gelder's death, nasty!

**Comments:**

I liked Noel, I mean, she annoyed the piss out of me and all, but she was a great character because she had, well, character! A woman very strong in her opinions to contrast Kirk's authority. Spiced up the plot nicely. Overall, the plot wasn't particularly perfect. Like many TOS episodes it had an annoyingly slow pace. It was, however, interesting and original. If we could have gotten some reason or motive behind Gelder's actions, it would have been great. Nevertheless, it's pleasing to watch a decent TOS episode in the first season where many episodes are sub par.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x10 - The Corbomite Maneuver**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-11-10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk bluffs his way past what appears to be a powerful alien.*

**Problems:**

- Why is Uhura in a yellow uniform?
- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial Units...
- The alien ship looked a lot larger than "a mile in diameter".
- Kirk referred to his ship as "The United Earth Ship Enterprise", instead of the "Federation Starship Enterprise".
- Sulu's countdown counted away the time incorrectly.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy purposely ignored the red alert to make Kirk finish his physical...
- McCoy: "What am I, a doctor or a moon shuttle conductor?" Count 1 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines McCoy is famous for.
- McCoy, talking to himself: "If i jumped every time the light came on around here I'd end up talking to myself."
- The Enterprise's attempts to escape the cube, and eventually destroying the cube.
- Kirk complaining about having a female yeoman. I generally don't like sexism in Star Trek, but this kind of funny.
- I like how Sulu very quickly compensated for Bailey's delinquencies.
- Kirk determined to help the enemy in need.

**Comments:**

Balok and Bailey were both quite annoying, but the general theme of this episode is quite entertaining. Unfortunately, the interesting, yet simple plot is dragged out far too long. The lack of any kind of secondary plot whatsoever is what really hurts the main plot. Granted, secondary plots are not always necessary and TOS indeed rarely used them. But in this case, the main plot was most definitely not complex enough to fill an entire episode. There's a lot of sitting around waiting for impending doom. Camera focuses on viewscreen, camera focuses on crew, camera focuses on viewscreen, camera focuses on other crew... gets old fast. The ending of this episode is fantastic. The ending demonstrates Star Trek's ideology at its finest. A bad first contact rectified by a compassionate cast.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x11 - The Menagerie, Part I**

**My Rating -**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-11-17

**7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock hijacks the Enterprise to return an injured Captain Pike to Talos IV.*

**Problems:**

- The yes/no wheelchair is a little absurd. I'm sure they could have come up with a better way for Pike to communicate than that.

- The death penalty for this "crime" is extremely absurd.
- The Enterprise being referred to as an "Earth ship" is a little absurd. It's a Federation starship...

**Factoids:**

- This episode (both parts) won the 1967 Hugo Award for Best Dramatic Presentation.
- This episode was designed to use as much material from the unaired original pilot TOS: The Cage as possible. In fact, the episode name The Menagerie is a reference to a line Pike said in the original episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk blindly defending Spock's good name regarding the phantom transmission.
- Spock sneaking around, up to no good.
- Spock fighting with the Starbase officer.
- Spock taking over the Enterprise.
- Spock submitting himself for arrest.
- Spock completely outmaneuvering the Captain and the Commodore at the trial.

**Comments:**

The only cliffhanger ever featured in TOS! I liked the way the writers rationalized being able to see footage from The Cage. The aliens from Talos IV were transmitting the images and they were able to create them using their power of illusions! The interesting part of the episode really is Spock's behavior and trying to solve the mystery of what Spock's motives really are.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x12 - The Menagerie, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-11-24

**My Rating -**  
**3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock hijacks the Enterprise to return an injured Captain Pike to Talos IV.*

**Problems:**

- The yes/no wheelchair is a little absurd. I'm sure they could have come up with a better way for Pike to communicate than that.
- The death penalty for this "crime" is extremely absurd.
- The Enterprise being referred to as an "Earth ship" is a little absurd. It's a Federation starship...

**Factoids:**

- This episode (both parts) won the 1967 Hugo Award for Best Dramatic Presentation.
- This episode was designed to use as much material from the unaired original pilot TOS: The Cage as possible. In fact, the episode name The Menagerie is a reference to a line Pike said in the original episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The revelation that the Commodore was an illusion.
- The happy ending. I love it when the tie up loose ends.

**Comments:**

I dropped points on this one because the vast majority of the episode was a clip show from The Cage. The first half of this two parter at least had some kind of plot and content. Though as much as I hate clip shows, I loved the ending, so I gave it a "modestly" bad score.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x13 - The Conscience of the King**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-12-8

**My Rating -**  
**5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk suspects Shakespearan actor Anton Karidian as a mass murderer.*

**Problems:**

- I find it hard to believe that phasers on overload could blow up a whole deck. In future shows, overloading phasers do not demonstrate this ability.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the Vulcan people cannot get drunk. McCoy also makes a statement about Vulcan having been "conquered", though we're not told by whom. His statement may have jokingly referred to Vulcan being "conquered" by Earth, as during the formation of the Federation humans became more important than Vulcans to the Federation. Before the founding of the Federation, it was the Vulcans who had more power than Earth.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock: "How could you know this lady is coming aboard?" Kirk: "I'm the captian."
- Spock and McCoy discussing Kirk's behavior.
- Riley calling the Rec room.
- Uhura's performance.
- Spock and McCoy confronting Kirk.
- Kirk confronting Karidian.
- Karidian's death, defending Kirk.
- Kirk avoiding McCoy's question in the end.

#### **Comments:**

An original plot for TOS, a murder investigation. It was interesting to see Kirk weave through all the various plot elements. This TOS episode also utilized an unusually large number of characters in pivotal roles, which is additionally pleasing. Unfortunately, there is very little that is remarkable about this episode. As intelligently constructed as it is, it's also a little boring and predictable. Still, I'd rather watch an intelligently constructed boring episode over a recklessly constructed action packed episode, which we see far too often in TOS. This episode is a good early effort.



#### **Star Trek TOS - 1x14 - Balance of Terror**

**Originally Aired:** 1966-12-15

**My Rating - 10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*After attacking an outpost, Romulans battle the Enterprise.*

#### **Problems:**

- Scotty claims the Romulans' speed capability is "simple impulse", which Kirk replies to as "meaning we can outrun them." This is a wildly absurd and much quoted bit of dialog, establishing the widely held belief that the Romulans did not have warp drive during TOS and before. This statement has been many times contradicted by later episodes. I've always believed Scotty was just using a metaphor to mean that the Enterprise is merely a faster ship than the Romulan ship, not that they didn't have warp drive. Among contradictions to the Romulans without warp drive theory is Star Trek Enterprise, which blatantly displays Romulans with warp drive, much to my delight. We can close the argument. Scotty was using a metaphor. The Romulans have warp drive, but the Enterprise has better warp drive. Besides, the Romulan ship crosses vast distances in this episode. Impossible without warp drive.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode of TOS Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Best Episode Ever Award".
- This episode is the first to feature the Romulans.
- This episode establishes that no Federation member has ever seen a Romulan and that the Earth / Romulan war was fought with atomic weapons.
- The Romulan cloaking device seems new to the Federation in this episode.
- This episode establishes that Romulans are offshoots of Vulcan and that Vulcans were once a warlike race.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The wedding interrupted at the beginning.
- I like the map of the Neutral Zone.
- Stiles describing an ancestor of his, a ship captain who died during the Earth / Romulan war.
- The Romulan ship destroying another Earth outpost before the Enterprise's eyes.
- Kirk chastising Stiles for questioning Spock's loyalties.
- The model of the Romulan ship is cool.
- I love the first scene on board the Romulan ship where the officers discuss war.
- Romulan Commander: "Another war. Must it always be so? How many comrades have we lost in this way? Obedience. Duty. Death, and more death..."

- Spock, after being implicating as a traitor by Stiles: "I agree. Attack." I love that line, because no one was expecting Spock to agree with Stiles that they should attack the Romulans immediately.
- I love the battle at the comet.
- The Enterprise outrunning the plasma torpedo.
- The Romulans evading the Enterprise by dumping debris and running.
- McCoy: "In this galaxy there's a mathematical probability of three million Earth type planets. And in all of the universe, three million million galaxies like this. And in all of that, and perhaps more, only one of each of us."
- The Romulans planting a nuclear warhead in the debris.
- Spock dealing the finishing blow to the Romulan ship.
- The Romulan commander's discussion with Kirk is awesome.

#### Comments:

The Romulans begin picking off outposts on the Neutral Zone one by one and the Enterprise must investigate. The Romulan weapon is something I wish we'd seen more of later in the show, it must have been some kind of plasma torpedo. Similar to a photon torpedo, but more powerful and with limited range. It does indeed make sense as to why they wouldn't use these in later models of their ship. Their range limit makes them a poor choice for ship to ship combat. In general, this whole episode is like a submarine story. It also gives you a great impression of what the Earth Romulan war was like in the 2100s. Two commanders playing a kind of game of chess with each other without ever seen their respective faces. This gives us an opportunity to develop a type of sympathy and respect for the enemy when we see them in their own ships, which makes the plot more complex and far more interesting than a typical battle which we only see from one side. The final gesture of respect from the Romulan commander in the end was wonderful, and the loss of man that was going to be married at the beginning of this episode was sad, but fitting. All things considered, this episode is one of the finest pieces of writing ever to grace Star Trek.



#### Star Trek TOS - 1x15 - Shore Leave

Originally Aired: 1966-12-29

My Rating - 8

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*On shore leave, the crew's thoughts come to life.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This episode was the perfect choice to air after TOS: Balance of Terror, but first season TOS production order was actually completely different than this. It's just a fluke that in this case it worked out so nicely.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kirk getting a massage from his yeoman, thinking it was Spock.
- McCoy to Sulu, regarding Kirk: "You've got your problems, I've got mine. But he's got ours, plus his, plus 430 people."
- McCoy seeing things from Alice in Wonderland come to life...
- McCoy describing what he saw to Kirk and Kirk believing he was joking.
- Spock maneuvering Kirk into taking some time off.
- McCoy and Kirk joking about the rabbit and reminiscing about Finnegan.
- Finnegan just appearing out of nowhere and starting a fight.
- Sulu's samurai fight.
- McCoy's death.
- Spock and Kirk running through a set of dangerous illusions.
- McCoy's reappearance, in the company of some 23rd century playboy women.

#### Comments:

A funny episode. I enjoyed it right up to the part when Kirk takes pleasure in beating up Finnegan. The only thing wrong with that detail is the timing. McCoy is dead! How could Kirk take pleasure in that after he just lost his best friend? They should have done that scene before McCoy died. Other than that, this episode is great. I adore the ending, the builders of this fantasy world were a fantastic idea.



### **Star Trek TOS - 1x16 - The Galileo Seven**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-1-5

**My Rating -**

**7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Seven Enterprise crew members go on a shuttle mission with Spock in command.*

#### **Problems:**

- Scotty takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

#### **Factoids:**

- The rock prop that fell on Spock's leg was so light that Nimoy actually had to hold it on his leg to make it appear "stuck" there.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk justifying his curiosity to Ferris.
- The shuttle launch. The first time we see one launch!
- Kirk arguing with Ferris over what should and shouldn't have been done and what to do now.
- After realizing they can't take everyone back with them, Spock declares he will decide who goes and who stays behind.
- An alien monster killing one of the crew members.
- Spock freaking out about taking the life of an alien indiscriminately.
- Scotty's idea to rig the phasers as a power source for the shuttle.
- McCoy harping on Spock for making bad decisions.
- Spock: "Strange. Step by step, I've made the correct and logical decisions and yet two men have died!"
- Kirk being forced to abandon the search.
- Spock igniting the fuel in a flare in an attempt to get the Enterprise to notice them.
- Spock, explaining his desperation: "I examined the problem for all angles and it was plainly hopeless. Logic informed me that under the circumstances the only possible action would have to be one of desperation. A logical descision, logically arrived at." Kirk: "Ah hah. I see. You mean you reasoned that it was time for an emotional outburst."

#### **Comments:**

This episode has a nice premise. It's always good to see Spock in a command position. And a shuttle mission had never been done on Star Trek before this episode. So it's entirely original and fun. Unfortunately, we get a lot of killed guest characters again without a particularly good reason. Additionally, I found the desire to perform services for the dead despite the fact that they were working against time, quite idiotic. Despite the fact that the plot is mostly manufactured danger which could have been easily avoided, it is no less thrilling, and I enjoyed the episode.



### **Star Trek TOS - 1x17 - The Squire of Gothos**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-1-12

**My Rating -**

**6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A powerful entity known as Trelane torments the crew of the Enterprise.*

#### **Problems:**

- How could Trelane know of Napoleon if his info on Earth is 900 years out of date? Or Alexander Hamilton? Maybe he just pretended to have out of date info...

#### **Factoids:**

- The Enterprise is said to be 900 light years from Earth in this episode.
- Many fans believe that Trelane is actually a young Q.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trelane's entrance. He's so funny. :)
- Spock to Trelane: "I object to you. I object to intellect without discipline. I object to power without constructive purpose."
- Trelane magically giving Uhura the ability to play a harpsichord.
- Spock: "'Fascinating' is a word I use for the unexpected."
- Kirk dueling Trelane, firing on his machine.

- Kirk arguing with Trelane at his little court.
- Kirk convincing Trelane to be more "sporting".
- Trelane enjoying Kirk's game.
- The revelation that Trelana was just a child.

**Comments:**

Another funny episode. A lot of people like to compare Trelane to a Q, though there are some subtle differences between Trelane and the Q, namely Trelane has weaknesses. Though he may have created a solvable situation for the Enterprise cast to solve just for his own entertainment. The real reason it's questionable Trelane is a Q is that TNG's Q once said that no Q had ever procreated, or at least not in a long time; for Trelane was a child. Of course, their perception of time is easily debatable. With regards to how people treat their pets, this episode is a nice metaphor. The Q do indeed treat humanity and similar species like lower life forms. It was humbling to find out that the all powerful Trelane was but a mere child and made for a nice ending.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x18 - Arena**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-1-19

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk is pitted in a barehanded duel with a Gorn.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Cestus III will be mentioned again as a Federation world in DS9, which means that the Federation managed to hold the world from the Gorn.
- This is the first episode to mention a photon torpedo.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The space race, pushing the warp engines to their limit.
- The Metrons entrance.
- Kirk being transported down with the Gorn.
- Kirk attempting to fight the Gorn strength against strength and utterly failing.
- The Gorn communicating with Kirk.
- Spock figuring out what Kirk is planning and kind of keeping it to himself, much to the annoyance of McCoy.
- Kirk constructing a bamboo cannon. Awesome!
- Kirk firing diamonds into the heart of his enemy.
- Kirk having mercy on his enemy, refusing to deal the final blow.
- Kirk: "We're a most promising species, mister Spock, as predators go. Did you know that?"

**Comments:**

Federation world Cestus III is ambushed by the Gorn. The episode could have served to do better with a more interesting adversary; alien of the week isn't particularly interesting, but the plot definitely is. It's great fun to watch kirk fight the Gorn, and the peaceful ending on all sides is pleasing.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x19 - Tomorrow Is Yesterday**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-1-26

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is thrown back to 20th century Earth.*

**Problems:**

- The pilot beamed off the aircraft shouldn't have been standing upright after transport, for he was sitting in the plane cockpit.

**Factoids:**

- This episode was meant to originally be a follow up to the time warp in TOS: The Naked Time.
- Kirk said in this episode that there are only twelve ships like Enterprise in the fleet at this time.

- The computer voice in this episode is played by Majel Barret, Gene Roddenberry's wife. The first episode of many she plays a computer voice in.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise being chased by US aircraft.
- The look on the pilot's face having been beamed up.
- Spock meeting the pilot.
- The computer being... funny.
- Spock discovering the pilot must be returned to the planet.
- Kirk's interrogation.
- The Air Force sergeant's behavior after having been beamed up.

**Comments:**

The method by which they traveled back in time was good and credible, but the method they used to return is that infamous slingshot effect I hate so much. Once again, the Enterprise gets extremely lucky toying with their primitive and reckless time travel techniques. Despite this, the episode managed to retain a level of humor and excitement to it which I enjoyed.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 1x20 - Court Martial**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-2-2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk is recalled for a potential court-martial.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The frantic girl accusing Kirk of murdering her father.
- McCoy, to a beautiful woman: "All of my old friends look like doctors. All of Kirk's look like you."
- Kirk getting pissed at the Commodore for implying Kirk just take this lying down; just sweep it under the rug.
- Kirk flirting with his old friend while she's trying to give him legal advice, only to find out she's going to be the prosecution.
- Samuel T. Cogley, 23rd century's biggest luddite. Funny guy.
- Spock's initial testimony.
- Kirk to Spock: "Who knows, maybe you'll be able to beat your next captain and Chess."
- The girl apologizing to Kirk for her hostility.
- McCoy: "Spock, you're the most cold blooded man I know." Spock: "Why thank you, doctor."
- Spock beating the computer at Chess, discovering the computer had been tampered with.
- Cogley's seemingly absurd testimony.
- McCoy using the amplified sound of heartbeats to prove there is still another person hiding on the ship.
- Finney's appearance.

**Comments:**

I liked Samuel T. Cogley, an old fashioned man who still uses books in a world where computers are everywhere. Not that I'd like the man much if I met him in real life, but he makes for an interesting story element in this episode. Frankly, Cogley is cooler than the actual plot, Finney's motives in this episode are totally unclear. What was he trying to accomplish? Maybe he was a complete psycho or something. Nevertheless, the methods of proving Kirks innocence were innovative and enjoyable to watch.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x21 - The Return of the Archons**

**My Rating -**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-2-9

**2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew finds a world run by a computer named Landru.*



**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The starship Archon disappeared on this planet 100 years ago.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The festival of violence. Nothing like a healthy bit of anarchy.
- The instant the clock chimes the violence either starts up or completely stops. Hilarious.
- Kirk telling the computer to destroy itself.

**Comments:**

Incredibly dull plot, one of many "computer controls a society" plots to come. The biggest problem with this episode was that the only interesting part was revelation that a computer was controlling the entire society. By the time this is revealed, there's nothing left to do with this revelation except destroy the computer to save the zombie society. To me, the episode seems like a waste of time. It's not particularly bad, but not anywhere near good either. I give it points for effort at least.

**Star Trek TOS - 1x22 - Space Seed**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-2-16

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk meets Khan, a leader of Earth's Eugenics War.*

**Problems:**

- While I love McCoy's aversion to the transporter, it slightly contradicts earlier episodes when he used it without complaint. It's not a major problem, but it is a small plot hole.
- This episode will be contradicted by TNG and all of later Star Trek. The Eugenics war was not Earth's last "world war". There will in fact be another one deep into the 21st century which will be designated the third world war.

**Factoids:**

- A sequel to this episode was written in the form of one of the most famous Star Trek movies, Star Trek II: The Wrath of Khan.
- This episode establishes that the mid 1990s was the era of Earth's last "world war" according to Spock; the Eugenics war. This episode also clearly implies that the Eugenics war and WWII were the same war.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy is the first person to display fear of the transporter on TOS.
- Kirk saving Khan's life while he was frozen aboard the old ship. A decision he will come to regret.
- McCoy, just after Khan grabs his neck and puts a knife to it: "Well either choke me or cut my throat, make up your mind!"
- McCoy: "It would be most effective if you would cut the corroded artery just under the left ear."
- Khan and Spock debating the morals of Eugenics.
- Khan's behavior at the dinner.
- Khan manipulating McGiver.
- Kirk, Scotty, and McCoy briefly admiring Khan in his historical context.
- Khan, surprised how little man has evolved since his century despite the technological improvements.
- Khan acquiring his freedom.
- Khan conquering the Enterprise.
- Kirk and Spock ambushing one of Khan's men at the decompression chamber.
- Kirk's fight with Khan.
- Kirk dropping the charges on Khan and McGiver and offering to let them settle on Ceti Alpha V.
- Kirk: "A statement Lucifer made when he fell to the pit: 'It is better to rule in hell than to serve in heaven.'"

**Comments:**

This episode is fantastic. Khan is one of the best villains ever to grace TOS. The Eugenics war is something I wish we could have seen more of in Star Trek or at least, and especially, heard much

more about. This episode begins the long Star Trek history of fragmentary and somewhat contradictory tidbits of information being given to us about the Eugenics war. For once I found the blatant sexism in this episode appropriate, for Khan is many women's dream guy. A super strong and dominating man; McGiver immediately falls for him, slipping into helpless little girl mode. Sure it's stereotypical, but in this case more convincing than usual. Even better, the ending. This episode stands strong even if we forget about the timeless movie made as its sequel. Kirk once again demonstrates the great ideals of Star Trek by sparing Khan and allowing him a planet all to himself to conquer. A mutual respect between them is created, which I'm sure is maintained for a long time. I like Khan better in this episode than in the movie even, because in this episode he's not a psychotic maniac, whereas in STII, he seems to have lost his mind. One of TOS' most memorable episodes.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 1x23 - A Taste of Armageddon**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-2-27

**My Rating -**  
**4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is diverted by two planets fighting a computerized war.*

**Problems:**

- How can the Enterprise be attacked by "sonic" weapons through the vacuum of space, in which no sound can travel?

**Factoids:**

- The USS Valiant was lost at this planet.  
- This is the first episode to solidify the term "United Federation of Planets", a trend which I much enjoy as opposed to the often popular TOS term "United Earth" or just "Earth".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The revelation that the war on this planet is a computer simulation and that people are executed on each side, like some sort of a lethal game.  
- Spock: "Sir, there's a multilegged creature crawling on your shoulder."  
- Scotty: "The best diplomat I know is a fully activated phaser bank."  
- Scotty refusing the moron diplomat's orders.  
- Kirk destroying the "war computer".  
- Kirk: "I've given you back the horrors of war."  
- Kirk convincing Anan to open peace talks with his enemy.

**Comments:**

The premise of this episode, while interesting, is a bit incredible. I don't see how any sane civilization would just "volunteer" casualties like this. Though it's no more hard to believe than the fact that this completely alien race looks exactly like humans. They've had pretty good excuses so far, but not this time. Additionally, we once again have an annoying, completely useless high ranking Federation official as a guest on board the Enterprise who arrogantly attempts to call the shots. Despite the failings of the plot in this episode, the ending is true to the spirit of Star Trek. Kirk's actions are a bit shady in terms of violating the prime directive, but as Kirk said, "it was a calculated risk." In this case the ends seem to have justified the means.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 1x24 - This Side of Paradise**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-3-2

**My Rating**  
**- 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise visits a colony where indigenous flower spores provide the settlers with peaceful contentment.*

**Problems:**

- Sulu takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

- When asked for his full name by Leila, Spock answers, "you couldn't pronounce it." Seems all Vulcans do indeed have multipart names like humans, but casually shorten it so that other species can interact with them.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock hanging from a tree.
- Kirk getting pissed at all the "infected" crewmen.
- Kirk alone on his bridge.
- Kirk insulting Spock.
- Kirk: "Maybe we weren't meant for Paradise. Maybe we were meant to fight our way through, struggle, claw our way up, scratch for every inch of the way. Maybe we can't stroll to music of the lute, we must march to the sound of drums."
- Spock: "For the first time in my life, I was happy."

**Comments:**

Another luddite Earth colony. This annoys me, though there's no reason it couldn't exist, in fact, it's likely that it would. It seems the more technology grows, the less some people want to use it. It is easily conceivable that the Federation would allow colonies to live this way and protect them. That said, this episode offers very little in terms of actual plot, we just get to see the main cast run around doing crazy things. It offers some decent character development for Kirk and Spock, but not much else. This episode is highly filler. Entertaining indeed, especially with regards to Spock being funny and Kirk attempting to anger Spock. But beyond that, rather unimpressive.

**Star Trek TOS - 1x25 - The Devil in the Dark**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-3-9

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An unknown monster threatens a mining operation.*

**Problems:**

- Kirk takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

- This episode firmly establishes that mind melds can be performed without touch but are more successful with touch. This was hinted at in a combination of earlier episodes, but this episode is the best solid evidence.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock proposing that the monster might be a silicon based and McCoy's reaction.
- The silicon based life form. That thing looks hilarious. TOS has always had rather bad visual effects, even for its time, and this is certainly no exception, but this time in a very good way.
- Spock proposing the silicon based life form is the last of its kind and that they should protect it at all costs.
- Spock: "The creature is in your area, take a life form reading." Kirk: "That's not necessary Mr. Spock, I know exactly where the creature is." Spock: "Where, captain?" Kirk: "10 feet away from me."
- Kirk hesitating to kill the creature.
- Kirk's mind meld with the silicon life form.
- McCoy's reaction to seeing Spock mind melding with the silicon life form.
- McCoy: "I'm a doctor, not a bricklayer!" Count 2 for "I'm a doctor, not a..." lines.
- McCoy: "By golly Jim, I'm beginning to think I can cure a rainy day!"

**Comments:**

A silicon based life form is a fantastic idea because silicon and carbon share many chemical properties. Silicon based life forms will appear in many future Star Trek episodes as well, and rightly so, because as I said, it's fantastic idea! This episode is cool as it advocates the preservation of life, no matter how alien. Of course, the silicon life form threatens the colony as well. So a dangerous balancing game had to be played which led this to be an exciting episode, especially toward the end. Spock's performance during the mind meld was convincing and well done. McCoy's aversion the silicon life form was believable and excellent contrast to Kirk and Spock's desire to help. Only the miners were annoying, and only for a short time. I'm just glad they didn't conceal the knowledge of the natural life on this planet or something. The innocence is far more convincing and enjoyable to watch. I also like Kirk's "treaty" idea. Overall, a fine a TOS episode.



**Star Trek TOS - 1x26 - Errand of Mercy**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-3-23

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kirk and Spock battle Klingons to free Organia.*

**Problems:**

- Regarding the Klingon Forehead "problem", see the Factoids section.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature the Klingons.
- The Klingon Kor in this episode will return in DS9 as a very, very old man.
- This episode marks the first chronological appearance of the Klingons since they were "afflicted" in Ent: Affliction. We see a large number of Klingons in this episode, all of which have no forehead ridges. This establishes that by this time period, the ridgeless Klingons have achieved a high status in the Empire. Perhaps they retained some of the enhanced physical qualities of the Augments?

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise attacked by a Klingon ship and destroying it.
- Kirk describing the horrors of the Klingon Empire to the Organians.
- Kor's appearance.
- Spock passing the Klingon's lie detector, even though Spock was lying.
- Kirk and Kor's discussion.
- Kirk: "Gentlemen, I have no great love for you, your planet, your culture. Despite that, Mr. Spock and I are going to go out there and quite probably die in an attempt to show you that there are some things worth dying for."
- Kirk: "What would you say the odds are on our getting out of here?" Spock: "Difficult to be precise, captain. I should say approximately 7824.7 to 1." Kirk: "Difficult to be precise? 7824 to 1?" Spock: "7824.7 to 1." Kirk: "That's a pretty close approximation." Spock: "I endeavor to be accurate." Kirk: "You do quite well."
- Kirk, after infiltrating the Klingon base: "Well, what are the odds now?" Spock: "Less than 7000 to 1, captain. It's remarkable we've gotten this far." Kirk: "Less than 7000 to 1. Well, getting better. Getting better."
- The Organians stopping the fight between the Klingons and the Federation.
- Kirk and Kor arguing with each other.
- Kirk realizing he was arguing in favor of war.
- The Organians telling Kirk and Kor that in the future the Klingons and The Federation would become friends. They weren't predicting this, they were TELLING them this.
- Kor briefly proposing to work together with Kirk to defeat the Organians.

**Comments:**

The Klingon Empire goes to war with the Federation! Though briefly. Once again, we have an alien race that looks exactly like humans, though we could rationalize this by saying, well, the Organians turn out to be pure energy life forms in the end. They may have made themselves "look" like humans when the Federation people arrived. Most annoying is it seems the Federation was willing to throw away the Prime Directive and advance an at the time seemingly primitive society. Even though they turn out to be even more advanced than either the Federation or the Klingons. I liked the Organians' completely nonchalant way of dealing with what seemed like their impending doom even though it kind of gave away the fact that they were more than what they seemed. The best part of this episode is the end when the Organians tell Kirk and Kor that the Klingons and the Federation will become friends. More than a prophecy, the Organians knew this would happen. And indeed it did. Though, there will be many more hostilities between the Klingon Empire and the Federation before that takes place. The Organians don't stop any more battles...



**Star Trek TOS - 1x27 - The Alternative Factor**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-3-30

**My Rating - 0**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*An alien being fights himself between two realities.*

**Problems:**

- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial Units...
- This entire episode's premise is a technical problem. Totally absurd.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Worst Episode of TOS Award" and is also the winner of my "Worst Episode Ever Award".
- This episode establishes that there are at least 431 people aboard the Enterprise at this time.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Just when you think the technobabble and bad science can't get any worse, it gets worse. All through the episode.

**Comments:**

Terrible. Utterly bad. This episode improperly uses parallel universes, time travel, dilithium crystals, and antimatter all at once! The general idea behind this episode is a good one, that two men identical to each other who learn of each others existence would try to destroy the other. But while the idea is good, the implementation is totally absurd. If I had to pick the worst episode of Star Trek I've ever seen, this would be it.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 1x28 - The City on the Edge of Forever**      **My Rating - 7**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-4-6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kirk and Spock go back in time to save McCoy.*

**Problems:**

- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

- This episode won the 1968 Hugo Award for Best Dramatic Presentation.
- This episode is often regarded by fans as the best of TOS and even the best of all the Star Trek shows.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The look on Sulu's face when he was injected with Cordrazine.
- Kirk and Spock questioning the Guardian of Forever.
- McCoy destroying history.
- Kirk trying to explain Spock to the police officer.
- Edith Keeler's speech about hope.
- Spock discovering that Edith Keeler may be supposed to die.
- McCoy on a rampage.
- Spock proving Edith Keeler must indeed die.
- McCoy: "I'm a surgeon, not a psychiatrist." Count 3 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.
- Edith Keeler's death; Kirk restraining himself from saving her.

**Comments:**

This is a truly great episode, though I must confess largely overrated. It deserves its high rating because the cast puts up some wonderful acting, better than usual, and the issue of whether to save Keeler is captivating. My favorite part of the episode is Spock describing what would happen if Keeler lives, closely seconded by the part where Kirk holds back McCoy from saving her. The thing that really gets your head spinning is how Keeler died. She died crossing the street, trying to find out what Kirk, McCoy, and Spock (well maybe not Spock...) were all so happy about. Thus, they are the direct cause of her death! I also like Spock's implication that Keeler should have died falling down the stairs, even though the papers said she died in a traffic accident. This shows that the minute they arrived, history had changed, Keeler was doomed again. She died by breaking her neck before, but once the main cast arrived, she was given a new death. Kind of morbid, I know, but fascinating. Unfortunately, despite its greatness what I mark this episode down for is how careless it is with the technical issues. What is this Guardian of Forever doing on this planet? Why is it there? Why do we never see it again (beyond TAS: Yesteryear)? We deserved an explanation and we never got one. All in all a grand episode, even though I don't particularly like it as much as other fans.

---



**Star Trek TOS - 1x29 - Operation: Annihilate!**  
Originally Aired: 1967-4-13

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew saves Deneva from deadly parasites.*

**Problems:**

- The only girl in the landing party early on in this episode also happened to be the only person without a phaser. This reeks of blatant sexism.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Vulcans have an inner eyelid to protect them from extreme brightness.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise flying too close to a sun.
- Kirk losing his brother.
- The landing party engaging the parasites.
- Spock getting messed up by the parasite.
- Spock on a rampage.
- Spock resisting the creature with his Vulcan discipline.
- Kirk proposing that radiating the parasites is the answer based on the incident at the beginning.
- Kirk discovering that light is the answer.
- Spock volunteering to be blinded.
- Spock's reaction to becoming blind.
- Kirk, McCoy, and Spock joking around in the end.

**Comments:**

It's interesting to see how different Kirk acts when it's his family in the line of fire and not some random guest, or even his senior officers. Additionally, this episode features a clever way to feature alien of the week in human form, they're parasites! They invade human bodies on human colonies. While I know this is already fast becoming a cliché, I particularly liked it in this episode because the alien of the week in this particular episode was unique and in fact even cooler than later attempts to do similar things in other Trek shows. Granted, they probably had to fork over some cash to make the giant alien brain cell props, but I imagine that was pretty low budget too. That said, the general progression of this episode is quite intelligently done. In the beginning we see a ship fly into the sun so that the bright light can kill the parasites within him. Kirk deduces later on in the show using this event that the parasites are weak against solar radiation. When that fails they don't give up, but try using light. Then they blind Spock, which is both funny and disturbing. You feel bad for him, even though, and perhaps especially because he's taking it so well. Then to make it even worse, McCoy discovers that the visible light wasn't what was necessary to kill the parasite! So Spock is blinded needlessly. Finally, at the last moment, Spock reveals the details surrounding his inner eyelid to us. He was only temporarily blinded. This episode wonderfully successfully integrates a common sci fi topic with adventure, danger, and humor. A good send off for the first season.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x01 - Amok Time**  
Originally Aired: 1967-9-15

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock undergoes the Vulcan mating ceremony.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- They changed the opening theme for season 2 slightly.
- This episode marks the first appearance of Pavel A. Chekov as a regular guest playing the navigator. The actor who played Sulu resented the addition of Chekov as he felt it weakened his character's role in the show, but later they became great friends.
- This episode establishes that the Enterprise can do "Warp 8 or better" under extreme

circumstances. This is up from Warp 7 in the first season.

- This episode marks the first appearance of the Pon Farr and our first sight of the Vulcan homeworld. This episode also establishes that Vulcan marriages are often pre arranged at a young age.
- This episode marks the beginning of the T'VulcanCharacterName tradition (cliche?). This episode features a T'Pring, and a T'Pau.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy describing Spock's behavior, then actually seeing Spock freak out at Nurse Chapel.
- Sulu and Chekov discussing the abrupt course changes.
- Spock: "How do Vulcans choose their mates? Have you ever wondered?" Kirk: "I guess the rest of us just assumed it was done... quite logically!"
- Spock bashing his computer monitor. The effect was cheap and cheezy, but still hilarious.
- T'Pau's appearance: the most important Vulcan in existence. She is the first to use the famous Vulcan hand gesture, splitting her hand into the shape of a V.
- Kirk offering to fight Spock to save his life from one of the superior full Vulcans.
- Kirk and Spock fighting.
- Spock "killing" Kirk.
- T'Pring explaining her motives for the challenge.
- Spock and T'Pau to each other: "Live long and prosper."
- Spock's reaction to seeing Kirk alive and well. Gotta love that brief smile.

#### **Comments:**

The thing no non Vulcan may know... the Pon Farr! This classic episode is the first to demonstrate its (quite literally) maddening effects on Vulcans. It's a sort of funny tradition that the various Vulcans in Star Trek should have their Pon Farr at bad times which creates embarrassing situations for them. This episode strikes me as extremely well written; I like the way it weaves the Pon Farr and Spock's ties to Vulcan together all at once. There's a sense of confusion throughout the episode as to why there must be a fight, but the explanation T'Pring gives at the end is wonderful. Granted, it was fairly obvious the captain was not really going to die, it takes none of the excitement away from the episode because moments where the audience is supposed to believe the captain is dead are short lived. Well done.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x02 - Who Mourns for Adonais?**  
Originally Aired: 1967-9-22

**My Rating - 2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Enterprise is held captive by the Greek god Apollo.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk and McCoy making fun of Scotty.
- Scotty fighting for his girl! In vain though.
- The landing party rebelling against Apollo.

#### **Comments:**

Another super being. Another Enterprise being held hostage plot. Another guest woman who falls for the arrogant villain; more blatant sexism. Another solution gained by destroying a magical power source. One thing I do like about this episode is the implication that the Greek gods were really ancient space travelers toying with Earth's culture. This is a kind of slap in the face to religion, which Star Trek will repeat over and over again for decades.

---



**Star Trek TOS - 2x03 - The Changeling**  
Originally Aired: 1967-9-29

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Enterprise encounters a probe named Nomad.*

**Problems:**

- I find it hard to believe that the Enterprise can withstand blasts equivalent to 90 photon torpedoes.

**Factoids:**

- Spock mentions that the energy following them was traveling at warp 15. The Enterprise also travels past warp 10 as well. Many people mention this as a technical problem, but in fact TOS used a different warp scale than TNG and later. TOS simply used multiples of C whereas TNG used an asymptotical curve where warp 1 is perhaps  $C * 2$  (similar to TOS) and warp 10 is infinite speed.  
- This episode's plot is extremely similar to Star Trek I: The Motion Picture.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nomad thinking Kirk is its creator because he's from Earth and his last name is the same as the creator.  
- Nomad killing Scotty and wiping Uhura's memory.  
- McCoy: "He's dead, Jim." Count 3.  
- Spock: "That 'unit' is a woman." Nomad: "A mass of conflicting impulses."  
- Nomad "repairing" Scott.  
- Uhura's reeducation.  
- Spock's mind meld with Nomad.  
- Nomad enhancing the warp engines.  
- Kirk talking Nomad to death.

**Comments:**

This episode features some questionable plot logic, such as Nomad's fixation on Kirk because of the same last name, its ability to become superior to what it was after a terrible accident, it's inverting of its mission; sterilizing people instead of biological samples, Spock's mind meld with a machine, or Nomad's magical enhancements to the warp engines; allowing it many times their maximum warp factor just by reconfiguring a few controls. None of these things are particularly impossible, but all of them require a bit of rationalization, which the audience shouldn't have to do. Also, once again, Kirk talks a computer to death and once again several redshirts die. All that said, this really is a fine episode; questionable plot logic and cliches notwithstanding I found the episode entertaining and even at times thrilling.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x04 - Mirror, Mirror**  
Originally Aired: 1967-10-6

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kirk, Scott, McCoy and Uhura enter a parallel universe.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which the mirror universe is shown to us. It won't be shown to us again until DS9.  
- Evil Spock predicts the Earth Empire would fall within 240 years.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The transition into the mirror universe.  
- I love the new militant look on board the Evil Enterprise.  
- The ruthless Spock.  
- Evil Checkov betraying the captain.  
- Good McCoy: "I'm a doctor, not an engineer!" Count 4, for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.



- The computer telling Good Kirk he succeeded to command the Enterprise through the assassination of former captian Christopher Pike.
- Evil landing party in good universe.
- Evil Spock threatening evil Sulu.
- Evil Spock taking on the entire landing party.
- Evil Spock mind melding with good McCoy.
- Good Uhura disabling evil Kirk's girlfriend.
- Evil Spock, a man of integrity in both universes.
- Good Kirk trying to convince Evil Spock to lead a revolution against the Earth Empire.
- McCoy, regarding Spock: "I liked him better with the beard. It gave him character."

**Comments:**

Another race that looks exactly like humans, on the planet. Thankfully we see very little of them, for this episode explores the classic mirror universe. Indeed, this episode presents a convincing mirror universe, one which is explored later in greater detail in DS9 and eventually Enterprise. The idea that one inverse universe can be parallel with its counterpart is kind of hard to grasp, but presents a decent premise and explanation for why the two universes can encounter crossover so often. The other thing I liked about the episode is the decent amount of foreshadowing in which Spock predicts the Earth Empire will one day fall and a revolution will form. It's also fun to see all the differences between the evil and good universes. The behavior of the evil characters in the evil universe is well done, and the subtle differences in the set and props are also well done. Overall a very memorable TOS episode.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x05 - The Apple**

**My Rating - 2**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-10-13

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew discovers a paradise controlled by computer.*

**Problems:**

- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock's exploding rocks.
- Kirk: "A garden of Eden with landmines!"
- Spock getting shot by thorns to save Kirk.
- Spock getting zapped by a forcefield.
- McCoy, regarding the forbidding of sex on this world: "Well, there goes paradise."
- Spock getting struck by lightning.

**Comments:**

This episode is great if you like watching redshirts die en masse. Certainly the exploration of a "real life" garden of Eden is interesting, but this episode arrogantly tramples all over the prime directive. This is not necessarily a technical problem though as Star Trek captains disregard the prime directive many times because they feel their actions are more moral or are special exceptions to the rule. The very concept annoys me, for the prime directive should usually be upheld at all costs. Granted I've seen episodes where I agree with the disregarding of the prime directive because the ends justify the means. This isn't one of them.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x06 - The Doomsday Machine**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-10-20

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A machine that destroys planets threatens the Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

- Why does the captain of the Consellation hold the rank of Commodore and not Captain?
- Decker and Sulu take measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

- Uhura is remarkably absent from this episode.
- This is the first time we get to see another Constitution class ship.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the crippled vessel Constellation.
- The freaked out Matt Decker.
- The revelation that the entire crew of the Constellation was destroyed by the planet eating machine.
- McCoy: "I'm a doctor, not a mechanic!" Count 5 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.
- Kirk's speculation about the purpose of the planet eating machine.
- Spock's calm and logical refuting of the Decker's argument, then doing his duty and giving up command despite the fact that Decker's decision was wrong.
- The Enterprise engaging the planet eating machine.
- Kirk to Decker: "You're the lunatic who's responsible for almost destroying my ship?!"
- Spock taking command.
- Spock: "Vulcans never bluff."
- Decker's battle with the redshirt.
- Decker plunging himself into the planet eating machine.
- Kirk regarding plunging the Constellation into the planet eating monster: "I'm gonna ram her right down that thing's throat!"
- The Constellation exploding inside the planet eating machine.
- Spock, regarding the planet eating machine: "It's quite dead."

**Comments:**

An exciting episode; two captains exchange ships and the Enterprise flies into a battle it can't win. Then, realizing he was wrong, Decker commits suicide in a vain attempt to go down in a blaze of glory destroying the planet eating machine. Realizing that Decker had the right idea but not enough power, Kirk plunges Decker's crippled ship into the mouth of the planet eating machine, destroying it once and for all in a massive thermonuclear explosion. This episode from beginning to end is exciting and fun to watch. One of TOS' best.

**Star Trek TOS - 2x07 - Catspaw**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-10-27

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Aliens on a mission of conquest hold the crew captive.*

**Problems:**

- The aliens in their real form were puppets, and the strings were very easy to see...

**Factoids:**

- This episode was intended as Star Trek's contribution to Halloween.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk, regarding the witches: "Spock, comment?" Spock: "Very bad poetry, captian."
- Kirk seducing Sylvia.
- Kirk, Spock, and Korob being chased by the giant cat.
- Kirk destroying the alien illusion device.

**Comments:**

The Squire of Gothos + Return of the Archons = Catspaw. Yet another super alien that captures the crew and demands something absurd. The only interesting part about this episode is the point of contention between the two bad guys. One is pure evil (the woman) and one is only partially evil (the guy). It's also fun, albeit cliched, to watch Kirk seduce Sylvia. Finally, the fact that these super aliens were actually little blue things was also pretty interesting. Unfortunately, it's the same basic recycled plot, and the super aliens needlessly die in the end. Not a particularly terrible episode, but definitely sub average.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x08 - I, Mudd**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-11-3

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A takeover leads Kirk to his old nemesis, Harry Mudd.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- Harry Mudd in this episode is a recurring character, first introduced in TOS: Mudd's Women.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Mudd's appearance.  
- Mudd: "Knowledge, sir, should be free to all."  
- Androids: "Why... should we... leave you?" Kirk, mimicking: "Because... we don't... like you!"  
- The various crewmembers being enticed into staying.  
- The crew acting ridiculous.

**Comments:**  
Once again we have androids trying to acquire power, and once again Kirk talks a computer to death. That said, this, the second installment of the adventures of Harry Mudd is quite a bit more successful, and funny. Mudd's lines are better constructed this time around and even the androids are both interesting and funny. I found this episode thoroughly entertaining, if not particularly profound.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x09 - Metamorphosis**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-11-10

**My Rating  
- 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The shuttlecraft Galileo makes a forced landing on a world with a single human inhabitant.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- This is the first episode the famous figure Zefram Cochrane, the inventor of warp drive, is mentioned in.  
- Kirk's statement "Zefram Cochrane of Alpha Centuri?" has long been interpreted to mean that Zefram Cochrane's home planet was Alpha Centuri, but this is not the case.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Cochrane's appearance.  
- McCoy, regarding Cochrane: "Talks a lot, but doesn't say much."  
- The revelation of who Cochrane really is.  
- Kirk enticing Cochrane to rejoin the universe.  
- McCoy: "I'm not a scientist or a physicist, Mr. Spock..." Count 6 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.  
- Kirk conspiring to attack Cochrane's companion.  
- Kirk negotiating with the companion.  
- Cochrane agreeing to stay with his now in human form companion.

**Comments:**  
Many insults are thrown at this episode for having a decent premise but a poor implementation, though I disagree. Granted, I tend to on average rate TOS episodes lower than other Trek series, this episode strikes me as severely underrated. The cast stumbles on Zefram Cochrane, the inventor of warp drive! A man thought to be long dead, kept alive by a non corporeal alien who fell in love with him. Unlike many other episodes which attempt similar stories, this episode credibly explores the concept of immortality, eternal captivity, and inter species love. The companion inhabiting Nancy Hedford's body is ethically questionable, but Nancy seemed to be all for it, so it can be dismissed as voluntary. Granted, it would have been more credible if Cochrane and Nancy

had decided to leave that planet, it is decidedly understandable that Cochrane would want to avoid fame. A wonderful episode and thoroughly underrated by most fans I've met.



---

### **Star Trek TOS - 2x10 - Journey to Babel**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-11-17

**My Rating**

**- 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Tensions run high when the Enterprise transports ambassadors to the Babel Conferences.*

#### **Problems:**

- The Andorian's clothes were hardly practical for that fight...

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature Spock's parents, Andorians, and Tellarites.
- This episode further establishes that humans have lots of trouble pronouncing Vulcan last names. This detail was first mentioned in TOS: This Side of Paradise.
- This is one of many episodes to establish that Vulcans have extreme longevity.
- This episode establishes that Spock had a pet Selat when he was a child. It also briefly describes what a Selat looks like. We won't, however, get to see one for quite some time.
- This episode establishes that heart surgery is still difficult in this century. Something will be perfected by the 2300s.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy can't do the Vulcan salute. :)
- Spock revealing that Sarek and his wife are his parents.
- Sarek: "Tellarites do not argue for reasons, they simply argue."
- Spock, regarding his Selat: "On Vulcan, the teddy bears are alive and they have six-inch fangs."
- The scene where Amanda pleads with Spock to save his father's life.
- Kirk retaking command despite his injury just to get Spock to leave the bridge and save his father.
- The Andorian losing an antenna.
- Amanda: "Logic, logic! I'm sick to death of logic. Do you want to know how I feel about your logic?" Spock: "Emotional, isn't she?" Sarek: "She has always been that way." Spock: "Indeed. Why did you marry her?" Sarek: "At the time, it seemed the logical thing to do."
- Kirk, regarding having both Spock and Kirk in his sickbay at the same time: "Dr. McCoy, I believe you're enjoying all this." Spock: "Indeed, captain. I've never seen him look so happy." McCoy: "Shut up!" A long silence ensues. McCoy: "Well what do you know, I finally got the last word!"

#### **Comments:**

This episode is an unexpected overdose! There are so many interesting details about the Federation and Spock's family in this episode, a mysterious alien ship, and a bunch of murder plots on board! I loved the super fast alien ship that they couldn't land any shots on, and I love how Kirk plays dead with the ship to defeat it. Journey to Babel is a wild ride and an extremely good episode, especially for TOS standards. One of its advantages is its heavy use of multiple plot threads, which is something TOS did rarely. I wish there were more episodes like this one in TOS.



---

### **Star Trek TOS - 2x11 - Friday's Child**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-12-1

**My Rating**

**- 2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew becomes embroiled in a local power struggle on a tribal planet.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- A redshirt whips out his phaser when he sees a Klingon and is instantly killed. Huge cliché. Though absurdly funny in this case.

- McCoy and Eileen slapping each other.
- McCoy: "I'm a doctor, not a escalator!" Count 7 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.
- Kirk and Spock constructing and wielding bows and arrows.

**Comments:**

One thing I like about this episode is how much an expert on the aliens of the week McCoy is. One thing I don't like is that the aliens look exactly like humans, albeit mostly taller. Another thing I don't like is how the entire plot seemed like manufactured danger. It was obvious from the beginning that the distress call the Enterprise recieved was a fake and served only to make Scotty look like a fool. An episode which started out with a decent premise got ruined by bad storytelling.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x12 - The Deadly Years**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-12-8

**My Rating -**  
**2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Accelerated aging affects the senior officers and threatens Kirk's ability to lead.*

**Problems:**

- Kirk takes measurements in English Imperial Units...
- McCoy's miracle cure is absurd. We can rationalize by saying the disease only looked like aging, but the audience shouldn't have to come up with this stuff.

**Factoids:**

- This episode further confirms that Vulcans have a much higher lifespan than humans.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chekov moaning about his medical adventures: "Give us some more blood, Chekov. The needle won't hurt, Chekov. Take off your shirt, Chekov. Roll over, Chekov. Breath deeply, Chekov. Blood sample, Chekov. Marrow sample, Chekov. Skin sample, Chekov. If I live long enough, I'm going to run out of samples!"
- Kirk's senile behavior.
- McCoy: "I'm not a magician, Spock, just an old country doctor!" Count 8 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.
- Kirk pulling the corbomite maneuver.

**Comments:**

The first of many miracle cure episodes, complete with the reversal of the aging process! Another high ranking Federation official guest who shows up and causes a bunch of trouble. Another time when Kirk has to clean up the mess the high ranking Federation official makes. The only redeeming quality of this episode is Kirk pulling his corbomite maneuver again. A nice nod to continuity and a nice twist to a meager plot.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x13 - Obsession**  
**Originally Aired:** 1967-12-15

**My Rating -**  
**3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk is determined to hunt down a vampiric entity he failed to destroy in his past.*

**Problems:**

- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial Units...
- Spock claims that an ounce of antimatter exploded will destroy a planet's atmosphere. This is incorrect. The actual yield would be no more than the atomic bombs that destroyed Hiroshima and Nagasaki.

**Factoids:**

- Vulcan blood is based on copper, not iron.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk chastising his newly promoted ensign for his poor performance.
- McCoy and Spock confronting Kirk about his obsession and Kirk handling it candidly.
- Nurse Chapel lying about McCoy's orders.

- Scotty: "Captain, thank heaven!" Spock: "Mr Scott, there was no deity involved. It was my cross-circuiting to B that recovered them." McCoy: "Well then, thank pitchforks and pointed ears."

**Comments:**

This episode once again makes the redshirts look like a bunch of morons, especially in the teaser where that one redshirt had more than enough time to fire his phaser on the cloud vampire. And again, the newly promoted redshirt is "startled" and doesn't fire in time. This can be dismissed largely because Spock said himself that even if they had fired on time it wouldn't have made a difference, but the whole hesitation thing was largely unnecessary. Only Kirk's self doubt was credible and interesting; though the entire episode was stretched out too far. Captain Kirk meets Moby Dick is a fine idea for an episode; a shame it wasn't better done.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x14 - Wolf in the Fold**

**My Rating - 1**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-12-22

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Scotty is implicated in a Jack the Ripper-style murder.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy: "She's dead, Jim." Counts 4, 5, and 6 all in this episode!
- Spock: "Humans and humanoids make up only a small percentage of the life forms we know of."
- Sulu all drugged up.
- Spock ordering the computer to compute Pi to the last digit.
- The entire crew drugged, in the end.

**Comments:**

It's completely incredible that Jack the Ripper was in fact an immortal alien who fed off death. The entire plot of this episode is weak and silly, only small moments of intelligence and humor make it worth watching.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x15 - The Trouble With Tribbles**

**My Rating**

**Originally Aired:** 1967-12-29

**- 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is overrun by furry creatures while tangling with Klingons and bureaucrats.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- An homage to this episode appears in DS9: Trials and Tribble-ations.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk: "How close will we come to the nearest Klingon outpost if we continue on our present course?" Chekov: "One parsec, sir. Close enough to smell them!" Spock: "That is illogical, ensign. Odors cannot travel through the vacuum of space." Chekov: "I was making a little joke, sir." Spock: "Extremely little, ensign."
- Kirk: "I have never questioned the orders or the intelligence of any representative of the Federation. Until now."
- Everyone falling in love with tribbles.
- The Klingon's reaction to the tribble.
- Scotty starting a fight with the Klingon.
- Scotty explaining why he started the fight to Kirk.
- Tribbles overinfesting the Enterprise.
- Kirk buried in tribbles.

- Kirk trying to figure out where the tribbles are and everyone on the bridge avoiding his question.

**Comments:**

This has to be the best example of TOS combining humor with a generally interesting plot. In fact, this is one of the funniest episodes of Star Trek I've ever seen. Some great little details, everyone knows what quadrotriticale is except Kirk. Chekov makes several grandiose statements about Russia. Such as Sherman's planet being discovered by Russians, quadrotriticale being a Russian invention, and Scotch being invented "by a little old lady in Leningrad." The way Kirk resolves the situation in this episode is just beautiful. The episode starts off with Kirk not caring one bit about the K7 mission, and ends with his accidental uncovering and solving of a hidden plot to poison the quadrotriticale by the Klingons! Hilarious. A classic.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x16 - The Gamesters of Triskelion**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-1-5

**My Rating**

**- 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Three disembodied beings wager on fights staged by prisoners abducted from around the galaxy.*

**Problems:**

- Kirk takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk as target practice.
- Shahna: "I could someone live on a flicker of light?"
- Kirk: "A species that enslaves other beings is hardly superior, mentally or otherwise."
- Kirk's battle three against one.
- Kirk: "Scotty! Beam us up." Probably the closest line ever uttered that resembles the famous, much parodied, but never spoken "beam me up, Scotty!" line.

**Comments:**

Once again, the cast is captured for the enjoyment of their captors. One difference is instead of Kirk, Spock, and McCoy being captured, it's Kirk, Uhura, and Chekov. Though, in the end, it ended up being a rehash of TOS: Arena, where the ship's crew's fate is decided by an unfair fight Kirk must participate in. Complete with getting to watch it on the viewscreen again! Fortunately, the three brains controlling the whole fiasco didn't turn out to be another computer for Kirk to talk to death again, even if there are some remarkably annoying parallels. One thing I did like about them was that they honored their word when they lost the bet. Something they really didn't have to do. Beyond that the plot of this episode is largely boring, predictable, and consists of recycled plot devices.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x17 - A Piece of the Action**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-1-12

**My Rating -**

**6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk investigates a planet with an Earth-like 1920s gangster culture.*

**Problems:**

- Kirk takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the ship's phasers can be set to spray the entire surface of a planet with a stun.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

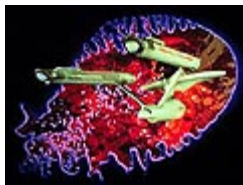
- The crew's reaction to the mob slang.
- Kirk's "Fizbin".
- Krako: "Waddaya think, we're stupid or somethin'?" Kirk: "No, no, I don't think you're stupid, Mister Krako. I just think your behavior is arrested." Krako: "I ain't never been arrested in my

whole life!"

- Spock pointing out Oxmyx using a double negative.
- Kirk using the mob slang.
- Kirk and Spock wearing the mob cloths.
- Kirk and Spock trying to figure out how to drive a car.
- Spock: "Captain, you are an excellent starship commander, but as a taxi driver you leave much to be desired."
- Kirk and Spock using the mob slang.
- McCoy admitting that he left his communicator on the planet and the resulting speculation that the aliens may becoming far more technologically advanced by studying it.

**Comments:**

Oh look. A planet remarkably like Earth, with people that look exactly like humans, with a 1930s city on it. Sounds a lot like TOS: Miri. Fortunately, unlike Miri, this episode gives an explanation, albeit a weak one. It's not really credible that this race bases their entire society off of a book about the Chicago mobs of the twenties. They refuse to do anything rationally, "the book tells us how to handle things!" Granted, it's a funny crack on Christianity's affinity for the Bible, though the Bible's quite a bit more credible than a book about the mobs of the twenties... Since it seems stupid for a society to hold a book about the Chicago mobs to be some kind of a Bible, the seeming stupidity of the people on that planet is most appropriate, and entertaining. The only thing that wrecks this otherwise classic episode is the blatant disregarding of the prime directive, something that originally wasn't the Enterprise's fault, but also something they probably should have fixed. Instead, we get a humorous ending in which even more contamination ensues.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x18 - The Immunity Syndrome**  
**Originally Aired:** 1968-1-19

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A giant space amoeba threatens the entire galaxy.*

**Problems:**

- Spock and Kirk take measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Vulcan telepathy is powerful enough to sense the mass death of Vulcans across relatively great distances.
- According to Spock, Vulcan has never been conquered.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock sensing the Intrepid's Vulcan crew dying before the sensors discover it.

**Comments:**

This episode is nothing but a weaker and blatant rehash of TOS: Doomsday Machine. The idea that the galaxy itself can be infested with a virus is kind of silly and spending the entire episode trying to fight this "virus" is a waste of time; this episode's biggest problem is that it introduces absolutely nothing new, which makes it incredibly boring.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x19 - A Private Little War**  
**Originally Aired:** 1968-2-2

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Klingons provide arms to a peaceful planet and disrupt the balance of power.*

**Problems:**

- When McCoy fires his phaser to heat up rocks, the phaser fires without him pressing the trigger!

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy regarding Spock: "Lucky his heart is where his liver should be or he'd be dead right now."



- Kirk and McCoy attacked by a strange alien animal.
- Nurse Chapel holding Spock's hand, and then being informed that Spock probably knew she was doing that.
- Kirk: "We once were as you are. Spears and arrows. There came a time when our weapons grew faster than our wisdom and we almost destroyed ourselves. We learned from this to make a rule during all our travels never to cause the same to happen to other worlds, just as a man must grow in his own way and his own time."
- The revelation that the Klingons are feeding gradual technological improvements to the aliens in exchange for loyalty.
- Spock asking Nurse Chapel to hit Spock repeatedly and Scotty stopping her.
- McCoy debating the ethics of giving technology to more of the aliens to Kirk.
- Kirk fighting another one of those white furred aliens.
- Nona stealing Kirk's phaser.
- Nona getting herself killed. What a moron.
- McCoy knelt over Nona's body watching in horror as Kirk and the hill people fight the villagers.

#### Comments:

I'm fond of the scene where Kirk is attacked and poisoned. Despite the fact that the aliens of this episode look exactly like humans, that alien animal that attacked Kirk looked truly alien; and cool! I also liked the character of Tyree and his "faith" in his friendship with Kirk, even though Kirk is technically an outsider. The moral dilemma is the most interesting part of this episode. The Klingon Empire and the Federation begin pulling a Korean war, or a Vietnam war out of their hats. A puppet war, influenced by two major powers. Indeed, there's a reference to this during Kirk and McCoy's debate over the ethics of the issue. The ending is sad, unlike most TOS episodes. Kirk has realized that McCoy was right, but he is firm in his judgement, the deed had to be done. This episode demonstrates better than most the how frustrating a longstanding bitter cold war can be to all parties involved.



#### Star Trek TOS - 2x20 - Return to Tomorrow Originally Aired: 1968-2-9

My Rating - 6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Telepathic aliens take over Kirk and Spock's bodies.*

#### Problems:

- Spock takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

#### Factoids:

- Diana Muldaur, who plays Dr. Mulhall in this episode, goes on to play Dr. Pulaski in season 2 TNG.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- I like McCoy's brief display of fear of the transporter in the beginning.
- Kirk: "We faced a crisis in our earlier nuclear age. We found the wisdom not to destroy ourselves."
- Sargon: "There comes to all races an ultimate crisis which you have yet to face."
- Kirk's speech about extending goodwill to this potentially dangerous alien species; calling on volunteers, not ordering people to participate.
- Possessed Spock getting all emotional.
- Possessed Spock to McCoy: "I'm surprised the Vulcans never conquered your race!"
- Possessed Spock using a Vulcan mind meld to manipulate Nurse Chapel.

#### Comments:

The Enterprise discovers an alien species which colonized the galaxy 6000 centuries ago. I like the claim Sargon makes that his species is what seeded humans and/or Vulcans. Another thing I like is that this species, while they wrongfully take the bodies of the Enterprise crewmembers, essentially have good intentions, excepting of course the one that took over Spock. The final detail I enjoyed was the slight indulgence of Nurse Chapel's fond feelings for Spock. All in all, this was an enjoyable episode and IMHO above average for TOS.



### **Star Trek TOS - 2x21 - Patterns of Force**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-2-16

**My Rating**

- 4

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise is sent to planet Ekos to investigate a disappearance of Federation historian John Gill.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- During Star Trek's original run in Germany, this episode was skipped and not aired, for obvious reasons.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise blowing up a nuclear warhead launched at them from the planet.
- I like the subdermal transponder idea. A good precaution after so many away missions when they lose their communicators.
- Kirk: "You look quite well for a man who's been utterly destroyed, Mr. Spock."
- Kirk, regarding Spock in a Nazi uniform: "That helmet covers a multitude of sins!"
- Spock to Kirk: "You should make a very convincing Nazi."
- Spock digging the transponder out of Kirk's arm. Ouch!
- Kirk bemoaning about holding Spock up on his back.
- Spock being called "an inferior race".
- Gill: "Even historians fail to learn from history. They repeat the same mistakes."

#### **Comments:**

Many insults are thrown at this episode. It's the first of many annoying Nazi episodes in Star Trek. Once again we have aliens that look exactly like humans on a planet that looks exactly like Earth, but I partially forgive this one for that because John Gill was deliberately manipulating the society to produce this effect. One humorous aspect of this episode is the number of times Kirk and Spock knock out Nazis for the purpose of stealing their uniforms. It almost became routine! Unfortunately, The added humor does little to enhance an episode with a fundamentally bad premise. Despite all its failings, I admit I found this episode entertaining. While not spectacular, I just can't rate it as low as many others would.



### **Star Trek TOS - 2x22 - By Any Other Name**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-2-23

**My Rating**

- 5

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Extra-galactic beings commandeer the Enterprise in an attempt to return home.*

#### **Problems:**

- Ugh, another mention of the fictional energy barrier at the edge of the galaxy...

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock making himself sick. Hah!
- Scotty's drinking scenes with the Kelvan.
- Kirk defeating a Kelvan at chess.
- Scotty: "It's uhm... it's green!"

#### **Comments:**

Excepting of course the energy barrier at the edge of the galaxy, I generally enjoyed this episode. It's interesting how easily the Kelvans begin acting like humans once they take human form. I love super aliens with a weakness. I'd say the best part of this episode is how quickly the Kelvans begin to change once the Enterprise crew begins to manipulate them. The only failing of this episode is how weak the Kelvans are made to look in the end. They started off so powerful, so malevolent. Maybe if so much time wasn't spent in the beginning making them look so evil, they wouldn't have looked so weak by contrast in the end.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 2x23 - The Omega Glory**  
Originally Aired: 1968-3-1

**My Rating**  
- 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise finds a planet devastated by disease that appears to treat the American flag with great reverence.*

**Problems:**

- Kirk claims that a captain would give his life, or even the life of his crew before violating the prime directive. Yet he has violated the prime directive repeatedly.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nice to see another Constitution class ship.
- McCoy discovering that there's no immortality on this planet.

**Comments:**

Oh boy. It feels like a repeat of TOS: Miri. Another alien race that looks identical to humans with a history extremely similar to Earth and no explanation. Beyond that, a politically incorrect episode featuring blatant racism. The Yangs (Yankies), caucasian, revere the American flag, the constitution are holy words. Then the Khoms (Communists), asian, clearly displayed as the "bad guys". This episode is spared a zero only because this whole fiasco doesn't, in fact, take place on a planet literally identical to Earth, like Miri did. There are ways to rationalize this episode, even if they are a huge stretch.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 2x24 - The Ultimate Computer**  
Originally Aired: 1968-3-8

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise is used to test the new M-5 computer.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Scotty is the voice of the M5.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- I hate to point out something like this, but I think that it's very cool for a computer genius and famous inventor in this episode to be played by a black man. In 1968, racism was everywhere and this episode is a good example how Star Trek tries to do away with it.
- Kirk questioning himself about whether or not his hatred of the M5 is because he doesn't want to lose his job.
- The M5 performing excellently in a war game.
- The M5 going psycho on the autopilot ship.
- M5 murdering one of the Enterprise crewmen.
- McCoy: "Please Spock do me a favor and don't say it's fascinating."
- M5 going psycho on a fleet of 4 Constitution class ships!
- Daystrom pleading with M5.
- Kirk talking the M5 to death.

**Comments:**

A computer controlled starship. Not a new idea, but well explored in this TOS episode. Indeed, this episode is highly exciting! Granted, Kirk talks another computer to death and Daystrom turns out to be a psycho. Cliches notwithstanding, this is still one of the better original series episodes and certainly a lot of fun to watch.

---



**Star Trek TOS - 2x25 - Bread and Circuses**  
Originally Aired: 1968-3-15

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock and McCoy are forced to fight in Roman-like games.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- 37 million died in Earth's 3rd world war according to Spock.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Guy with a gun to Spock: "What do you call those?" Spock: "I call them ears."
- McCoy and Spock arguing about logic in the jail cell.
- McCoy and Spock arguing at the dinner table.
- Spock kicking some gladiator ass.
- McCoy and Spock arguing in the jail cell again.

**Comments:**

Another Earth like planet. Another starship captain tainting a society. Another race that looks exactly like humans. Another episode in which the cast are captured and forced to fight for the amusement of others. This episode is a cliché and a half. It's a little incredible that they keep beaming down to planets completely ill prepared for their impending capture; you'd think that after a while they might think not to beam down to random hostile planets with primitive civilizations so unprepared. The only particularly interesting thing about this episode is how it makes fun of TV politics and ratings. The joke was intelligent but the placement was awkward.



**Star Trek TOS - 2x26 - Assignment: Earth**  
Originally Aired: 1968-3-29

My Rating  
- 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise goes back in time and discovers a mysterious stranger trying to interfere with 20th-century events.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode was intended as the pilot for a Star Trek spin-off series named "Assignment: Earth", but it never appeared.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Gary Seven's declaration of his mission.
- Gary Seven's escape from the Enterprise.
- Roberta's reaction to the automatic typewriter which typed everything she said.
- Kirk barging into Gary Seven's office.

**Comments:**

A fan favorite, but I'm a bit more critical. It's one of many in TOS that use deliberate time travel, using Spock's magical time travel formula. This formula, we must remember, is the one that involves absurd amounts of risk. The chances of the Enterprise surviving time travel by this method are extremely low, yet they survive it over and over again. It's something of a bad tradition that most Star Trek shows have to travel back in time to the show's production year at least once. TOS did it at least three. That said, the mystery surrounding Gary Seven is indeed interesting, though large portions of this episode are spent sitting and waiting for something to happen, which is a bit boring. Finally, this has got to be the worst episode in terms of far, far too much monotone computer voice action. This episode was originally intended as the pilot for a spin off series. Unlike other fans, I'm glad it never fell through. I'm at a loss as to why this episode is so highly revered. To me it reeked too much of 1960s stereotypes. Indeed, it felt more like a bad James Bond movie than an episode of Star Trek.

---



**Star Trek TOS - 3x01 - Spock's Brain**  
Originally Aired: 1968-9-20

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kirk pursues aliens who have taken Spock's brain.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Season 3 gets another slightly revised opening theme.
- This episode is often regarded as the worst episode of Star Trek ever by fans.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk: "Lifeform readings Mr. Spock? Er... Mr. Scott..."
- Remote control Spock. Hilarious!
- Spock inside a computer, talking to Kirk and McCoy. I love how well Spock takes being disembodied.
- Kirk using remote control Spock to remove the pain belts.
- I love the profound change in the alien girl's behavior and intelligence after she underwent the knowledge helmet.
- Spock dictating to McCoy how to perform his own Brain surgery.

**Comments:**

Many, many insults are thrown at this episode. Many fans believe it is the worst one ever made. Indeed, another alien race that looks exactly like humans. Indeed, the episode is overly silly. But if you don't take it so seriously, it can be entertaining. Unlike other "bad" TOS episodes, it's devoid of the extreme technical problems that I get so tired of ranting about. Heresy may it be, I found this episode cute and funny.



**Star Trek TOS - 3x02 - The Enterprise Incident**  
Originally Aired: 1968-9-27

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Disguised as a Romulan, Kirk steals a cloaking device.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Romulans briefly use Klingon style ships in this episode indicating a possible brief alliance.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise surrounded by Romulan ships.
- Spock maneuvering with the Romulan commander.
- Kirk repeatedly professing that he will kill Spock.
- Spock "killing" Kirk.
- Nurse Chapel: "There's no such thing as a Vulcan death grip!" Kirk: "Ah, but the Romulans didn't know that!"
- Scotty's reaction to seeing Kirk as a Romulan.
- The Enterprise cloaking.

**Comments:**

This episode opens with a torrent of confusing behaviors by Kirk and Spock. The entire plot doesn't seem to make much sense until about halfway through the episode. Though this is not to the episode's disadvantage. Indeed, this dangerous "chess game" that Kirk and Spock play with the Romulans is exciting to watch. When the Romulans have developed an improved cloaking device that defeats all Federation sensors, the Enterprise is called in to steal it. While we're not told for exactly what purpose the cloaking device is used, the logical use would be for the Federation to devise a way to defeat it once again. This seems to be confirmed by TNG: The Neutral Zone, in

which the Enterprise D at first expected the ability to defeat Romulan cloak, then realized it had been improved (again). An excellent episode.



---

### **Star Trek TOS - 3x03 - The Paradise Syndrome**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-10-4

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk loses his memory and begins a life in a native village.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock convincing McCoy to abandon the search to divert the asteroid.
- Kirk giving the drowning boy CPR and the natives thinking he's a god because of it.
- Spock attempting to destroy the asteroid.
- Scotty bemoaning about Spock's heavy demands on the ship's systems.
- McCoy getting angry at Spock for failing to destroy the asteroid and putting the ship into risk as well as Kirk and the planet.
- Weeks later, Spock continually ignoring McCoy's advice, trying to decipher the symbols on the alien monument.
- Spock deciphering the symbols on the alien monument.
- Spock's mild meld with Kirk.
- The death of Kirk's wife.

#### **Comments:**

An original plot. Kirk gets amnesia, which is fun to watch. The asteroid threatening the planet is also a cool new plot idea. Additionally, I love the idea that the ancient race "The Preservers" are one of the reasons there are so many humanoids in the galaxy. Indeed, it goes a long way toward explaining why the aliens on this world look exactly like humans, and perhaps why so many others encountered in the various Star Trek series look exactly like humans. The only thing that brings down this otherwise great original series episode is the death of Kirk's newfound wife (and subsequently the unborn child). Granted the scene is moving, and a good end to a good episode, it would have been an even better end if she had lived and Kirk had begun raising a child aboard the Enterprise. It's always good to make characters more faceted and to make episodes have long lasting consequences. Unfortunately, TOS had a nasty habit of forcing all the characters to return to their status quo at the end of every episode, making them somewhat too predictable.



---

### **Star Trek TOS - 3x04 - And the Children Shall Lead**

**My Rating - 1**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-10-11

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A group of children is being controlled by an evil force.*

#### **Problems:**

- Right after the scene when Kirk begins to feel he's losing his command abilities, Spock and Kirk get into a turbolift and it starts moving without either of them specifying a destination!

#### **Factoids:**

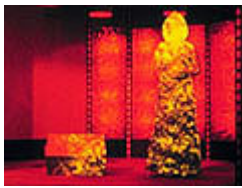
- This is the first episode in which we see a United Federation of Planets logo. Though there's no accounting for taste...

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy: "He's dead, Jim." Count 7.
- Scotty going psycho on his mind controlled officers.
- Kirk accidentally beaming two men into space.
- Kirk's entire bridge crew freaking out.
- Kirk speaking jibberish to the redshirt.

**Comments:**

This episode is essentially Miri without the absurd technical problems. That, however, does little to enhance a blatantly bad premise. Children in Star Trek almost always suck.

**Star Trek TOS - 3x05 - Is There In Truth No Beauty?****My Rating - 3****Originally Aired:** 1968-10-18**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***The sight of a Medusan ambassador causes insanity.***Problems:**

- I find it a little incredible that looking at something can cause insanity.
- Gah! Another reference to that fictional barrier at the edge of the galaxy...

**Factoids:**

- Diana Muldaur, who plays Miranda Jones in this episode, goes on to play Dr. Pulaski in season 2 TNG.
- This episode contains the first display of the Vulcan symbol of IDIC and the mention of its philosophy.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Scotty realizing he's in the same room with the attempted murderer.
- McCoy: "He's dead, Jim." Count 8.
- Spock becoming the alien ambassador.

**Comments:**

Miranda Jones is a great character. A blind telepath. The premise is good, and original. A truly alien alien that the Enterprise must transport. Two great ideas for an episode wasted by bad details. The idea that looking at this alien makes men go insane is just stupid. The energy barrier at the edge of the galaxy is also stupid, and it annoys me that they keep bringing it back. The reference to the Greek creature Medusa, who would turn men to stone upon a single glance is intelligent, but too impractical in this case. A decent effort, but the episode is ultimately flawed.

**Star Trek TOS - 3x06 - Spectre of the Gun****My Rating****Originally Aired:** 1968-10-25**- 7****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***As punishment for trespassing, Kirk and crew are forced to re-enact the shootout at the OK Corral.***Problems:**

- Kirk takes measurements in English Imperial Units...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The probe warning the Enterprise to leave in the native languages of every crewmember.
- Chekov diving into his role.
- Kirk trying to tell the bartender who he really is.
- Kirk trying to tell his enemies who he really is.
- Kirk and his crew trying to leave the city.
- McCoy meeting Doc Holliday.
- Chekov's "death".
- Spock mentally preparing Kirk, McCoy, and Scotty for the battle.
- The crew standing there while the bullets do nothing.
- Kirk regarding Chekov: "Perhaps that's why he's here. Nothing was real to him except the girl!"
- I love the happy ending. The xenophobic race is ready to open diplomatic relations with the Federation!

**Comments:**

The Enterprise encounters a xenophobic race, ignores their warnings to go away, and faces the consequences. Wouldn't have made much an episode if Kirk had turned back like he should have, but nevertheless, he indeed should have. And he most certainly shouldn't have beamed down to that planet. Oh well, what's done is done. Kirk does a lot of stupid things. That said, this episode is the first to display the power of illusions since TOS: The Cage and this one does so just as successfully. Probably the best part is the scenery. The whole "incomplete" feel of the episode is just fantastic, along with the red sky. Everything looks deliberately fake, which makes it look so much more disturbing than the usual and expected perfect illusion. Finally, Spock mentally preparing everyone to convince themselves that the bullets would not kill them was just perfect. In retrospect, it kind of reminds me of the first Matrix movie when Neo mentally prepares himself to be The One and stops bullets with his mind. Extra points for the ending; at the end of the episode, the cast has passed the test of the xenophobic race and is ready to open diplomatic relations with the Federation. A perfect example of Star Trek's ideology at its finest.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 3x07 - Day of the Dove**  
**Originally Aired:** 1968-11-1

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A malevolent entity pits Klingons against the Enterprise crew.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature a Klingon woman.
- Like Kor, Kang will re appear in DS9.
- The Klingons have no devil according to Kor in this episode.
- This episode establishes that beaming from one point in a ship to another point in a ship is extremely dangerous.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chekov's outburst against Kang for having killed his "brother".
- McCoy and Chekov expressing unrestrained bias and hatred toward the Klingons.
- The Enterprise destroying the Klingon ship.
- The swordfight between the Klingons and the Enterprise crewmen.
- Sulu claiming Chekov is an only child and that his "brother" was fictional.
- Kirk: "What about the armory?" Scotty: "I'm in there now, sir. And you've never seen such a fine collection of antiques in your life!" The camera pans out and a massive sword collection is displayed.
- McCoy freaking out about Kirk and Spock planning a truce.
- Scotty and Kirk fighting each other.
- Kirk and Spock discovering the alien entity.

**Comments:**

An excellent episode; I love the way the Klingons and the humans begin to work together against the entity. Indeed, the scene with Kang and Kirk standing together and laughing together is awesome. More foreshadowing that The Federation and the Klingon Empire will one day become friends.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 3x08 - For the World Is Hollow and I Have Touched the Sky** **My Rating - 3**  
**Originally Aired:** 1968-11-8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An inhabited asteroid is on a collision course with a Federation planet.*

**Problems:**

- Spock sure was lucky that all information they needed was on the first few pages of that book!

**Factoids:**

- This episode holds the record of the longest title ever.



**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk pleading with Natira, explaining to her what her world is.

**Comments:**

A society of people living on a ship, disguised as an asteroid from the outside and disguised as a planet from the inside so the people within won't know that it's a ship. Complicated, but clever, and certainly interesting. Also, a McCoy focused episode is a rare treasure. Unfortunately this episode is plagued by cliché. Another alien race that looks exactly like humans and another reset button. Why do they have to cure McCoy's disease by such a forced coincidence? Why can't McCoy's new wife become a regular character? Forced reset buttons make episodes extremely dull to watch.

**Star Trek TOS - 3x09 - The Tholian Web**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-11-15

**My Rating**

- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk is trapped in interphase, while the Enterprise is trapped by a powerful energy web.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there has never been a mutiny on a starship before; or at least no record of one.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chekov freaking out.
- Spock's discussion with the Tholian.
- Spock battling both the Tholians and McCoy at the same time.
- Kirk's recording for Spock and McCoy.
- Uhura pleading with McCoy about having seen the captain and McCoy not really believing her.
- McCoy discovering the antidote.
- McCoy and Spock lying about having heard Kirk's last orders.

**Comments:**

This episode features a decent set of good ideas, particularly the Tholians, Kirk's absence, and the conflict between McCoy and Spock. Unfortunately, the Defiant and the parallel universe concepts were boring and unnecessary. The episode would have been better if it focused more on the Tholians, but it was still good despite that.

**Star Trek TOS - 3x10 - Plato's Stepchildren**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-11-22

**My Rating** - 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Platonians use psychokinetic power to toy with the crew.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the common cold has not yet been cured in the 23rd century.
- This episode displays the first kiss between a black and a white person ever shown on television. Granted it was forced.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Philana: "How old would you say I am? Oh don't be afraid, I'm not vain." Spock: "35." Philana: "That old? I stopped aging at 30! Well anyway, you're off by 2000 years."
- Parmen freaking out and telepathically throwing things about.
- Kirk: "Alexander, where I come from, size shape and color makes no difference."
- Spock: "Dr. McCoy, you may yet cure the common cold!"
- Parmen making Kirk slap himself repeatedly.

- Kirk and Spock singing.
- Emotional Spock.
- Alexander riding Kirk like a horse.
- Alexander's disgust about the prospect of receiving the Platonian's powers.
- Spock singing.
- Kirk using the powers against Parmen.

**Comments:**

Another alien race that looks exactly like humans. Another alien society remarkably like ancient Earth. Another alien race with extremely powerful abilities who capture the cast and make them do things for their own entertainment. Fortunately they have an excuse this time for the aliens looking like humans and their society being so close to Earth; these people used to live with the ancient Greeks. Also, fortunately, the cliches don't hurt the episode much because the episode doesn't particularly take itself too seriously. Indeed, the episode is almost totally silly, but not overly so. Just enough to be funny without being absurd. This would have been a perfectly fine episode if it weren't for the fact that this remarkable discovery of this planet's natural abilities are largely forgotten. The Federation never colonizes this planet to make use of its abundantly useful natural resource. So I mark it down slightly for that.



**Star Trek TOS - 3x11 - Wink of an Eye**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-11-29

**My Rating -**  
**7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Hyperaccelerated aliens, invisible to the naked eye, take over the Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk seeing everything in slow motion.
- Deela talking about Kirk like he's a pet.
- Deela and Kirk debating the morality behind killing each other to survive.
- Spock going slow motion.
- Kirk faking out Deela.
- Kirk coming from "out of the nowhere and into the here."
- Spock rampaging throughout the ship repairing everything at super speed.
- Spock: "I found it an accelerating experience."

**Comments:**

This episode is fascinating. The idea that another species can live in time at different speeds or perhaps control time is really cool, and well explored in this episode. Granted, another race that looks exactly like humans. But the science fiction in this episode is so good I have to forgive the weekly cliché. It's a shame there weren't more original series episodes like this one.



**Star Trek TOS - 3x12 - The Empath**

**Originally Aired:** 1968-12-6

**My Rating -** **5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The landing party is used to test an empathic race.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy: "I'm a doctor, not a coal miner!" Count 9 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines.

- Spock to McCoy after being injected: "Your action is highly unethical. My decision stands!" Spock passes out. McCoy: "Not this time."
- McCoy attempting to sacrifice himself to save Spock and Kirk.
- Kirk: "The best defense is a good offense and I intend to start offending right now."
- Spock to Kirk: "He's dying, Jim." I'm counting this as a "He's dead, Jim." Count 9.
- Gem sacrificing herself to save McCoy.

#### Comments:

The mute empath is another alien race that looks exactly like humans. Fortunately the Vians don't. This episode reminds me somewhat of TOS: The Cage. Two large headed super aliens who control illusions cage the cast for their own seemingly selfish motives which turn out to be benevolent in the end. Admittedly their methods were overly cruel and certainly not scientific, we can attribute this to the fact that they're an alien culture, guided by an alien philosophy. A cruel philosophy, perhaps, but alien still. This is a fine episode, but it would have been far better if more time was spent showing us who and what the Vians are instead of wasting it all on torture scenes and the admittedly uninteresting character Gem. However, in late 1960s television, pretty girls get higher ratings than advanced space aliens. So the episode was constructed accordingly. ;)



#### Star Trek TOS - 3x13 - Elaan of Troyius

My Rating - 6

Originally Aired: 1968-12-20

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Kirk is distracted while the Enterprise is threatened.*

#### Problems:

- It seems somebody broke the prime directive a long time ago. The aliens of this episode do not have knowledge of warp drive, yet the Enterprise was ordered to officiate on this mission.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Scotty: "Captain, you'll not be using the warp drive? All the way on impulse? That'll take a great deal of time!" Kirk: "You in a hurry, Mr. Scott?" Scotty: "No..."
- Uhura offended that the Elaan disliked her quarters.
- Kirk, regarding Elaan's desire to throw things: "If that's the only way you can get gratification, I'll arrange to have the whole room filled from floor to ceiling with breakable objects."
- Kirk trying to teach Elaan manners.
- Kirk: "Mr. Spock, the women on your planet are logical. That's the only planet in this galaxy that can make that claim."
- Elaan using her tear on Kirk to seduce him.
- Kirk and Spock discovering that dilithium crystals are in abundant quantities in this system and that's why the Klingons want it so bad.
- Kirk using the dilithium in Elaan's necklace to repower the engines, outmaneuver the Klingons, and save the day.

#### Comments:

Another species that looks exactly like humans, the Elasiens. Thankfully, the Troyians do not. This episode had shades of TOS: Journey to Babel in it, most notably the diplomatic aspect of it. Though it isn't quite as successful as the former, mostly because the alien races involved in this diplomatic envoy weren't the major races that were involved in Journey to Babel. As a result, this episode has a less important feel to it. Probably the best part of this episode is how much patience Petri and Kirk have with Elaan's behavior. The climax of this episode is also remarkable. Kirk's daring maneuver using Elaan's dilithium is a great trick; makes for an exciting space battle. Overall, above average by TOS standards.



#### Star Trek TOS - 3x14 - Whom Gods Destroy

My Rating - 4

Originally Aired: 1969-1-3

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Kirk is confronted by one his heroes, now criminally insane.*

**Problems:**

- I find it hard to believe the Federation has only fifteen incurably insane people in its population. (All of which are cured in this episode.) Besides, this would seem to contradict TOS: Dagger of the Mind.

**Factoids:**

- Remarkably, the uniforms in the mental hospital are the same as the ones in TOS: Dagger of the Mind.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garth trying to beam up to the Enterprise and failing "the test".
- The insanity dinner.
- I like the detail about Kirk and Spock becoming great friends at Axanar.
- Garth blowing up Marta.
- Spock Vulcan neck pinching two people at once!
- Spock having to decide between Kirks.
- Spock explaining to Kirk how he decided which Kirk was correct.

**Comments:**

This episode's humor works well, we've seen plenty of Federation officials go insane, but this is true insanity and quite entertaining to watch. Only the magic insanity cure is annoying, despite my affinity for happy endings. It seems the insanity cure works by creating amnesia in the patient. Maybe they just banned this medicine by the 24th century due to the fact that it's a bit unethical to wipe people's memory. A solid 5 for a decent episode, minus one point for the strange medical oddities.



**Star Trek TOS - 3x15 - Let That Be Your Last Battlefield**  
Originally Aired: 1969-1-10

**My Rating -**  
**7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Two survivors of a devastated planet remain committed to destroying one another.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Gotta love the cost cutting tactics in this episode, what with the invisible ship, saving them from needing a ship model, and the destruction of Cheron which is actually stock video from World War II.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk's first conversation with Lokai. I love how blatantly hostile Kirk is. Granted, Kirk's being totally unfair, but it's still great to watch.
- Kirk playing mediator.
- I love the scene where the auto destruct sequence was being set. There's some nice camera work in that scene.
- Kirk: "Mr. Spock, is this ship headed for Ariannus?" Spock: "Negative, captain. The Enterprise is now moving in a circular course." Scotty: "And at warp 10 we're going nowhere mighty fast."
- Chekov: "There was persecution on Earth once. I remember reading about it in my history class."
- Seeing Cheron a dead planet.
- Spock: "All that matters to them is their hate." Uhura: "Do you suppose that's all they ever had, sir?" Kirk: "No. But that's all they have left."

**Comments:**

This episode is very obvious satire for the black vs white racism in the real world, which is not to this episode's disadvantage because it displays the ridiculousness of racism. Nitpicking: The man chasing Lokai said he'd been at it for some 50,000 years. Why did he act with such impatience while aboard the Enterprise? If he's been at it that long, why not wait another few days for the Enterprise to complete her mission? His continual takeovers of the ship started to get predictable and boring. Also, I like the camera work in this episode mostly; especially the scene where the auto destruct sequence was being engaged. But what's with the camera zooming in and out on the

red alert light? It's nauseating and serves no purpose. It pleased me that Cheron was a dead world, destroyed by racism. It matched the overzealous racism displayed by the guests. Overall, the episode was a bit unrealistic, but its ideologies were high, especially for its time, and I praise it for that.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 3x16 - The Mark of Gideon**

**Originally Aired:** 1969-1-17

**My Rating**

**- 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk is abducted by aliens who wish to use him to help solve their overpopulation problem.*

**Problems:**

- Why is sickbay on red alert on the fake Enterprise when Kirk first gets there, calling for people in the teaser?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk on an empty Enterprise.
- Spock negotiating with the Gideon beaucrat.
- Scotty being ordered to leave, angry at his technical skills being insulted and mumbling as he left.
- Scotty's reaction to Spock calling from "the bridge of the Enterprise."

**Comments:**

Ridiculous. Why didn't the Gideons do half a dozen different other things to solve their overpopulation problems? The galaxy is a pretty damn big place. Why didn't they just ask the Federation to help them resettle or something? Why did they continue active reproduction after they discovered their newfound longevity? Didn't they realize that some day they just might get a little overcrowded? Didn't they let it get just a little out of hand before they tried to do something about it? Isn't mass genocide a little absurd a "solution"? Furthermore, if they have such issues with space on their planet, where did they get all the space to build an exact duplicate of the Enterprise with which to fool Kirk for half the episode? Why did they even bother with that farce in the first place? This whole episode makes very little sense. I wonder what the writer was thinking. Finally, why the hell did the Gideons look exactly like humans?



---

**Star Trek TOS - 3x17 - That Which Survives**

**Originally Aired:** 1969-1-24

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A deadly computer image protects a long dead outpost.*

**Problems:**

- The Enterprise travels seemingly impossible distances in this episode without any enhancements to its warp drive.

**Factoids:**

- The Enterprise travels at its fastest (natural) speed ever: warp 14.1.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Uhura: "What happened?" Spock: "The occipital area of my head seems to have impacted with the arm of the chair." Uhura: "No, Mr. Spock, I meant what happened to us?"
- Kirk: "Mr. Sulu, if I wanted a Russian history lesson, I'd have brought along Mr. Chekov."
- Spock and Scotty's silly scenes.
- Sulu: "Terrible way to die." Kirk: "There are no good ways."
- Losira withstanding Sulu's phaser blasts as if they weren't there.
- Spock: "Beauty is transitory, doctor."

**Comments:**

Yet another alien race that looks exactly like humans. An interesting episode, though all of it is manufactured danger. Spock being forced to take command was the most interesting part of this

episode; I've never seen him so difficult to get along with! Though in a good, Vulcan kind of way. Spock's character has always been wildly inconsistent. He contradicts himself regularly, he displays emotion at times, be it mild and sedated. We can attribute all of this to him being half human, but it's nice to see Spock being truly Vulcan in this episode. He must have meditated twice as long today or something. That said the alien plot was largely pointless, and as I already stated, served only to create manufactured danger.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 3x18 - The Lights of Zetar**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1969-1-31

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Zetarians threaten Lieutenant Mira Romaine.*

**Problems:**

- Why would only one Federation colony possess all this knowledge? Have they ever heard of redundancy? Backups? Surely with computers so advanced every starship, colony, and even personal computer would have access to such knowledge.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nurse Chapel making fun of Scotty.
- Kirk's impatience with Scotty's behavior.
- Kirk sticking Mira in the pressure chamber of doom.

**Comments:**

A Scotty centered episode is a nice change of pace, though I found his relationship with Mira a little annoying, as it blinded him to his duty. In the end, the loving relationship saved her life, which is fitting, though we never see Mira again. It would have been nice if Scotty married her, or she at least became a regular guest character. But no, unfortunately the infamous TOS reset button removes any such possibility making this episode largely pointless.



---

**Star Trek TOS - 3x19 - Requiem for Methuselah**

**My Rating - 2**

**Originally Aired:** 1969-2-14

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk and crew meet an immortal human named Flint.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Rayna: "What is loneliness?" Flint: "It is thirst. It is a flower dying in the desert."
- Kirk dancing with Rayna while Spock plays the piano.
- Kirk criticizing his own actions in the end.

**Comments:**

This episode would have been better if it focused more on the plague and less on this mysterious human who's claimed his own planet. The absolute worst detail in this episode is Kirk falling in love with yet another girl of the week. He should have just left Flint alone and left the planet once he had his medicine.

---



### **Star Trek TOS - 3x20 - The Way to Eden**

**Originally Aired:** 1969-2-21

**My Rating**

- 4

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A charismatic leader and his followers hijack the Enterprise in their search for "Eden."*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Uhura is remarkably absent from this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock's careful handling of the space hippies.
- Adam: "I crack my knuckles and jump for joy! I got a clean bill of health from Dr. McCoy!"
- Chekov: "I am proud of what I am. I believe in what I do. Can you say that?"
- Chekov respectfully submitting himself for punishment.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is famous for being terribly bad and overly silly. Essentially a band of dropout space hippies go on a religious quest to find Eden. Then they discover, much to their discontent, that there is no Eden. Fans vigorously bash this episode, but I am less critical. This episode features no incredible technical problems; nothing in this episode couldn't have happened in the canonical Star Trek universe. Indeed, I think this episode holds historical value on many levels. It shows the pointlessness of the whole hippie movement of the 1960s by showing the same pointlessness in the 2260s. Basically, extremist groups guided by religious beliefs never accomplish anything. Another redeeming quality of this episode is the fact that for once the Enterprise doesn't feature superior condescending malicious guests. Instead, they are ignorant, misguided, and in fact have good intentions. Now, admittedly, the acting is ridiculously silly and very over the top. I give it a low rating thusly. But not nearly as low as many fans would say it deserves.



### **Star Trek TOS - 3x21 - The Cloud Minders**

**Originally Aired:** 1969-2-28

**My Rating -**

**6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk is forced into negotiating peace on a planet with severe class inequities.*

#### **Problems:**

- Just after the opening credits when Kirk said, "Who are you, what's the meaning of this attack?" his lips weren't moving.

#### **Factoids:**

- The view of the planet from Stratos are actually satellite images of Earth.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of Stratos. Some neat artwork.
- Droxine: "I have never before met a Vulcan, sir." Spock: "Nor I a work of art, madame."
- Droxine: "Father, are we so sure of our methods that we never question what we do?"
- Kirk forcing Plasus and Vanna to dig in the mines.

#### **Comments:**

The Ardanans and Troglytes look exactly like humans. Looks aside, these guys make poor Federation members, what with this class inequality and all. One wonders how they were ever accepted into the Federation. Fortunately, it seems the situation was largely resolved. Despite the seeming lack of consistency with a Federation member having social class issues, the episode is largely exciting and visually stunning (especially for its day). Quite a memorable original series episode.



**Star Trek TOS - 3x22 - The Savage Curtain**  
Originally Aired: 1969-3-7

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk and Spock are forced into a battle of good and evil.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Abraham Lincoln floating in space. WTF?
- Uhura not taking offense to Lincoln's accidental racist remark.
- Spock correcting Scotty when he pointed to the direction Earth was in. Hilarious!
- Surak's appearance.
- Surak: "Perhaps it is our belief in peace that is actually being tested."
- Lincoln: "There's no honorable way to kill, no gentle way to destroy. There is nothing good in war except its ending."

**Comments:**

One wonders how much respect an ancient revered European leader like Sir Winston Churchill or an Asian leader like Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi would get on this most blatant episode of Americans in space. Thankfully, McCoy's and Scotty's objections offset Kirk's odd behavior. Unfortunately, yet another alien who forces out cast to fight for its own amusement. One remarkable detail is that Kahless is considered evil in this episode. In TNG he is considered quite the honorable figure. This isn't necessarily a technical problem; surely the Klingons are considered evil by Kirk, and the alien in this episode just extracted that impression in his recreation of Kahless. Ultimately, this episode consists largely of pointless fighting which makes it totally inconsequential. I wish there was less of this in Star Trek.



**Star Trek TOS - 3x23 - All Our Yesterdays**  
Originally Aired: 1969-3-14

My Rating  
- 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kirk, Spock and McCoy enter a time portal and get stuck in the past on a planet about to be consumed by a nova.*

**Problems:**

- Spock claims his home planet is millions of light years away. Uh, no? The galaxy isn't even that wide.

**Factoids:**

- I like the small silver disks used for data storage. What? That's not remarkable you say? This episode was made many years before CDs, youngster. ;)
- Interesting names: Mr. Atoz, or "A-to-Z" for a librarian. And the Atavachron (the time travel machine) which means "forefather's time".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Atoz: "A library serves no purpose unless someone is using it."
- Atoz in two places at once. Awesome.
- Kirk: "You're a very agile man, Mr. Atoz. Just how many of you are there?"
- Kirk's fencing fight.
- McCoy and Spock stuck in a frozen environment.
- Kirk accused of being a witch.
- Spock getting emotional.
- Spock falling in love with Zarabeth.
- Spock realizing he's losing his emotional control.
- Spock letting go of his woman.
- The sun going nova.



**Comments:**

The last great original series episode before the show was prematurely canceled. Generally the original series' over use of time travel tended to suck, but this is one of nicest uses of it. Spock falls in love with a truly beautiful woman, having lost his emotional control. Spock and McCoy stuck in an ice age while Kirk is stuck in a dark age. It's nice to watch the two storylines unfold, and get a brief look at the people of this world at the same time. It would seem fitting that if a people's sun were to go nova, that some of the people would take refuge by living out their lives in the past. Interestingly, they could alter their own history to better prepare them for that eventual nova. Though this would create a time paradox. If every new altered generation kept going back in time to assist the previous ones, we'd have limitless time with which a society could evolve! Sheesh, time travel gives me a headache, and I seem to have gone off on a tangent. In any case, this is a truly enjoyable episode to watch. One of Spock's greatest moments.

**Star Trek TOS - 3x24 - Turnabout Intruder**

Originally Aired: 1969-6-3

My Rating -

7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A woman from Kirk's past exchanges bodies with him and takes control of the ship.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The 2260s seemed to be a period of sexism. See comments.
- Uhura is remarkably absent from this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Lester: "Your world of starship captains doesn't admit women."
- Kirk and Lester swapping bodies.
- Lester-as-Kirk: "Now you'll know the indignity of being a woman."
- Lester-as-Kirk: "Believe me, it's better to be dead than alone in the body of a woman."
- Kirk-as-Lester waking up and realizing who he is.
- Kirk-as-Lester trying to use his knowledge as the captain of the Enterprise to convince Spock that he is who he says he is.
- Spock Vulcan neck pinching the redshirt.
- Kirk and Lester arguing over who's who.
- Lester-as-Kirk freaking out.
- Lester losing Kirk's body.

**Comments:**

A nice episode, even if an unsuitable end to the series. Granted, it's one of the most blatant displays of sexism in Star Trek I've ever seen. It makes canonical that the 2260s was a (most likely brief) period of sexism in the Star Trek universe. This isn't necessarily impossible; societies can revert to earlier sentiments, although it is unlikely. Despite likelihood, it's a part of the Star Trek universe and we must accept this. Moving on, this is the first of many "personality swapped" episodes we'll see in Star Trek. This one does it well. Kirk and Lester play each other's parts very nicely, making this episode thrilling. Most fun to watch. The best part is how well Lester has planned her move against Kirk. Personally, if I were Kirk stuck in Lester's body, I'm not sure I would have taken it so well!

# **STAR TREK**

**THE ANIMATED SERIES**



---

### **Star Trek TAS - 1x01 - Beyond the Farthest Star**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-9-8

**My  
Rating -  
4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is dragged off course by Questar M-17, an imploded negative star mass, and meets a strange shapeless being.*

#### **Problems:**

- Another use of the dreaded slingshot effect...
- Life support belts are a technology which we'll never see again after TAS. We can rationalize this like the slingshot effect. Perhaps they too ended up being deemed too risky for anyone to use after a series of accidents or something. And of course once again our TAS cast got absurdly lucky to have such good luck with them.

#### **Factoids:**

- Chekov was not present at all during TAS.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of that massive organic starship.
- The deployment of the automatic bridge defense system. Cool device!
- Kirk and Spock getting their asses kicked by the automatic bridge defense system when the alien took over the Enterprise. Haha!

#### **Comments:**

TAS begins its short run nicely, exploiting its cartoon production style by showing us grandiose sets they could have never used in live action. Indeed, this is TAS single greatest advantage.

Remarkable character: Lieutenant Arex. Just like the sets, Arex was a crewmember they couldn't have done in live action due to technology and budget constraints.



---

### **Star Trek TAS - 1x02 - Yesteryear**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-9-15

**My  
Rating -  
9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*By using the Guardian of Forever, Kirk, Spock, and the historian Erikson explore the planet Orion's past. When they return, there is no record of Spock.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode of TAS Award" but is not a candidate for my "Best Episode Ever Award" because only episodes rated at 10 can be candidates.
- The Guardian of Forever was first discovered in TOS: The City on the Edge of Forever.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nobody knowing who Spock is.
- The first officer, an Andorian! Cool.
- Spock learning of his own death.
- An Andorian using the Vulcan salute. Surreal...
- Seeing the planet Vulcan is always remarkable.
- Sarek's appearance.
- Seeing Spock's selat. They look so cute and harmless in a cartoon unlike Spock's description in TOS: Journey to Babel.
- Spock talking to Spock.
- McCoy bemoaning about having to recalibrate his Tricorder to give Spock a physical.

#### **Comments:**

TAS is not considered canon by most people, which I disagree with. However, even among people who firmly believe TAS is not canon, this episode is largely an exception. Mostly because Spock's backstory is established here. The details of which will be confirmed by later live action shows. I take one point off for using the ridiculous Guardian of Forever and the ensuing time travel

absurdity. Other than that a wonderful episode. Remarkable alien: the winged bird-like alien, a Federation member.



**Star Trek TAS - 1x03 - One of Our Planets is Missing**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-9-22

**My  
Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew learns that a massive, planet-destroying extragalactic entity has entered Federation space and threatens every planet in the galaxy.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which Arex has lines.
- This is the first episode we actually see the engines of the Enterprise in. The general design remains largely consistent with future series.
- This episode is more proof that Vulcan mind melds can be performed without touch but are much more difficult.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Arex with lines!
- Our first look at the engines of the Enterprise!
- Kirk: "Am I doing the right thing, Bones? Once I said that man rose above primitiveness by vowing, 'I will not kill today.'"
- Spock's communication and mind meld with the creature.

**Comments:**

This episode features a familiar theme. A planet eating monster, similar to TOS: The Immunity Syndrome or TOS: The Domesday Machine. The interesting difference, however, is that a nonviolent solution is achieved. The creature leaves our galaxy and returns to its own. One wonders if it's out eating planets over in Andromeda or something. ;)



**Star Trek TAS - 1x04 - The Lorelei Signal**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-9-29

**My  
Rating -  
4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise enters an uncharted sector of space where Federation and Klingon vessels have been reported missing every 27 years.*

**Problems:**

- Nurse Chapel beams down having changed into a red uniform, which matches the other women who beamed down, but in the next scene her uniform has magically turned blue again!

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- All the men being "summoned" by the signal.
- Uhura taking command of the Enterprise.
- Scotty singing in the captain's chair.
- Uhura: "Mr. Scott, as senior Luitenant I'm taking responsibility for the safetey of this ship." Scotty: "Very thoughtful of ya, love."
- Uhura's attack squad kicking some ass!
- Uhura: "Release captain Kirk and his men or we will destroy your temple!"
- Kirk: "Beam us up Scotty!" Another very close line to the famous and much parodied but never actually uttered, "Beam me up Scotty!"

**Comments:**

An episode where the women take command because all the men are incapacitated is a nice

change of pace, and certainly comically valuable. This episode features yet another alien race that looks exactly like humans though. Something almost totally unforgivable on a cartoon budget. It's nice that Nurse Chapel's affection for Spock is once again revisited, creating some good continuity. The transporter is used to reduce aging, which annoys me. Spock says their chances of living through the procedure are extremely low, which makes up for any potential miracle cures for general aging, but once again our heroes beat the impossible odds. Just like they do with the slingshot effects, the life support belts, and half a dozen other things!



---

**Star Trek TAS - 1x05 - More Tribbles, More Troubles**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-10-6

**My  
Rating -  
7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The tribbles return for more trouble as the Enterprise encounters Cyrano Jones, the Klingons and a new breed of the popular pest.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a kind of "part 2" for TOS: "The Trouble with Tribbles".
- We get to see a Klingon emblem for the first time in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Klingons attacking the scout ship.
- The Klingons disabling the Enterprise with their new weapon.
- Uhura, regarding the ship being defenseless: "We could always throw rocks!"
- Spock: "You can't afford to lose that grain!" Kirk: "I can afford to lose the Enterprise even less!"
- Kirk winning against the Klingons using the robot ships.
- A tribble eating creature! Hahaha.
- The tribble eating creature trying to sink his teeth into a giant tribble.
- Kirk reluctantly defending Cyrano Jones from the Klingons.
- The Klingons buried in tribbles.
- Kirk buried in tribbles.

**Comments:**

This episode is a funny homage to TOS: The Trouble with Tribbles. Indeed, it's funnier than the original, even if less intelligent a plot. You have to forgive it for that, as TAS was largely marketed to children. Granted it was cliched to deliberately bury people in tribbles again, I would have seen it as a missed opportunity if they hadn't taken advantage. :)



---

**Star Trek TAS - 1x06 - The Survivor**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-10-13

**My  
Rating -  
1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A long-lost philanthropist, Carter Winston, is discovered on board a damaged one-man vessel and is reunited with his fiancée on board the Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

- How could McCoy not know how many examining tables are in his sickbay?
- In one scene, Nored's starfleet symbol was on the opposite side of her uniform because they used a mirror image of her stock animation.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature M'Ress, another cool and very different alien we get to see thanks to the benefits of a cartoon.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Romulan: "You appear to have a propensity for trespassing in the neutral zone, captian Kirk." Kirk: "It was not deliberate, I assure you." Romulan: "It never is." A nice reference to all the times the Enterprise has crossed the zone.

**Comments:**

I couldn't write a better review than the one of pure perfection on [Bernd Schneider's site](#). "A living legend of the Federation (what a surprise) on a damaged shuttle (what a surprise), whose fiancée is on the Enterprise (what a surprise), turns out a shapeshifter (what a surprise), causes trouble by assuming the shapes of crew members (what a surprise) and orders a course through the Neutral Zone (what a surprise). The whole episode is nothing but 'All kinds of TOS cliches in 25 minutes', almost like an unintentional parody, and doesn't show anything original." I might add, another alien race which we'll never see again (what a surprise) and another female crewmember who fails in her duty thanks to love (what a surprise).



---

**Star Trek TAS - 1x07 - The Infinite Vulcan**

Originally Aired: 1973-10-20

My Rating

- 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While visiting a new planet Sulu is poisoned and Spock becomes cloned by the Phylosians, a plant-like species.*

**Problems:**

- Giant Spock...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk: "Beam us up, Scotty!" Another very close line to the famous and much parodied but never actually uttered, "Beam me up, Scotty!"
- Spock reciting the philosophy of the IDIC.
- Kirk: "Any chance of teaching me that body throw?" Sulu: "I don't know. It isn't just physical you know; you have to be inscrutable." Kirk: "Inscrutable? You're the most scrutable man I know!"

**Comments:**

This episode is completely pointless. It tries to make a point about how creating a master race is bad, but the ridiculousness of the plot blasts away any profound messages that it attempted to convey. We're not given any explanation for why Keniclius or Spock were so huge, the plant aliens were interesting but ultimately served no purpose, and Keniclius' goal of creating a peacekeeping army was pointless seeing as how starfleet is essentially just that. In the end, Keniclius gives up way too easily; or should I say not soon enough because his motives were so blurry? Only small details in this episode redeem it, such as Spock's recital of the philosophy of the IDIC and the reference to the Eugenics war of 250 years ago.



---

**Star Trek TAS - 1x08 - The Magicks of Megas-Tu**

Originally Aired: 1973-10-27

My

Rating -

0

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While investigating the theory of creation, the Enterprise is caught inside an energy/matter tornado and pulled to the center of the galaxy.*

**Problems:**

- Impossible travel to the center of the galaxy.
- Reference to matter being created from nothing.
- Magical powers without rational explanation.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Worst Episode of TAS Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Worst Episode Ever Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

None

**Comments:**

Oh boy. An impossible travel to the center of the galaxy, blatant disregard for the law of conservation of matter/energy, magical powers coming real without any kind of rational explanation. This episode features some of the worst science ever featured in Star Trek. Quite

possibly the worst episode of Star Trek ever made. Only the idea that the aliens lived on Earth in ancient times and were persecuted for their magical powers at the Salem witch trials is interesting. An advanced race's natural abilities would indeed seem like magic. Though, unfortunately, this episode claims that it actually WAS magic. Furthermore, this episode contradicts its own already frail explanation for the magic. The episode claimed the magical powers can only exist in that alien dimension. So how did the aliens use their magical powers while on Earth? Also, I like the crack on religion in this episode; Lucifer = good guy. Though this isn't enough to save a dreadful episode.



---

### **Star Trek TAS - 1x09 - Once Upon a Planet**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-11-3

**My  
Rating -  
5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise returns to the amusement planet where the crew had once taken shore leave, but this time things go wrong.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which M'Ress has lines.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Another white rabbit from Alice in Wonderland.
- M'Ress with lines!
- The revelation that the pleasure planet computer has become disgruntled.
- The giant cat.
- Zero gravity Enterprise.
- McCoy, assuming Sulu dreamed up the monster attacking them: "Sulu!" Sulu: "Never in my wildest dreams would I think of that!"

#### **Comments:**

Another rehashed plot from TOS, though like the tribble rehash it was very tactful and makes good use of continuity. The computer which provides all the entertainment has sentience and intelligence; and it no longer wants to spend its life in eternal servitude. The episode's situation is resolved peacefully without violence through negotiation with the computer, true to the spirit of Star Trek.



---

### **Star Trek TAS - 1x10 - Mudd's Passion**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-11-10

**My  
Rating - 4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is ordered to find Harry Mudd, a Federation outlaw, who is accused of selling a fake love potion to miners.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock ruining Mudd's latest scheme.
- Spock getting emotional and Chapel getting pissed at Mudd for the potion's (supposed) failure.
- The whole crew being infected by the love potion.
- McCoy: "If the Enterprise had a heart I'd save her too."
- Spock: "That is an outstandingly stupid idea!"

#### **Comments:**

And another TOS rehash; this time by bringing back Harry Mudd. Captain Kirk tracks down Harry Mudd to arrest him. Once again, good continuity regarding Nurse Chapel's attraction to Spock is well exploited. Nothing too terribly interesting happens in this episode, though nothing too terribly boring either. It's safe to say it's a fairly average episode, excepting of course for some of the dumb things Nurse Chapel did.



### Star Trek TAS - 1x11 - The Terratin Incident

Originally Aired: 1973-11-17

My Rating

- 8

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A strange flash of light paralyzes the entire Enterprise crew and all organic matter begins to shrink.*

#### **Problems:**

- Arex claims his eyes can't reach the optical instruments at his station. But there are no optical instruments at his station... Now if he had Sulu's job, or Spock's job, I might have some sympathy for him.

#### **Factoids:**

- Starfleet uniforms are made of organic matter called xenulon.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew of the Enterprise shrinking.
- The little crew trying to operate the ship's equipment.
- Sulu breaking his leg by falling from his station on the bridge.
- Chapel nearly drowning in an aquarium and Kirk saving her using a string like a rope.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is remarkable in the fact that the story could not have been done in the live action series because the special effects wouldn't have been up to the task. Additionally, the science behind the crew shrinking is extremely good, especially by TAS standards. It was fun watching the miniature Enterprise crew struggle to operate the ship's equipment. Only the resolution of the plot was a bit contrived. Once again the transporter is the miracle cure, which is annoying. Even more annoying is Kirk's hesitation in rescuing the Terratins. Overall, a great episode though.



### Star Trek TAS - 1x12 - The Time Trap

Originally Aired: 1973-11-24

My  
Rating -  
6

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While exploring the Delta Triangle, where many starships have disappeared, the Enterprise is attacked by several Klingon vessels.*

#### **Problems:**

- Kirk claims the stardate is 52.2. WTF? I don't normally say anything about stardates, but when they start going backwards I start getting annoyed.
- Scotty claimed the SS Bonaventure was the first ship with warp drive. This is not correct. Maybe he meant it was the first Federation ship with warp drive?

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk: "Mr. Spock has come up with a formula which may just get us out of here." The screen shows a bunch of symbols and numbers that don't make any sense. Hilarious.
- Kor and Kirk working together.
- Spock pretending to be nice to the Klingons as an excuse to touch them and probe their minds to find their hidden intent.

#### **Comments:**

This episode bears an obvious reference to the Bermuda Triangle. The residents of the triangle formed a kind of miniature Federation, though it's not credible that the alien Elysian council is so ruthless in their methods of enforcing their odd laws, thankfully they don't get a chance to. Remarkable detail: the Elysian council is made up of several races we've already seen before. Such as an Orian female, a Tellarite, and even a Gorn!

---





### **Star Trek TAS - 1x13 - The Ambergris Element**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-12-1

**My  
Rating - 4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise arrives to study the planet Argo, a water-based planet where earthquakes caused the land masses to sink.*

#### **Problems:**

- At one point, you can see space outside the shuttle window while they were on the planet.

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Shuttle being attacked by water monster.
- Kirk: "I can't command a ship from inside an aquarium!"

#### **Comments:**

A black vs white conservative vs liberal society on the planet is a bit annoying, but the water breathing mostly xenophobic race was an interesting idea. The political contrast is just too stereotypical; young overly idealistic liberals vs old overly stubborn conservatives. Some of the science in this episode is a little fuzzy, but acceptable. Overall, the plot is original and fun to watch. A water planet with a water race is a nice change of pace.



### **Star Trek TAS - 1x14 - The Slaver Weapon**

**Originally Aired:** 1973-12-15

**My  
Rating -  
0**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a rare artifact of the Slaver culture, a time-stopping stasis box, is being delivered to Starbase 25, it registers that another one is nearby.*

#### **Problems:**

- The Kzinti's supposed history with Earth is hard to rationalize. See comments.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Worst Episode of TAS Award".
- Anti gravity technology was supposedly discovered via a Slaver stasis box.
- Captain Kirk and Dr. McCoy are remarkably absent from this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Spock offending Uhura.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is controversial in that it was intended as a crossover between two science fiction universes. The repercussions are extensive. A supposed four wars were fought between the Kzinti and Earth, the last of which was about 200 years ago, in the time of Earth's early space travel. None of this, of course, has been validated on any other series, indeed it's been blatantly contradicted with Star Trek VIII: First Contact, as well as Star Trek Enterprise. This episode's biggest problem is that the plot logic is terrible. Random facts and trivia are inserted into this episode where they don't belong. Also, the behavior of the slaver weapon seemed completely random; why would a race build such a weapon? Why would the Slavers place random technology in little time capsule and spread them across the galaxy? Standing alone, this episode does not deserve a zero, it deserves a 1. But the rest of Star Trek has decided to blatantly ignore the events of this episode and no attempt has been made to do any kind of rationalization. So this episode gets a de facto zero.



### **Star Trek TAS - 1x15 - The Eye of the Beholder**

**Originally Aired:** 1974-1-5

**My Rating  
- 2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The disappearance of a scientific team lures the Enterprise to investigate near Lactra VII.*

**Problems:**

- At one point, the star symbol in the uniforms was placed onto the wrong side.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy being crushed by the giant dinosaur monster.
- Scotty accidentally beaming up the young alien.

**Comments:**

Another episode demonstrating the power of illusions. Another superior alien species using the cast for their own amusement. The only redeeming feature of this episode is the unique qualities of the aliens of the week. Granted, it's extremely cliched to have yet another super superior alien species; if there are so many alien species that are vastly superior to the Federation, then why is the Federation (and the Klingon and Romulan Empires for that matter) able to dominate so much space? Finally, it seems unlikely that such an advanced species wouldn't know their pets are sentient lifeforms.



**Star Trek TAS - 1x16 - The Jihad**

**Originally Aired:** 1974-1-12

**My  
Rating -  
3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On Vedala, Kirk and Spock are summoned to learn about a stolen religious artifact that could ignite a galaxy-wide holy war, a jihad.*

**Problems:**

- Why didn't they use a shuttle or some other anti gravity vehicle since the planet they went to was filled with lava flows?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Lara declaring herself attracted to Kirk.
- The zero gravity fight.

**Comments:**

The Vedalans are an interesting concept. A powerful race, moreso than the Federation, but not super god aliens like we've seen so much of already. They're neutral, but friends of the Federation. They're something like galactic prophets. The power to watch, but not the power to act. Maybe they're guided by their own version of a prime directive. In any case, they were a cool idea. Unfortunately, this episode suffers from some fuzzy plot logic. We're not told exactly how stealing the Soul of Skorr would cause the mass breeding of soldiers. I guess we're supposed to assume that the defacing of a religious symbol drives their race into a Jihad. Or maybe Tchar was just nutty. The audience shouldn't have to come up with this stuff though. Overall an interesting episode, but dragged through the mud by a bit of bad writing.



**Star Trek TAS - 2x01 - The Pirates of Orion**

**Originally Aired:** 1974-9-7

**My  
Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A dreaded disease, choriocytosis, strikes the Enterprise. All except Spock are cured, as the illness is fatal only to Vulcans.*

**Problems:**

- Orion is mispronounced in this episode. I can forgive Arex, but none of the others.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to show us an Orion male.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The SS Huron. Cool looking ship.
- McCoy and Spock arguing about whether or not green Vulcan blood is better than red human blood.

**Comments:**

This episode creates good continuity with regards to the reference to Spock's blood being copper based. It's also nice to see the Orions for the first time; or at least their men. We've seen Orion slave girls before. It was also a remarkable treat to see another Federation starship, as well as all the effort the crews of both went through to cure Spock. It's a nice demonstration of the respect the Federation holds for their nonhuman members.

**Star Trek TAS - 2x02 - Bem****Originally Aired:** 1974-9-14**My  
Rating -  
2****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Starfleet, eager to open diplomatic relations with the medically advanced Pandronians, assigns Enterprise to host one of their representatives.*

**Problems:**

- How are Bem's body parts able to float?

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to mention Kirk's middle name, Tiberius. (Four times even.)

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk regarding being captured: "How come we always end up like this?"

**Comments:**

This episode is remarkable in that it once again takes full advantage of the show being of an animated nature. It shows us truly alien aliens; first Bem, then the natives on the planet. Unfortunately very little of interest actually happens in this episode. It's basically the familiar "cast beams down to primitive planet and gets captured" plot, adding nothing new except Bem the pacifist, who adds very little of value to the plot. While I liked our truly alien aliens, they were completely misused.

**Star Trek TAS - 2x03 - The Practical Joker****Originally Aired:** 1974-9-21**My  
Rating -  
5****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While studying an asteroid, the Enterprise is attacked by three Romulan vessels which claim that the Federation ship has trespassed into Romulan space.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode of Star Trek to feature a holodeck, though still called a rec room at this time.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Practical jokes happening to the crew.
- Kirk's uniform defaced: KIRK IS A JERK
- The sight of the first working holodeck.
- Kirk tricking the computer into entering the energy field again.

**Comments:**

This episode is remarkable in that it shows more about life aboard the Enterprise than virtually any other episode. This is the first episode to feature a malfunctioning ship's computer. Overall a very pleasing episode.

---



### **Star Trek TAS - 2x04 - Albatross**

**Originally Aired:** 1974-9-28

**My  
Rating -  
5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise arrives at Dramia I to deliver medical supplies when Dr. McCoy is arrested for mass slaughter and imprisoned.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- McCoy demanding to stay and stand trial.
- McCoy: "And I'm ready to get back to some of that monotonous old routine sickbay work."
- Spock: "Including, I would hope, some of that monotonous old dispensing regular vitamin rations to the crew." McCoy: "What's that supposed to mean?" Spock: "Well, you have been derelicting your duties of late, Doctor." McCoy: "Spock, you know as well as I do what we've all just been through." Spock: "Hippocrates would not have approved of lame excuses, Doctor." McCoy: "Why is that... Jim, whenever I'm in jail again, don't send that Vulcan. Just let me rot."

#### **Comments:**

Demos is exceedingly stupid to expect to be able to sneak aboard the Enterprise unnoticed when the hanger doors mysteriously opened before his eyes for no apparent reason. \*rolls eyes\* That said, the general idea that McCoy accidentally caused a plague on an alien world and now must stand trial for it is interesting. As well, I liked the Dramians, in that they were once again truly alien looking aliens. Another nice detail is McCoy's miracle cure. It wasn't quite the unrealistic miracle cure cliché we're familiar with. I liked the realistic, though convenient method by which the cure was discovered and the ensuing peaceful ending.



### **Star Trek TAS - 2x05 - How Sharper Than a Serpent's Tooth**

**Originally Aired:** 1974-10-5

**My  
Rating -  
2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While tracking a probe, the Enterprise encounters an alien vessel that is surrounded by an energy field which proceeds to encompass the Federation ship.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode's title is from Shakespeare's King Lear, Act I, Scene 4.
- Sulu is remarkably absent from this episode. Replaced by Walking Bear because they conveniently needed a Native American in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kirk telling the Native American god "we don't need you anymore."
- Spock: "Vulcan was visited by alien beings. They left much wiser."
- Kirk: "How sharper than a serpent's tooth it is to have a thankless child."

#### **Comments:**

The addition of Ensign Walking Bear is bittersweet. On one hand, it's nice to see more racial diversity on the show. On the other hand, the character was entirely forced. He only appears on this episode, and only because they needed a native American for the purpose of the plot. This is already a cliché, several guest characters are added in various Star Trek series just for one episode to serve some overly simplistic purpose and we never see them again. Once again, the Enterprise encounters another space traveler who once visited Earth and posed as a god, which is also becoming a cliché. Unfortunately, the entire plot was recycled and offers absolutely nothing new. God alien realizes Earth isn't as primitive as it once was. God alien realizes it's not as powerful as it once was. The only redeeming quality is the episode once again features alien looking aliens.



---

## **Star Trek TAS - 2x06 - The Counter-Clock Incident**

**Originally Aired:** 1974-10-12

**My  
Rating -  
1**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A hyper accelerated alien ship drags the Enterprise into a nova and both arrive in an antimatter universe where time flows backwards.*

#### **Problems:**

- Sarah April claimed to be the first doctor on board a ship with warp drive. This is simply untrue. She's not old enough. Besides, the SS Bonaventure was established in a previous episode as the "first ship with warp drive", which also is not entirely correct. So her statement contradicts multiple conflicting episodes!
- How could Sarah's flower have rejuvenated so completely? Did the pedals which fell off fly back onto the plant or did it grow new ones or something?
- How can a woman give birth to an old man? A baby weighing less than 10lb is already painful enough. How would she give birth to a 100lb+ person?

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Robert April was the first captain of the Enterprise and that Sarah April was the first doctor of the Enterprise.
- This is one of many episodes to mention Babel but never actually go there.
- The Enterprise sets a speed record in this episode, traveling at warp 22+! Though not under its own power.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise crewmen growing younger.

#### **Comments:**

A universe where time flows backwards is interesting, but the implementation in this episode is extremely poor. There are a number of logical problems, some of the major of which I've documented in the problems section. Most interesting is the ship's crew growing younger, with Robert and Sarah April being given a chance to reprise their positions on the Enterprise. Once again the transporter becomes the miracle cure for an age related problem. Finally, I really don't understand Robert and Sarah April's decision not to remain young. Did they really want to die decades sooner than they had to? A totally unfit end to a series which was never given a chance to grow.

---

# **STAR TREK**

## **THE NEXT GENERATION**



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x01 - Encounter At Farpoint, Part I**  
**Originally Aired:** 1987-9-28

**My Rating**  
- 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The new U.S.S. Enterprise and its crew set out "to boldly go where no one has gone before."*

**Problems:**

- The science and helmsman's positions appear to be reversed.
- Picard orders yellow alert twice in this episode.
- Did the third world war last for one hundred years? The Eugenics war and the third world war were clearly establishes as the same was in TOS, but this episode infers that the third world war took place in the late 21st century. This inconsistency doesn't go away, either. In future episodes, the Eugenics war and the third world war are even more firmly established as two entirely different wars.

**Factoids:**

- According to Data, in the year 2036 the "New United Nations" declared that no Earth citizen could be made to answer for the crimes of his race or forbearers.
- In the year 2079 all "United Earth Nonsense" was abolished, according to Q. presumably during the third world war.
- The lights on the roof of the transporter pad are the same lights that were on the floor of the transporter pad on TOS.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The first panning over the Enterprise D.
- Data listing the synonyms for snooping.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Data using Picard and Q's voice.
- Picard's declaration of his hatred for children.
- Geordi regarding his visor: "It's a remarkable piece of bio-electronic engineering by which I quote 'see' much of the EM spectrum ranging from simple heat and infrared through radio waves, etc, etc and forgive me if I've sat and listened to this a thousand times before."
- I like the reference to McCoy not wanting to use the transporter.
- McCoy's visit to the Enterprise and his interaction with Data.
- Picard saying to Worf, "do you intend to blast a hole through the viewscreen?"

**Comments:**

There are many nice things about this first part of the TNG pilot. What I liked best is the careful attention paid to continuity, with the notable exception of this episode contributing to the confusion about when the Eugenics war and World War III took place, took place, including adding some confusion about whether or not they were in fact the same war. This, of course, can be examined in greater detail elsewhere. I like the way Picard handles all of the situations he's been given. We're shown a much different type of captain than Kirk; he's a military man. He's a man of tradition and certainly a man of great character. This makes Picard most Star Trek fans' favorite captain; though only my second favorite. Sisko on DS9 takes that title away from Picard for me; but only toward the end of DS9. The cliffhanger for this episode is convincingly presented, though the plot could have been slightly more interesting. I concede though that the writers were trying to introduce many of the new concepts TNG has to offer all at once. A dull plot is to be expected.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x02 - Encounter At Farpoint, Part II**  
**Originally Aired:** 1987-9-28

**My Rating**  
5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*At the trial, Q continues to denounce humans, while Picard defends his race.*

**Problems:**

- Picard only gives the people of farpoint station a few minutes at most to evacuate before the Enterprise feeds the energy creature so that it can leave.
- This episode (in both parts of course) suffers from the same thing most pilots suffer from. Terminology and a general "feel" to it that is soon forgotten and replaced. Such as Lt. Torres and

his "detector circuit", the way the computer guides Riker to the holodeck to find Data, and many other small details.

**Factoids:**

- Troi mentions that her father was "a starfleet officer" which is supposed to imply that her father was human. This implies that there are mostly humans in Starfleet and that Betazoids in Starfleet are rare.
- Given Riker's reaction to the holodeck, we're to assume they're still very rare bits of technology since their introduction in TAS. Interestingly, they're all over the place in a few years.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker trying to locate the holodeck and then his first interaction with Data. An experience he will come to remember.
- Wesley's abrasive first meetings with Picard.
- Picard's private meeting with Beverly.
- Picard solving Q's mystery.

**Comments:**

The second part finishes this very nice pilot episode establishing many details later followed up on in great detail such as Q, the Ferengi, Riker and Troi's relationship, Geordi's blindness, the ship's saucer separation, the holodeck, Wesley's father and Picard, Worf being a Klingon which implies peace with the Federation at long last, and many other things. This episode is like a preview of things to come because it introduces so many new TNG things in a single episode. The actual plot idea behind the episode like I mentioned in the review of part one is indeed meager, however, taking advantage of many cliches from TOS, such as super alien life form of the week, guest character with something to hide and establishing a few of it's own, most notably the Troi suffering scenes. The only reason I gave it such a high rating is because the writers weaved all of the new TNG stuff into the plot so nicely. Nothing felt wildly obtuse. It was a successful pilot episode, and one of the best of the season.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x03 - The Naked Now**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-10-5

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A mysterious contaminant causes the crew to act intoxicated.*

**Problems:**

- The doctor "confines" Geordi to sickbay yet he just walks out?
- The emotions Data displays while drunk are inconsistent with his programming. We can rationalize this by saying the virus was simply affecting his behavior and Data never felt emotion, but it's a stretch. Audience shouldn't have to come up with this stuff.
- I don't understand why everyone is impressed with Wesley. Wesley is directly responsible for the destruction of that other ship and taking over Engineering. I'm not sure how much thanks I'd be giving him if I were Starfleet.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is an homage/sequel to TOS: The Naked Time.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data correcting Riker about blown out vs sucked out.
- Data is listed in several bio-mechanical texts.
- Data inquiring about another human expression. "Snoot full" was it?
- Data, again, "There was a young lady from Venus. Whose body was shaped like a Penis."
- Yar and Data having sex and Data subsequently getting drunk.
- Picard and Beverly drunk.
- Data falling over thinking he'd be leaning on something. I wonder how Brent Spiner did that without hurting himself.

**Comments:**

Showing the virus' effects by exaggerating Geordi's desire for normal sight was a great idea and provided great insight into Geordi's character. This homage to the original TOS episode is actually quite a bit more successful in my opinion because of that and many other small things such as



Riker and Data reading their history and finding the TOS episode similarity. Also the characters were quite a bit funnier while drunk in this episode than in TOS. Though, that's a double edged sword. They were also too silly. Learning about Yar's history, Wesley's desires, and the doctor's attraction to Picard was great for character development, but the humor has a mild dismissive effect on all of this character development. Making a humor episode so early in the first season was not particularly smart.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x04 - Code of Honor**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-10-12

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Tasha is kidnapped.*

**Problems:**

- Riker says they are "not only are they closely humanoid, but their history has remarkable similarities to ours." OK even by now, this was becoming a huge cliché. TOS did those kinds of stories TO DEATH. We can forget this problem though by pretending Riker never said that, as it's a throw away line. Aliens similar to humans and/or historical humans in Star Trek are as common as Klingons.
- How could DATA make the vocal mistake "includling"? Maybe his programming glitched? Still it seems unlikely.

**Factoids:**

- The primitives of this episode use the same transporters as TOS. Even the effects are the same.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data correcting Picard regarding the century of the gift.
- Data rambling about the details behind the transporter the primitives use, similar to the first episode when he was "commenting on everything".
- Picard and Beverly's conversation about her feelings about death and about Wesley. I especially liked Picard's reaction to her when she first brought up Wesley.
- Picard giving Wesley a chance. "Sir?" then "Sir?" then Picard says, "Is the whole ship deaf?"
- The scene where Data inadvertently insults the French in front of Picard is hilarious. Everything from Picard's reaction, the look on everyone else's face just before Picard goes off on Data, to Riker telling Data to "drop it".
- Riker hell bent on getting Picard not to lead the away team down to the planet and being struck down by Troi and Data. Good character consistency with Riker's history as a First Officer mentioned in the first episode.
- Data and Geordi regarding humor. Then Data thinking Picard is joking about analyzing the weapons.
- Picard stopping his ramble Data-style regarding his cynical view of the alien culture.
- I love Data being chauvinistic about how the weapons were made light so that women could use them.

**Comments:**

Most people are more critical of this episode than I for some reason. I think it was a great example of quality Trek even if the premise was weak. The episode does suffer, however, from bad acting by the guests. But TOS had plenty of that in the regulars! We should be used to it by now. ;) All in all a solid episode. We get nice tidbits of character dev. I like how Tasha feels right at home with violence which makes sense considering the impression we're getting regarding her past. I also like how Wesley was treated with respect for once. Finally, I love Picard's mystery plan and how Riker expresses his overt misunderstanding of it. The ending was well conceived and reminded me of a good chess match.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x05 - The Last Outpost**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-10-19

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew encounters Ferengi bandits.*

**Problems:**

- Discontinuities regarding this episode and Star Trek Enterprise are discussed in the Enterprise section.

**Factoids:**

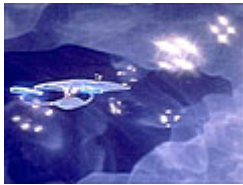
- Armin Shimmerman, one of the Ferengi in this episode eventually goes on to play a regular Ferengi character on DS9 named Quark. He also guest stars as Quark in both TNG and Voyager making him one of very few characters/actors to play in at least one episode in all three series.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The flag colors scene with Picard, Data, Yar, and Worf is great. We get character continuity with Picard embracing his French origins and Data not caring/understanding, again. Poor Data.  
- Geordi's reaction to Riker's plan to jump to Warp 9 then "come back fightin'" is great.  
- Data in a Chinese finger trap and the reactions of Riker, Picard etc.

**Comments:**

The Ferengi in this episode are absolutely offensive. Especially the giant zoom-in of the Daimon on the Ferengi ship. They also conducted themselves and spoke an overly exaggerated retarded manner. Synonymous to trolls under a bridge in a child's story. Unfit for us adults watching Star Trek. The whole episode felt like an insult to my intelligence. While this is a very trek like episode with a great ending, the acting of the guests was absolutely horrible. The only redeeming qualities of this episode were the interesting ending and the fantastic continuity regarding the Ferengi. The only thing that soon goes away is how retarded they act. Their general premise though remains intact in future episodes, which compliments this one nicely.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x06 - Where No One Has Gone Before**    **My Rating - 5**  
**Originally Aired:** 1987-10-26

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew is sent a billion light years from their own galaxy.*

**Problems:**

- LaForge says "we're passing warp 10!" Sounds like instrument failure to me, since warp 10 is infinite speed on the TNG scale. Data contradicted him seconds later that they were "off the scale." So that works. Thanks Data. But then they shoot themselves in the foot again. Geordi says it would take "over 300 years" to get home. Uh? Geordi? It's gonna take a lot longer than that to cross three galaxies. Sure his statement is technically correct. It will indeed take over 300 years! But still it leaves the viewer with an inaccurate impression of how long it takes to cross galaxies. My estimates place their travel time at a whopping two million years at approximately warp 9. You also have to worry about how they replenish fuel during the travel time BETWEEN the galaxies they travel through. The trip back with conventional warp is for all intents and purposes impossible.  
- Also, a subspace message traveling millions of light years in only 50 years also seems too fast. I'll let that one slide though as it's less important and I don't actually know how fast subspace communications actually are.  
- At one point in this episode we can hear the warpcore booming very fast, but behind Wesley, we can see the light which is apparently supposed to cause the booms only moving at the regular slow speed.  
- When Picard calls Wesley to the bridge at the end of the episode, he appears seconds later, as if he was waiting in the turbolift waiting for the call!

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- As other's have said before me, Kozinsky is so wonderfully obnoxious.  
- I like Wesley in this episode. He's confident and useful to the story.  
- The humor is well placed in the episode. I especially like the viola scene along with Picard walking out into space from the turbolift. The music, including that viola scene, is great in this episode.

**Comments:**

This episode had a great premise that was ruined and then just barely saved. The problems are numerous but the great moments keep the episode from failing miserably so it balances out at 5 out of 10 for me. My biggest problem with the episode was the continual jumping around all over

the universe rather than stopping the madness and realizing that traveling through three galaxies was enough shock value for one episode. Think of all the stuff that Picard could have done exploring that galaxy while his officers and the Traveler prepared for the return trip! That would have made for a far more interesting episode. Nevertheless, despite how wasted this premise was, it was well executed despite. I liked Kozinsky's obnoxiousness and I love how after Riker treated Wesley horribly he realized what he had done and apologized honestly. Wesley got the respect he deserved here. So all in all, lots of good stuff, lots of bad stuff, they cancel each other out.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x07 - Lonely Among Us**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-11-2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Alien beings take control of Crusher, Worf and Picard.*

**Problems:**

- When Worf first freaks, Beverly asks the injured crewman who tried to help restrain him "are you okay?" He never responds and doesn't move much but she doesn't seem to care.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first TNG episode to feature a crewman death.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data mimicking Sherlock Holms.
- The ending and Picard's reaction to everything.

**Comments:**

This episode annoys me in the sense that we've got a perfectly good plot already with the aliens that hate each other that is largely ignored so we can have energy-life-form-of-the-week. Though, in a way, I was glad to see the aliens take a back seat because they were just as annoying to me as the wasted opportunity was. Why did the writers have to make those aliens so stereotypical? It IS possible to create poor Federation candidates without making them 1. ugly and 2. retarded acting. The episode is however largely entertaining and both plots nicely strung together even if they are both weak. Slightly below average episode.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x08 - Justice**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-11-9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wesley is sentenced to death.*

**Problems:**

- Riker says the planet's life forms are almost identical to us! How wonderfully unusual! Sarcasm? What sarcasm? Didn't we just have this discussion back there with Code of Honor? \*rolls eyes\*
- Why the hell did they ever even land on that planet in the first place? These guys seem somewhat unaware of space travel and warp drive. Making first contact with these people sounds like a Prime Directive violation to me.
- Data says "I'm" when right after being accused of babbling. See episode "Datalore" for more information on why this is bad.
- Picard talks during transport. I don't see how this is possible.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf: "Nice planet."
- I love Riker and Worf talking about sex and how Worf claims he'd have to restrain himself as not to injure any women he'd be with if she weren't Klingon and how Riker says if Worf were any other man, he'd think Worf was bragging.
- Picard: "Data, don't babble." Data: "Babble, sir? I'm not aware that I ever babble, sir. It may be

from time to time I have considerable information to communicate and you make question the way in which I organize it..."

- Data's faux pas with Beverly regarding motherhood.

**Comments:**

The Edo acted unbelievably and unrealistically lame. Normally I like Wesley, but he also really sucked in this episode. Though he improved quite a bit at the end, being willing to sacrifice himself to save the ship. The Edo's punishment laws are equally unrealistic. I did like the question of whether or not to violate their own prime directive and the fact that the god-things are keenly aware of the said rule. The dilemma of the episode was certainly intriguing, but the idea behind the episode is ruined by the lame Edo, their lame god, and the unremarkably routine ending.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x09 - The Battle**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-11-16

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard encounters his old ship, the Stargazer.*

**Problems:**

- How can Troi sense anything from Bok? Betazoids can't read Ferengi. Maybe she was just bluffing to seem important to the captain.

- Bok beams through the Stargazer's raised shields. Maybe they had the exact frequency or something.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Wesley finds the answer to Picard being mind controlled and receives no gratitude! Hilarious.

**Comments:**

More terrible acting by the Ferengi. Otherwise a decent episode with a good plot and ending.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x10 - Hide and Q**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-11-23

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Q invites Riker to join the Continuum.*

**Problems:**

"Drink not with thine enemy. The rigid Klingon code." Uh, Klingons do this all the time, Q. Perhaps the "code" only applies to situations of capture.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- "Your species is always suffering and dying." - says Q. How true, in an ironic sort of way.

- Worf: "More like vicious animal things."

- Worf's reaction to Picard accusing Q of being a "flim flam" man.

- We find out here that Worf has no ties to his own kind.

- I love Picard confirming that yes, Riker should feel like an idiot for everyone refusing his supernatural gifts.

**Comments:**

A solid episode yet unremarkable from a Q episode standpoint. The good parts are obscured by the bad so it averages out. The good: there is speculation that humans will become more powerful than the Q and that frightens the Q. I also like the little tidbits we get about just what the Q are. This remains continuous and is followed up on for years to come. The bad: Yar's interaction with Q

(penalty box etc) was highly annoying. Then her crying outburst to Picard was pathetic with terrible acting. But at least Picard was nice to her which lessened the badness of the scene.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x11 - Haven**

**My Rating - 2**

**Originally Aired:** 1987-11-30

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Lwaxana Troi tells Deanna of her arranged marriage.*

**Problems:**

- The Tarellian ship has this glowing sphere which constantly changes color. You've got to wonder why they'd waste their limited amounts of energy on such aesthetics.

**Factoids:**

- Majel Barrett plays Lwaxana Troi in this episode. She was Gene Roddenberry's wife.  
- Armin Shimerman who goes on to play Quark on DS9 was the Wedding Gift Box.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Lwaxana is so wonderfully arrogant.  
- Wyatt and Troi discussing Betazoid marriage ceremony compromise.

**Comments:**

This episode's poor rating is due mostly to it's unremarkable plot that seems to have been strung together from a series of totally unrelated threads. The episode's name is "Haven" yet we see virtually nothing of the planet nor do we learn anything about it's people beyond the fact that they're friends of the Federation. Then we have the Tarellians. They are an obvious allusion to what Earth would become if the cold war had heated up. We do, however, get more insight into Troi and Riker's previous relationship which is interesting. We also get the first mention of the a Betazoid marriage ceremony which becomes something of an infamous Trek joke--in a good sense. All things considered, this episode focused too much on Troi and relationships and too little on the Tarellians and Haven. A jumbled mess.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 1x12 - The Big Goodbye**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-1-11

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard and crew are trapped on the holodeck.*

**Problems:**

- Wesley says the program could abort and everyone inside could vanish? What? He probably meant Picard's program could be irreversibly damaged.  
- When the holograms disappear after walking off the holodeck it sure takes a while. No part of them should be able to exist outside the holodeck for ANY length of time, much less several seconds and a pretty disappearance animation and famous last words.

**Factoids:**

- This episode first aired on my third birthday.  
- This episode was supposed to come after the episode in which the Binaris upgrade the holodeck. If this is what had actually happened, there would have been some nice continuity with holodeck upgrades if they hadn't changed the order.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard doesn't know what Halloween is.  
- I love Picard's fascination with holodeck detail, such as the cars and his excited ranting about the experience afterward to his senior staff when they're supposed to be having a briefing about their diplomatic mission.  
- Joe DiMaggio's streak will stand unsurpassed until 2026, Star Trek predicts. We'll see. ;)  
- I love how everyone reacts to the holodeck so carelessly until they realize things are messed up.  
- Beverly swallow's gum.

- Picard with a cigarette.
- Data with a lamp not realizing he unplugs it. When it gets plugged back in for him, the look on his face suggests he fixed it himself. Data the oblivious.
- Picard's list minute performance in insectoid language is fantastic.

**Comments:**

This is the first episode to use the "malfunctioning holodeck" cliché. But since it was first I don't count off from it's score for it. Otherwise this would be a 4. After Picard gives the successful greeting, I'm annoyed by everyone's attention shifting to the holodeck adventure. Surely such discussions should wait until after all diplomatic business is completed? But nope, they give the greeting and fly away. This is acceptable, and is accepted by all characters in the episode, but I just see it as poor writing. The episode focused too much on the holodeck and not enough on the aliens. Nevertheless, it was a fairly successful holodeck episode and the B plot of the aliens was sufficiently interesting albeit neglected. One thing I really liked about this episode is how our 20th century historian character redshirt didn't die.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x13 - Datalore**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-1-18

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data meets his evil twin brother, Lore.*

**Problems:**

- Lore's twitching is annoying and irrelevant. Surely they could have found a better way to differentiate Data and Lore.
- Data said "I'm" just recently in episode "Justice". This is discontinuous with Lore's claim that Data is incapable of saying things like that. However, in general, data doesn't do that, so it's not a big YATI.
- "And we're overdue for our computer refit," says Picard. This is a reference to the Binar episode which unfortunately doesn't come until after the next one. Episodes in TNG season one got rearranged something fierce.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- This episode contains more nice continuity thanks to Wesley and Data about how the common cold has been eliminated in the 24th century.
- And nice continuity with Riker objecting to Picard's desire to lead the away time to Omicron Theta.
- Data's off switch.
- I love the helm tutorial reassuring us that space is not flat like ocean water and that one can fly up, down, diagonal, etc.
- Geordi: "Captain, I'm picking up a bogey coming in on a five O'clock tangent." Way to use slang there, Geordi!
- I like when the doctor gets phasered, she runs away with her arm literally on fire! I wish they used that effect more often on Star Trek.
- I also like how the phaser beam is transported along with Lore.

**Comments:**

We get wonderful technical tidbits concerning doctor Noonien Soong and the fact that Data has a positronic brain all of which remains continuous with later episodes and all of which makes this episode twice as mysterious and exciting. Lore was annoying, though. The music in this episode before learn is "revealed" to be evil was annoying too in that it showed Lore was clearly evil from the beginning, not to mention Lore's idiotic behavior. That, and Lore's desire to please the crystalline entity is nonsensical. We are never given his motivation. Finally, I hate how Picard and Riker treat Wesley in this episode. "Shut up Wesley!" After the Traveler has told Picard that Wesley is unusually smart? Sigh. Anyway, my nitpicking is highly picky. I love this episode otherwise.

---



**Star Trek TNG - 1x14 - Angel One**  
**Originally Aired:** 1988-1-25

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew travels to a planet with a matriarchal society.*

**Problems:**

- There is a glitch in the Elected One's opening lines when the visit begins. "...representatives of the starfleet Enterprise etc". Since when is the Enterprise a starfleet and not a starship?
- They want to find the survivors by searching for an element not natural to the Angel One world. Why don't they just use the sensors to find human life signs? Maybe the Angel One aliens are too similar to humans to differentiate? They sure look a lot like humans anyway which is too common in Trek unfortunately.
- Data tells us that only starfleet officers are bound by the Prime Directive. This is confirmed by other characters as well by their behavior. So uh, ordinary citizens are allowed to give antimatter to bronze age cultures then? There's no justifying this one. The episode is wrong. We can quietly forget about this though as not being a Prime Directive issue but more a "doing what's right" issue because the Odin survivors consider themselves Angel One citizens. But it's a stretch. It doesn't matter anyway seeing as how the episode had no serious consequences.

**Factoids:**

- This episode features the first mention of TNG Romulan movements.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker submits to local apparel. Yar and Troi laugh at him like a bunch of giddy school girls.
- Picard sick humbly and reluctantly obliging doctor's orders.
- Geordi in command and loving it. "Make it so."
- Worf sneezing.
- Riker was so wonderfully tolerant of the Elected One's unceasing arrogance.
- Riker's martyr speech was fantastic. As was the reaction / ending.
- Data's facial expression when Riker gives him a pat on the back (well shoulder in this case)
- Picard's hoarse voice.

**Comments:**

This episode opens with a ridiculously horrible cliché. Here we have something almost worse than an identical-to-humans race: an identical-to-humans-all-except-one-small-detail race! Also how wonderfully original that one of the male aliens is named Trent. And one of the female's names is Ariel! And the reverse chauvinism in this episode is just as offensive as the regular chauvinism that was in Code of Honor. Despite this, the episode improves greatly as it moves forward. As I said under Remarkable Scenes, Riker puts on a great show with his martyr speech and the episode's ending thrives on it. I absolutely loved the ending, even if it is somewhat unremarkable, it nevertheless is a fine example of Trek at it's best: making a (positive) difference. I also loved the Virus B plot creating havoc and the Romulan C plot creating extra urgency. My only annoyance with this is that the Romulans are never shown and the Romulan incident in question goes undocumented. But it would have had to have been a two parter for that. The episode isn't without it's problems and clichés, but it was skillfully done and greatly entertaining. Another solid 6.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x15 - 11001001**  
**Originally Aired:** 1988-2-1

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Bynars take control of Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

- This problem is common in many TNG episodes, but I hate how the red alert sound doesn't match the red alert lighting.
- The auto destruct sequence seems overly rigid to be practical. And 5 minutes is too short. Especially when you have to start it from engineering and stop it from the bridge. Fortunately, the system is later changed.
- Why is the computer voice inconsistent in this episode? The Bynars?

**Factoids:**

- The title of this episode when converted from binary to decimal is actually 201.
- This episode establishes some great and kind of interesting continuity with starfleet rank. The starbase's highest ranking officer is a commander. Picard outranks him as a captain. This is continuous with the DS9 series and other TNG episodes.
- The Bynars are mentioned with great continuity in a later Enterprise episode.
- This episode was originally intended to come before The Big Goodbye, which would have been far more appropriate. But oh well. This is acceptable.
- When Data orders the ship to be auto piloted out of the star base, a lot of other reviewers bitched about how they could save have the ship by detaching the saucer. But in less than 4 minutes? I agree with Data's decision.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Bynars' culture is absolutely fascinating and wonderfully original. Very Borg-like, without the evil connotation or the sense of (total) individuality lost.
- Just about every scene the Bynars are in is remarkable.
- Worf taking the Parises Squares game so seriously.
- Riker: "Keep notes. This may be valuable to scholars in the future." Geordi: "Really?" Riker: "Well think about it. A blind man teaching an android how to paint? That's got to be worth something in somebody's book."
- Riker playing with the settings of the woman on the holodeck.
- I like Minuet and Picard talking in French. Especially since I can understand the spoken French. The scene was well done.
- Data "awaiting inspiration".
- Picard and Riker valiantly trying to save the ship.

**Comments:**

Riker's jazz indulgences and Picard / Riker being seduced by the holodeck is a bit overused in this episode. And I'd have preferred it if we learned more about the Bynars. Still, this episode is a real action packed and highly interesting thriller. The technobabble at the end is annoying, but the episode is still largely entertaining and, well, just good. The greatness of the episode largely overwhelms its minor flaws.

**Star Trek TNG - 1x16 - Too Short a Season**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-2-8

**My Rating - 2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew encounters legendary negotiator Mark Jameson.*

**Problems:**

- Why didn't Riker object to Picard going down with the Admiral? At least he seemed moody about it... And at least he almost barely kinda tried to question it the second time Picard beamed down...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Admiral's wife's Jealousy yet her contradictory desire NOT to acquire her husband's newfound youth is so perfect.
- The Admiral's "interpretation" of the Prime Directive is great.
- Data: "Their phasers sir, they're set to kill." Picard: "Thank you Mr. Data, I have heard that sound before."

**Comments:**

The Admiral's arrogance at first is highly annoying, but the ending reveals the greatness behind the actor. Still though, the episode is mostly unremarkable and dull. The biggest problem is the lack of a secondary plot, so the episode seems to drag and overstate the obvious. Keep in mind that while this probably qualifies as a relatively mediocre episode of Star Trek, I'd sooner watch a bad episode of Star Trek than anything else on TV. This episode's low rating is mostly due to how poorly it shapes up compared to other Trek episodes.





**Star Trek TNG - 1x17 - When The Bough Breaks**  
Originally Aired: 1988-2-15

My Rating - 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wesley and the other Enterprise children are kidnapped.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Little kids are expected to have a "basic understanding of Calculus" in the 24th century.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard making up regulations on the spot and Data realizing it.
- Picard: "Data, find a way to defeat that shield." Data: "That may be impossible, sir." Picard: "Things are only impossible until they're not!" Data: "Yes sir." Then data gets this wonderfully puzzled look on his face.
- The various Picard-being-tortured-by-contact-with-children scenes.

**Comments:**

Another identical-to-humans race. Somehow the children the Aldeans stole are going to continue their society. Obviously not genetically. So Aldea is to become a paradise for humans then in a few generations? The guest cast parents were overacting badly. Thankfully their screen time was short. And Raschala demands to keep the little girl? So much for their species being humble and non-greedy. Also, usually Wil Wheaton was great at playing Wesley, but he didn't do so hot in this episode. Who knows, maybe the directing sucked or the guest cast/children were causing him issues. Wesley is actually one of my favorite characters otherwise. Some of the logic behind how the ozone atmosphere layer connects to the cloaking shield is a bit fuzzy, but acceptable with some liberal interpretation. My problem with this episode, and the subsequent low rating, is mostly due to the premise. The method by which the premise played out was simply the nail in the coffin. Cliches, bad guest acting, idiotic aliens, and even a regular character did a bad job. Wow.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x18 - Home Soil**  
Originally Aired: 1988-2-22

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data and Geordi discover a "microbrain."*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf, facing Geordi: "But is it alive?" Computer: "Probability high." Worf, facing computer terminal: "I wasn't asking you."

**Comments:**

I loved the acting behind the terraforming director. The acting of the other guests as well was also decent. Other than that though, this episode is mostly unremarkable. Not bad, but not particularly good either by TNG standards.

---



**Star Trek TNG - 1x19 - Coming of Age**  
Originally Aired: 1988-3-14

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Wesley takes the grueling Starfleet Academy entrance exam.*

**Problems:**

- An expert shuttle pilot candidate steals a shuttle and immediately plunges it into the planet's atmosphere accidentally? Not sure how credible that is. Sure it could happen, but that's a little sloppy writing.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf and Wesley's chat about the testing is great.

**Comments:**

This episode has some good and it has some bad. First the bad. Both the conspiracy and the starfleet testing in this episode seemed highly unrealistic. But if we set that aside, we've got plenty of good as well. This episode has great continuity with previous episodes regarding Remmick's interrogations. Wesley getting pissed during the test was a little strange. "Do you want this to become violent?" That was a little too far. But acceptable. The best part of the episode is during Remmick's interrogations of various crewmembers in the briefing room. The way they wove the Remmick's questions and the answers of different crewmembers together was great. Picard is getting noticeably better with children. I liked him with Jake and later with Wesley.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x20 - Heart of Glory**  
Originally Aired: 1988-3-21

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Klingon fugitives take over the Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first Klingon episode in TNG.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing through Geordi's eyes was fascinating. I was just as disappointed as Picard when the questioning about Geordi and his VISOR was forced to cease.
- The dialog between Worf and the guest Klingons is great.
- Our first sight of the Klingon death ritual. Data's later explanation of the Klingon death ritual is just as good.
- The Klingons escaping the brig is excellently done.

**Comments:**

The opening was highly thrilling. Especially with Geordi transmitting his visuals and the discovery of the Klingons. The rest of the episode plays out just as well. Only the antagonist Klingons' battle desires are nonsensical. But it doesn't hurt too much. This episode is a real thriller and a first season classic.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x21 - The Arsenal of Freedom**  
Originally Aired: 1988-4-11

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The crew investigates the disappearance of the U.S.S. Drake.*

**Problems:**

- What was holding commander Riker in place? Something had to be actively generating that energy field. Yet they never tried to find the source.
- First Logan bitches about staying, then he bitches about leaving? WTF? OK maybe this isn't a "problem" because lots of people in real life act this hypocritical but it is still however annoying. Why didn't Geordi point out his hypocrisy? Because he was afraid of Logan's superior rank? Who cares about that Geordi, you were in command! Make him look like a fool!
- We have to assume that the Drake was lost with all hands because they never tell us what happens. Not a problem, but definitely a loose thread which the episode should have tied up.

#### Factoids:

- This is the first of many episodes in which Riker refuses a command (or talks about a refused command) and that refusal incidentally saves his life. Hmm!

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Riker: "No. The name of my ship is the Lollipop." Paul: "I have no knowledge of that ship." Riker: "It's just been commissioned. It's a good ship." The entire scene is remarkable.
- Notice how the second Riker is incapacitated, Picard takes the opportunity to plunge himself into immediate danger on the planet? Something Riker would certainly object to? The counselor objects, but Picard doesn't seem to care.
- I liked the scenes with Geordi and Chief Engineer Logan. At first it seemed shallow but it grew on me.
- The scenes with the Doctor coaching Picard on on-the-fly medicine were extremely well done.
- Geordi and Troi's scene together is also well done.
- Riker regarding Data jumping: "Data, it's over ten meters!" Data: "11.75, commander." Yar: "Data, you may be sturdy, but not indestructible!"
- Geordi: "Relinquishing command, captain." Picard: "As you were, lieutenant." Geordi: "Sir?" Picard: "Mr. LaForge, when I left this ship it was in one piece. I would appreciate your returning it to me in the same condition. Do you concur number one?" Riker: "Absolutely, sir."

#### Comments:

Excellent character development of Beverly and Geordi. Excellent performances by everyone. Every character had a good showing and a worthwhile purpose. Even the guests were great except for maybe Chief Engineer Logan. But he was only minorly annoying. (See problems.) One of the best of the first season. I don't like the premise nor the plot so much as I like the execution. This episode is a great example of how a mediocre idea can be made great by a good implementation. A pity that other episodes of this season with great premises couldn't have been better implemented.



#### Star Trek TNG - 1x22 - Symbiosis

Originally Aired: 1988-4-18

My Rating - 9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Picard mediates a dispute involving a mysterious drug.*

#### Problems:

- Yar gives a big wave to the captain when he leaves the cargo bay at the end of the episode... uh why? Supposedly it's because it was the last scene she filmed as a regular cast member. But there's no canon reason why.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- I don't know why, but I love the looks of almost disgust Picard and Riker and the rest of the crew give each other when the freighter Saction's crewmembers speak over the hail.
- That natural electrical charge sure is handy. Yar and Riker's discussion on it is also nicely done and technically correct.
- I love the initial plague fear at the beginning of the episode before they know it's a narcotic.
- Data: "I would estimate four billion, three hundred and seventy five million--" Picard, interrupting: "Thank you Mr. Data."
- Yar and Wesley discussing drugs.
- Riker being electrocuted, the look on his face, Picard refusing to back down, the whole scene was amazing.

- Picard disgusted with the "symbiosis". "Just put some distance between us and this system."

**Comments:**

A narcotic somehow maintains an economic balance between two groups of people. How many times have we seen this in our own history? And even today? They say that cigarettes are "the stupid people tax", seeing as how the U.S. government taxes them heavily. They tax the "stupid people" and redistribute the money to better causes by funding schools, road maintenance, and other tax funded things. Many smokers say to non smokers, "if we didn't smoke, where would all that tax money come from?" A similar dilemma is presented in this episode. Without the revenue generated from the narcotic in this episode, the producing species would supposedly not have a way to sustain themselves. The problem with that argument is that it's a cop out--denial of the real problem by using a cheap short-sighted excuse. What these people are really saying is, "I don't want to change." If smoking was banned tomorrow, schools, roads, etc, would still get paid for. People's taxes would probably just go up, or some other sold item would get taxed heavier. And if this symbiotic narcotic relationship in this episode were to be instantly severed, which is essentially what Picard did, the two planets would eventually get over each other and learn to survive on their own. The given here is that overcoming narcotic addiction on a global scale is preferable to short term gains acquired by exploiting its production.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x23 - Skin of Evil**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-4-25

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A strange entity taunts the crew with vicious pranks.*

**Problems:**

- Why does early TNG always feature a different chief engineer?
- The feasibility of the skin of evil alien is questionable.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard unrelentingly hounding the chief engineer for more more more!
- Notice how the second Riker is incapacitated, Picard takes the opportunity to plunge himself into immediate danger on the planet? (Again?) Something Riker would certainly object to?
- Data under control by the skin of evil.
- Riker all tarred. I bet Jonathan Frakes loved filming that.

**Comments:**

Yar's death was utterly meaningless and I hated it. I'll never understand their decision to kill her off, especially in this manner, but ultimately the series benefitted as Worf got more lines. At least her death wasn't immediately forgotten. They had a nice memorial for her and the episode closed on a sad note. I'm not sure if quarantining the planet was wise. Maybe they should of torpedo'd the skin of evil after they learned just what it was: pure evil. But whatever. This episode would have received a 2 if it weren't for the nicely done ending.



**Star Trek TNG - 1x24 - We'll Always Have Paris**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-5-2

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Captain Picard is reunited with an old flame.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard's fencing match in the beginning.

- Picard: "Enough of this self-indulgence." Regarding his time on the holodeck.
- Picard's strange behavior on the bridge when he reaches his old girlfriend before anyone else know just just who's down there.
- Picard, Data, and Riker meeting themselves from 5 seconds ago is awesome.
- Picard confronting his lost love regarding their unfinished business.
- Beverly fantasizing about Picard.
- Data navigating the obstacle course lab.
- Data talking to his three selfs.

#### Comments:

The mad scientist guy was a little annoying in his... enthusiasm. But not necessarily unrealistic. People who do what he did tend to be like that. I wish we could have been given more details concerning his experiments. That could have potentially made the episode more profound. I also would like to know who the hell the captain was fencing with. Cool looking dude. Could have been a nice side character. Instead, we're given this story about a lost love of Picard's. It was an interesting and completely adequate story, but the episode had the potential to do so much more IMHO. Solidly average!



#### **Star Trek TNG - 1x25 - Conspiracy**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-5-9

**My Rating - 5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard suspects conspiracy in Starfleet.*

#### Problems:

- Riker orders Geordi to increase speed to warp 6. Geordi responds with, "Aye sir, full impulse."
- Picard takes Riker into the transporter room alone to talk to him in private, yet when Picard yells "Energize!" it isn't Riker who beams him down. We don't see who or what did it so was it the computer? If so, why do we always see PEOPLE operating the transporter? If it wasn't the computer, then some random transporter operator just heard all this classified crap. Either way you spin it it's still a plot hole.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Data attempting to laugh.
- Data: "One can swim in moonlight?"
- Worf: "Swimming is too much like bathing." Apparently Worf hates being clean.
- Data: "In a manner of speaking, it is nothing but a lifeless hunk of rock. A useless ball of mud. A worthless chunk of--" Riker: "Thank you Data."
- Picard: "Relay those coordinates to the transporter room. I'm beaming down." Riker: "Alone, captain?" Picard: "Alone, number one!" Picard didn't want to hear any crap from Riker today! Way to assert yourself Picard!
- Data talking to himself and the computer interrupting his rambling much like Riker did earlier.
- Quinn kicking Riker's ass and laughing at unbelievable blows he receives.
- Riker and Picard shoot the last admiral in the ass at once point!
- Remmick's death was so wonderfully gory.

#### Comments:

This is why military organizations with fixed rank and such are prone to failure. A corrupt or paranoid admiral can just order the Enterprise away from an important mission on some ridiculous internal security indulgence. Not necessarily a failing of the episode as that's not what really happened and the episode may be satirizing this anyway. But I doubt it. I absolutely love the continuity with Coming of Age in this episode, such as Picard's mentioning of his discussions with Admiral Quinn and his paranoia about starfleet being taken over by covert hostile forces. Quinn and Remmick being back in this episode made the continuity perfect. The maggot eating scene was severely over done but just when you think it's about to REALLY suck, Riker pulls out all the stops and shows us that he's been faking it. So that makes up for the painfully disgusting maggot scene. I love Remmick's death. One of the best death scenes ever done on Star Trek. Unfortunately, the episode falls short with Data's final lines. He believes the message being sent was a beacon to the

rest of the parasite race. Too bad the writers never decided to make that full scale invasion Data alluded to. Good episode, which had the potential to be so much more.



### **Star Trek TNG - 1x26 - The Neutral Zone**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-5-16

**My Rating - 10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard tries to prevent war with the Romulans.*

#### **Problems:**

- Why is Riker so disinterested regarding the ancient Earth spacecraft? Data's enthusiasm makes up for it though so this isn't really a problem.
- Riker handled the stock man's questions regarding a phone call, stocks, and the Wall Street Journal very badly, but I suppose he had no idea what he was talking about.
- How does Picard make it into the 20th century people's quarters so quickly? Did he beam outside of the door?
- Worf says, "It is as though some great force just scooped the outpost off the face of the planet." Well, uh, the Borg don't work this way. Or at least they didn't after this episode. Maybe they changed their tactics or something.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of TNG Award".
- Marc Alaimo who plays a Romulan in this episode later becomes famous as the Cardassian Gul Dukat in DS9.
- My copy of this episode lacks any sound on the left speaker. In order to bear watching it, I have to set audio to right justification in VLC. :(
- This episode marks the first casualty in the Federation's war with the Borg, though we don't know this at the time.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf walks into the door on the ancient space vehicle expecting it to open.
- Picard, seems busy and annoyed: "What is it doctor?" Beverly: "It's the people from the capsule." Picard, confused: "Capsule, people, what people?" I just like the way he says that. Like he's in a rush or something. Then when Beverly says she thawed them, Picard says, "You what?" But then listened to her and accepted it.
- I like how Beverly explains how their conditions were terminal in the 1900s but not in the 2300s.
- Picard getting pissed at Data for bringing up frozen people and Data standing his ground
- The 20th century girl's reaction to seeing a Klingon for the first time was silly, but Picard's line shortly after became famous. "Welcome to the 24th century."
- Data: "Her occupation: homemaker. Must be some kind of construction work."
- I like the question and answer regarding the Enterprise being an "American" ship.
- 20th century music man: "What is that?" Data looks behind him, oblivious to the fact that music man was talking about Data.
- Troi's briefing to Picard on what Romulans are all about is great.
- I absolutely love Data talking about how TV becomes obsolete by 2040. A TV show predicting the fall of TV! Then of course music man's shallow reaction. "You don't drink and you don't watch TV, your life must be boring." So true of people's interests today.
- Riker talking about how the unfrozen people have no redeemable qualities.
- The second Romulan briefing is just as impressive as the first. Everyone is alert, the discussion is intriguing.
- Picard: "Data, identify. What is the Q.E.2?" Data: "It was a passenger liner which traveled mostly Earth's Atlantic ocean during the late 20th and early 21st centuries." Picard: "He's comparing the Enterprise to a cruise ship?" Picard was obviously annoyed at the fact that the guests weren't aware of the fact that the Enterprise was the flagship of the Federation.
- Picard to Offenhouse: "We are in a very serious and potentially very dangerous situation." Offenhouse: "I'm sure whatever it is seems very important to you. But my situation is far more critical." What arrogance! Picard: "I don't think you are aware of your situation or how much time has passed." Offenhouse: "Believe me, I am fully aware of where I am and when. It is simply that I have more to protect than a man in your position could possibly imagine. No offense meant, but a military career has never really been considered to be upwardly mobile. I must contact my lawyer." Picard: "Your lawyer has been dead for centuries." Offenhouse: "Yes, I know that. But he was a full partner in a very important firm. Rest assured that firm is still operating." Picard: "That's what all

this is about... A lot has changed in the last 300 years. People are no longer obsessed with the accumulation of things. We have eliminated hunger, want, the need for possessions. We've grown out of our infancy." Offenhouse: "You've got it all wrong. It has never been about possessions. It's about power." Picard: "The power to do what?" Offenhouse: "To control your life. Your destiny." Picard: "That kind of control is an illusion." Offenhouse: "Really? I'm here, aren't I? I should be dead. But I'm not."

- No surprise but the rest of Picard's scene with the 20th century people is great.
- I love the doctor trying to keep from getting pissed at music man in sickbay when he asks for drugs and sexually harasses her.
- Data's scene with music man was good too. I like how directly he explained 24th century politics to him. Music man: "What is that neutral zone?" Data: "It is a buffer zone between the Romulan Empire and the Federation."
- I love how Picard kept refusing to be as aggressive as Riker and Worf wanted toward the Romulans.
- The Romulan ship decloaking is absolutely thrilling.
- Worf's outburst and the revelation that his parents were killed at Khitomer by Romulans.
- Picard's discussion with the Romulans onboard the Romulan ship was fantastic.

#### Comments:

This episode's "statement" regarding freezing a person after his or her death to preserve their life is wonderfully interesting. Then we've got our thrilling, mysterious, edge-of-your-seat Romulan plot. I like how everyone assumes Romulans are responsible for the outposts being destroyed and the realization later that they were not responsible. The military tension on board is very like the Red Scare and fear of Communism, which of course this episode is supposed to represent, like many early Romulan episodes. Yet, Federation vs. Romulan cold war is so very different from US vs. Soviet cold war which keeps it original and interesting. I also like how the previous hostile history with the Romulans makes diplomacy with them now a carefully played complex chess match. Virtually this entire episode is one great moment after another, and we even get some valuable character development along the way. The frozen people and Romulan plots compliment each other very nicely in many ways too. For example, by uncovering these people out of time, the characters get a chance to tell us how far the Federation is an improved version of us. And Picard only reinforces this with his dealings with the Romulans. This is one hell of a season finale and one of the best episodes of Star Trek ever made.



#### **Star Trek TNG - 2x01 - The Child**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-11-21

**My Rating - 3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien entity impregnates Troi.*

#### **Problems:**

- So radiation from the energy life form was making the virus grow? Radiation makes it *grow*? Basic physics anyone?
- Why was the child a boy? It's DNA was supposed to be identical to Troi's

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode of what many people call "modern TNG". Riker's beard, Worf in a yellow uniform, Geordi as Chief Engineer, Troi's wilder hair, Guinan, Ten Forward, and the Shuttle Bay all first appear here.
- This also marks this first appearance of Dr. Pulaski whom replaces Dr. Crusher for this season only. Dr. Crusher canonically became head of starfleet medical.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf demands Troi's pregnancy terminated!
- The first of many insults to Data from Dr. Pulaski as Troi is about to have her baby.
- Data's interrogation of the counselor as the birthing process begins is hilarious.
- Pulaski mispronouncing Data's name and then not really caring. Pulaski: "What's the difference?" Data: "One is my name. The other is not."
- An appearance of O'Brien! First time since the first episode I believe.
- Wesley speculating to Guinan about her past and Guinan lying about having not known Picard previously.
- I like the way Picard teases Wesley at the end.

### Comments:

Most people throw more mud at this episode than I do. Maybe I'd hate it more if it didn't introduce so many interesting and cool new things to TNG (see factoids). And Guinan is a damn good counselor. Better than Troi! Funny that she never sought a commission. Oh well. Toss aside the factoids and this episode is largely dull and uninteresting. Leaves you with a sense that there should have been more to both plot threads.



### Star Trek TNG - 2x02 - Where Silence Has Lease

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-11-28

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is engulfed by a mysterious hole.*

### Problems:

- An opening leading back to normal space appears 1.3 parsecs away and Picard orders the ship to go through at Warp 2. At this speed it would take months to make it to the hole. We have to assume the 1.3 parsecs figure is incorrect.
- The auto destruct sequence has an option to pick how long now! This is inconsistent with season one. Also, why was there no one in Engineering when they started the sequence?

### Factoids:

- Picard describes the Christian and Atheist versions of death to the fake Data then and dismisses them both!

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Worf kills stuff like in the opening on the holodeck even more violently every day.
- I love Worf and Picard's interaction about the probe disappearing. "Recommend we go to Yellow Alert, sir." And Picard saying totally confused: "Why?" Worf's story afterward was great.
- More insults to Data from Pulaski.
- Another appearance of O'Brien!
- Data: "Captain, sensors show nothing out there." Geordi: "Sure is an ugly nothing."
- Pulaski: "Isn't that a bit like curing the disease by killing the patient?" Riker: "It's better than doing nothing." Pulaski: "Why do I get the feeling that now was not the best time to join this ship..."
- Picard: "Abort auto destruct sequence." Computer: "Riker, William T., do you concur?" Riker: "Yes, Absolutely. I do indeed concur wholeheartedly." Picard: "A simple yes would have sufficed, number one." Riker: "I didn't want there to be any chance of misunderstanding." Picard: "Of course. You have the bridge."

### Comments:

This episode has lots of suspense but just as much confusion at the beginning. Pascal's death was wonderfully acted. One of the better small guests of the series. And where did Wesley go? He was on the bridge but then he gets replaced mid episode by this anonymous Pascal character. Why? I'll tell you why. They needed a redshirt to kill. That's why. Wesley conveniently retakes his station after redshirt guy dies. I find it distasteful that Pascal's death was not more consequential. Other than that, this episode is interesting, but nevertheless it felt more like the writers were just trying to waste some time. Bravo for a well done waste of time.



### Star Trek TNG - 2x03 - Elementary, Dear Data

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1988-12-5

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data enjoys a Sherlock Holmes holodeck program.*

### Problems:

- Uh, why not just cut the power to the holodeck? Sure evil hologram has computer control. He could stop you. But at least try!

### Factoids:

- It's been said that the production of this episode cost tons of money because of the London set.



**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data "just throwing himself into the part" of Holmes. (All throughout the episode.)
- Data solving the first mystery by memorization then getting damn near offended at Geordi's frustration.
- MORE insults to Data from Pulaski. However, her lines criticizing Data are twice as wonderful in this episode. I love how she was eavesdropping in ten forward.
- I love the "odd surge of power" when the computer creates a Data-beating opponent. Foreshadowing maybe? ;)
- Worf looking out of place in a suit walks up to Riker. Riker: "Nice suit." Worf somewhat startled says loudly, "Thank you." Then changes the subject. Then as they prepare to enter, Picard flips open his top hat startling both Worf and Data.
- Picard childishly: "Data, let him go!" Regarding the mugger.

**Comments:**

A creative and fun episode with well placed humor. The debate on whether or not Data could handle an original mystery is fascinating. I love the verbal competitions between Pulaski and Geordi. However this is holodeck cliché episode two. Despite that, the idea that the computer could be ordered to create a holographic life form by accident is fascinating enough so that this episode is not a "malfunctioning holodeck" cliché. Unfortunately, this fascinating discovery and amazing creation is just shoved away and forgotten. The way the episode abruptly ended ruined its greatness and reduced it to average.

**Star Trek TNG - 2x04 - The Outrageous Okona****My Rating - 5****Originally Aired:** 1988-12-12**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***The roguish Okona charms the crew.***Problems:**

- Data called it "an amphibian briefcase." But Fish are not amphibians. Maybe he used the word because the fish was meant to be out of water and therefore had amphibious qualities?
- Picard: "Lasers do not even penetrate our navigational shields." What the hell are navigation shields?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Guinan: "Because you're a droid, and I'm annoyed." Data: "Humanoid." Guinan: "Yes." Data: "You told a joke." Guinan: "Yes!" Data: "I am not laughing." Guinan: "Yes!" Data: "Perhaps the joke was not funny." Guinan: "No. The joke was funny, it's you, Data." Data: "Are you sure?" Guinan: "Yes!" Data: "I agree."
- Data on the holodeck practicing humor.
- Data trying to tell jokes.
- The hostile but harmless ship.
- Picard: "They're threatening to attack the Enterprise!" Okona: "They're crazy, they wouldn't stand a chance!" Picard: "Right!" Then walks away with a confused look on his face. Poor Picard, trying to maintain good diplomatic relations with everyone can be hard!

**Comments:**

This episode features well placed humor alongside bad humor. Where it really shines though is in the diplomatic mystery. It is unfortunately too easily solved, but for the time allotted in the episode and the number of threads unraveling, it's all they could do. So this episode, all things considered, is not bad, but not terribly impressive either.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x05 - Loud as a Whisper**  
Originally Aired: 1989-1-9

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A deaf mediator communicates through a Chorus.*

**Problems:**

- Why can't Riva talk? Many deaf lip readers, who are exactly like Riva, have no problem with it.
- Why was Data signing to Riva? RIVA LIP READS! In a few spots, Data was only half assed signing as well.

**Factoids:**

- Before Riva, there was no Klingon word for "peacemaker". Cool!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard so easily dismisses Riker's objections with Picard leading the away team now. :)
- Another appearance of O'Brien!
- Riva's overconfidence is contagious, as he's such a cool guy.
- I love the scene which causes the death of Riva's chorus. Riva's chorus' death has neat special effects for the time and the alien who kills Riva's chorus is killed by his ally for his traitorous behavior. I love this forced devotion to keeping the peace talks alive between the combatants.
- The pain in Riva's face in the scenes after the death of the chorus and the sympathy of Picard et al is wonderfully done.
- Picard: "Data, he knows some kind of gestural language. Find out which one and learn it!"
- I love how Picard tries to reassure Riva that they're all this together. So sad. :(
- Data's brief and impressive signing demonstration and Picard's reaction
- Geordi considering surgery to fix his vision
- I love Pulaski in that scene. "I can fix your vision." Geordi: "What? I was told that was impossible." Pulaski: "I've done it twice." Way to go arrogant Pulaski!
- The counselor forcing Riva to see the solution

**Comments:**

Another exactly like humans race! Riva's race. Despite this, Riva, his race, and his chorus were fascinating. The tragedy that was the death of his chorus was exciting, sad, and a powerful motivator for the powerfully happy ending. Adding the tiny tiny B plot of Geordi confronting his blindness due to learning of Riva's deafness was appropriate and interesting. It is regrettable that we're not informed of Geordi's decision. We must assume he decided to keep everything as is because nothing became of his visit with Pulaski.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x06 - The Schizoid Man**  
Originally Aired: 1989-1-23

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Enterprise provides medical aid for Dr. Ira Graves.*

**Problems:**

- Near warp transport seems a bit too risky for the gain. They cut what... a few seconds from their journey at the risk of killing the away team? Seems a bit reckless.
- Graves' world looks remarkably like Saturn. I do believe that it's just a Saturn image. Not necessarily a problem, but a bit unoriginal.
- Graves' ranting about how Data will never have emotions nor die is kind of surreal. Because Data, in fact, does acquire emotions and does indeed die. Removes the greatness from the scene. Oh well. You can't really blame this episode for that problem.
- There's a scene order mess up in this episode. When Data and Graves' assistant are in the observation room when the ship goes to warp, the first scene shows Data sitting, Then the next scene shows Data walking around behind her, then the next scene shows Data sitting again. Data's fast, but not that fast.

**Factoids:**

According to diti.org, "[t]his episode was intended as a homage to the British series "The Prisoner", which had an episode of the same name. Patrick McGoohan, who played the lead in that series,

was considered for the part of Graves."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data's beard, identical to Riker's without coincidence I'm sure. "Don't I appear more intellectual?"
- Troi: "For a moment, I thought I was stuck in that wall!" Worf: "For a moment, you were."
- Regarding the long range near-warp transport.
- Troi: "It's an honor to meet you Dr. Graves." Graves: "Yes, of course it is. This is one of the truly great moments of your life."
- Worf being insulted.
- Data calling Graves Grandpa
- Graves is so wonderfully immodest.
- Graves mourning himself and Picard ceasing it.
- Wesley reminding Graves/Data that they're similar in age, bodily anyway.
- Graves/Data mouthing off to Picard.

**Comments:**

A nicely done episode with a genuine and interesting moral dilemma. The episode features a nice plug about Data's father's past adding more detail to the mystery regarding his origins and more hope that he could in fact become human some day. Picard's speech about how one life should never be usurped by another is great and the fact that it forces Graves to realize the atrocity he had committed is fantastic. The story ends with a wonderful bit of irony when Graves ends up sacrificing himself to save Data. Graves' consciousness is lost, but his knowledge preserved. So it's not a total loss but the story isn't entirely a happy ending making Graves' statement that "real life" (in this case, Star Trek is real life to the characters) doesn't always have a happy ending. Despite being such a nice episode, it could have been improved by spending more time on the moral issue and less time on showing us how evil Data + Graves was. Only a tiny fraction of the episode was dedicated to the moral issue. The ending seemed kind of random. I still enjoyed it though.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x07 - Unnatural Selection**  
**Originally Aired:** 1989-1-30

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Pulaski suffers from a disease that induces rapid aging.*

**Problems:**

- The Lantree seemed a bit too large a ship for such a small crew.
- The genetic engineering done on that planet is strictly forbidden by the Federation canonically as of TOS: Space Seed. We're forced to assume they had special permission.
- The transporter cure is a bit far fetched and plagued by meaningless technobabble.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew's horror toward what happened to the Lantree is nicely done.
- An appearance of O'Brien! And he has a bunch of lines!
- I like Riker's discreet commenting on Pulaski's hatred of the transporter.
- Have to point out Data's little smile after Pulaski talks up his computer skills.
- Picard's interaction with Pulaski's former captain is fantastic.
- The destruction of the Lantree.

**Comments:**

Pulaski gives a wonderful showing in this episode. She interacts so nicely with Picard, Data, and well the whole cast. The problems of this episode drag it down quite a bit though. First, I did state that we're assuming that they've been given special permission to do that genetic engineering, but my assumption doesn't make the problem go away. That stuff is illegal. Second, the way the disease is cured and the problem is solved is highly lame. We're given no acceptable solution. Despite my affinity for O'Brien and his screen time, his lines are mostly nonsensical technobabble resulting in a largely unexplained cure. Despite this, what the episode lacked in continuity and technicality, it made up for in performance and character interactions. This justifies a rating of 4 vs a much lower rating.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x08 - A Matter of Honor**  
Originally Aired: 1989-2-6

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Riker serves as first officer on board a Klingon ship.*

**Problems:**

- There is a lot of talk about why Klingon isn't translated by the universal translators. I like to explain this one way by saying the translators can't handle it. The real reason though is that speaking in Klingon makes them look cooler and serves to further make them seem like the strange and foreign Russians they're supposed to represent.

**Factoids:**

- The first mention of Klingon delicacy Gagh.  
- This episode confirms what many of us suspected, each starship has a majority race on board, in the case of the Enterprise, mostly human. It's confirmed by the Benzite telling us about "his race's ships" even though they're part of the Federation.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The phaser range match between Riker and Picard is nicely done.  
- I love Picard's sociological curiosity regarding Klingon culture.  
- Klingon ship's first appearances and close ups are impressive.  
- Riker's assertiveness toward the Klingon second officers is fantastic.  
- Klingon Officer: "If Klingon food is too strong for you, then perhaps we can get one of the females to breastfeed you!"  
- All of the dialogue between the Klingons and Riker is articulate and interesting.  
- After demanding Riker give him the weaknesses of the Enterprise and Riker refuses, the Klingon captain says, "if you had told me those secrets about the Enterprise, I would have labeled you a traitor [to your people] and killed you where you stood."

**Comments:**

The Benzite was annoying. But the way the crew reacted to him was satisfactory. I liked Worf's reaction to him the best. Beyond that, the whole episode was just thrilling and fun. The Klingons w/Riker gave an excellent showing and thankfully very little screen time was devoted to the dumb Benzite. Unfortunately, as nicely portrayed the Klingons were and some points, they seemed kind of dumb at others. I doubt most sane Klingons would attack a Federation ship at the drop of a hat like that. Not really that serious a problem though seeing as how the rest of the episode establishes so much nice continuity with Klingon culture. A good episode all together.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x09 - The Measure of a Man**  
Originally Aired: 1989-2-13

My Rating - 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Picard must defend Data against being disassembled.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of TNG Award".  
- This is the first Poker game episode.  
- Data's total memory is somewhere around 90 petabytes with "a total linear computational speed of 60 trillion operations per second."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- It's nice to learn more about Picard's past through Louvois. That, and it's nice to get more small tidbits of info regarding Dr. Noonien Soong.  
- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.  
- Got to point out the beautiful model used on that space station.  
- Data tearing down Maddox' argument (on many occasions in this episode).  
- Data suddenly ripping the gift wrap.

- Pulaski to Worf in a happy tone: "I couldn't disagree more! We'll save that argument for another day." Regarding the novel gift from Worf.
- Riker objecting to prosecute Data. The whole adversarial scene is awesome.
- Riker gets a look of such profound happiness when he realizes that he has a good argument against Data. Then a look of such profound sadness when he realizes that using it may kill his friend.
- Picard's argument is that much better though.
- All of the dialogue in this episode is articulate and well placed.

**Comments:**

At what point does artificial intelligence become "alive" with the same rights and responsibilities as any other "real" person? This is a very high brow science fiction question but in very few places is it examined as eloquently as here. This episode is a TNG classic and one of the best Trek episodes ever written.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x10 - The Dauphin**

**My Rating - 2**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-2-20

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wesley falls for a mysterious young girl.*

**Problems:**

- Why is the computer voice different (male) when LaForge asks it for the energy depletion level?
- When Pulaski calls for security, a full team including the captain of the ship (!) walks in a second later. Sorry, that's just not possible. Not even for Hollywood.
- When Wesley and his would-be girlfriend are standing on the asteroid on the holodeck, a big point is made about the sound they're hearing. Uhh, hello? No sound in space?

**Factoids:**

- The Federation at this time has charted 19% of the galaxy.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- Picard: "Mr Worf, have our passengers accommodations met with their approval?" Worf: "I doubt if anything ever meets with that woman's approval... sir."
- Worf: "That is how the Klingon lures his mate." After the ritual scream.
- Worf's further description of the Klingon mating ritual.
- Riker seducing Guinan.
- Anya's general bitchiness is entertaining.
- Anya: "I cannot rely on your primitive technologies! Kill the patient."
- I love the pissing contest between Anya and Worf.
- Mutual respect gestures from Anya and Worf in the ending.

**Comments:**

One of many shape shifter races shown on Star Trek. Every time they're shown it's taken as a new and unique thing. With so many shape shifter races, you've got to wonder why so many other less common races are seen as routine. Wesley's crush on Selia as the centerpiece of the story really ruins it. Not that it isn't a valid plot thread, I just think too much time was spent on Wesley and not enough time was spent on the guest cast, a common complaint I make. The plot relied on making the aliens pretend to be human(oid). Nothing is particularly wrong with that but it dulls the episode quite a bit.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x11 - Contagion**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-3-20

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise computer is infected.*

**Problems:**

- Why did Riker order the helmsman to raise the shields?
- How can one talk during transport?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The destruction of the Yamato.
- Captain Varley's logs.
- Wesley's history lesson regarding the Iconians.
- Picard: "Now that should have have happened." Regarding the replicator messing up his tea.
- Geordi running to the bridge trying to stop the captain from capturing the probe then almost dying in the turbolift.
- Picard: "Welcome to the bridge, Mr. LaForge."
- The computer electrocutes LaForge then to save him, Data throws him halfway across the room. I love the facial expression on Data's face when he realizes he used too much force. And I love the short dialog between them afterward.
- More away team bickering between Riker and Picard. Riker puts up more of a fight, but so does Picard.
- O'Brien appearance. With lines!
- Riker: "Fate protects fools, little children, and ships named Enterprise."
- Troi: "In another time or place, this could be funny."
- Riker: "If it should become necessary to fight, could you find me some rocks to throw at them?"
- Riker to T'Pol: "Perhaps we should postpone the war until our more immediate problems are solved."
- Picard, more or less, "Data, decipher this language. Now." Ah Data, Picard's personal away team laptop.
- The look on Riker's face when he says to Troi, "You're jumpy," is great.
- Data's over explanation of how he deciphered the language. Picard, more or less, "Yes, yes, just translate." Poor Data. So under appreciated.
- Data: "I believe this is manual override." (Giant flash of light opening a gateway.) Data: "That was not manual override."
- Brent Spiner's acting as a damaged Data was wonderful.
- Picard has a couple of good "final" lines before his brush with death. "I hope that was not a stutter." Regarding Data. Then "very shortly, anywhere will be preferable to this room."
- Worf just appearing on the bridge.
- Data's resurrection and confusion.
- I love the countdowns in the alien languages (Iconian and Romulan).

**Comments:**

This is an exciting episode right from the beginning. Very short into the episode there is fear of a catastrophic design flaw which is milked for all its worth. Then we get an even bigger implication: Iconian technology is destroying the ship accidentally and at the same time must be kept away from the Romulans to keep them from getting a major tactical advantage. Despite heavy politics and heavy tension, the episode bears great archeological and cultural tidbits. The revelation that the Iconians might not be conquerors and that they were slaughtered by those fearful of them is fascinating. The discussion about it between Picard, Data, and Worf is apt and interesting. This episode very easily could have scored a 10. I take one point off for no follow up and one point off for the "destroy it all now!" attitude. I understand why Picard made that decision, but that Iconian gateway is a wonderful bit of technology that could have been studied in great detail. Picard just blows it up over political fear. Seems reckless. Nevertheless, a wonderful episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x12 - The Royale**

Originally Aired: 1989-3-27

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew is trapped in an alien casino.*

**Problems:**

- LaForge claims the temperature is -291C. Uh, LaForge? That's BELOW absolute zero, which is

impossible. Can you see straight through that thing? And another thing. If the temperature is below absolute zero, how can you have wind? Much less 312 meters per second of wind?

- Picard is attempting to solve Fermat's last theorem. Whoops! Little did the writers know that the years 1983 and 1986 remarkable progress had already been made trying to solve it. In fact, by the time this episode was written in 1989 it had already been proven that Fermat's last theorem was 1. solvable and 2. would yield an elliptical curve. The theorem was ultimately solved 6 years after this episode was written by Andrew Wiles and Richard Taylor. The writers must have been very pessimistic about the progress of finding the solution, or they were just uninformed that it was progressing at all.

**Factoids:**

- There are 52 stars on the American flags in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Riker: "Yes. We're from the United Federation of Planets." Clerk: "Of course you are. Welcome to the Hotel Royale."
- Riker: "He means this planet. What do you call it?" Clerk: "Earth. What do you call it?" Worf: "We call it Theta 8." Clerk: "Quite charming."
- Data: "What sort of bu'iness do you suppose he's getting down to?" Mimicking the slang.
- Data playing Blackjack.
- Worf refers to the elevator as a turbolift.
- Worf: "Terrible way to die." Regarding dying in one's sleep.
- Data reading the book at lightning speed.
- I love the insults thrown at this book in the episode.
- Worf answering the phone.
- Data cheating in the game.

**Comments:**

Well the technical glitches really ruin the episode. The writers should have know what temperature absolute zero was and they should have known that Fermat's theorem would undoubtedly be solved by the 24th century. Toss out those minor details though and we get a largely entertaining episode. +1 point for well placed humor. -1 point for glitches. Average. They could have further improved it by telling us a little more about NASA in the 21st century as well. Oh well.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 2x13 - Time Squared**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-4-3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew encounters a duplicate Picard.*

**Problems:**

- Picard leaves sickbay and orders Troi to watch Picard 2. An argument between Pulaski and Troi ensues regarding whether or not Picard is fit to command. Troi sticks up to Picard, but then she just leaves! Defying Picard's order for her to stay! One wonders just how much faith the counselor has in Picard's command ability after all...

**Factoids:**

- Riker's mother died when he was very young.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf: "Delicious." While everyone else hates the eggs. Ah the everlasting contrast between human and Klingon taste buds!
- Picard: "So you're saying I should sit down, shut up, and wait."
- Picard second guessing himself.
- The graphics of the vortex and the ship interacting with it were well done for their time.
- Picard: "Release him." Pulaski: "Do you know what you're doing?" Picard: "No. Release him."
- The dialog between the two picards is great.
- O'Brien appearance with lines.

**Comments:**

The plot of this episode is extremely slow paced. A lot of sitting around, waiting for something to

happen. There's nothing necessarily wrong with that, as it's believable for sure. However the whole "out of phase" and "off the mark body clock" stuff is pushing what I consider acceptable technobabble. I also think that early in the episode Picard was acting extremely out of character. Though he improved quite a bit as the episode went on. This episode is often seen as a classic by the fans and it gets quite a bit of airing on TV. The story concept is definitely intriguing but I can't help but feel empty at the end with the inconsequential ending. The whole thing seems a bit over rated.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 2x14 - The Icarus Factor**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-4-24

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker is reunited with his estranged father.*

**Problems:**

**Factoids:**

- 2nd time (at least) Riker refuses a command on screen.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf yelling at Wesley.
- O'Brien was a major character in this episode.
- Data exploring Wesley's curiosity about Worf.
- Worf to Data: "With... all due respect... BE GONE! ...sir."
- Data to O'Brien: "If I were not a professional and an android, I would find this entire procedure insulting."
- O'Brien: "That's right. The animal's head exploded [from the pain]."
- Troi's discussion of barbarism with Pulaski.

**Comments:**

The game Riker played with his father was silly and the resolution of their problems was hastened too much. I also don't like how no real reason was given for Riker's last minute refusal of command. Not that I wanted to see him go, but the whole episode just seemed to end abruptly. I do like, however, how one episode after Riker bitched about his father to Pulaski, there's an episode involving him. I wonder if Pulaski blew the whistle on him. ;) On the other hand, the events leading up to Worf's "celebration" of his right of ascension nicely made up for the silly father/son adversarial plot.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 2x15 - Pen Pals**

**My Rating - 1**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-5-1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data fights for a friend's life.*

**Problems:**

- I think the repeated violations of the Prime Directive speak for themselves. Though this isn't the first and won't be the last time this happens. Despite discussion to the contrary, it seems the Prime Directive is in fact something that can be selectively interpreted on a captain to captain basis.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance
- Riker: "O'Brien, take a nap. You didn't see any of this. You're not involved." O'Brien: "Right sir. I'll just be standing over here dozing off."

**Comments:**

A dull episode with blatant violations of the Prime Directive for arrogantly moral reasons. The Prime Directive violations can be rationalized, but but that doesn't help the episode much. The mildly



interesting Wesley B plot and the rationalization of the Prime Directive violations saves this episode from a zero.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 2x16 - Q Who**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-5-8

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Q hurls the Enterprise across the galaxy.*

**Problems:**

- Not so much a problem but a nitpick. Geordi makes fun of his new officer for saying "please" to the computer when that is precisely what Data was doing in the last episode! I guess when Data does it, it's ok?
- Having seen all the rest of the Borg episodes, early TNG Borg behavior seems a little... out of character. But then in this time period, the Borg are not entirely aware of just what the Federation is. It's entirely plausible to assume the Borg gather information about an unknown species first, then they assimilate. Still, the second recurring quote from Worf about how "some great force just scooped all of the technology off the planet" just doesn't work. The Borg ARE in fact conquerors. In general we later see them come to your planet, assimilate all the people and technology, and stay on the planet. They spread like insects, colonizing everything. However, we can rationalize Worf's statements by postulating that the Borg only colonize planets directly bordering their own space and that staying on a planet whose people they assimilate in a distant sector would only serve to tactically disadvantage them. Thus, raid and run.

**Factoids:**

- Ensign Sonia Gomez will appear on the show only one more time (the next episode). Seems her confrontation with the captain resulted in a dismal career!
- The Borg were originally supposed to be an insectoid species but such special effects could not be worked into the budget. A good thing too, the humanoid assimilate-happy Borg were a far better idea IMHO.
- The Borg ship was originally supposed to be a sphere, but the cube form was selected so the show wouldn't be accused of plagiarizing Star Wars' Death Star. Funny how eventually spherical Borg ship would be used anyway...

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance
- Guinan interacting with Q
- The first sighting of a Borg ship
- Guinan: "When they decide to come, they're gonna come in force." Probably my favorite quote concerning the Borg. If only TPTB had stayed true to that instead of only sending one ship, one ship, one ship...
- Stunning performance from John DeLancie as always.

**Comments:**

Meet: The Borg. The single most feared enemy that Star Trek will ever face. The eerie music played throughout the episode is entirely appropriate, complimented nicely by Guinan's fear and feelings of absolute hopelessness due to her people's history with the Borg. The idea that an entire society can be unified under a collective mind is fascinating at first, but then you have to wonder what happens to the individual. This episode doesn't quite explain this, but we get the answer soon. The Borg are a well presented mystery in this episode. A tantalizing preview of things to come presented by Q. And Picard was right. What the Federation did indeed need was a kick in its complacency. Or Earth would end up like Guinan's homeworld in short order.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x17 - Samaritan Snare**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-5-15

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Geordi is taken hostage by the Pakleds.*

**Problems:**

- Regarding Picard's story to Wesley... Wesley: "Was this before the Klingons joined the Federation?" Picard: "That's right." Er... how about no? The Klingons never joined the Federation. Wesley's line should have read, "was this before the Klingons made peace with the Federation?"

**Factoids:**

- The events Picard describes to Wesley are followed up on in TNG: Tapestry where Q helps Picard finally get over that sore spot in his life.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard's adversarial conversation with Pulaski then his tragically coincidental forced travel companion being Wesley, whom he despises, then his having to give embarrassingly confusing orders to his crew.
- The Pakleds. So absurd that they're funny!
- Picard's stout refusal to admit the details behind his operation and why Pulaski can't perform it is great.
- Wesley: "Didn't you ever wish you had kids of your own?" Picard: "Wishing for a thing does not make it so."
- Picard, to Wesley: "Why do I get the distinct impression that you're acting like some kind of escort?" Wesley: "Doctor Pulaski asked me to make sure that you actually went inside." Picard: "That woman... she would."
- Attempting to discretely communicate the plan for the ruse, Data: "Goodbye Geordi. I shall miss you at weapons systems analysis." Geordi, obviously confused: "Uh huh."
- After being clapped at, Picard says: "I beg your pardon?"

**Comments:**

It's nice to learn more about Picard's past though this forced trip he has to take with Wesley. It's also nice to see Picard realizing that he tends to treat Wesley unfairly, thus making an attempt to change his attitude. There seems to be almost a sort of bonding that takes place. I like how the episode places both Picard and Geordi in equally dangerous situations at the same time, forcing the viewer to make a choice. Though it was kind of a convenient coincidence that Geordi is so easily rescued from the Pakleds in time for the ship to deliver Pulaski to the Starbase.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x18 - Up The Long Ladder**  
**Originally Aired:** 1989-5-22

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Two races fight for survival.*

**Problems:**

- Not so much a problem as a nitpick, the synopsis from StarTrek.com describes this episode as two "races" fighting for survival when they are clearly both human.
- That class M planet that the advanced half of the colonists were from looks remarkably like saturn, which is hardly class M.
- The concept of replicative fading is ridiculous. Even if we do accept it at face value, all they'd need is a small sample of an original host's dna, say, oh, a few trillion cells. Which isn't very much physical material. They'd have clones for thousands of years.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data: "Mariposa. The Spanish word for butterfly." Picard: "Thank you, Data." Data: "I thought it might be significant, sir." Picard: "It doesn't appear to be, Data." Data: "No sir."
- Data talking to himself whilst Picard is talking to himself and Picard's subsequent interruption.
- Worf: "Like tea, death is an experience best shared."
- O'Brien appearance. I love O'Dell's interaction with O'Brien regarding their Irish background.
- Picard: "I do not own the Enterprise, I command her."
- O'Dell trying to marry off his daughter to Picard.
- Worf: "She is very much like a Klingon woman." Regarding O'Dell's daughter.
- Worf replicating a Klingon drink for O'Dell.

- Worf: "Madam! Have you ever considered a career in security?!" To O'Dell's daughter.
- Riker: "One William Riker is unique. Perhaps even special. But 100 Rikers? A thousand? Diminishes me in ways I can't even begin to imagine." Ironic seeing as how he gets duplicated later in the series.
- Geordi the human lie detector.

**Comments:**

Vibrant Irish drunken farmers and incompetent cloners with sex phobia. This episode is, in a word, cute. The humor is effective but it brings up very real issues with cloning, murder, and conflicts between differing ways of life. For example, killing one's own clone seems a bit like murder to me. Something the episode just kind of ignores. And I find it hard to believe that this episode's cute ending is at all plausible. Setting that and the technical problems aside, the episode's premise is beautiful. It is lacking only in execution, for which I have not counted off too badly.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x19 - Manhunt**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-6-19

**My Rating - 2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard is subjected to Lwaxana's amorous advances.*

**Problems:**

- Lwaxana speaking during transport at the end is a little ridiculous.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Worf admires the comatose aliens.
- Lwaxana's reaction to the transporter / comatose aliens.
- Mister Homn drinks the whole bottle Picard brought in one swig.
- Picard using Data to get revenge on Lwaxana for her deception.
- Picard relaxing whilst the hologram wants to kill him.
- Picard with a cigarette.
- Lwaxana being tricked by the holodeck.
- Lwaxana discovering teh assassains.

**Comments:**

Lwaxana's "amorous advances" in this episode took obnoxious to a new level. As is the way she always treats Troi like a child. All in all this episode focuses on Lwaxana's non-issue of attempting to find a mate and not on anything that matters. There were some nice moments though, so not a total waste of time.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x20 - The Emissary**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-6-29

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf is reunited with an old flame.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Worf's girlfriend reprises her role as an eccentric female in Voyager as a female Q.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Poker scene at the beginning.
- Worf's girlfriend having traveled inside a probe no larger than two meters. Not a trip for the claustrophobic!
- The graphics for the probe and the ship intercepting were well done for the time.
- Worf's girlfriend is an excellent character.

- Worf: "I've noticed that some people use humor as a shield. They talk much but say little."
- I like the part when Worf's girlfriend goes to explain her plan to Worf and Data and suddenly the scene changes over to a briefing.
- The use of the old Klingon ship model is great.
- Worf acting as the commander of the Enterprise.
- Worf: "Welcome to the 24th century."

**Comments:**

A solid episode with strong character development but little more beyond that. The concept of a bunch of Klingons that still think they're at war with the Federation is enticing, but unfortunately little time is spent on it. The situation is adequately dealt with though. Overall a satisfying episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x21 - Peak Performance**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-7-10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A simulated war game turns deadly.*

**Problems:**

- Antimatter is pretty nasty stuff to be letting young Wesley tinker with as if it were every day chemistry class chemicals.
- It makes sense that Worf would have the ability to fake the Enterprise computer... but the Ferengi ship?

**Factoids:**

- Armin Shimmerman, who later plays Quark in DS9, plays plays Bractor in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kolrami had such wonderful arrogance.
- Worf and Riker discussing the wargame and Riker recruiting him.
- I love the strategema side plot.
- Picard's pep talk to Data.
- Data overanalyzing Riker.
- Picard fooled by the simulated Romulan ship.
- I love how Picard goes from being amused to serious in a split second. One second he is complimenting Worf for fooling their sensors again. The next second Picard is spoutin desperate defensive orders because that the Ferengi ship wasn't a ghost.
- Data "busting up" Kolrami.

**Comments:**

An action packed episode filled with effective dialogue, great side plots, and a fun ending. Only the technical problem regarding Worf faking an incoming ship to the Ferengi stains the episode. Otherwise one of TNGs more memorable installments.



**Star Trek TNG - 2x22 - Shades of Gray**

**My Rating - 1**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-7-17

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien organism invades Riker's brain.*

**Problems:**

- Riker "remembered" some things he wasn't actually there to see.

**Factoids:**

- This was an extremely low budget episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- The joking scene at the end when Riker is cured is neat.
- Some of the scenes in Riker's dream are fun to watch again.

**Comments:**

I'm kind of saddened that this is the last episode Dr. Pulaski appears in as I think its safe to say she could have had a better final episode. The problem this episode suffers from is severe lack of plot. The was due to budget problems. They didn't have enough money to do the big Borg showdown they planned for. So instead they made a clip show.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x01 - Evolution****My Rating - 4****Originally Aired:** 1989-9-25**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***A computer breakdown threatens the ship.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- The computer malfunctions were amusing.
- The ship spontaneously playing loud music.
- The experimenter doctor guy: "A brand new era in astrophysics postponed 196 years on account of rain."
- Wesley pwning his mother when she pounding him to take it easy.
- Data serving as a conduit for the nanites.
- Dr. Crusher at the end.

**Comments:**

Dr. Crusher's return is refreshing, though I miss Pulaski. I thought Dr. Pulaski was a better character, but they never let her reach her full potential. Experimenter doctor guy's arrogance was annoying at times. Other times it was cool. His interactions with Wesley were especially annoying, but necessary as it served to validate Wesley's concerns about his causing the computer to break down. The nanites becoming intelligent was interesting and it was handled well. My personal favorite little detail is the fact that Wesley was only useful in discovering the problem, not formulating a solution. After all, he is still just a kid. Experimenter doctor guy's confrontation with Counselor Troi was eloquently done as well. But the ending was a little too perfect, rendering the episode largely inconsequential.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x02 - The Ensigns of Command****My Rating - 5****Originally Aired:** 1989-10-2**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Data attempts to save a human colony.***Problems:**

- Why did Picard order Riker to make a helm adjustment? No helm officers today?
- In the scenes after Data destroyed the aquaduct, it was functioning perfectly with no damage.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The string scene at the beginning.
- O'Brien is part of the string scene at the beginning.
- Entering Picard: "Are we progressing Mr. LaForge?" Geordi among several failed attempts: "Not like you'd expect, sir." Picard: "Splendid! Splendid! Carry on!" Picard exits.
- Data using reverse psychology.
- Data's attack on the colonists.
- Picard's behavior at the end of the Shelliac negotiations.
- LaForge at the end of the episode regarding the transporter.

**Comments:**

The Sheliac race is a great idea. I only wish we could learn more about them. The colonists on the planet were a bit stereotypical. A malevolent conservative short sighted leader and an offsetting liberal character. The areas the episode is found wanting are made up for in the performances of LaForge, Data, and Picard. The ending was especially humorous and satisfying.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x03 - The Survivors****My Rating - 5****Originally Aired:** 1989-10-9**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An elderly couple somehow survives a devastating attack.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- There are Aquatic cities on Earth in this time period according to Data.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker being caught by the trap and hung upside down.
- Worf: "May I say your attempt to hold the away team at bay with a non functioning weapon was an act of unmitigated gaul." Kevin: "Didn't fool ya, huh?" Worf: "I admire gaul."
- Worf embarrassed about the sudden appearance of the Husnock ship after his declaration of such an event being impossible.
- Worf: "Good tea. Nice house."
- Picard arrogantly solving the mystery but questions his resolve privately with Riker.
- Picard, after beaming up the survivors: "My apologies if I interrupted a waltz."

**Comments:**

The Troi suffering scenes are getting old. Thankfully they didn't last too long. Kevin the mass murderer... but a crime of passion! Picard was right. Kind of hard to pass any kind of judgement on Kevin. Not because we're not qualified though. Because we don't have enough information. I would have preferred less mystery and more exploration of what Kevin really was and especially what the Husnock were all about. All we get his Kevin's word on this. Some mud can also be thrown at this episode regarding the logic behind the attack and alleged colonial resistance. In fact the whole episode seems silly up until the surprise ending, but the logical problems are minor enough to be largely forgiven. Exceptional premise, flawed execution.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x04 - Who Watches The Watchers?****My Rating - 7****Originally Aired:** 1989-10-16**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard is mistaken for a god-like being.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Dr. Crusher mentions Dr. Pulaski's memory erasure technique. Good continuity with season 2.
- Troi and Riker attempting to free Palmer.
- Picard's condemnation of religion.
- Nuria's reaction to Picard's introduction.
- Picard carefully attempting to convince Nuria that he's not a god.
- Nuria asking Picard for miracles.
- Nuria finally "getting it" when she sees Picard is powerless against death.
- Picard struck with Liko's arrow.

**Comments:**

Picard seems a bit cold hearted. "Why didn't you let him die?" Acceptable though because his crew members once again prevailed against his uncaring disposition. I like this episode's concept quite a bit. It represents a pipe dream in the modern world. Oh how great an opportunity it would be to study an ancient civilization like the Romans or Egyptians first hand. Think of how much more we could learn about them! This episode also serves as a firm reinforcement of Trek's anti religious standpoint; another feature of it I enjoyed. The climax of the episode is when Picard asks Liko to shoot him with his bow and arrow. I got the impression that Picard was calling Liko's bluff only to find out that he wasn't bluffing. :) All in all, one of TNG's finer moments.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x05 - The Bonding**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-10-23

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The ship's archeologist is killed.*

**Problems:**

- Picard makes a grammatical error in his speech. "We? For whom else do you speak?" He should have said who, not whom.

**Factoids:**

- According to this episode, Worf lost his parents to a battle when he was six and Wesley lost his father when he was "younger than Jeremy" was in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Picard's "oh fuck" look on his face when Troi mentioned Aster had a son.
- Worf's Klingon ceremonies.
- Picard's speech about his objections to having children aboard ship.
- I love Riker and Data's conversation regarding the depth of losses depending on who's killed.
- Worf's reaction to a death under his command.
- Jeremy's cat, Patches. Such a great name for a cat that looks like that.
- Man I want a cat as affectionate as Patches.
- Picard to fake Lt. Aster: "What you're offering him is a memory. Something to cherish, not to live in."
- Wesley lashing out at Picard and Picard taking it so well.
- The whole ending was nicely orchestrated and touching.

**Comments:**

We get great tidbits regarding Klingon culture in this episode thanks to Worf's reaction to Lt. Aster's death. An energy life form with a guilt trip. I enjoyed the dialog between fake Lt. Aster and Picard regarding the nature of human existence. Consequently thanks to the events, this turns out to be one of the better children centric episodes. The R'uustai between Jeremy Aster and Worf was appropriate and touching, but I've got to subtract a point from this episode because we never, ever, EVER hear about Jeremy again. Even after this elaborate Klingon bonding ritual. Loose ends should always be tied up, and this one wasn't.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x06 - Booby Trap**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-10-30

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is ensnared in an intergalactic booby trap.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This plays on some nice internal continuity. Guinan's statement about a bald man coming to her aid a long time ago is picked up on in TNG: Time's Arrow and Geordi's holographic woman is revisited later as well.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- Geordi in the opening scene. Ouch!
- The music of this episode is much better than normal.
- Picard: "The ship in the bottle--oh good lord didn't anybody here build ships in bottles when they were boys?" Worf: "I did not play with toys." Data: "I was never a boy." O'Brien: "I did, sir." Picard: "Thank you, Mr. O'Brien."
- Guinan is attracted to bald men. Must be why she tends bar on Picard's ship. :) This scene is really cooler than it seems. The bald man that "took care of her when she was hurting" was actually Picard. She's referring to the events of an episode a VERY long way off. Excellent internal continuity, I say.
- Reactionless Dr. Brahms and Geordi enhancing her personality.
- Picard taking the helm.

**Comments:**

This episode successfully combines humor and danger. Picard taking the helm is thrilling and Geordi's holographic adventure is funny such that this episode comes across as entertaining, but with little beyond that. An enjoyably average episode.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x08 - The Price**

**Originally Aired:** 1989-11-13

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Troi falls for a handsome dignitary.*

**Problems:**

- How could Troi tell that the daemon was lying? Betazoids can't read Ferengi.

**Factoids:**

- This episode features a few amusing tidbits. At first they believed and hoped that the wormhole would provide a permanent shortcut to the gamma quadrant. Only a few years later, one is found (DS9's). Also, the two lost Ferengi in this episode reappear a whole seven years later in *Voy: False Profits*. Excellent continuity there!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Troi's frustration in the opening scene.
- The Ferengi entrance and subsequent scheming.
- Picard nominating Riker to become the Federation negotiator.
- The revelation that Troi's lover is quarter Betazoid.
- The revelation that the wormhole is not fixed at the exit aperture.
- The aerobic scene with Dr. Crusher and Troi.
- The look on the Ferengi's faces when the wormhole moved.
- Empath guy getting under Riker's skin. First by insulting his negotiating skills, then by insulting his rank, then by gloating about his affair with Troi!

**Comments:**

It annoys me that every new episode must feature a new race. In the case of this episode, a bunch of new races. Most of which (and in the case of this episode all of which) we never see again, with the exception of the Ferengi of course. It is as if the writers have ADD and simply can't focus on developing an existing race beyond the surface detail. That said, this episode's premise is fascinating. A prospective stable wormhole in neutral space is discovered by a non-Federation race and elicits a power struggle for control of it by several independent bodies. The Ferengi involvement in this affair for once is in character. Early TNG Ferengi were simply stupid; usually painful to watch. In this case though they are enjoyable, albeit still dreadfully idiotic. Troi's love affair was obnoxious. When Troi's lover empath guy defended his use of empathy for business to Troi, his argument was wholly hypocritical. First he said, "Everybody does this, I'm just better at it therefore it's okay." Then he said, "You do it to gain an advantage in situations of life and death. I just do it in business. Therefore you're less ethical." Uh, hello? You either believe it's ethical or you don't. Don't go changing your argument on the fly. The sad thing is Troi just took it. Didn't even bother pointing out his hypocrisy. The ending amused me. Finding that the wormhole was neither



stable nor were the Ferengi ever to return from the Delta quadrant was apt in many ways. It makes sense that Troi could figure out the foul play based on empath guy's feelings, but making it seem as though she could read the Ferengi was absurd. Overall this episode is one of the better and more memorable TNG installments, but its flaws are numerous and I must strike it down a few points consequently.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 3x07 - The Enemy****My Rating - 7****Originally Aired:** 1989-11-16**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Geordi is stranded on a storm-ravaged planet.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Geordi's escape from the sinkhole.
- Romulan: "You are my prisoner!" Geordi: "Right. Congratulations. Surely a strategic triumph for the Romulan Empire."
- Worf's refusal to be a doner to save the Romulan's life.
- I love Bochra's surprise regarding Geordi's blindness. "Your parents let you live?" he asks regarding being born that way.
- Riker encouraging Worf to forgive and forget.
- Bochra learning to work together with LaForge.
- Picard's proverbial chess match with the Romulan commander.

**Comments:**

I absolutely love the opening of this episode. The obnoxiousness of the loudness and flashing is made up for by Geordi being lost to the sinkhole. I felt the same way as Worf did when they beamed up. Worf wanted to go find Geordi at any cost! But Riker stopped him... Moving on, I rather enjoyed all characters in this episode. Including Wesley, which is rare as he's given so few lines most of the time. Geordi of course put on an excellent show. My personal favorite scene with him is when he saves Bochra's life yet Bochra still maintains his mistrust. Conversely, the captured Romulan dies thanks to Worf despite the best efforts of Picard, Riker, and Beverly to convince Worf to drop the hate. Such a great contrast between Geordi trusting his Romulan counterpart, Worf being absolutely bitter with his Romulan counterpart, and Picard being kind of the halfway point with his Romulan counterpart (the commander). The parallels were intended, of course, but that makes them no less great.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 3x09 - The Vengeance Factor****My Rating - 3****Originally Aired:** 1989-11-20**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Picard mediates a violent dispute.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The away team's fake escape from the ambush by vaporizing the metal alloy into smoke.
- Worf: "Your ambushes would be more successful if you bathed more often!"
- The negotiations. Tense but progressive.
- Riker killing Yuta.

**Comments:**

Riker falls in love then finds out his lover is a mass murderer. Texas justice ensues. Really, there's nothing quite wrong with this episode, but in my opinion it poorly compares to other TNG episodes. It's largely unremarkable and predictable.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x10 - The Defector****My Rating - 8****Originally Aired:** 1990-1-1**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Romulan defector leads the crew into a deadly face-off.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard and Data on the holodeck. When Picard interrupts, the characters nearly attack him, so Data freezes the program. :)
- Romulan standoff at the beginning.
- The closeup of the Romulan scout ship at the beginning. Romulan architecture is so beautiful.
- The Romulan scout ship exploding beside Picard.
- The defector and Worf insulting each other.
- LaForge using figures of speech on Data, confusing him.
- Picard's tension regarding what to do with the defector.
- Data attempting to console the Romulan defector.
- Romulan warships decloaking and attacking the Enterprise.
- Klingon warships decloaking and outmatching the Romulans.

**Comments:**

An exciting Romulan episode. Lots of what Picard called "chess moves". In the end I really felt sorry for the defecting admiral. I enjoyed his final act, a letter to his family. That letter symbolized his belief that one day there would be peace with the Romulan Empire and the Federation. He risked his life hoping to preserve peace and thus his people. Even though he didn't fully trust the Federation at first, he still defected. A solid TNG episode.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x11 - The Hunted****My Rating - 7****Originally Aired:** 1990-1-8**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew deals with a dangerous prisoner.*

**Problems:**

- I will never understand how someone can move around whilst in a transporter beam.
- Why are the Jeffries tubes so large? In future episodes they are smaller...

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature a Jeffries Tube, named after Matt Jeffries who created the first Enterprise.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- The prisoner. It took five men to restrain him! Then his personality was totally opposite. I loved how rational he seemed and how eloquent his conversations were with the crew. I also love how everyone wanted to help him but had no means by which to do that.
- Worf fighting the prisoner.
- The prisoner's valiant escape.
- The escaped prisoner: "To survive is not enough. To simply exist is not enough."
- Picard bailing out of the situation, giving the supersoldiers a chance to reclaim their freedom peacefully.

**Comments:**

Another race that looks exactly like humans! Anyway, the idea of creating a supersoldier is terrifying and this episode explores it well. I remember hearing a story once about one of my relatives returning from Vietnam and suddenly having a dual personality. A usually kind and gentle man suddenly and seemingly randomly becomes violent. Likewise to the episode the society of these people decides to ignore the aftermath afflicting their war veterans. But in this episode, it all comes back to haunt society.



**Star Trek TNG - 3x16 - The Offspring**  
**Originally Aired:** 1990-1-22

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Data becomes a father.*

**Problems:**

- So why did Data never, ever try again to build another android?

**Factoids:**

- Riker was largely absent from this episode because he directed it, his first directed Star Trek episode. When Frakes asked Rick Berman if he could direct an episode, Berman told Riker to go learn a bit about directing first. So Frakes spent weeks intensely studying the subject until he was finally allowed to give this episode a shot. TPTB were so impressed with his directing ability in this episode, that he became a regular director on Star Trek, including the famous Trek movie First Contact to his credit.
- Lal considered becoming an Andorian female and a Klingon male.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data being secretive.
- Picard's annoyance with Data's undertaking of a project to produce a new android in secret and Data's responses.
- Wesley: "Data, she could learn a lot by being around children her own age." Data: "She is only two weeks old..."
- Lal's continual questions, one of which was "why is the sky black?"
- Lal in the turbolift with Data after the school day.
- Guinan appearance.
- Lal inadvertently insulting Guinan's age.
- Lal using a contraction.
- Lal seducing Riker and Data walking in on the situation. Data: "Commander, what are your intentions toward my daughter?"
- The admiral's disgust with Lal working in Ten Forward. Talk about bad first impressions.
- The admiral's meeting with Lal.
- Lal getting scared and seeking out Troi.
- Data's argument to the admiral supporting his belief that Lal should not be taken away from him.
- Picard: "There are times, sir, when men of good conscience cannot blindly follow orders."
- The admiral's change of heart, trying to save Lal's life. I love the way the admiral described Data trying to save Lal's life.

**Comments:**

I like the continuity in and similarity of this episode with TNG: The Measure of a Man. Picard mentions that he helped define the rights of androids, and the definition he set ultimately prevailed. It is only puzzling why Data never tried again to create another android. Granted, Data does mention Lal to Juliana in TNG: Inheritance, it still feels as if this whole experience is forgotten after this episode. Oh well, despite being a largely forgotten episode in the end, I enjoyed it and I believe they picked a great actress for then part of Lal. Well done.



**Star Trek TNG - 3x12 - The High Ground**  
**Originally Aired:** 1990-1-29

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Dr. Crusher is kidnapped by a terrorist group.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to Data, the Irish unified in 2024 due to terrorism.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor's bravery in the beginning.
- Wesley's resolve toward saving his mother.
- The concept of the inter dimensional transporter.
- Beverly's captor does a great job of making himself seem noble.
- Geordi saving the ship.
- Picard attacking the intruder.
- Picard: "You plant bombs in shadows yet you accuse us of cowardice?"
- Dr. Crusher's captor drawing sexy pictures of her. Disturbing!
- Riker: "Maybe it ends with one boy putting down his gun."

**Comments:**

Another race that looks exactly like humans! This story nicely parallels middle eastern terrorism. Moreso in the years after the episode was made than in the years before. Still, the solution to the show's problem is to overpower the terrorists. A basic and bloody though effective solution. The question of whether or not independence is to be granted to those who seek it is largely ignored. As if they deserve no rights. A decent but not perfect episode.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x13 - Déjà Q**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-2-5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Q is condemned to live as a mortal.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The opening scene where Q appears nude has an interesting story behind it. The production crew went to great lengths trying to make John DeLancie appear as though he was naked whilst preserving the essential clothing. But after some frustration, John just stripped nude and cleared the scene in one shot saving everybody some camera trouble and providing a good laugh.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Guinan appearance.
- Q's appearance. John DeLancie is such a great actor.
- Q: "What must I do to convince you people!" Worf: "Die." Q: "Oh very clever Worf. Eat any good books lately?"
- Every moment of Q in this episode is great.
- Q describing sleep.
- Data to Q regarding his becoming human: "You have achieved in disgrace what I have always aspired to be."
- Q's solution to the asteroid. "Change the cosmological constant of the universe." Duh...
- Beverly and Q.
- Guinan and Q.
- Data mimicking the term "little trained minions" Q used to describe the crew.
- Q: "It's difficult to work in groups when you're omnipotent."
- Data saving Q's life.
- Q to Data: "If it means anything to you, you're a better human than I."
- The two Qs.
- Q's celebration in the end.
- Data laughing.
- Q in the end.

**Comments:**

A race that doesn't look exactly like humans! Yay! :) I love the show's initial dilemma. A decaying moon orbit on an alien planet and the Federation steps in to assist. This premise by itself is good, but the added appearance of Q makes it even better. Not only that, but a helpless and powerless Q adds new flavor. This is truly a recipe for what is indeed a great episode with a phenomenal ending.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 3x14 - A Matter of Perspective**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-2-12

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker is accused of murder.*

#### **Problems:**

- That was a rather large space station for only a few people.
- The testimony that Riker fired his phaser at the space station core mid transport seems a bit difficult to believe from a technical standpoint.

#### **Factoids:**

- The Dutch translation of this episode on channel net 5 was not correctly synced.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard never paints again after Data criticizes his work...
- The space station explosion was quite surprising.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Riker watching curiously as Data enters Picard's ready room.
- Recreated Riker attempting to rape Mrs. Apgar.
- Picard and Geordi solving the mystery.
- The holodeck exploding around them.

#### **Comments:**

Another TNG guest star with a secret. The number one TNG cliché. The holodeck recreations were interesting though. It was fun to see all the different perspectives on the events leading up to Dr. Apgar's death. This is a decent TNG episode though a bit clichéd and predictable. A bit sub average, but not by much.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 3x15 - Yesterday's Enterprise**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-2-19

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An Enterprise from the past mysteriously appears.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Worf's love affair with prune juice begins here.
- This episode scored third place in the viewer's choice awards.
- This episode bears a great deal of excellent internal continuity with Star Trek VI: The Undiscovered Country, such as the uniforms of the Enterprise C crewmembers and the layout of their bridge.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Guinan appearance.
- Worf laughs at the thought of any human woman not being "too fragile" for him.
- The transformation from the starship Enterprise into the warship Enterprise.
- Tasha Yar's appearance.
- Picard not wanting to be specific of which ship he commanded: "This is Captain Picard of the Federation Starship... er... a Federation Starship!"
- Guinan's intuitions.
- The Enterprise D operating on such a nicely superior level of efficiency in the alternate timeline.
- Likewise I love the retro feel of the Enterprise C.

- Picard and Guinan arguing over which history is the "correct" history.
- Guinan freaking out over Yar.
- Guinan explaining Tasha's death to Yar.
- I like how the writers gave Yar a better send off in this episode than in Skin of Evil.
- Picard: "Let's make sure that history never forgets the name. Enterprise."
- The battle between Enterprise D and the Klingons.

**Comments:**

The idea that a ship from the past entering the future and instantly changing history is fascinating. This episode has everything a great Trek episode needs. Excellent continuity, a genuine and interestingly new dilemma, action, and excellent character development. Tasha Yar's guest appearance was wonderfully appropriate and Guinan's involvement in the story was a rare treasure. Truly one of TNG's finest moments.



**Star Trek TNG - 3x17 - Sins of the Father**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-3-19

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf defends his late father.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first Star Trek episode in which we get to actually see the Klingon homeworld.
- On the Dutch channel Net 5, the Klingon dialog is translated into Dutch in the subtitles. I find that amusing.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kurn. Has everybody on edge. He is the very model of a modern Klingon.
- Kurn patronizing Worf.
- Kurn: "If it were a Klingon ship, I would have killed you for offering your suggestion."
- Kurn's reaction to human food.
- Worf confronting Kurn.
- Worf confronting the Klingon High Council.
- Worf: "It is a good day to die, Duras. But the day is not yet over." The first time the classic Klingon phrase "it is a good day to die" was ever used on screen.
- Picard trying to find a way to clear Worf's name.
- K'mpec urging Worf to dissolve his challenge.
- Picard holding his own against Klingon assassins.
- Kahlest insulting K'mpec's weight.
- K'mpec: "Kahlest, it is good to see you again." Kahlest: "You are still fat, K'mpec." Exit Kahlest...
- Picard standing up the chancellor of the Klingon Empire in defense of Worf, knowing that he may be about to start a war...
- Worf's discommendation.

**Comments:**

A soap opera episode and a continuity goldmine. First, we get mention of Riker's experience aboard the Pagh. Then we meet Kurn, son of Mogh. Worf's long lost brother! Then we get to hear about Worf's past and about his father. This is also a milestone TNG episode which will have a serious impact on Worf's character in the coming years. We also get to see the great leader of the Klingon Empire who presumably forged the alliance with the Federation, and we get the first of many episodes to deal with the treacherous Duras family. Marvelous!



**Star Trek TNG - 3x18 - Allegiance**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-3-26

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A replica of Picard replaces him on the Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The cadet's uniform is the one that will eventually be used on early DS9 and Voyager.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing Picard in two places at once.
- Fake Picard's weird orders.
- Fake Picard barging in on the Poker match.
- Fake Picard seducing Beverly then asking her to leave.
- Fake Picard in ten forward. Jovial and singing... disturbing.
- Fake Picard turning Riker's argument against him.
- The crew mutiny.
- Picard's poetic justice.

**Comments:**

Two races we've never seen before... At least Picard says they're well known to the Federation. This episode is, in a word, cute, as it's driven largely by humor. The ending is a bit rushed, and the aliens are bit moronic for all their advanced technology, but it's acceptable.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 3x19 - Captain's Holiday**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-4-2

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard's vacation is interrupted by time travelers.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Max Grodenchik, who played Sovak, goes on to play Rom in DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Everyone pressuring Picard to take a vacation.
- Picard annoyed at everything initially during his visit initially.
- Picard insulting the Ferengi.
- The time travelers' appearance and Picard's sudden interest in the mystery.
- Picard thoroughly enjoying punching the Ferengi.
- Vash and Picard flirting.
- Vash's deception to Picard regarding the treasure.
- History fulfilling itself by Picard destroying the treasure.

**Comments:**

Welcome to Risa. The infamous pleasure planet. Many an entertaining episode will take place here. This is the first of many. Vash, Sovak, and the time traveling aliens provided a most entertaining story. It was all a little too silly, but as intended though. A fairly average episode.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 3x20 - Tin Man**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-4-23

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew faces off against the Romulans.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Telepath guy speaking other people's thoughts.
- Seeing Tin Man.
- The Romulans decloaking and attacking.
- Telepath guy working with Data.
- Tin Man destroying the first Romulan ship.
- The revelation that Tin Man the last of his species.
- Picard questioning telepath guy's judgement.
- The second Romulan encounter.
- Telepath guy finding peace with Tin Man.

**Comments:**

A psychotic telepath expert first contact specialist and an organic ship creature pursued by both the Enterprise and the Romulans. A truly fascinating premise by which to begin the episode. Telepath guy so well describes his pain. "Getting it all at once." One can only imagine having one's mind constantly bombarded with other people's thoughts. Seems only natural that adept telepaths might go insane from other people's unchecked thinking. I love the resolution in this episode. Two wayward souls find peace by joining together. One of those truly happy warm and fuzzy endings.

**Star Trek TNG - 3x21 - Hollow Pursuits****My Rating - 8****Originally Aired:** 1990-4-30**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Lt. Barclay's Holodeck obsession threatens the ship.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene where Barclay's kicking everyone's ass.
- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- Wesley starting the "Broccoli" fad.
- Picard's resolve toward helping Barclay.
- Geordi being nice to Barclay after Picard's lecture.
- Barclay showing up "just about" online.
- Wesley overwhelming Barclay.
- Troi, the "Goddess of Empathy".
- Barclay finding a lead on the mystery.
- Picard slipping up and calling Barclay "Broccoli" and Data trying, then aborting his attempt to make Picard feel better about it.
- Guinan: "The idea of fitting in just repels me."
- Guinan: "If I felt nobody wanted to be around me, I'd probably be late and nervous too."
- Geordi walking in on Barclay's holodeck fantasy.
- Barclay describing his anxiety.
- Barclay freaking out when first encountering the real Troi then bailing out the first chance he got.
- Riker, Geordi, and Troi walking in on Barclay's program.
- Geordi: "Commander, I don't think there's any regulation that--" Riker: "Well there ought to be."
- Riker meeting his double. Troi and Geordi finding it funny.
- Troi meeting her double. Riker and Geordi finding it funny.
- Barclay sleeping in fake Beverly's arms.
- The Enterprise hurtling toward its own doom. The engineering team trying to make sense of it.
- Barclay contributing to solving the mystery.

**Comments:**

Lt. Barclay. On the holodeck he's arrogant and confident. In the real world he's a nervous wreck. Beneath both personalities he's a genius just waiting for attention. Reminds me somewhat of



Daniel Jackson from Stargate SG-1. Eventually, Barclay becomes a best friend of Geordi. Consequently, Barclay becomes a regular guest star on TNG and even beyond. Then ending to this episode was highly satisfying. Barclay proves himself under pressure and breaks his holodiction. But saves one of this programs before erasing the rest. So we're left open for more holodiction Barclay episodes in the future...



---

**Star Trek TNG - 3x22 - The Most Toys**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-5-7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data apparently dies in a shuttlecraft explosion.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The shuttle explosion at the beginning, with Data presumably aboard.
- O'Brien appearance.
- With such concern for the mission, no one had time to mourn for Data. It was obviously painful for them.
- Data's eccentric captor.
- Data's Captor's Assistant: "The Andorians wish to make a bid on the shipment of Toulorian spices you offered." Data's captor, frantic: "They had four days to decide! Why do they have to decide right n--" Data's captor, suddenly calm: "All right."
- Wesley and Geordi mourning Data in Data's quarters.
- Data weaseling his captor's assistant into sympathy.
- Geordi refusing to accept Data making pilot error.
- Worf taking ops.
- Data's captor dissolving away Data's uniform.
- Data's passive resistance.
- Picard's faux pas with Worf.
- Data finally sitting in the chair.
- Data's captor killing his wife with the painful-death disruptor.
- O'Brien beaming away Data just as he was about to kill his captor.

**Comments:**

Another Data episode. I liked Data's captor quite a bit. Especially the scene where he goes from rage to acceptance in a split second regarding the Andorian bid. His frantic personality is a flaw in the character but not necessarily the writing. I found the story itself largely enticing and the path Data chose for resistance appropriate. As the story went on, Data's captor got more and more sadistic and the story got more and more interesting. The conclusion leaving us with a mystery regarding whether or not Data would have killed his captor and whether or not Data felt genuine emotion is truly fascinating.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 3x23 - Sarek**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-5-14

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sarek of Vulcan visits the Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.

- Sarak freaking out and getting emotional.
- Geordi and Wesley arguing.
- Data's string scene with Sarak crying.
- Beverly freaking out on Wesley.
- O'Brien starting a brawl.
- Sarak's vulcan helper admitting Sarak's weakness.
- Picard and Riker arguing.
- Picard confronting Sarak.
- Sarak freaking out in front of Picard.
- Picard freaking out after the mind meld. Emmy award stuff here.

**Comments:**

An excellent episode from a fanboyish standpoint. We all remember Sarak from TOS/TAS. The chance to see him in his later years is indeed appealing. The connection created between Picard and Sarak is something we will get to see once more, which pleases me. I for one will never forget Picard's performance venting Sarak's emotions. Truly great acting. Very touching. A fine episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 3x24 - Menage a Troi**  
Originally Aired: 1990-5-28

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Ferengi kidnap Counselor Troi and her mother.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Ethan Phillips who plays a Ferengi in this episode goes on to play Neelix in Voyager later.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Lwaxana avoiding the Ferengi. Picard avoiding Lwaxana.
- Lwaxana continuing to treat Deanna like a child and Deanna FINALLY getting pissed about it for once.
- Picard getting Riker back with the shore leave impositions.
- Betazed. Such a beautiful Federation world. We see so little of it :(
- Lwaxana called Tog a "demon" as opposed to his Ferengi title "daemon".
- Tog beaming the women out of their cloths.
- Riker tricking and angering his Ferengi captor with chess trash talking.
- Wesley's solution.
- Picard professing his love for Lwaxana. Sucking at first, doing well later.
- Picard's bluff.
- Picard ordering Wesley to set course for Betazed at warp 9 to avoid Lwaxana!
- Wesley's promotion.

**Comments:**

Finally a Ferengi episode where the Ferengi are completely in character. As TNG went on the Ferengi became a lot more interesting and a lot less stupid. This episode being a big part of this transition and I am thus fond of it.



**Star Trek TNG - 3x25 - Transfigurations**  
Originally Aired: 1990-6-4

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise encounters an incredibly powerful humanoid.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode marks the first mention of O'Brien injuring himself on the holodeck kayaking. Though he mentions that he injured himself "again" denoting that this isn't the first time he's done it, this is the first of many mentions on screen.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf and Geordi oggling women in the opening scene.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Worf, annoyed at Geordi's and Data's technobabble: "Less talk. More synthehol. We came here to relax."
- Worf, regarding Geordi finally getting the courage to snag his woman: "I've been tutoring him. He learns quickly."
- Geordi's newfound confidence.
- It's nice to see Wesley sporting his new uniform.
- Superhuman guest guy healing O'Brien.
- Geordi and Data solving the mystery.
- Worf's fatal fall.

**Comments:**

It's nice to have an episode focused nicely around Beverly that isn't surrounded by sorrow. I enjoyed the beginning of this episode quite a bit. A survivor of a terrible accident benefiting from the generosity of a Federation starship. But the stereotypical fascist Zalkonian ship commander, complete with a ship as powerful as the Enterprise annoyed me. I know the Enterprise is at the edge of Federation space and all, but why do we need to make up new aliens every week? Especially ridiculously powerful new aliens? If they were this powerful and this aggressive all the time, why don't we hear about them at all after this episode is over? It could be argued that the Zalkonians are never heard again because our guest shows all his people how to ascend to a higher plane of existence, but that makes it no less lame. A good try, but I found the episode lacking overall. It tries to be something profound yet attempts to remain inconsequential (as we never hear of the Zalkonians again). Incompatible goals.



**Star Trek TNG - 3x26 - The Best of Both Worlds, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1990-6-18

**My Rating -**  
**9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Enterprise has a deadly encounter with the Borg.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Third time Riker saves his life by refusing command of another starship.
- This episode (both parts together) is often regarded as the best TNG episode ever done.
- Picard meets the Borg Queen during this episode, according to a most remarkable movie produced years later: Star Trek VIII: First Contact.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- Shelby after Riker's job. Even defeats him at Poker. Something rarely done!
- Riker trying to figure out why he's still resisting when starfleet offers him ships.
- The sight and music accompanying the approach of the Borg cube.
- Shelby's idea to release the Enterprise from the Borg.
- The Enterprise running and hiding.
- Picard's capture.
- Troi striking down Riker's decision to lead an away team.
- The firefight aboard the Borg cube.
- Seeing Picard assimilated.
- Riker ordering Worf to fire on the Borg cube. Truly one of the most badass moments of all Star Trek.

**Comments:**

The overconfidence of the Borg is truly the root of their downfall. We later learn that thousands of cubes could have been sent to earth. But only one is sent. Another question is why did they bother with turning Picard into Locutus? That is never quite answered until Star Trek VIII: First Contact. Regarding more immediate issues, the controversy between Riker and Shelby was annoying. They're facing a major inter stellar war and all Riker can think about is his damn pissing contest with Shelby. I was impressed with Shelby's restraint against Riker's testosterone flaunting though. I was equally pleased with Riker admitting that he admires her. Still though, even after he admits he likes her, he strikes her down for no reason in Engineering regarding her request to continue working with Data and other times as well. That said, it was necessary. Riker comes to accept her in part 2 as a valued member of the team.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 4x01 - The Best of Both Worlds, Part II** My Rating - 9  
Originally Aired: 1990-9-24

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Riker must use Picard/Locutus to foil the Borg.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Third time Riker saves his life by refusing command of another starship.
- This episode (both parts together) is often regarded as the best TNG episode ever done.
- Picard meets the Borg Queen during this episode, according to a most remarkable movie produced years later: Star Trek VIII: First Contact.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- The deflector pulse firing and the Borg ship shrugging it off.
- The revelation that the Borg were able to resist because they have all of Picard's knowledge.
- Riker being promoted to captain of the Enterprise.
- Riker complimenting and promoting Shelby.
- Guinan: "When a man is convinced he will die tomorrow, he will probably find a way to make it happen."
- The Borg annihilating 40 Federation starships and an unspecified number of Klingon warships at Wolf 359.
- The Enterprise separating its saucer and attacking the Borg.
- Worf and Data sneaking aboard the Borg ship and retrieving Picard.
- Picard spouting Borg assimilation propaganda to the people in sickbay.
- The Borg ship passing Saturn.
- Data hacking into the Borg Collective via Picard.
- The Borg ship destroying Utopia Planitia's defenses.
- Picard regaining his individuality.
- Data putting the rest of the Borg to sleep.
- The Borg ship self-destructing.

**Comments:**

Once again I must comment on Borg overconfidence. They are the perfect villain aside from that. Most notably, why the leisurely stroll through sector 001? A half hour to make it to Earth after dropping out of warp? They didn't seem to think the Enterprise, complete with a captured Borg, was any threat at all. And really, it wasn't. Without Picard's link to the collective, they would have surely been destroyed. This episode definitely is up to the same standard as part I. The various firefights with the Borg ship and the method the Enterprise uses to gain victory is brilliant. My favorite scene is the final scene. Where Picard reflects silently, genuinely disturbed over the events.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 4x02 - Family**  
Originally Aired: 1990-10-1

My Rating - 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The crew visits family.*

**Problems:**

- When Wesley starts up the holographic recording of his father, there's no communicator on his uniform. In the next scene, there is one.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of TNG Award".  
 - I'm not entirely sure, but I think that this is the first episode that we're given O'Brien's full name: Miles Edward O'Brien.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- Worf's adoptive parents. Eccentric, loving people. The perfect contrast to cold hardened Worf.
- Picard's nephew. An icon of innocence.
- Picard's brother. A miserable conservative.
- Picard's initial conversation with his friend Louis.
- Guinan's entrance in this episode.
- Guinan asking Worf's adoptive parents why he never had prune juice.
- Guinan saying just the right stuff to make Worf's adoptive parents feel better about themselves.
- Robert and Jean-Luc's initially adversarial conversation regarding "what the devil happened" to him up there.
- Robert and Jean-Luc's brawl and subsequent moment of bonding. The part where Picard goes from laughing to crying in an instant is beautiful. Academy award stuff.
- Robert and Jean-Luc getting roaring drunk after their brawl bonding.

**Comments:**

This episode features excellent continuity with, well, the rest of the series. Worf's discommendation is discussed. Picard's aftermath from the Borg incident is examined. Picard's family is shown to us in detail, finally. Wesley getting in touch with his feelings again regarding his late father and other details. This episode is wonderfully woven into the series. Only an episode as carefully conceived as this one can have no scenes on the bridge and no action and still be great. Picard's scenes with his brother were simply beautiful. Some of the finest acting I've ever seen between those two.

**Star Trek TNG - 4x03 - Brothers****My Rating - 7****Originally Aired:** 1990-10-8**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Data faces his creator and his evil brother, Lore.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Brent Spiner played three characters in this episode. Data, Lore, and Noonien Soong.
- Pakleds are mentioned as the reason Lore was reassembled. Some good continuity.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene. I love the way Riker, Troi, and Data handle the child.
- I also love how Data stops talking mid sentence and starts acting weird when with the child, triggered by something we know not what at this point in the episode. Spooky.
- Data's head twitches early on in the episode. Not only does he play three characters in this episode, but he plays them brilliantly.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Data stealing the ship.
- Picard desperately trying to regain control by planning to separate the saucer.
- Data entering a new and ridiculously long password for Picard's access to the ship.
- Data making his way to a transporter room and beaming off the ship.
- Noonien Soong.
- Picard: "Determine the absolute minimum power that Dr. Crusher needs to maintain the quarantine and use the rest to get me onto my bridge!"

- Data tapping his head, rubbing his belly, and whistling for Noonien Soong.
- Data's conversation with Noonien Soong about the nature of human existence.
- Soong presenting Data with the emotion chip and the short moment of bonding between Lore, Data, and Soong.
- Lore posing as Data to procure the emotion chip.
- Data saying goodbye to Soong.

**Comments:**

You've got to feel pretty bad for Data at the end of his one. His evil brother steals his only chance at ever experiencing true emotion and his father dies. Worst of all he's the only one who seems to care, on screen anyway. This episode was largely meant to be filler. It fills in some gaps in Data's story, to be finished off later. But despite the filler premise, it was excellently pulled off. Seeing Data, Lore, and Soong in the same room played by the same actor was quite fun to watch. And watching Data take over the ship only to have no memory of it was also fun to watch. This episode is thrilling both intellectually and visually. A pleasure to watch.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x04 - Suddenly Human**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-10-15

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard must decide a human boy's fate.*

**Problems:**

- In the briefing room, the stars seem to start and stop moving seemingly at random. Though, star sync tends to be a common problem in TNG. Sometimes they'll be at warp and you'll see motionless stars...

**Factoids:**

- The Talarions were mentioned in a previous episode, but this is the first time we see them.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- I like Data's blurb about Taliarn war tactics in the beginning. It gives us a familiar feeling with the aliens of the week.
- Beverly nicely compliments the feel of familiarity with the Talarions with her accusations of brutalization.
- Picard's reaction to Troi nominating Picard to be Jono's mentor.
- Picard restraining himself from blowing up and Jono when he becomes his mentor.
- Picard's "well rehearsed" plea to Troi that she remove Picard from the responsibility of being Jono's mentor.
- Jono's flashback of his parents being killed.
- Picard confronting Endar about Jono.
- Endar's explanations about Jono's injuries.
- Endar and Jono's meeting.
- Everybody scheming a way to keep Jono.
- Jono seeing a recording made by his grandmother.
- Picard and Jono playing hoverball.
- Wesley being slapped in the face with banana split.
- Jono stabbing Picard.
- Picard realizing that Jono belongs with Endar.

**Comments:**

An alien of the week episode. They tried to make it seem not so "made up on the spot" with the use of a previously mentioned but never before seen race, and with Data's history lesson, so it isn't all that bad. Still, the fact that we're probably never going to see this race again annoys me. Especially seeing as how they seem to have fought a war with the Federation. Though, it doesn't bother me that much. It seems throughout the episode that they wouldn't pose much of a threat. So I suppose Star Trek not spending much time on this race is appropriate. The ending was definitely not expected, but it is indeed the obvious moral choice. I got the feeling throughout the episode that they would fight to keep the boy at all costs. Especially with Jono's grandmother entering the scene. But Picard comes to his senses. While I agree with the ending, I feel the episode loses some of its potential in the ending because we don't get to see how Jono's

grandmother reacts to Picard's sudden and hasty decision. A shame, it would have provided for some good drama.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 4x05 - Remember Me**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-10-22

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dr. Crusher is trapped in a world created by her own mind.*

**Problems:**

- If you can just order the ship to fly itself anywhere you want to go, why does the show ever bother with helmsmen?
- Geordi claimed that the bubble was collapsing at a rate of 15 meters per second and would last 4 more minutes and bubble had already begun cutting apart the ship. According to these figures, the ship is nearly 4 kilometers long! We could attribute these inconsistencies with the fact that Beverly was in a universe created by her own mind. Besides, when the universe was collapsing in on Beverly, it wasn't chasing her 15 meters per second, as she was clearly outrunning it.

**Factoids:**

- This is the second of three episodes that the Traveler will appear in.
- The Enterprise D was the fifth starship to bear the name Enterprise. That makes sense. Kirk's, then Kirk's new one, then B, C, and D. But where does Captain Archer fit in? We have to assume that since his ship was built before the Federation, the computer can't count it.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Geordi freaking out at Wesley regarding his experiment.
- Beverly to O'Brien: "Was he invisible? Did I carry on a conversation with thin air?"
- People starting to disappear.
- Beverly griping about her missing staff and the bridge crew not understanding what she's talking about.
- Data justifying all the empty space on the space to Beverly.
- Beverly describing the missing crew to Picard.
- Picard trying to justify no crew to Beverly.
- Beverly confusing the computer when everyone disappeared but her.
- Beverly: "If there's nothing wrong with me, maybe there's something wrong with the universe!" Such a wonderfully audacious statement.
- Beverly asking the computer what the nature of the universe is and the computer responding with a prompt and definite but confusing answer.
- The computer attributing the explosive decompression to "a flaw in the ship's design." Sure, I guess. If you built your ship too large for the universe, that would be a flaw in the design!
- Beverly's return.

**Comments:**

Static warp bubble? Excuse me? Now there's some incredibly absurd technobabble for you... This is one of the better Dr. Crusher episodes, except that it is plagued by technobabble and inconsistencies. The idea behind the episode itself is great, and fun in its execution. I enjoyed seeing Picard and Data justifying the immense size of the ship against an ever diminishing crew. It's also nice to see the Traveler back with Wesley. A loose thread picked up (but not wrapped up until later). I just wish the writers would have spent more time coming up with less absurd technobabble.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x06 - Legacy**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-10-29

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew meets Tasha Yar's sister, Ishara.*

**Problems:**

- Right after the phaser drilling and the away team beamed into the core of the alliance, Riker fired at an enemy and the phaser blast sent him flying halfway across the corridor! I imagine stunned.

settings are pretty stunning, but that was an unrealistic blow. Despite this inconsistency, I rather enjoyed watching that. It's so funny to see that guy fly across the hallway like that!

#### **Factoids:**

- In this episode it takes Beverly a few hours of testing to determine if Ishara is Tasha's sister. Just ten years later in *Voyager*, this kind of testing can be done in minutes.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The poker scene at the beginning.
- Data's poker face.
- Riker: "Data have you got a flush or a full house?" Data: "It will cost you twenty to make that determination, sir."
- Data literally "throwing away" the cards he was asked to throw away.
- Data explaining Riker's trick to Worf and Troi, then taking the winnings.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Data, describing Yar's death: "Lt. Yar was killed on Vegra 2 by a malevolent entity." Ishara: "In battle." Data: "No. She was killed as a demonstration of the creature's power without provocation."
- I like the scene where they're talking about using the phasers to drill a hole for the transporter and removing Ishara's implant. The dialog was all technically correct and appropriate.
- Ishara begging Data to leave.

#### **Comments:**

It amuses me how often the TNG people find ways to bring up Yar. Some might find this annoying, but I enjoy it. Fuel for fanboyish continuity addicts like me. :) Though I found Ishara and Data's interactions with each other a bit trite. There have been better episodes exploring Data's emotions and ability to form friendships. Though Ishara's latent disgust with her sister was realistic and interesting. To that end, I enjoyed the cameo. Though I don't think it was a surprise to anyone that Ishara was going to betray everyone, so her "friendships" with everyone seemed obnoxious. A decent, though a bit flawed episode.



#### **Star Trek TNG - 4x07 - Reunion**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-11-5

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard mediates a Klingon power struggle.*

**My Rating - 9**

#### **Problems:**

- Alexander's age is a problem. Depending on how you look at it, this episode gives the connotation that the boy is either too young or too old. Most people believe that he was conceived when Worf and K'Ehleyr were together in TNG: *The Emissary*. But if that were true, Alexander would be no more than two years old! The alternative explanation (which is the only acceptable one) would be that K'Ehleyr and Worf conceived Alexander about a year before Worf came about the *Enterprise*. There's nothing impossible about this explanation, but it is a bit unlikely with the impressions we're given about how long Worf and K'Ehleyr have been apart in the two episodes she's in.
- If Worf transported without his communicator, how could the computer record that it was him who transported? Perhaps by pattern records?

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which we see a Vor'cha class Klingon ship.
- It is stated in this episode that K'mpec has ruled the Klingon Empire as chancellor longer than anyone in history.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the Vor'cha class attack cruiser. A beautiful new ship. Love the closeups.
- Worf: "Captain, I must request permission to send another officer." Picard: "May I know your reason?" Worf: "My dishonor among Klingons may offend Ambassador K'Ehleyr." Picard: "Lieutenant, you are a member of this crew and you will not go into hiding whenever a Klingon vessel uncloaks." Worf: "I withdraw my request, sir."
- K'Ehleyr, to Worf: "Not even a bite on the cheek for old times sake?" Worf: "Perhaps you are not aware of my dishonor. I have accepted discommendation." K'Ehleyr: "I've heard. So now what, do I have to perform some ridiculous ritual to talk to you?"
- I love K'mpec's faith in Picard's ability as a mediator.



- I also love how K'mpec continues to drink the poisonous wine with dignity even though he knows it will just kill him faster.
- K'Ehleyr pressing Worf for answers regarding his discommendation.
- Gowron's first scene. I love that man's eyes!
- Worf restraining himself from taking the oath with K'Ehleyr out of fear for Alexander, even though he really wanted to.
- Gowron bribing K'Ehleyr. Though just about every scene with Gowron was remarkable. God I love that character.
- K'Ehleyr digging through the records to discover the truth about Worf's discommendation.
- Duras' aide's simple but effective method of distracting the guard...
- Duras confronting K'Ehleyr.
- K'Ehleyr uncovering Duras' plot.
- Beverly simultaneously and independently uncovering Duras' plot.
- K'Ehleyr's death.
- Worf throws his communicator on his table and it falls to the ground...
- Worf's fight with Duras.
- Worf killing Duras. I was so surprised nothing stopped him!

**Comments:**

Like TNG: Sins of the Father, this episode is a Klingon soap opera, and I enjoyed it just as much! We get to see one of my favorite Klingons of all time Gowron for the first time, Worf's discommendation is a major issue, and the great leader of the Klingon Empire is assassinated! A truly remarkable episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x08 - Future Imperfect**

**My Rating - 2**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-11-12

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker awakens to find that 16 years have passed.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Riker's "wife" Minuet is actually the holographic woman from TNG: 11001001.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- It's fun trying to notice all the small differences in the pseudo future. Beverly's hair, the communicators, a Ferengi helmsman, and more.
- The computer being slow.
- Geordi without his visor.
- Data in red.
- Riker's son... Jean-Luc
- Riker getting on everybody's case when he found out the deception.
- Riker telling Picard to shut up.

**Comments:**

This episode is simply put, cute. I like the funny looking alien at the end and the innocence of the whole thing. It made for a fun episode, but the circumstances leave much to be desired. All this buildup about a Romulan conspiracy left me hoping for a Romulan ending. We didn't get it. Maybe the Romulans were the invaders that obliterated Ethan's people. But we're never told. As a result of these circumstances, I found this episode largely disappointing.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x09 - Final Mission**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1990-11-19

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wesley is accepted to Starfleet Academy.*

**Problems:**

- LaForge gives the shuttle a full safety inspection, which it passed. Minutes later the shuttle

crashes. Great job Geordi!

**Factoids:**

- The character Boothy was first mentioned in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- "Dear god." Picard's reaction to the desert environment.
- Picard so patiently handling Dirgo.
- Dirgo concealing some kind of beverage.
- Dirgo slamming himself into the fountain's forcefield.
- Dirgo getting himself killed.
- Picard describes Boothby to Wesley.
- Wesley getting to the water.

**Comments:**

This episode has a number of small highlights. One of which is the music. It's of much higher quality than that of the average episode. Another is the duality of this episode. The two plot threads were both interesting enough to hold my interest. Finally, every character had an important role in this episode, which can be a rarity. Overall, an acceptable send off for Wesley. Certainly better than Pulaski's.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x10 - The Loss**  
Originally Aired: 1990-12-31

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Deanna Troi suddenly loses her empathic powers.*

**Problems:**

- Data says gravity is pulling them into the cosmic string. So if gravity is pulling them, why were they moving at a constant speed? Gravity is an acceleration. Not a constant speed. It doesn't really matter, as Data was wrong. It was not gravity pulling them. Troi's "moths flying into the flame" analogy was instead correct. But of all people, I would least expect Data to make such an elementary physics mistake.

**Factoids:**

- TPTB considered making Troi's loss permanent.
- Breen and Ferengi are mentioned as unreadable by telepathy in this episode. This is the first mentioning of the Breen, who will later play an important role in DS9.
- Picard claims that "most starships captains have to be content with a human counselor." This implies that the crew of most starships are largely human. This is an inference supported widely by later episodes, but I never quite understood why. Humans must have started colonizing the galaxy and spreading themselves like the bubonic plague after the Federation was formed...

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene nicely demonstrates Troi's counseling skills.
- Riker criticising Data for not calculating the ETA down to the second.
- Troi realizing her empathic abilities are gone.
- Troi freaking out at Riker.
- Troi taking offense to LaForge's comment even though it wasn't directed at her.
- Troi freaking out at Beverly.
- Riker accusing Troi of feeling aristocratic about her Betazoid abilities.
- Guinan appearance.
- Guinan picking at Troi about taking her job.
- Picard ordering Worf to fire at the 2d lifeforms. He seemed relieved when his attempt to kill them failed.
- Picard giving Troi a "get your ass in gear" speech.
- Troi discovering the solution. I enjoyed her "moths fly into flames" analogy. Quite appropriate.

**Comments:**

The writers took the Troi suffering cliché to the extreme! But it wasn't so bad. It was interesting

seeing Troi lash out at the crew, and the aliens of the week were a nice concept. Still though, the use of a cliché as a plot device is trite. And when Troi got her empathic powers back, we find out that the 2d lifeforms were intelligent, not idiotic moths. I rather liked them better as simple lifeforms. It would have matched up better with the fact that they were 2d and less complex.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 4x11 - Data's Day**

**My Rating - 9**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-1-7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data tries to comprehend human emotions.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Data's pet cat, Spot, makes his first appearance in this episode.
- The previously mentioned but never before seen ship's arboretum is first shown in this episode.
- The character of Keiko was created just for this episode, but as O'Brien develops into a major character as Star Trek continues, Keiko's role expands.
- According to Data, Andorian marriages involve groups of four.
- Picard's speech at the wedding is identical to the one Kirk used in TOS: Balance of Terror.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- I like the detail that Data introduced Keiko to O'Brien.
- Data delivering the "good news" to O'Brien.
- Data insulting Vulcans in his log.
- Data experimenting with friendly jives and insults.
- Worf and Data discussing human weddings.
- Data asking Crusher to teach him how to dance.
- I want Data's cat... :(
- Data trying to make O'Brien feel more comfortable.
- Data frustrating Keiko.
- Data's intuition regarding T'Pol.
- Data's tap dancing lesson.
- Data confused about why they don't do a lot of tap dancing at weddings and Beverly's response.
- Data's partner dancing lesson.
- Data's disturbing smile while dancing. Utterly terrifying. The next time you want to make babies cry, show them a picture of that...
- Data: "I could be chasing an untamed ornathoid without cause." Beverly: "A wild goose chase?"
- Picard confronting the Romulans about kidnapping T'Pol.
- Data's poker analogy.
- The wedding.

**Comments:**

This episode is a major character development episode not for Data, but O'Brien. Unlike many made up on the spot TNG characters, O'Brien and Keiko become important characters in later episodes. Specifically in DS9. Even setting that aside, this is a fantastic Data episode. There is continuity with TNG: The Measure of a Man right in the opening scene, as Data's log entry is addressed to Bruce Maddox, the man who tried to have Data's rights taken away. It seems Data holds no hard feelings for the man, and even wants to aide his cybernetics research! The side plot with T'Pol and the Romulans is interesting and appropriate with but one flaw. Where is the real ambassador T'Pol? We're not told. We must assume the Romulans killed her some time ago, or something. Still, it would have been nice to find out. All in all, one of the most memorable TNG episodes I've ever seen.

---



**Star Trek TNG - 4x12 - The Wounded**  
**Originally Aired:** 1991-1-28

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A renegade Federation captain must be stopped.*

**Problems:**

- Marc Alaimo played Gul Macet in this episode. He later goes on to play Gul Dukat in DS9. They're virtually identical characters, why did the name have to change? Granted Dukat sounds cooler, that's no excuse...
- Maxwell says O'Brien was his tactical officer on the Rutledge. So O'Brien goes from being a high ranking officer on the Rutledge to a chief petty officer on the Enterprise? Isn't that a demotion? Not impossible a situation, but certainly unlikely and annoying when no explanation is given.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature Cardassians, a race which will become majorly important later in TNG and in DS9.
- In the Ten Forward scene, the Cardassian orders Kanar. In the coming years, we will find out that it is the favorite drink of Cardassians. Virtually every Cardassian we ever see drinks it at some point.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Keiko appearance.
- O'Brien and Keiko discussing food.
- first sighting of a Cardassian ship and the ensuing battle.
- The Cardassians trying to be friendly with an absraivse O'Brien.
- Picard carefully handling Macet's transponder signal request.
- O'Brien carefully discussing Cardassians with Keiko, trying to understand, but not wanting to reveal his hate.
- Data: "It appears to be a Cardassian supply ship." Macet: "How would you know that?" Picard: "We are able to make that determination." I love that enigmatic response...
- Picard backing down and giving Macet the transponder frequency he asked for.
- Watching the battle between the Phoenix and the Cardassians on the computer.
- Picard discussing anger with O'Brien.
- O'Brien describing the horrors of killing a man to the Cardassian in Ten Forward.
- O'Brien: "It's not you I hate, Cardassian. I hate what I became, because of you."
- Macet chastises his officer for breaking into the Enterprise computer. All his arrogance gone; seems he's been completely humbled after seeing his warships destroyed.
- Seeing the Nebula class starship. Beautiful design.
- Maxwell justifying his mass murder and Picard's responses of rationality.
- O'Brien's chat with Maxwell getting him to see reason.
- Picard digging into Macet about how Maxwell was right all along about the secret buildup.

**Comments:**

Including O'Brien and Keiko as major characters in this episode just one episode after their wedding was perfect. It shows us that the writers aren't going to just brush these great characters aside because their 15 minutes of fame are over. That said, this is a major character building episode for O'Brien. Between TNG 4x11 and 4x12 we learn tons of great things about O'Brien that will help strengthen his character in DS9. We also get a great introduction to the Cardassians and their deceptive and warlike nature. An introduction well supported by future episodes involving Cardassians. Well done.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x13 - Devil's Due**  
**Originally Aired:** 1991-2-4

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Picard fights a woman who claims to be the Devil.*

**Problems:**

- Ardra becoming the Klingon devil seems inconsistent with TOS: Day of the Dove in which Kang claimed the Klingons have no devil. We later discover the Klingons killed their gods in DS9. Perhaps

they killed their devil too?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data's acting in the beginning.
- Picard's defiance that Ardra was really the devil.
- I like the speculation that she might be a Q.
- Ardra attemptng to seduce Picard.
- Picard: "Just have Mr. Data fetch me in a shuttle. And have him bring along a uniform." Worf: "Did you see uniform?" Picard: "Yes I did!"
- Data finding a legal loophole in Ardra's claim to the Enterprise.
- Ardra making the Enterprise disappear.
- Data overruling Picard.
- Data: "The advocate will refrain from making her opponent disappear."
- Picard stealing Ardra's powers.

**Comments:**

The Ventaxians look exactly like humans... Anyway, I loved Ardra's character. They picked the a perfect actress for her. This is in every way a successful humor episode, and I enjoyed it. The best part of this episode is its replay value. Watch it a second time and try to guess how Ardra was using holography, forcefields, transporters, tractor beams, and cloaking devices to make all her tricks happen.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 4x14 - Clues**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-2-11

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data lies to the crew.*

**Problems:**

- The premise, see my comments. Not necessarily unbelievable, but a bit abusrd.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Guican appearance.
- Guinan on the holodeck, trying to play along.
- Data using "less obtrusive" methods of contacting Picard.
- Data carefully persuading everyone to leave the star system.
- Beverly suspecting Data a liar.
- Picard getting rid of Data in the briefing room so they can speculate about him.
- Beverly digging up more evidence against Data using the transporter.
- Data's "I cannot confirm nor deny that" attitude.
- Worf: "There are very few people on board who could have broken my wrist. Commander Data is one of those individuals."
- Troi being possessed and speaking in an eerily flanged bass augmented register.
- Possessed Troi breaking Worf's wrist.

**Comments:**

This episode's premise doesn't make a whole lot of sense. Wouldn't it have been easier to just claim the wormhome knocked everyone unconscious for a day instead of trying to rig the ship to make it appear as only 30 seconds had passed? That way all the "clues" that were left behind would seem to be nothing but a normal consequence of a wormhole knocking you into bio chemical stasis for a day. Of course, then we wouldn't have an episode now would we...

---



**Star Trek TNG - 4x15 - First Contact**  
Originally Aired: 1991-2-18

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker is badly injured on a first contact mission.*

**Problems:**

- How could the Malcorians not notice the big honkin' starship Enterprise in orbit of their planet? Seeing as how they're advanced enough to have warp drive, I would assume they'd have satellites in orbit capable of scanning the space around their planet.

**Factoids:**

- This episode bears the same name as the famous Trek movie First Contact. The episode and the movie have much similar stories too. A race experimenting with warp drive is visited by a superior race.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The aliens freaking out about Riker's alien physiology.
- Riker, regarding his fingers: "Yes, isn't that something? My father's were the same way."
- Picard and Troi beaming into Yale's lab.
- Yale believing that Picard and Troi are a joke.
- I like the mentioning that UFOs in the Malcorian sky were dismissed as weather balloons...
- Picard sharing the wine his brother gave him in TNG: Family with Durken. I like this detail, because Robert asked Picard not to drink it alone, and Picard kept his promise. Good continuity indeed.
- Durken: "I will have to say this morning I was the leader of the universe as I knew it. This afternoon I am only a voice in a chorus. But I think it was a good day."
- Nurse Lanell bribing Riker with escape if he has sex with her. The details aren't clear, but I think it's safe to say Riker took her up on that!
- The alien doctor refusing to do any harm to Riker.
- Krola attempting to martyr himself, only to be hit with a stun setting.

**Comments:**

At first I found Krola's stark conservatism extremely annoying. His whole character seems so ridiculous, that even right wing purists would find him embarrassing to watch. But the episode's ending made it clear to me that the writers needed him to be an extreme to prove a point. That point being conservatives suck! I'm not going to go off on a political rant here, but I will say that this fictitious situation clearly illustrates how much a conservative mindset can hold back the progress of an entire society. Conservatism might as well be synonymous with greed. A fine episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x16 - Galaxy's Child**  
Originally Aired: 1991-3-11

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Geordi is crushed when he meets his dream woman.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The scene where Picard informs Geordi that his dream woman is coming aboard.
- Guinan appearance.
- Brahms' hostile first meeting with Geordi.
- Geordi accidentally inferring that Brahms should remember a modification that her hologram helped Geordi make.

- Geordi surprising Brahms once again by "coincidentally" knowing her favorite food.
- Picard reluctantly firing on the alien.
- Picard feeling horrible about killing the alien.
- Brahms blowing off Geordi's advances so abruptly. Ouch!
- Geordi trying again on Brahms in the Jeffries Tubes only to find out that she's married. Ouch again!
- Beverly performing stellar surgery.
- Beverly: "Captain, I would like to announce the birth of a large baby... something!"
- Great continuity with the Brahms events in TNG: Booby Trap. Geordi even mentions the margin for error the computer warned him about.
- Brahms stumbling on her holographic double.
- The look on Geordi's face when Brahms confronted him about her holographic double.
- Geordi standing up to Brahms.
- Brahms' idea to sour the milk.

**Comments:**

I enjoyed this episode thoroughly. One reason is because its premise is based off continuity from a previous episode. Dr. Brahms was originally featured in TNG: Booby Trap as Geordi's holographic partner where he fell for her. The aliens of this episode were once again unique and interesting. That and the dilemma faced by the crew. Finally I found the interactions between Geordi and Brahms fun to watch. A nicely done episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x17 - Night Terrors**

**My Rating - 2**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-3-18

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew is threatened by hallucinations and panic.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Keiko appearance.
- O'Brien freaking out at Keiko for no good reason.
- Picard hearing his door chime in his head even though it wasn't there.
- Picard freaking out in the turbolift.
- Good continuity with TNG: The Best of Both Worlds with Data's mentioning of their attempted (but failed) technique using the deflector dish as a possible means of escape from this situation.
- Beverly trying to convince herself that she was hallucinating when all the bodies sat up.
- People starting to slur their speech.
- Worf attempting suicide.
- Troi discovering that emitting hydrogen is the solution.
- Guinan breaking out her gun.
- Data becoming acting captain.

**Comments:**

Wonderful, we get to watch everyone go insane! And we get to watch Troi have nightmares! By the end of this episode, I was becoming as sleepy as our main characters were. The plot was horribly slow and even repetitive. While the conclusion wasn't obvious per se, it was not all that surprising. O'Brien and Keiko's appearance was a plus, but it does little to improve a rather dismal episode, especially since O'Brien was acting like such a prick. The overall low point had to be the brawl in ten forward, which Guinan handled quite nicely. It was nice to see Data take charge as well, but overall I found this episode somewhat offensive.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x18 - Identity Crisis**  
Originally Aired: 1991-3-25

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A parasite transforms Geordi.*

**Problems:**

- Since the computer tracks people using their communicators, there's no reason why it should have been reporting that Geordi wasn't aboard ship after he transformed.
- Why didn't they just shut off the program rather than explore the holodeck when Geordi turned up missing?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Dr. Crusher hounding on Data trying to point out that he's showing signs of emotion. Worrying about Geordi.
- Geordi's friend freaking out about wanting to return to the planet.
- Geordi's friend when she started transforming. I loved the blue veins.
- Geordi tinkering with the holodeck trying to determine the source of that shadow.
- Geordi's friend freaking out some more even after she was healed.
- I love the way the transformed aliens looked when Data shined his light on them.

**Comments:**

It's nice to explore some of Geordi's past through seeing a bit of the history of his previous assignment in this episode. Once again, the aliens of this episode were also pretty cool. I love it when Trek comes up with something as original as this. A decent stand alone episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x19 - The Nth Degree**  
Originally Aired: 1991-4-1

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Aliens endow Barclay with super-human intelligence.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Cytherians occupy the center of the galaxy.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Everyone being courteous to Barclay's poor performance in the opening scene.
- It's nice to see Barclay's holoduction is still largely unresolved. In fact, we find out later that it never is, as Barclay is a tragic character.
- Barclay thanking Geordi for inviting him to come on the shuttle mission. It's nice to see the show isn't trying to pretend Barclay has been getting more attention since TNG: Hollow Pursuits.
- Barclay starting to get funky weird, but brilliant ideas.
- Picard: "I am willing to entertain suggestions."
- Barclay enhancing the shields. I love how his personality lost its nervousness and instead he became quirky and weird. So wonderfully acted.
- Barclay explaining how he enhanced the shields to Riker.
- Barclay's reformed and stunning acting performance.
- Barclay making a pass at Troi.
- Barclay becoming the computer.
- Barclay humbled in the end.
- Troi going on the date Barclay offered.

**Comments:**

This episode has a great beginning but a dismal ending. It was cool that the Cytherians were benevolent, but we learn next to nothing about them. The "ten days" the Enterprise spends with



them all occur off screen! Furthermore, this amazing new propulsion technique that's used isn't retained, for reasons we're not told. Sorry, the mysterious ending cliché just doesn't fly with me. A great episode up until the end.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x20 - QPid**  
**Originally Aired:** 1991-4-22

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Q complicates a reunion with Picard's old flame.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Beverly barging in on Vash and Picard.
- Picard, not wanting to divulge his personal relationship with Beverly to Vash in his introduction: "Uh, that's all right, uh, allow me to introduce you. This is uh Beverly. Doctor Beverly. Doctor, Doctor Beverly Crusher."
- Picard getting all tense in the company of Beverly and Vash.
- Riker hitting on Vash.
- Riker: "How was the reception?" Picard with a dismal tone, not looking at Riker, and not slowing down in his pace to his ready room: "Splendid."
- Q's appearance.
- Picard: "I've just been paid a visit by Q." Riker: "Q? Any idea what he's up to?" Picard: "He wants to do something nice for me." Riker: "I'll alert the crew."
- Picard trying to avoid being seen going to Vash's quarters.
- Picard's crew in the audience slowly changing into Robin Hood characters. I especially like when Data goes to raise his hand and finds he is holding a giant leg of meat.
- Worf: "Sir, I protest! I am not a merry man!"
- Vash's reaction to being transported into the Robin Hood fantasy.
- Worf smashing Geordi's guitar.
- The sword fight.
- Vash deciding to go with Q to see the universe.

**Comments:**

An episode with absolutely incredible continuity. Firstly, this episode picks up on the events from TNG: Captain's Holiday, with Vash's character returning. It also picks up on TNG: Déjà Q regarding the favor Q owes Picard. Finally, it will later run into DS9: Q-Less which will pick up on the adventures Q and Vash have together. That said, it functions wonderfully as a stand alone episode as well. It has action, adventure, humor, and it holds the interest. Truly one of TNG's most memorable episodes.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x21 - The Drumhead**  
**Originally Aired:** 1991-4-29

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A Starfleet investigation becomes a witch hunt.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- According to Satie, Picard has violated the Prime Directive 9 times since he took command of the Enterprise.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf's reaction to being bribed.
- Sabin mentions Worf's father a traitor. I like that detail. As far as he's concerned, that's true, as he wouldn't know the secret the high command is maintaining.
- The revelation that the engine explosion was an accident.
- The revelation that Tarses is part Romulan, not Vulcan.
- Good continuity, mentioning the Romulan spy from TNG: Data's Day. As well as the mentioning of Picard being assimilated in TNG: Best of Both Worlds.
- Picard getting Satie all wound up.

#### Comments:

This episode examines a very real moral dilemma, but I found the way in which it did so utterly offensive. Nobody seemed to be in character until the end, except for Picard, and the paranoia exhibited throughout this episode just seemed ridiculous. The various plot threads didn't seem to connect very well, and loose threads are left behind. What happened to Tarses? How and why did a Romulan enter the Federation and take a human wife 100 years ago? All the interesting things about this story were neglected while it concentrated on fear, uncertainty, doubt, and paranoia.



#### **Star Trek TNG - 4x22 - Half a Life**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-5-6

**My Rating - 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Lwaxana fights to stop her lover from ritual suicide.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Michelle Forbes, who plays Dara in this episode, goes on to play the Bajoran Ro Laren.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Troi: "Counselor Deanna Troi personal log stardate 44805.3: My mother is on board."
- Picard carefully trying to avoid Lwaxana but utterly failing at it.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Lwaxana's armorous advances on Timicin.
- Lwaxana calling Troi "Mr. Wolf" and Worf working hard to restrain himself.
- Timicin regarding Lwaxana as "vibrant". Yes, I'll agree to that.
- The Enterprise accidentally blowing up a star.
- The revelation that Timicin will soon die.
- Lwaxana's initial outrage to Picard about Timicin's ritual suicide obligations.
- Lwaxana's outburst in the transporter room.
- O'Brien "gracefully" exiting and locking out the transporter just before he left.
- Lwaxana debating the morality of the ritual suicide with Timicin.
- Timicin realizing Lwaxana is right and asking for asylum.
- Timicin, Dara, and Lwaxana meeting each other.
- Lwaxana in doubt of her strong moral convictions against the ritual suicide.
- Lwaxana joining Timicin to observe his resolution.

#### Comments:

Lwaxana's character, for once, didn't annoy me in the slightest. In fact, she stole the show. Her speeches on the morality of euthanasia were extraordinary and invoke powerful emotions. Furthermore, Timicin and Lwaxana had excellent chemistry while together. So what's right here? Is it right to prolong old people's lives even when they become invalids and become nothing but a drain on society? Is it right to purge such people? I'm not qualified to answer such a question, but this episode explores it well.



#### **Star Trek TNG - 4x23 - The Host**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-5-13

**My Rating - 1**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dr. Crusher falls for an alien who relies on "hosts" to survive.*

**Problems:**

- List of Trill inconsistencies and rationalizations with DS9:
- The built up forehead: two trill species? Unlikely. We could attribute minor detail to the good old "It's just a TV show!" excuse. (Like the Klingon forehead problem.)
- The symbiont can be seen visibly moving around in the host. Maybe this is what happens when the symbiont and host are rejecting one another?
- Why did Odan need a shuttle? Trills on DS9 never had this need. Maybe it was the imminent rejection of symbiont and host?
- Why does the Federation know so little about Trill? Dax seems to have served the Federation for hundreds of years. And Sisko seems to have known him for decades. Maybe Sisko had some kind of insider knowledge of the Trill through this friendship that most Federation citizens don't normally have access to?
- Why did Odan reject his host in the first place? Maybe this symbiont was getting too old and suffering from some sort of early rejection syndrome? The symbiont certainly looked like it was extremely old, what with being so large and whatnot.
- The symbiont in this episode seems to exert a kind of totalitarian control over the host as opposed to the blending in DS9. Since we know so little about the Odan character's personality, we can write this one off as a bad impression. Besides, Riker seems to have rubbed off on Odan while Riker served as host.
- Hosts die when symbionts are removed. Why didn't Riker die after Odan was removed from him? Maybe because the blending never fully succeeded?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Beverly and Odan poorly attempting to avoid Data.
- I like the way Odan is always referring to Dr. Crusher as "Dr. Beverly".
- The character of Odan. Such a nicely confident character.
- Odan discussing personal details about Beverly with Picard.
- Odan/Riker: "Speak softly governor. Those who cannot hear an angry shout may strain to hear a whisper."
- Frakes did such a wonderful job playing Odan's character.
- Odan/Riker mediating the dispute.

**Comments:**

The only thing saving this episode from a zero is that it really is a decent episode. Its problem is that it is overrun with inconsistencies with DS9. Now, you might argue that we can't hold this episode accountable for that, and that's a fine argument, but I don't think we can just dismiss seven seasons of DS9 because of one (extremely) inconsistent TNG episode.

**Star Trek TNG - 4x24 - The Mind's Eye**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-5-27

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Romulan mind control transforms Geordi into a killer.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- John Fleck, who plays Taibak in this episode, goes on to play the equally evil Silik on Star Trek Enterprise.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Geordi talking to the computer in the shuttle.
- Geordi freaking out when he sees the Romulan warbird.
- Picard insisting that Worf not be ignored despite his discommendation.
- Taibak taking over Geordi's vision.
- Kell expressing gratitude to Worf for killing Duras.
- O'Brien appearance.

- The holographic scene where Geordi kills the holographic O'Brien. I love the whole indifference to killing thing.
- Troi laying into Geordi about the details of his Risa trip.
- The Klingon and Picard cursing at each other in Klingon.
- Geordi intentionally spilling his drink on O'Brien.
- Geordi investigating himself. Obviously not having a conscious memory of his crime.
- Kell giving Geordi Romulan orders.
- Data discovering the mind control technique.
- Data using the computer to uncover evidence of what really happened to Geordi.
- Geordi's scene with Troi at the end.

**Comments:**

I'm quite fond of this episode. The way they directed the sudden appearance of the Romulan warbird was great. Off the top of my head, they only ever use this technique one more time, with the appearance of a Borg ship through the window of a shuttle in a Voyager episode. My affinity for the opening scene aside, this episode just struck the "correct" tone with me. It has good continuity with previous episodes once again regarding Worf's discommendation, it begins a new plot thread involving Sela, a Romulan Tasha Yar lookalike which gets picked up later, and it's a nicely done believable Romulan plot story, which is completely in character all the way around.



**Star Trek TNG - 4x25 - In Theory**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-6-3

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data pursues romance with a crew member.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the second episode to feature Data's pet cat Spot.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data reminding Jenna, as asked, why she broke up with Jeff.
- Keiko / O'Brien / Guinan appearance.
- Data, Jenna, Keiko, and O'Brien joking around.
- Jenna: "I wish we were back there right now, you and I." Data: "The unidirectional nature of the time continuum makes that an unlikely possibility."
- Data analyzing the molecular compound of the drink Guinan offered.
- Data: "I require advice." Guinan: "Don't look at me." Data looks away! Haha
- Geordi returning Spot to Data.
- Data talking to Troi about pursuing a relationship with Jenna.
- Worf: "Klingons do not pursue relationships. They conquer that which they desire."
- Riker advising Data to jump right into the relationship.
- Picard to Data: "I would be delighted to offer any advice I can on understanding women. When I have some, I'll let you know."
- Data's androidal view of his relationship with Jenna.
- Worf: "I am puzzled, sir." Picard: "So am I, Mr. Worf." Worf: "The only detectable bio electric residuals are your own. You did not--" Picard: "No. I did not... Well. Perhaps we have a poltergeist?" Worf: "Sir?" Picard: "A mischievous spirit." Worf: "Sir." Picard: "Perhaps not."
- Data attempting to be warm and loving to Jenna.
- Data picking a fight with his girlfriend.
- Jenna: "What were you just thinking?" Data: "In that particular moment, I was reconfiguring the warp field parameters, analyzing the collective works of Charles Dickens, calculating the maximum pressure I can safely apply to your lips, considering a new food supplement for Spot..." Jenna: "I'm glad I was in there somewhere."
- Picard piloting the shuttle, guiding the ship out the nebula.

**Comments:**

An entertaining, if a bit ridiculous Data episode. Data just tried too hard to emulate the behaviors associated with love. Furthermore I'm a bit dismayed at how the death of a crewmember in this episode is seemingly casually brushed aside. Nobody seemed really all that broken up about it. Just

another dead redshirt. Not that this episode wasn't entertaining, because it really was. There's just a bit of room for improvement.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 4x26 - Redemption, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-6-17

**My Rating - 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf is torn between the Federation and his people.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

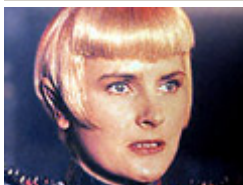
None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Gowron appearance. The eyes! The eyes!
- Guinan appearance.
- Picard encouraging Worf to challenge his discommendation.
- Gowron asking Picard to assist his installation.
- Picard suspecting Romulans as aiding the Duras' family.
- Worf discussing the truth behind his discommendation with Gowron.
- Guinan target practicing with Worf.
- Worf discussing Gowron with his brother.
- The Duras sisters confronting Picard privately in their house. Picard accuses them of behaving like Romulans!
- The battle between the Klingon factions.
- Gowron giving Worf back his honor.
- Worf resigning from starfleet to fight for Gowron's cause.
- Worf's send off.
- A Romulan Tasha Yar?

#### **Comments:**

More Klingon soap opera and brilliant continuity. This episode opens with Picard encouraging Worf to challenge his discommendation (TNG: Sins of the Father) whilst the Enterprise is en route to the Klingon homeworld to observe Gowron becoming leader of the high council. Gowron meets them early, but tells Picard that the Duras family is still running amuck. Picard mentions that Duras was killed (TNG: Reunion) and attributes corruption to why the Duras family still has power in the empire. Additionally, we get great continuity with TNG: The Mind's Eye first regarding Picard's mentioning and suspicion of the Duras family having a Romulan connection and the revelation of who the shadowy Romulan figure is. A Romulan Tasha Yar? That's a little lame. But it does little to stain an excellent episode.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 5x01 - Redemption, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-9-23

**My Rating - 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A civil war threatens the Klingon empire.*

#### **Problems:**

- Q once said "Drink not with thine enemy" is a "rigid Klingon code". They appear to be doing that in great numbers in this episode.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode marks the first appearance of a tachyon beam being used to detect cloaked ships.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kurn's trick causing a solar flare to destroy his opponents.
- Riker accepting (temporary!) command of a ship!
- Data requesting command of a ship.
- Kurn celebrating the war.

- Data took command of a Nebula class starship. :)
- O'Brien appearance. As tactical officer! Woot!
- Gowron meeting the challenge to his authority and swiftly defeating it.
- Guinan appearance.
- I love how Guinan's race has something of a sixth sense, to see events across the timelines.
- Sela's story about what happened to the second Yar from TNG: Yesterday's Enterprise.
- The Duras sisters seducing Worf.
- Data (angrily?) yelling at his first officer.
- Data ignoring the Enterprise's orders.
- Data briefly revealing the Romulan fleet and forcing them to turn back.
- Data chastising himself for disobeying orders.
- Gowron giving the son of Duras' life to Worf and Worf sparing him.

#### Comments:

While I found the prejudice against Data a little absurd, I enjoyed the explanation of why Sela more or less was Tasha. Connecting this episode with TNG: Yesterday's Enterprise is genius continuity. I love it. I also love hearing what happened to the second Yar from the alternate timeline. Finally, the way this episode ties Federation, Klingon, And Romulan politics together is just beautiful. An excellent showing.



#### Star Trek TNG - 5x02 - Darmok

Originally Aired: 1991-9-30

My Rating - 10

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Picard deals with an alien who speaks in metaphors.*

#### Problems:

- The Enterprise fired its phasers from the torpedo tubes...

#### Factoids:

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of TNG Award".
- Picard (and only Picard) gets a new uniform in this episode. Curiously after he ripped it, he's not seen wearing it in the final scene. Seems he couldn't be bothered to replicate a replacement...
- Data has encountered 1754 nonhuman races in his time with starfleet.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The discussion of the Tamarians in the opening scene. A species which WANTS relations with the Federation, but communications could not be established. Excellent idea!
- The Tamarians and their unique language.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Picard's confrontation with the Tamarian captain. He throws down the dagger rather than enter (supposed) combat, while his first officer risks combat with the Tamarian ship.
- The campfire scene with the Tamarian captain and and Picard on the planet.
- Troi and Data attempting to decipher the Tamarian language.
- Picard refusing to fight the Tamarian captain, not realizing it was an alliance he sought.
- Picard cracking the Tamarian language.
- Picard screaming "No!" when the Enterprise attempts to beam him up, away from the battle.
- Data and Troi cracking the Tamarian language and explaining it to Riker.
- Picard attempting to speak to the injured Tamarian captain using his language.
- Picard discovering why the Tamarian captain brought him to the planet to fight alongside.
- Picard telling the story of Gilgamesh.
- The Tamarian captain's death.
- Picard speaking the Tamarian language with the first officer of the Tamarian ship.

#### Comments:

The most underrated episode in Star Trek history. We have two plot threads. First, Picard refuses to fight the Tamarian captain and vigorously attempts to understand his language. Second, Riker's attempts to rescue Picard at all costs and using violence if necessary. These two different approaches taken by Picard and Riker contrast each other beautifully. And ultimately it is Picard's cracking of the Tamarian language which saves the day. Regarding that, I absolutely love the way Data sums up this language barrier. They know the grammar of the Tamarian language, but not the vocabulary. Speaking in metaphors and saying only proper nouns holds no meaning to a

listener who doesn't understand the reference. But in time, as Picard demonstrated, the language could be deciphered. A properly educated linguist and historian could adequately communicate with the Tamarians. I felt thoroughly bad for the Tamarian captain in the end. What a great man, who makes a truly noble sacrifice in the hopes to establish friendship with the Federation. To sum it up, this is an extremely intelligently written episode and one of the finest examples of what Star Trek really is all about.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 5x03 - Ensign Ro**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-10-7

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise becomes a pawn in a deadly conspiracy.*

#### **Problems:**

- The Bajorans are often referred to as "Bajora" in this episode.
- Why is Worf's Klingon sash allowed but Ro Laren's earring not? Maybe because Riker felt like picking on her because of her history?
- Why does Ro wear her earring on the left when every other Bajoran wears their's on the right? Maybe because she follows the cult of the Pah-wraiths, or maybe because she's just being harmlessly rebellious?

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature a Bajoran, which will become a majorly important race on DS9.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard avoiding the Bolian hair stylist.
- Guinan appearance.
- Ro Laren's arrogance.
- Picard offering the Bajorans assistance.
- Guinan confronting Ro.
- Guinan discussing her trust in Picard with Ro. More good continuity with the upcoming episode TNG: Time's Arrow. The details of Guinan's statement are revealed then.
- Ro's story about her father.
- Picard accusing the admiral of conspiring with the Cardassians.
- Picard confronting the admiral and exposing his foolish decision.
- Picard requesting Ro to join the Enterprise crew.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is a starting off point to what will later become the epic story of the Bajoran people. We get great little details all over this episode. We're told the Bajorans are an ancient civilization that was more advanced than humanity for ages. We're told that they were conquered by the Cardassians 40 years ago. We're told that the Federation is sympathetic to the Bajoran rebellious cause. We're even introduced to their culture through a Bajoran starfleet officer and a visit to a Bajoran refugee camp. Unfortunately, this episode's primary story itself is lacking. Besides the technical problems, we have yet another corrupt starfleet admiral. How many is that now anyway? Whilst the Bajorans could have had a better opener, they only get better in the future.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 5x04 - Silicon Avatar**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-10-14

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew risks all to communicate with an alien entity.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Picard seems to have a new overcoat version.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker seducing the colonist woman in the opening scene.

- The crystalline entity devouring Carmen.
- Dr. Marr's dismay that Picard will not outright kill the crystalline entity.
- Data indulging Marr's curiosity about her son.
- Dr. Marr murdering the entity.
- Dr. Marr: "It will never hurt anyone again..."

**Comments:**

More Data hate at the beginning, which I was glad to see promptly disappear. While this episode is strong in its convictions and Dr. Marr's tragic character is acted nicely by Ellen Geer, I found this episode a bit distasteful. Just murdering the crystalline entity like that outright was just a sad waste of life. While I found the actions of everyone but Dr. Marr appropriate, it changes none of the consequences. To me this episode seemed short sighted, and I shared Picard's disgust in Dr. Marr in the end.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x05 - Disaster**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-10-21

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Troi acts as captain after the Enterprise is damaged.*

**Problems:**

- Geordi says the cargo would be "sucked" out into space when they open the cargo bay doors. Doesn't he mean "blown" out into space?
- The scene where they depressurize the cargo bay is a little absurd. Shouldn't their bodies have exploded from the rapid decompression? Maybe the ship has some method of maintaining the pressure on their bodies whilst depriving the air from the room. It's a stretch though.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Keiko appearance.
- O'Brien and Keiko arguing over names.
- Beverly trying to convince Geordi to sing in her performance.
- The chaos that ensued when the Enterprise was hit by the quantum filament.
- Picard being stuck in a turbolift with three crying children...
- Troi taking command.
- Ro dumping phaser energy to power bridge terminals and O'Brien freaking out at her.
- Data suggesting that Riker remove Data's head and take it with him...
- O'Brien arguing with Ro about what to do.
- Troi standing up to Ro.
- Data's detached head guiding Riker.
- Worf to Keiko: "Congratulations, you are fully dilated to ten centimetres. You may now give birth."
- Worf to Keiko: "The computer simulation was not like this. That delivery was very orderly." Keiko: "Well I'm sorry!!"
- Worf delivering Keiko's baby.
- Troi insulting Riker's rank.

**Comments:**

This episode is well conceived. I enjoy the way they wove Troi into the position of taking command. Two minor characters, O'Brien and Ro play important roles in the story, as well as Keiko. It was all very diverse and entertaining. It's also interesting to note that this episode takes place almost exactly nine months after TNG: Data's Day. It would be logical why Keiko was having her baby now thusly. ;) A memorable and satisfying episode.





**Star Trek TNG - 5x06 - The Game**  
Originally Aired: 1991-10-28

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wesley returns to find the crew addicted to a game.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Boothby's second mentioning, by Wesley.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Wesley and Data discussing the academy.
- Data mentioning Beverly's dancing skills. A connection with TNG: Data's Day.
- Geordi: "Tell'm to flip a coin!" Data: "A coin. Very good. I will replicate one immediately."
- Wesley mentioning Boothby.
- Beverly pushing the game on Wesley.
- Wesley and Lefler tinkering with the game trying to figure out how it works.
- Wesley in the turbolift with an addict.
- Data unbrainwashing everyone.

**Comments:**

This episode has a number of problems at the basic level. Firstly, we never see Lefler again. Second, if brainwashing people is this easy, why isn't it done all the time? Third, who the hell are the Ktarians and why do they want to take over Federation starships? Fortunately we get to learn a little bit more about the Ktarians later, mostly thanks to Voyager. But still, this episode seemed wholly random and without much purpose.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x07 - Unification, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1991-11-4

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard and Data investigate an unauthorized mission.*

**Problems:**

- This episode lists Leonard Nimoy as Spock twice in the opening credits.

**Factoids:**

- This episode contained an in memory of Gene Roddenberry statement at the beginning as he had just recently died.
- The junk yard special effects are a re use of the ship graveyard from Wolf 359 in TNG: The Best of Both Worlds.
- I believe this is the first time we ever get to see the Romulan homeworld.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing Spock's face in the Romulan photo.
- Picard mentioning his mind meld with Sarek. Good continuity with TNG: Sarek.
- Picard's scene with Sarek.
- Picard badgering the Klingon diplomat.
- The Klingon captain attempting to intimidate Picard and Picard matching his arrogance.
- The Quartermaster of the supply yard. Such great indifference.
- Picard trying to sleep on the "shelf" (as Data calls it) while Data just... stands there... I love how uncomfortable Picard was with Data just... being there for seemingly no good reason.
- Picard accusing Data of looking at him, then Data slowly turning away.
- Riker accidentally destroying the contraband ship.
- Seeing Spock at the end of the episode.

**Comments:**

Another episode with marvelous continuity. Continuity with TNG: Sarek regarding the mind meld and the continued involvement of the characters, and continuity with TNG: Redemption regarding the Klingons' appreciation of the Federation's help in Gowron's rise to power. Finally good continuity with TOS regarding Spock's appearance. I am, however, not fond of poorly done cliffhangers, and this episode features one. It's hard to pass judgment on an episode which hasn't concluded yet, so it will suffice to say that this episode nicely sets up the second part.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 5x08 - Unification, Part II**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1991-11-11

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Spock plans to reunify Romulans and Vulcans.*

#### **Problems:**

- Troi mentions that there could be a cloaked Romulan base on Galornden Core but in TNG: The Defector Data says that a cloaked base on that very same planet would be visible due to distortions.

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard's meeting with Spock.
- Spock mentioning his involvement in the formation of the Klingon / Federation peace treaty. A reference to Star Trek VI: The Undiscovered Country.
- Data masterfully convincing the Klingons to give him access to their ship's resources.
- Riker's conversation with the wife of the arms trader that Riker accidentally killed.
- Data's conversation with Spock regarding their personal strives to be more human or vulcan respectively.
- Worf having the wife of the arms trader that Riker accidentally killed play Klingon opera.
- Riker confronting the fat Ferengi.
- Sela's appearance.
- Sela describing her evil plan: conquest of Vulcan.
- Sela, in response to Spock's declaration of non cooperation: "I hate Vulcans. I hate the logic, I hate the arrogance--very well."
- Picard, Data, and Spock altering Spock's "speech".
- Data using the Vulcan neck pinch.
- Spock's mind meld with Picard.

#### **Comments:**

Oh my god. Sela you idiot! You lock Data, Spock, and Picard in your office, complete with a holographic generator and don't expect them to attempt an escape? You fool. Oh well, that's not unrealistic, just stupid. And Sela seemed pretty stupid to me. Twice she attempted to exact an indirect conquest on the Federation and twice she failed. For some reason, she's never seen again after this episode. Perhaps she was executed for her failures. It was interesting to create the character of Sela and effectively turn Yar into an enemy, but the character was just used poorly again and again. I am happy to see her go but saddened by the missed opportunity to develop her character. Sela could have been the driving force between peace with Romulans and the Federation. She is a union of a human and a Romulan. Her very existence is proof of peace. Yet she became a radical Romulan military fanatic. Indeed a missed opportunity. But much more than that. This episode attempted to be epic. I say attempted because it largely failed. While Spock's cameo majorly enhanced the episode, virtually nothing was accomplished. No peace is established nor the groundwork of that peace laid and we learn next to nothing about Romulus' and Vulcan's paralleling history. This episode, while a good two parter, was largely a disappointment because it could have done so much more. As a result we get two loose threads. We never find out what happens to either Sela OR Spock. How annoying.

---



**Star Trek TNG - 5x09 - A Matter of Time**  
Originally Aired: 1991-11-18

My Rating - 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Enterprise plays host to a visitor from the future.*

**Problems:**

- Worf: "There were no phasers in the 22nd century." Uh, sure there were. Humans didn't have phasers, but Vulcans did, and so did Klingons. I guess Worf considers himself more human than he does Klingon!
- Why didn't the time travelers from the future just travel back in time and get their time ship back?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Rasmussen's sudden appearance on the bridge.
- Data attempting to weasel information about whether or not he's still alive in the 26th century out of Rasmussen.
- Rasmussen to Geordi regarding his visor: "How do you like it?" Geordi: "It allows me to see. I like it just fine."
- Beverly's response to being seduced by Rasmussen.
- Picard asking Rasmussen to divulge the correct choice of action.
- The Enterprise being a lightning rod...
- Data: "I assume your handprint will open this door whether you're conscious or not."
- Picard to Rasmussen: "Welcome to the 24th century."

**Comments:**

A man from the 2100s encounters a time traveler, steals his ship, and travels to the 24th century where he attempts to steal technology then return. Assumedly for the purpose of profit. We can assume this guy was in this business in the early 2100s before Archer's Enterprise was launched. There would have been much more motivation back then. Besides the obvious logical problem of how a 26th century time traveler could lose his vessel to such a primitive human or why the 26th century time travelers didn't seek the return of their vessel, Picard argues himself into a hypocrite in this episode. Granted an impression is given that retracts his argument (after he makes his "choice"), the hypocrisy is still there. Rasmussen was trying to do exactly what Picard was trying to do when their positions were reversed. Funny how the whole perspective changes when Picard's suddenly in the more advanced timeline position.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x10 - New Ground**  
Originally Aired: 1992-1-6

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Worf receives a visit from his son Alexander.*

**Problems:**

- The soliton wave is said to have 98% efficiency, 450% more than the Enterprise warp drive. This would give the warp drive an efficiency of about 20%. This is a problem because in previous episodes, Geordi has made claims to the warp drive having efficiencies in the 90th percentile. Maybe he was referring to some other part of the engine that does energy conversions...
- How could the soliton wave be increasing in energy as it traveled? Where the hell was all that extra energy coming from?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Geordi's enthusiasm coupled with Data and Worf's sterile reactions.
- Worf's adoptive mother making a case to Worf to take back Alexander.
- Ms. Kyle interrupting Worf. Then Dr. Crusher interrupting Worf.

- Troi coercing Worf into getting more involved with the school.
- Worf's reaction to Alexander stealing.
- Worf's discussion about honor with Alexander.
- Worf discussing the incident with Troi.
- The test ship exploding.
- Worf silently proud of his son for defeating his training program.
- Troi carefully trying to convince Worf to embrace his son instead of send him away again.
- Worf and Riker attempting to save Alexander.
- Worf lifting the beam by himself.

**Comments:**

I found the plot regarding Worf and his son vastly more interesting than the soliton wave. Mostly because the soliton wave involved quite a bit of bad science and just seemed a ridiculous concept. Yeah, warp without warp drive. Very cool. But I could tell the whole idea would flop from the beginning. Conversely, Worf's son's issues were interesting. Seems history is repeating itself and Alexander will grow up without a real family and end up being another truly unique Klingon. I like the way the two problems of the story are woven together in the end. It makes Worf's rescue attempt so much more vigorous and exciting to watch. An overall decent and memorable episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x11 - Hero Worship**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-1-27

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A troubled young boy starts to emulate Data.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- In this episode, Data claims that the damage to the Vico might be indicative of Breen tactics. This is one of many times the Breen are mentioned before they are seen on screen.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The special effects for the damaged Vico were well done.
- Data fastbuilding the sculpture.
- Timothy emulating Data's head movements.
- Data subtly convincing Timothy to slip out of his android fantasy.
- Picard, Troi, and Data confronting Timothy.
- Data ordering Picard to drop the shields. I love the look on Picard's face as he struggles to decide whether or not to trust Data.

**Comments:**

A fine episode, albeit dull. It suffers from TNG attention deficit disorder; like many TNG eps, the guest character featured here is never seen again, and quickly forgotten making the whole episode inconsequential. As a stand alone episode it is successful, but frankly good television creates continuity and this episode simply doesn't. My rating is as such thusly.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x12 - Violations**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-2-3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise hosts an alien race of telepathic historians.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Keiko appearance. This is the first episode she appears in without being accompanied by Miles

O'Brien.

- Keiko remembering her grandmother.
- Beverly trying to force Picard to accept memory retrieval.
- Riker talking to Troi whilst in a coma. He references the time she talked to him in TNG: Shades of Gray.
- Geordi investigating the cause of the comas and getting frustrated at the computer.
- Picard with hair in Beverly's flashback.
- Geordi and Data investigating the previous planets and discovering the Iresine Syndrome following the Ullians.
- Jev using his father to cover up his memory rape of the crewmembers.
- Data uncovering Jev's treachery.

#### Comments:

Welcome back the Troi suffering cliché. Thankfully it plays a vital role in an episode that examines a very real moral issue regarding the concept of rape. This episode is one of many examples of how Star Trek examines a modern day issue using a SciFi plot device. I consider the approach elegant and realistic. Implied at the end of the episode is that rape is a forgotten crime on Earth (and the Federation at large) but as new abilities evolve into a species and new types of power and control can be exacted, will new forms of rape evolve as well? This episode examines that question well.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x13 - The Masterpiece Society**  
Originally Aired: 1992-2-10

**My Rating - 4**

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Picard tries to save a genetically engineered society.*

#### Problems:

- Geordi claimed the efficiency of his little tractor beam tweaks was "up to almost 300%". Something over 100% efficient is literally creating energy (or matter) from nothing and losing nothing in the process. Physical impossibility. See law of conservation of matter/energy.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- This episode nicely depicts the technology of the colonists. It looks just about correct for 200 years ago.
- I like how Geordi's blindness is weaved into the story indirectly as a solution to the problem.
- Geordi's supervisor whistleblowing to Hannah about her treachery.
- Picard counseling Troi regarding her behavior.
- Picard reexamining his decision in the end.

#### Comments:

A fan favorite; this episode presents an interesting moral dilemma and an interesting question to reflect on in the end, but to me loses quite a bit of its profound impression because of the simplicity of the issue. Colony of selectively bred perfect people meets disaster. Enterprise averts disaster but contaminates colony. All of this could not be avoided. The question was what to do about it. Enterprise leaves and the colony remains "perfect", or Enterprise takes people and colony self destructs. Well, if the Enterprise leaves everyone there, the colony will just descend to chaos anyway as those who wanted to leave were denied permission to do so. And if Enterprise lets colonists come aboard, the colony descends to chaos too. I don't see how to come out a winner in this situation. The point is, Picard shouldn't be feeling sorry for himself in the end at all. If it weren't the Enterprise, something else would have shattered their fragile little bubble anyway. Such as that stellar core fragment. Or a hostile alien species. To me, this episode is little more than a slap in the face to conservatism and doesn't say anything that isn't largely obvious.

---



**Star Trek TNG - 5x14 - Conundrum**  
Originally Aired: 1992-2-17

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Mass amnesia strikes the Enterprise crew.*

**Problems:**

- How could Data lose at chess? To Troi? I mean come on...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf proclaiming himself captain.
- Data the bartender.
- Worf humbling himself.
- Ro Laren and Troi both pursuing Riker.
- Data speculating on his origins.
- Riker being confronted by his women in the end.

**Comments:**

This episode doesn't make a whole lot of sense. If the alien memory eraser guy had such control over which information the crew could remember, had forgotten, and could retrieve, why didn't he just make himself captain? Or replace the entire bridge crew? Not that this story is technically impossible in the world of Trek, it's just absurd. I only give zeros to stories so impossible that they have to be dropped from canon. This story isn't anywhere near that bad, so it gets one point by default and an extra point for the excellent humor.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x15 - Power Play**  
Originally Aired: 1992-2-24

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Troi, Data and O'Brien are possessed by spirits.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The scene where lightning strikes down Riker, O'Brien, Troi, and Data was done with no stuntmen. It's been said that Troi hurt herself performing that scene.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien appearance.
- Data acting weird.
- Troi, Data, and O'Brien attempting to take over the ship.
- Data brute forcing the forcefield.
- Keiko appearance.
- Troi, Data, O'Brien shrugging off phaser hits.
- Data trying to get Worf to fight him.
- The attempt to disembody the spirits.
- O'Brien catching their shuttlecraft transporter trick.
- Data's obsession with Worf.

**Comments:**

A decent hostage episode with a number of interesting high points. I was particularly fond of Data's obsession with wanting to kill Worf along with the game of misdirection that the bridge crew was playing with the aliens. Unfortunately, the cover story for the aliens was much more interesting than their real story. I would have liked to have seen the remains of a real Daedalus class ship and

I would have liked to have gotten a look at a crew of that era. Nevertheless, the episode stands well enough on its own even if it doesn't reach its maximum potential.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 5x16 - Ethics**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-3-2

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An injured Worf opts to commit ritual suicide.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Geordi uses his visor to cheat in poker. But only after the hand is over. ;)
- Worf asking Riker to kill him.
- Beverly and Russell discussing Klingon redundancy.
- Beverly and Russell discussing her experimental procedure.
- Worf: "No! I will not live like that. 60% of my mobility? No, I will not be seen lurking through corridors like some half Klingon machine! The object of ridicule and disgust."
- Beverly objecting to Russell telling Worf about her experimental treatment.
- Russell using one of her experimental treatments on a patient from the mine explosion, killing him.
- Picard trying to convince Beverly to make an exception to the rule of her morals in Worf's case.
- Riker confronting Worf about his ritual suicide and informing him that after his studies, he's realized he is not allowed to kill him. That only Alexander is.
- Worf deciding to live and undergo the dangerous procedure.
- The operation.
- Russell: "That will kill him!" Beverly: "Looks like we've done a pretty good job of that already, doctor."
- Beverly's critical speech of Russell's methods.

**Comments:**

An aptly named episode, this episode nicely deals with ethics, of a medical kind. It also deals with the ethics of suicide, in the ritual form. Only the premise of this episode is weak. Firstly, it seems unlikely that cargo containers that are so heavy aren't secured by something. This isn't necessarily impossible, but not caring for something this obvious seems like bad writing. A better premise would have been to say that the restraints broke on one of the cargo containers. Problem eliminated thusly.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 5x17 - The Outcast**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-3-16

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker falls for a member of an androgynous race.*

**Problems:**

- I find it hard to believe that Worf has recovered from his injury in the last episode so quickly.

**Factoids:**

- According to this episode, the Federation was founded in 2161.
- This is the first of only a few rare episodes in which Geordi has a beard.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Soren's attitude changing when Krite entered the room.
- Soren discussing sex with Riker.
- Soren discussing the female gender with Beverly.
- Worf: "That's a woman's game. All those wildcards. They support a weak hand."
- Worf's chauvinist attitude.
- Soren coming out of the closet with Riker.

- Riker taking the fall for Soren and Soren refusing to let him.
- Riker rescuing Soren only to find out that she had already been treated.

**Comments:**

A species without gender is an interesting concept and certainly well examined in this episode. I like the idea proposed in this episode that gender is primitive and that species will one day evolve into a higher form. However the real world issue this episode was attempting to examine appears to be homosexuality. This episode essentially flips the coin and puts the viewer in the sexual minority. This is supposed to stress a viewpoint of sexual tolerance. IMHO on that front this episode largely fails, because it is up to the J'Naii society to govern their gender. Ultimately I found the ending to be largely inappropriate. The episode should have been over when Soren was taken away.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x18 - Cause and Effect**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-3-23

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is trapped in a time warp.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Kelsey Grammer plays Captain Morgan Bateson in this episode. Grammer is well known as Dr. Frasier Crane on the TV shows Frasier and Cheers. He also plays the voice of Sideshow Bob in The Simpsons.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene. Wow! :)
- Data's fast shuffling.
- Riker and Worf's suspicions that Data is stacking the deck.
- Worf getting emotional at the Poker game.
- Watching the collision and the Enterprise explode never got old.
- Beverly, Worf, and Riker predicting the hand Data will deal.
- Beverly knocking over her wine glass over and over again serving as a bad omen.
- Data replaying recordings of the disaster.
- Data stacking the deck with threes.
- Data realizing Riker's suggestion is correct.

**Comments:**

Dr. Frasier Crane is to blame when weird stuff starts happening to the Enterprise... This episode is a TNG classic and truly memorable. Some people object to its repetitive nature, but I think it was well done. Nicely repetitive but not overly so. The only improvement I can think of is to perhaps cut one of the repetition scenes so that some time could be spent exploring Captain Morgan Bateson and his crew's culture shock as they come back to their lives in the Federation. Saving that, an exceptional episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x19 - The First Duty**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-3-30

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wesley is involved in a cover-up at Starfleet Academy.*

**Problems:**

Data claims to have graduated in the "class of 78." Since it is now 2368, as dated from "The Neutral Zone" in which Data says it is 2364, did Data really graduate ninety years ago?

**Factoids:**

Robert Duncan McNeill plays Locarno in this episode. He later plays Tom Paris on Voyager. Just like how Marc Alaimo started off as a Cardassian Gul Macet and later went on to play a Cardassian Gul Dukat, why did they have to create a new character, with a nearly identical background, of the



same species, played by the same actor? Twice? Because the name sounds cooler?

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard discussing the accident with Beverly.
- Boothby appearance.
- Everybody blaming the accident on Josh.
- Wesley having to listen to Josh's father apologize, further intensifying his guilt.
- The Vulcan guy proving that the team was lying.
- Boothby describing Locarno and his team to Picard.
- Picard discovering the cover up and yelling at Wesley.
- Locarno trying to convince Wesley to shut up about the truth.
- Locarno taking the fall in the end.
- Picard talking to Wesley in the end.

**Comments:**

A fine story. Nice to see Wesley again, and definitely nice to see Wesley screw up. A good change of pace overall for TNG all things considered and I would definitely say this is Wesley's finest episode. This episode deals with groupthink and the concept of following a leader blindly. Locarno maintains his greatness throughout the episode. First as a charismatic leader trying to convince his team to help him graduate in style, then as an intelligent leader orchestrating a cover up, then as an honorable leader taking the fall for everyone. I only wish that they had used Locarno in Voyager instead of Tom Paris. At the very least to remove the confusion of two characters played by one actor.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x20 - Cost of Living**  
**Originally Aired:** 1992-4-20

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Lwaxana introduces Alexander to her wild lifestyle.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise saving Tessen III from an asteroid.
- Worf and Alexander negotiating their problems with the counselor.
- Lwaxana's appearance.
- Worf's spiteful greeting to Lwaxana.
- Lwaxana calling Worf "Wolf".
- Picard: "I will not have that woman continuing to use this ship for her convenience simply because her daughter is one of my officers."
- Picard: "Nothing would please me more than to give away Mrs. Troi."
- Lwaxana and Alexander on the holodeck.
- Worf smashing the clown ball.
- The replicator giving Lwaxana strange sausages with her Tea.
- The scene is when Deanna, Worf, Alexander, Lwaxana, Campio and his assistant all encounter one another. They all have their own purpose for being there and no one reacts on anyone else's statements.
- Worf: "You're just supposed to sit here?" regarding the mudbath.

**Comments:**

I would have liked to have known who the Enterprise was saving in the beginning. Anyway, Lwaxana's to be husband so nicely contrasts her personality. He's uptight and stuck on protocol and order. She's care free. It goes well also with the Worf vs Alexander conflict. The ending was appropriate. Lwaxana's lateness and nudity ultimately proves that the two could never be together. They're too unlike to relate to one another. Ultimately this episode serves little purpose but to develop the characters, which it does well. The B plot with the strange metal eating parasites was rushed and IMHO obtrusive, so I largely ignore it. An average episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x21 - The Perfect Mate**  
Originally Aired: 1992-4-27

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Picard falls in love with another's bride-to-be.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Max Grodenchik plays Par Lenor in this episode. Didn't I just make a big speech about recycling actors but not characters a few episodes ago? Granted this one is easier to forgive than Marc Alaimo's and Robert Duncan McNeill's. Nevertheless, Max Grodenchik does play THREE DIFFERENT FERENGI characters on Star Trek. To me that's a little absurd. I can see reusing the actor to play a member of a different species. But three members of the same species? Come on!
- this is the first episode to actually show us Beverly and Picard having their morning meal together. Something that's been said they do every day.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker: "Mr. Worf, escort our Ferengi guests to quarters. Not too close to mine."
- The Ferengi. So obtuse.
- Riker goes to the holodeck after meeting with Kamala. Gee, what's he gonna go do there?
- Beverly's objections to "conditioned prostitution."
- Picard dumping Kamala on Data.
- Everyone in ten forward pursuing Kamala.
- The Ferengi trying to bribe for Kamala.
- Kamala informing Picard that she bonded with him.
- Briam: "You had to work side by side with her for days. How could you resist her?" Picard: "Ambassador, have a safe trip home."

**Comments:**

This episode is all about wanting something that you can't have. The story is slightly tragic in that both Picard and Kamala have to get over a great emotional loss. You are left with the feeling that Kamala can never be truly happy. But in one respect she's no different than anyone else. Picard can most certainly move on and learn to love another woman. I don't see why Kamala can't either. Thus I have little sympathy for Kamala and Picard in this episode. Picard should have maintained a more professional distance. Granted he tried hard to do so, in his position I would have stopped at nothing to maintain professionalism. I would not have listened to Beverly's objections at all. She just couldn't, and didn't understand.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x22 - Imaginary Friend**  
Originally Aired: 1992-5-4

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A little girl's imaginary friend threatens the ship.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- We're told in this episode that Geordi's parents are both starfleet officers. His mother a command officer and his father an exobiologist.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Watching the red dot thinger travel around through things. A nice bit of graphics work.
- Guinan appearance.
- Data and Guinan debating the image in the clouds.
- Guinan describing her Tarkassian Razorbeast imaginary friend.
- Isabella striking down Troi.

**Comments:**

It's always nice to see Troi doing her counsellor job, which she does well in this episode. Beyond that this episode is largely unremarkable except in that it is the final episode of the season to deal heavily with children, a trend which was prominent in this season. In some ways I say good riddance. In other ways I think it was productive. In the first episode, Picard informed Riker to make certain that he was kept away from all matters that dealt with children as much as possible. In this season and especially this episode he seems to have finally lightened up from that.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 5x23 - I, Borg**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-5-11

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise rescues a critically injured Borg.*

**Problems:**

- At one point Hugh says "Do I have a name?" before he starts officially using the word "I."

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard's initial reaction to bringing a Borg on board.
- Picard conspiring to eliminate the entire Borg Collective.
- Picard, on the Borg: "They declared war on our way of life."
- Picard fencing with Guinan.
- Geordi talking with the Borg.
- Geordi having second thoughts about the plan.
- Guinan changing her mind about Hugh.
- Picard: "It's not a person damn it, it's a Borg!"
- Picard's scene with Hugh.
- The look in Hugh's eye as he transported when he returned to the Borg.

**Comments:**

This episode is a fan favorite, though I found it all a bit naive. The opening logic of this episode ultimately prevails, the Borg must be destroyed. Can they be saved? Sure. But does it save more lives just to wipe them out? Yep. So do so. That's certainly the attitude most Borg episodes take. This episode is just far too high on its own morals. It makes sense to humanize a recovered Borg if you intend to keep it on the ship, like in the case of Picard, or later on Voyager with Seven of Nine, but to humanize Hugh then return him to the Collective? Idiotic. I would have explained to Hugh the benefit of the invasive program and asked him to sacrifice himself. Because "the needs of the many outweigh the needs of the few."



---

**Star Trek TNG - 5x24 - The Next Phase**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-5-18

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Geordi and Ro are pronounced dead after an accident.*

**Problems:**

- Common problem with these kinds of episodes... if Ro and Geordi can pass through things, how do they not fall through the floor?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ro, with regards to Riker's order to go to the Romulan ship without phasers: "This is not a bright idea."
- It's nice to see Humans, Klingons, and Romulans working together in this episode.
- Worf being concerned with giving the Romulans too much technology and Riker appeasing him.

- Geordi: "Are you saying I'm some kind of blind ghost with cloths?"
- Geordi trying to use his communicator to talk to Ro.
- Worf and Data discussing the funeral plans.
- Geordi and Ro figuring out why they're "phased".
- Ro running through people's quarters.
- Geordi and Ro trying get Data to expose them.
- Geordi and Ro returning.

**Comments:**

A fine episode and certainly fun to watch, but the bad science drops its score quite a bit in this one. When everything happening doesn't make any sense, it drops the fun quite a bit. Honestly, this would have been a much better episode if it were centrally about the Federation helping the Romulans and not about some secret phased cloaking device. Oh well.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x25 - The Inner Light**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-6-1

**My Rating - 10**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard lives another life on a faraway planet.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of TNG Award".
- This episode won the 1993 Hugo Award for Best Dramatic Presentation. This episode was the first TV show episode to be given such an award since TOS: The City on the Edge of Forever.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard's reaction to his new location. "Freeze program! End program!"
- Picard talking to his "old friend" trying to get information about where he is.
- The revelation that the probe is making Picard live a completely new life and that for him, years are going by.
- Picard getting sick in his dream world thanks to the disruption of the beam transmission.
- Picard's wife's death.
- Picard's old friend returning from the dead to explain the probe to Picard.
- Picard having to rediscover who he is.

**Comments:**

This episode is a fan favorite, and with good reason. The story that develops within Picard's mind is captivating and just when it starts to seem familiar and warm, the characters explain to Picard what his new life really was. The idea behind the story is very simple. Picard is taken into a dream world by an alien probe in which he lives a completely new life. It's not the idea of the episode that is superb, but the execution. This episode features an absolutely stunning performance by Patrick Stewart as Picard. Arguably the best performance he's ever done. In the end, we're left with the tragic story of a civilization destroyed by their own sun going nova and a profoundly affected Picard. He will never be the same man again after this truly life changing experience. A TNG classic.



**Star Trek TNG - 5x26 - Time's Arrow, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-6-15

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data is transported to late 19th-century San Francisco.*

**Problems:**

- Data trades his communicator for three silver dollars. He throws one dollar into the pot as his ante for the first game, but the ante was said to be four bits, which is 50 cents.

**Factoids:**

- The Frenchmen in this episode is played by Marc Alaimo, who later goes on to play Gul Dukat on

DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Finding Data's head in the cavern.
- Riker: "Your head is not an artifact!"
- Data casually discussing the foreknowledge of his death.
- Guinan appearance.
- Troi quoting and imitating his definition of friendship.
- Picard trying to force Data to stay safe and cheat his "upcoming" death.
- Data in 1800s San Francisco.
- Data and the beggar.
- Data: "This is not sleepwear. And I do not have a missus. I am a Frenchmen."
- Data speaking french.
- Data playing Poker to get money.
- Data and the bus boy.
- Guinan making a special chemistry drink.
- Data pretending not to be able to lift the anvil.
- Data fumbling over the figures of speech.
- Seeing Guinan in the past.
- Guinan discussing the concept of alien worlds with Mark Twain.
- Data forcing his way into Guinan's house.
- Guinan's reaction to Data's entry.

**Comments:**

An intriguing episode and certainly a memorable one. Though as a huge cliffhanger, there's not much to comment on. It's certainly fun to see Data interacting with 1800s Earth. It's also interesting to see that Guinan is apparently on Earth in this time period for reasons we're not given.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x01 - Time's Arrow, Part II**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-9-21

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew travels back in time to prevent Data's death.*

**Problems:**

- Why was Geordi wearing his visor in the hospital for anyone to see?

**Factoids:**

- Premonitions of this episode can be found in TNG: Booby Trap, where Guinan makes a statement about a bald man coming to her aid a long time ago, and in TNG: Ensign Ro, where Guinan explains to Ro that her trust in Picard runs deep for special reasons.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The landlady calling Picard "Mr. Pickerd."
- The Revelation that the bus boy was Jack London, the young self-taught writer of over 50 books.
- Mark Twain freaking out over Data and Guinan's activities.
- The crew escaping the hospital with Data.
- Mrs. Carmichael being manipulated by Picard.
- Data's death.
- Mark Twain's reaction to being transported.
- "Wearwolf..." Mark Twain's reaction to seeing Worf.
- Mark Twain's discussion of government with Troi.
- Mark Twain's realization that he's "misjudged many things."
- Data interpreting Picard's message.
- Guinan, Picard, and Twain just before Picard returns.

**Comments:**

If you read the factoids section of my reviews, you'll see that this episode was "supposed to happen". Twice through the show we were given direct evidence that "a long time ago" Picard came to Guinan's aide. Now we know what she was talking about. This long-term character development of Guinan is wonderful writing. One nice thing about the plot is that this Guinan

business seems to be just a minor plot thread, as well. We're given a much more dominant plot regarding Mark Twain, Data, San Francisco, and these soul sucking aliens. I'm usually not fond of endings where everything conveniently works out in the end, but this episode wrapped it all up so nicely and neatly as well as stylishly that I forgive it. Time's Arrow is not the best season finale / premiere to grace Star Trek, but it's definitely a great showing for a TNG fan.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x02 - Realm of Fear**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-9-28

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Barclay confronts his fear of being transported.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- O'Brien's been transporting people for 22 years.
- Each transporter pad has four redundant scanners to prevent losing people.
- There hasn't been a case of transporter psychosis in "over 50 years"
- Transporter psychosis was first diagnosed in the year 2209

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Barclay appearance.
- Barclay trying to avoid the transporter.
- O'Brien appearance.
- Barclay's reaction to O'Brien's description of the "bumpy ride".
- Barclay chickening out.
- Troi introducing Barclay to plexing, which will become a nervous habit he practices for the rest of his life...
- O'Brien describing his arachnophobia.
- Barclay facing the transporter.
- I like the inference that Cardassians are responsible for the attack on the ship. It shows nice internal continuity with previous and future episodes dealing with an ever aggressing race.
- Barclay seeing a creature in the matter stream with him.
- Barclay self-diagnosed transporter psychosis.
- Data noticing Barclay's odd behavior.
- Barclay trying to convince everyone he's not going insane.
- Barclay grabbing for what was in the matter stream with him.

**Comments:**

An episode that deals with transporter phobia. A great topic for an episode, seeing as how many fans of the show have voiced their displeasure with the idea of being taken apart molecule by molecule. At the same time, the episode's topic is analogous to modern phobias with things like air planes. Barclay is reintroduced into the fold once again seamlessly and appropriately. Every Barclay episode has been a pleasure to watch because of the genius behind the actor. Not that the character is all that stunningly great, but Dwight Schultz puts on a really good show as him. I'm also fond of O'Brien's key role in the story. Overall, a slightly above average episode.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x03 - Man of the People**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-10-5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Lumerian ambassador uses Troi to achieve success.*

**Problems:**

- How is Troi's aging magically reduced?

**Factoids:**

- There's an "Ensign Janeway" in this episode. No relation, I'm sure... ;)

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf directing a martial arts class. Cool!
- The old woman: "Have you mated with him yet?!"
- Troi being life-force raped.
- Troi toying with Riker.
- Troi being mean to Ensign Janeway.
- Beverly performing an illegal autopsy.
- Beverly faking Troi's death.

#### Comments:

I like the impunity the ambassador had throughout the episode. It shows us that sometimes people just get so famous and important that even heinous crimes they commit seem to be overlooked. The ambassador reminded me somewhat of OJ Simpson, except in this case getting what he deserved in the end. Despite the fine story idea, the execution was rather drab. The story was caught up in Beverly's medical mystery, the conclusion of which was obvious. The only interesting part was the climax, in which it's fun to watch Picard and Beverly manipulate the ambassador. His death was fitting, albeit a bit convenient. My main problem with this episode is the number of TNG clichés. A diplomatic mission, a mystery guest star with a secret, and more Troi suffering scenes. I've thus marked it down a bit.



#### **Star Trek TNG - 6x04 - Relics**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-10-12

**My Rating - 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Scotty returns after being in stasis for 75 years.*

#### Problems:

- The Enterprise beamed Geordi and Scotty through the old ship's shields. Maybe they were weak enough or something.

#### Factoids:

- The Dyson Sphere concept is based off of a non Trek related SciFi idea, named after its creator, Dyson.
- According to this episode there have been "5 Federation ships" by the name Enterprise.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The sight of the Dyson Sphere.
- The sight of a TOS transporter rematerializing Scotty.
- Scotty not aware of how much time had passed.
- Geordi, regarding rigging the transporter to survive: "That's brilliant!" Scotty: "I think it was only 50% brilliant. Franklin deserved better."
- Beverly, on Scotty's health: "I'd say you feel fine for a man of 147."
- Scotty fumbling over the new technology.
- Scotty: "I was driving starships when your great grandfather was in diapers!"
- Data explaining synthehol to Scotty.
- Scotty: "Synthetic scotch. Synthetic commanders."
- Scotty: "What is it?" Data: "It is... it is... it is green." A reference to Scotty's famous line in TOS: *By Any Other Name*.
- Scotty: "NCC 1701, no bloody A, B, C, or D."
- The original Enterprise on the holodeck.
- Picard: "Aldebaran whisky. Who do you think gave it Guinan?"
- Picard and Scotty discussing the ships they miss.
- Scotty, with regards to the holodeck: "Computer, shut this bloody thing off."
- Geordi trying to cheer up Scotty.
- The old ship holding the Dyson sphere open with its shields.
- Geordi discussing his adventure with Dr. Brahms with Scotty.

#### Comments:

The simplistic plot is perfect because it allows us to spend more time on Scotty and less time on SciFi concept of the week. The greatest thing about it though was the SciFi concept of the week was a wonderful idea. So the whole plot just wove together into to an impressions show. Everything in this episode was geared toward impressing the viewer. Especially if the viewer was a longtime Star Trek fan. Yes, this episode is completely fanboyish. Oldschool TOS character returns

and an obscure but well documented SciFi concept given a cameo as well. This whole episode seems to be a cameo. But it couldn't have been done better and I enjoyed it greatly.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x05 - Schisms**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-10-19

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew suffers bizarre symptoms after an alien visit.*

**Problems:**

- In this episode it is said that cargo bay 4 is on deck 4. But the big schematics on the wall say it's on deck 10. And in TNG: Power Play it's said to be on deck 18...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker's hair at the beginning of the episode and his fatigue and behavior at Data's poetry reading.  
- Data's Ode to Spot...

*"Felis catus is your taxonomic nomenclature,  
an endothermic quadruped, carnivorous by nature.  
Your visual, olfactory, and auditory senses,  
contribute to your hunting skills and natural defenses.*

*I find myself intrigued by your subvocal oscillations,  
a singular development of cat communications,  
that obviates your basic hedonistic predilection,  
for a rhythmic stroking of your fur to demonstrate affection.*

*A tail is quite essential for your acrobatic talents.  
You would not be so agile if you lacked its counterbalance,  
and when not being utilized to aid in locomotion,  
it often serves to illustrate the state of your emotion.*

*Oh Spot, the complex levels of behavior you display,  
connote a fairly well developed cognitive array,  
and though you are not sentient, Spot, and do not comprehend,  
I nonetheless consider you a true and valued friend."*

- Worf freaking out at the Bolian hair stylist.  
- Everybody collectively remembering weird crap, then going to the holodeck to reconstruct it.  
- Riker kicking some goblin ass.

**Comments:**

This is a skillfully written episode from beginning to end. Everything from Data's poetry to the gradual building of suspense to the climax at the end was intelligently written. The episode was captivating and easily kept my interest all the way to the final moments. The holodeck scene in particular is one of the most memorable scenes in all of Star Trek. It's fun to see them use the holodeck as a tool, and not as a fantasy, or a place where things are always going wrong. The only failing in this plot is that in the end, we're left with a clear impression that these aliens would return. But they never do. You'd figure the writers would have learned from their mistake with TNG: "Conspiracy" by now. Oh well.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x06 - True-Q**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-10-26

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A gifted young intern learns that she is a Q.*

**Problems:**



- Just after Q finishes his initial discussion with Picard, Picard leaves his ready room and orders Data around, mentioning that Amanda's parents were Q. Data just accepts Picard's explanation without question, even though he hadn't witnessed Q's entrance in the conference room, nor did he see Q in Picard's ready room! There's no way Data could have known there was a Q on board at all!

**Factoids:**

- Data discovered that Amanda's parents were killed in a tornado in Topeka, Kansas. In today's Earth, tornados are fairly common there. (I know, I've been there.) But in this century they can be dissipated by the "Weather Modification Net."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Amanda displaying Q-like powers.
- Q's entrance, and the revelation that Amanda's a Q.
- Amanda describing to Beverly that she can bring back her lost loved ones but she's having trouble wrestling with the morality of that ability.
- Beverly complaining that Q ruined her experiment by speeding it up unnaturally.
- Q turning Beverly into a dog, Amanda turning her back, all without Beverly noticing.
- Q and Amanda playing hide and go seek.
- Amanda transporting Riker.
- Riker: "You can't make someone love you." Amanda: "Can't I?" She waves her hand and Riker falls for her instantly...
- Picard describing the tornado that killed Amanda's parents.
- Picard lecturing Q on morals.
- Q: "Jean Luc, sometimes I think the only reason I come here is to listen to your wonderful speeches."
- Amanda making the decision to embrace her powers.

**Comments:**

A pleasing episode in that the fans have always been curious about the Q. We get to see another bit of the psychology of the Q continuum in this episode; that they are extremely ethnocentric. Only pure Qs are allowed to exist, it seems. Despite the fanboy trivia in this episode that makes it fun, the plot is little more than slightly above average because of it. Really what we see here is a recycled TNG: Hide and Q when Riker was given the chance to become a Q, except less silliness and more moral debate.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x07 - Rascals**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-11-2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Several crew members are turned into children.*

**Problems:**

- The science behind this episode is horrible. How did the transporter shrink their cloths? What happened to Picard's artificial heart? And how did the transporter unshrink everyone's cloths when they went back through?

**Factoids:**

- Guinan's father is over 700 years old.
- The writers ended the episode without showing Ro revert back to adulthood because they considered leaving her that way permanently.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien / Keiko appearance.
- The actors for the child versions of the characters were pretty good selections.
- Picard trying to ignore the limitations of his new form.
- O'Brien's reaction to Keiko.
- Troi: "You could return to the acadamy, take another degree, brush up on your Latin." Picard: "And be Wesley Crusher's room mate?"
- Troi: "A second childhood. Without the pain of growing up again."
- Guinan picking on Ro.
- Guinan's proposed solution to the takeover.
- The child's computer.

- Picard freaking out at the Ferengi about seeing his "Father" Riker
- Picard pretending to be Riker's son.
- Riker bullshitting technobabble.
- The children "tagging" the Ferengi.

**Comments:**

The Ferengi conquering the Enterprise so easily seemed a little absurd. And why did the Ferengi even bother trying to unlock the computer? They could have just tractorbeamed the ship to Romulan space. I'm sure the Romulans would have been more interested and more able to crack the computer lockout... This episode suffers greatly from both logical and technical problems. Forgiving them briefly, this episode bears great humor. It's great fun watching the crew as children and how they're treated by the rest of the cast. It's also great fun watching the children outsmart the Ferengi. Besides the humor, the idea that they could live to be twice the age of normal people was also intriguing, but disappointing that in the end no one decided to remain a child; not even Ro who would have been perfectly suited for that role. A fine idea for an episode, but very poorly executed.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x08 - A Fistful of Datas**

**Originally Aired:** 1992-11-9

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data becomes the villain in a Holodeck malfunction.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard playing the flute with the skill he acquired in TNG: The Inner Light.
- Picard getting annoyed at the interruptions.
- Worf trying to avoid Alexander.
- Worf, just after seeing the whore in the holodeck: "You wrote this program?" Alexander: "Mr. Barclay helped a little."
- Worf getting into the spirit in Alexander's program.
- Worf's objections to Troi's entrance.
- Worf getting slapped by the holographic woman.
- Picard's music glitching.
- Riker reading Data's poetry from TNG: Schisms.
- Data showing up as characters in the holodeck.
- Data interacting with his cat... suddenly switching to a Western accent.
- Worf, ordering a drink: "Klingon Fire Wine" Holodeck woman: "This ain't Kansas City! We ain't got none of that fancy European stuff here!"
- Holodeck Data hurting Worf's shoulder, and Worf trying to freeze the program giving Worf a clue that something's gone wrong.
- Data starting to act like a cowboy.
- Troi having to explain to Worf that Holo-Data will break his word on the agreement.
- The Holo-Woman being replaced by Data...
- The Enterprise flying off into the sunset...

**Comments:**

A cute, fun episode. The nicest part about this episode is how all the characters fit into their unnatural rules. Worf trying to fit in as a Westerner, yet perfectly comfortable with the idea of enforcing the law. Troi as a seasoned veteran nasty mysterious stranger, and especially Data, with his numerous roles in this episode. Brent Spiner's performance in all these roles was nothing short of brilliant; the accents were great. I'm not sure which I liked more. The real Data acting like a cowboy or Data as the holodeck characters. Even the final Data scene where he appeared in drag as a the bartender was done well enough such that it was funny and not tasteless.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x09 - The Quality of Life**  
Originally Aired: 1992-11-16

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data risks lives in order to protect a "living" machine.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The discussion of Geordi's beard and beards in general. Personally, I like Geordi the best with a beard.
- Data beginning to believe the exocomp was alive.
- Beverly healing herself after being defeated in a sparring match with Worf.
- Data asking Beverly for the definition of life.
- Farallon: "One time I saw an exocomp enter a reaction chamber for no apparent reason and vaporize itself. Is that supposed to make me think that it was depressed and suicidal?"
- Beverly and Data discovering that the exocomp saw right through the test.
- Data objecting to sacrificing the exocomps to save Picard and Geordi.
- Data locking out the transporter to save the exocomps. I love how Data replies to Riker's anger to calmly.
- The exocomps noble sacrifice.

**Comments:**

This episode takes a meager premise and makes it interesting. In the beginning of the episode we have a simple space station with a radical new mining technique. A concept not unlike other TNG episodes dealing with one time guest stars. However, the introduction of the exocomps and the debate over their sentience is an intriguing one. And the debate over whether or not they're alive is even more fascinating than TNG: The Measure of a Man in some respects. Especially with Data's decision to protect the exocomps at all costs. I'm fond of how everyone is so easy to forgive Data and I'm equally fond of how much willing Data was to end his career with his extreme actions. The dialog in this episode was intelligent and was a general pleasure to watch.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x10 - Chain of Command, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1992-12-14

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*After being reassigned, Picard is taken hostage.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The writers considered having this episode tie in more directly with DS9, replacing the Ferengi character we see in this episode with Quark. But some scheduling eliminated this possibility. :(

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The matter-of-fact manner in which the admiral dispersed her orders.
- Captain Jellico's enthusiasm.
- The command transfer ceremony.
- Jellico: "Oh... and get that fish out the ready room."
- Jellico criticising Troi's uniform.
- Jellico "being blunt" to Picard.
- The Ferengi claiming that "he's not a smuggler"; overly paranoid about an accusation not made...
- Beverly seducing the Ferengi into helping.
- Beverly and Worf picking on each other.

- Jellico's deliberate rude behavior to the Cardassians.
- The Cardassian captain giving (perhaps not so) subtle foreknowledge of Picard's mission with Worf and Beverly.

**Comments:**

Like any cliffhanger, this episode can not be fully judged until part II. But standing on its own, there are several nice features. Certainly, the tension level of this episode is its greatest feature. Everybody is on edge. The whole episode is like an adrenaline rush. In addition, this episode sets up the premise for DS9. We're told that Bajor has finally won its freedom! A shame we don't get to hear Ro Laren's opinion on the salvation of her planet. The new uniforms of the Cardassians are also established here. Due to all this, I consider this episode the first episode of the DS9 era. Starting here, Star Trek takes a turn into a bold new direction.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x11 - Chain of Command, Part II**  
**Originally Aired:** 1992-12-21

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew attempts to rescue Picard from Cardassians.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Patrick Stewart performed the scenes where he is stripped by the Cardassians fully in the nude, so as to better act the part.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Zombie Picard being interrogated.
- Gul Madred describing a peaceful, prosperous Cardassia of 200 years ago, before the military takeover.
- Madred's psychotic torture techniques.
- Jellico relieving Riker of duty.
- Data in red!
- Madred exposing his daughter to his work. That man is insane.
- Madred and Picard discussing Cardassia's history.
- Madred bluffing about holding Beverly and killing Worf to get Picard to be more cooperative.
- Picard eating a live Taspar egg.
- Picard defying Madred.
- Picard continuing to defy Madred while the pain device keeps him in constant agony.
- Geordi carefully trying to put in the good word to Jellico about Riker.
- Riker taking pleasure in Jellico's brief moment of humility.
- Geordi: "Do I wanna know how close that was?" Riker: "No."
- Jellico playing his minefield card to the Cardassian captain.
- Picard taking the pain inflictor controller and smashing it. Madred: "That won't help, I have many more." Picard: "Still... felt... good."
- Madred trying one last time to get Picard to submit to him by telling him that there are five lights. Picard, one last time defying him and continuing to tell the truth: "There... are... four... lights!" The guards try to help Picard get to the door, Picard pushes them away. He walks to the door with dignity on his own power.
- Picard describing his ordeal to the counselor and admitting that he was almost about to give in.

**Comments:**

Two rivalries, one between Jellico and the Cardassian captain, and one between Madred and Picard. In both the Cardassians start out on top, but get outmaneuvered by the humans. With regards to Madred and Picard, we get an utterly amazing performance by Picard once again. Madred also did an amazing job showing us just how much of a twisted man he was. I like how in the end, Madred only wanted to break Picard. He wasn't interested in getting any information from him. He just wanted to win the rivalry. All things considered, this episode features one of the most impressive displays of acting and character usage ever shown on Star Trek. It's also one of the most disturbing episodes ever shown on Star Trek. A truly memorable showing.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x12 - Ship in a Bottle**  
Originally Aired: 1993-1-25

My Rating - 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The senior staff is trapped in a Holodeck fantasy.*

**Problems:**

- Moriarty experiencing the passage of time whilst being stored in memory is a bit ridiculous. Why doesn't the doctor on Voyager? He seems a pretty self aware hologram to me. Maybe it had something to do with this funky protected memory that Barclay kept on rambling about.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a continuation of TNG: Elementary, Dear Data.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data and Geordi playing a Sherlock Holmns story on the holodeck.
- Data, who has memorized the program script, confused as to why it glitched.
- Barclay appearance.
- Moriarty appearing on the holodeck talking to a clueless Barclay.
- Moriarty "walking off" the holodeck.
- Barclay talking to Moriarty's lover.
- Data attempting to transport the chair off the holodeck, then Data suspecting that they were still on the holodeck.
- Watching the two planets collide.
- Picard, Data, and Barclay tricking Moriarty.
- Picard explaining how he fooled Moriarty.

**Comments:**

Moriarty was a Mori-Moron in this episode. Granted Picard, Data, and Barclay's method of fooling Moriarty was clever, even downright genius, it seems unlikely that Moriarty would be so foolish as to think he could ever leave the holodeck. An irony of this story is that in 5 years or so in Voyager, this indeed will happen for Voyager's EMH, but it will require technology from hundreds of years from the 24th century. Unfortunately, it kind of annoys me that the issue of Moriarty becoming sentient was washed away once again as something to be forgotten. And this time, we won't be following up on it. Picard does mention that the greatest scientific minds in the Federation would be studying how it became so, but the episode leaves the viewer with the impression that it's a non issue. Especially with regards to how much progress had been made; more accurately the lack there of, with the exception perhaps of Dr. Zimmerman's work on the EMH. I tend to have sympathy for Moriarty's cause in this respect, but since he was a clinical madman with malicious intents throughout his life interacting with the real world characters, I also say good riddance. I bag of mixed emotions.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x13 - Aquiel**  
Originally Aired: 1993-2-1

My Rating - 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Geordi falls in love with an alien murder suspect.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard intimidating Morag with his influence over Gowron.
- Aquiel showing up on the Enterprise.
- Crusher's hand showing up in the gunk.
- Geordi phasering the shape shifting life form.

**Comments:**

An absolutely dull episode and sad in a way. Another tragic LaForge romance in which we watch him spend virtually the whole episode trying to land a girl only to be turned down in the end. The murder plot is confusing right up until the last moment at which point LaForge employs Texas justice, murdering the murderer. It's a little absurd that he never once called for security despite the fact that he had plenty of time to, and could easily outrun the shape shifting blob. I'm a big fan of LaForge and all, but frankly, this has got to be one of his worst episodes.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x14 - Face of the Enemy****Originally Aired:** 1993-2-8**My Rating - 7****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Troi becomes a pivotal part of a Romulan defection.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is one of many episodes to mention that the Romulans use quantum singularities as power sources.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Troi's briefing from N'Vek
- Troi's abrasive meeting with Commander Toreth.
- Riker arresting Ensign DeSeve for treason.
- DeSeve delivering Spock's message.
- N'Vek blaming firing on the freighter on Troi.
- Troi and N'Vek discussing the failure of their plan.
- Commander Toreth's objections to Troi's new plan to cross into Federation space.
- Troi forcing her plan on N'Vek.
- Troi challenging Toreth's command.
- N'Vek firing a low powered disruptor to piggyback a transporter.
- N'Vek's death.
- Troi's escape.

**Comments:**

A human defector to Romulus returns to the Federation and Troi unwillingly becomes a Federation spy on board a Romulan warbird. The political web weaved for this episode is a complex one, but definitely interesting. Seeing more of the inside of Romulan vessels is certainly interesting as well. The thrilling plot keeps you on the edge of the seat as the warbird and the Enterprise become ever so dangerously closer to one another, climaxing with Troi's extremely risky maneuver hailing the Enterprise under the guise of being a member of Romulan intelligence. Granted, N'Vek's death is a huge cliché and in this case extremely needless. There's no reason the plot couldn't have been further complicated by Troi pleading Picard to transport him out too, only to find that his fate was now sealed once the warbird went to warp. I enjoyed watching him vaporize, but it seemed entirely senseless. Having him simply remain on board while Troi escaped would have borne so much more emotion. Finally, this is possibly Troi's greatest episode in that she played the most important role and did so spectacularly. Bravo.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x15 - Tapestry****Originally Aired:** 1993-2-15**My Rating - 10****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Q gives Picard the chance to change his destiny.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode of TNG Award" and is therefore a candidate for my

"Best Episode Ever Award".

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Q's declaration that he's god and Picard's reaction.
- Q: "You're lucky I don't cast you out or smite you or something."
- Picard regarding Q being god: "I refuse to believe that the universe is so badly designed!"
- Watching young Picard fight the Nausicans. He even laughed, just like the story he told Wesley in TNG: Samaritan Snare.
- Q: "Is there a John Luck Pickerd here?"
- Picard waking up next to Q...
- Picard alienating all his friends.
- Picard passing Q's test and seeing the results of his new life.
- Q making his point about how Picard's history of risk taking shaped his life.
- Q: "That Picard never had a brush with death, never came face to face with his own mortality, never realised how fragile lif is. Or how important each moment must be. So his life never came into focus."
- Picard: "I would rather die as the man I was than live as the man I saw."

#### Comments:

This episode is absolutely perfect from beginning to end. In many ways it reminds me of TNG: Family; but with a particular emphasis on Picard. The simple, yet profoundly powerful point this episode makes is done in an articulate downright moving manner. There are many things to redeem this episode. Firstly, it doesn't waste any time on pointless action scenes; in particular we don't see how Picard was injured at the beginning of this episode. Why? Because it was completely unimportant. Next, this episode presents Q in a completely unusual manner. As the series develops, it becomes clear that Q has something of an affinity, or perhaps a sympathy for Picard. Q begins to like Picard and wants to see him succeed; despite his adversarial appearance. As it was put at the end of the episode, it's almost hard to believe Q could be so nice. Finally, this episode allows the average viewer to connect excellently with Picard. Everyone has moments of their lives they regret or would like a chance to change. But like it or not, they are a part of who we are. Pulling a single thread in the tapestry of our lives would have profound effects on who we would become later. This episode is nontraditional in terms of the issues Star Trek usually tackles, but is nonetheless completely successful and one of the most memorable and moving episodes ever written.



#### Star Trek TNG - 6x16 - Birthright, Part I

My Rating - 5

Originally Aired: 1993-2-22

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Worf and Data set out on journeys to find their fathers.*

#### Problems:

- Watch Data's final scene with Bashir and look closely at his feet. Notice the little pink slippers? They didn't mean that actually to be visible, but according to Siddig El Fadil, who plays Bashir, they wear those slippers to silence the sound of footsteps when walking about and he simply forgot to switch them with his shoes for that scene. ;)

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Seeing the Enterprise docked at DS9 again.
- I like Geordi's reference to O'Brien being on the station.
- Bashir's meeting with Data.
- Worf freaking out at people.
- Troi regarding Worf's broken furniture: "Did the table do something wrong?"
- Bashir's fascination with Data's peculiarities.
- Data seeking advice from Worf about the vision of his father, inadvertently causing Worf to realize what he must do.
- Worf "negotiating" with the information seller by threatening his life.
- Picard to Data: "You are a culture of one. Which is no less valid than a culture of one billion."
- Data's complete "dream."

- Morn appearances; 1. On the promenade when Worf is walking around looking for the information seller.

**Comments:**

This episode is both annoying and cool at the same time. I love learning about the details of Worf's past and the attack on Khitomer which made Klingon relations with the Romulans go sour. But this episode also is the only crossover with DS9 which in my opinion is totally wasted. This episode just screams "I'm a TNG episode, not a DS9 episode!" DS9 sets and characters are used at only minimal amounts. In fact, mostly used as plot devices to advance Data and Worf's stories! The device Bashir wanted to examine is largely forgotten (it may be interpreted as a literal plot device!), the meeting Picard has at Bajor is not shown, and DS9's sets are only shown so that Worf may meet his information dealer. That said, the plot is interesting, even if slightly annoying. Worf finds the truth about what happened to his father, but at the cost of being captured himself...



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x17 - Birthright, Part II**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-3-1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf risks his life to inspire younger Klingons.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf trying to teach the people of the compound the Klingon ways.
- Worf taking offense to the existence of a Romulan Klingon hybrid.
- Toq: "Tonight, we eat well!"
- Toq: "You do not kill an animal unless you intend to eat it!"
- Ba'El: "They will kill you!" Worf: "Yes, but they will not defeat me."
- Worf: "No one survived Khitomer." Picard: "I understand."

**Comments:**

A rather underwhelming sequel to the two parter. It focuses exclusively on Worf with the DS9 crossover having been completely wasted. Further, it's hard to believe that Tokath didn't go to greater lengths to ensure the secrecy of his little utopia. It is nice to see all this emphasis on Klingon culture, which makes this an episode to remember. But the timing was just terrible and I have to take off points for this.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x18 - Starship Mine**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-3-29

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard is trapped on the ship with interstellar thieves.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Tim Russ, who plays Devor in this episode, goes on to play Tuvok on Voyager.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- I like the teaser of this episode, where Picard is micromanaging so many different things.
- Data attempting smalltalk.
- Picard granting Worf to be excused from the reception, but not Geordi. Picard: "Worf beat you to it."
- Data mimicking Hutchinson.
- Picard walking into a wall while he's attempting to leave Hutchinson's reception.
- Riker unleashing Data on Hutchinson.



- Riker: "I have to admit, it has a certain strange fascination. How long can two people talk about nothing?"
- Picard pretending to be the barber who never shuts up.
- Picard killing the invaders of his ship en masse.

**Comments:**

I like this episode quite a bit. The humor regarding Hutchinson and Data is slapstick but still tactful. The terrorist threat aboard the ship during the Baryon sweep is original, interesting, and thrilling. Most interesting though was Picard the killer! Picard murdered at least half a dozen people in this episode in defense of his ship; setting them all up to die one by one! This of course is the best part of the episode. Picard's tactics and trickery were superb and fun to watch. The episode maintained a consistent level of excitement all throughout and a fun level of humor at the beginning. The technobabble was borderline annoying, but served mostly as a successfully exploited plot device, so I don't dislike it too much. A great episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x19 - Lessons**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-4-5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard sends the woman he loves on a deadly mission.*

**Problems:**

- A crew member gets in the turbolift with Picard and Darren but doesn't specify any destination! Is she wandering the ship aimlessly?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard, frustrated that Stellar Cartography is consuming all of the ship's resources.
- Picard's rather abrasive first meeting with Darren.
- The Chopin performance.
- Picard playing Frère Jacques with Darren.
- Darren playing the Moonlight Sonata.
- The scene with Data and Geordi where they hear Picard and Darren's music.

**Comments:**

This episode is delightful in that it presents the first convincing romance for Picard. I also like the continuity with TNG: The Inner Light regarding Picard's flute and the story concerning the probe. Finally, the music in this episode is great. The best scene in my opinion is when Darren plays the first part of the Moonlight Sonata in the Jeffrey's tube juncture for Picard. I have to take off points for the fact that we never see Darren again though. As moving as this episode is, its lack of consequences is extremely annoying.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x20 - The Chase**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-4-26

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard tries to solve a four-billion-year old puzzle.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- There are 17 people on board the Enterprise not from Federation worlds.
- Salome Jens, who plays as the humanoid alien projection in this episode, later goes on to play the leader of the Dominion in DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard's enthusiastic meeting with his old teacher.
- Picard lamenting about having to betray his mentor once again.

- The meeting between Picard and the Cardassian and Klingon captains.
- The Klingon captain challenging Data to a number of ritual challenges.
- The Klingon captain attempting to bribe Data, then retracting his offer when Data points out that it is in fact a bribe.
- Picard's conversation with the Romulan commander in the end.

**Comments:**

A bold episode; why do so many Star Trek aliens look just like humans? Because somebody's been seeding them! A decent episode with a well executed though very strange premise. Unfortunately, this episode which tries hard to be profound, fails largely as the results of this discovery are largely inconsequential. As Picard said, the speech fell on "deaf ears." This isn't necessarily unrealistic but it does make the episode a little more unremarkable, naturally.



**Star Trek TNG - 6x21 - Frame of Mind**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-5-3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker is trapped in an alien mental hospital.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker starting to freak out.
- The insane "officer" from the Yorktown.
- Riker seeing and hearing things in his second acting of his play.
- Data complimenting Riker's ability to play a demented character.
- Riker refusing to believe Beverly's, Worf's, and Data's appearances were real.
- Riker realizing he's still in an illusion.

**Comments:**

This episode features an excellent acting performance by Johnathan Frakes as Riker. The plot itself is a little weak; the motives of the people who captured Riker aren't entirely explained. Nevertheless, this is still an excellent episode and a fun one to watch. As Data points out during the episode, Frakes presents an extremely convincing madman!



**Star Trek TNG - 6x22 - Suspicions**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-5-10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dr. Crusher risks her career to solve the murder of a scientist.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Guinan appearance.
- Reyga: "After all, a Ferengi scientist is almost a contradiction in terms!"
- Guinan convincing Beverly to reopen the investigation.
- Nurse Ogawa disobeying orders and bypassing the computer for Beverly.
- Beverly betting her life on the sabotage theory.
- Beverly killing Jo'Bril.
- Guinan admitting she never had Tennis Elbow.

**Comments:**

A Beverly Crusher episode, rare thing, and a good episode at that. The first good detail is the ensemble of scientists Beverly assembled. A Klingon, Ferengi, Vulcan, human, and some new alien named Jo'Bril. A truly cool example of how far the 24th century has come in terms of inter stellar relations. The next detail I liked was the the fact that the metaphasic shield indeed worked. And it's not just some radical new technology we never see again, it's referenced in future episodes. All of these small details add up to a very pleasing out of the ordinary episode. The only wish I have is that Reyga didn't have to die. We need more nontraditional Ferengi and he was certainly a great character. That said, this is certainly an above average TNG episode.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x23 - Rightful Heir**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-5-17

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf finds his faith sorely tested when he meets Kahless.*

**Problems:**

- How could fake Khaless know about Worf's vision of Khaless when Worf was a child? Did Worf tell the priests this and did the priests program this into Khaless as well?

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to mention Sto-Vo-Kor, Klingon heaven.  
- This episode establishes that Khaless died 15 centuries ago.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Khaless' return.  
- Worf: "Questions are the beginning of wisdom. The mark of a true warrior."  
- Gowron appearance.  
- Gowron's hatred of the "idea" of Khaless' return.  
- Khaless: "Long ago a storm was heading to the city of Qin'Latt. The people sought protection within the walls, all except one man who remained outside. I went to him what he was doing. 'I am not afraid!' he said. 'I will not hide my face behind stone and water. I will stand before the wind and make it respect me.' I honored his choice and went inside. The next day, the storm came and the man was killed. The wind does not respect a fool."  
- Worf squeezing the truth out of the priests.  
- Data describing his "leap of faith."  
- Worf's emperor solution.

**Comments:**

This episode features good continuity with TNG: Birthright regarding the reason for Worf's loss of faith. I very much enjoyed Worf's doubt about his faith in Khaless. The return of Khaless is analogous to the prophetic return of Jesus Christ in the current day Christian faith, at least in terms of the effect it has on people. I liked the controversy over whether or not Khaless was real. Once again, Gowron puts on one of his brilliant and rare performances. Defeating Khaless, he forces Worf to squeeze the truth out of the priests. Once the truth is revealed, the episode gets even more interesting. The truth about the cloned Khaless is revealed to the people and Khaless becomes the first emperor of the Klingon Empire in 300 years. Not because he's truly Khaless, but because despite how he was created, he represents the true spirit of the empire. A most honorable solution for a most honorable race.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 6x24 - Second Chances**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-5-24

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker encounters an identical double of himself.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The uniform Lt. Riker wears is accurate for the time period. Nice.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker being "saved by the bell."
- Lt. Riker's meeting with Deanna.
- Riker and Riker discussing their father and the different decisions they've made.
- Troi going on her scavenger hunt.
- Riker and Riker arguing about the away mission.
- Riker and Riker playing poker with each other, making large bets against one another with the Commander ultimately winning. Lt. Riker: "You always had the better hand. In everything."
- Data and Worf discussing Riker and Riker.
- Thomas Riker making his exit.

**Comments:**

This episode is both fantastic and annoying both at the same time. One annoying thing is that the new Riker character is largely wasted. We do see him again, but as a disgruntled example of how Riker went bad. That said, this particular episode does feature some cool things. My favorite detail is how much attention they paid to continuity. Previous episodes are nicely referenced all through this episode and both Lt. and Commander Riker are perfectly in character. What I liked most is the developing rivalry between the two Rikers. It's certainly not the ideal situation, but it's most definitely realistic. I like how Commander Riker seems to have decided many things in Lt. Riker's place. He rejected Troi in his place, he came to terms with their father in his place, and he rejected starship commands in his place. Lt. Riker questions all of Commander Riker's life decisions since the incident and Commander Riker feels that he has to prove that he's the better of the two as a result. The poker game is the best of these scenes of course, very thrilling to watch. Overall, another fine episode.

**Star Trek TNG - 6x25 - Timescape**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-6-14

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise is frozen in time on the brink of annihilation.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first TNG episode to feature a Runabout class vessel which are more commonly featured on DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker describing that his injury was the fault of Data's cat.
- Troi describing being seduced by an alien at the seminar.
- Picard: "There was no pause. He just kept talking in one incredibly unbroken sentence moving from topic to topic so that no one had a chance to interrupt it was really quite hypnotic."
- Everyone freezing in time except Troi.
- Troi freezing. I like the camera work.
- Picard's hand aging faster than the rest of his body.
- The sight of the Enterprise and the Romulan Warbird frozen in time.
- I love the eerie sights aboard the ships, making it look as though the Romulans were trying to take over the Enterprise.
- Picard drawing a smiley face on the warp core breach.
- Time starting back up, the Enterprise exploding, then time reversing...
- The crew positioning themselves in key spots within the ship before they run time backwards to fix things.
- I like how Data has to step out of the way of one of the backward walking crewmen.
- The teapot scene in the end. Very well done.

**Comments:**

This is one of the more unique TNG episodes, and certainly one of the most exciting. There's good continuity too with regards to Troi's acquired knowledge of Romulan technology from TNG: Face of the Enemy. The science of this episode is a little shady. For example, how can the life support systems of a slowed down starship support the normal-speed characters? It's best if you don't think about it too much I suppose. Time travel gives me headaches. While the excitement remains

high, another detail I liked was the ending. In the end, no, it wasn't a Romulan attack on the Enterprise but in fact the Enterprise assisting a Romulan ship in need. They lost their ship, but the Enterprise saved most of the Romulan crewmembers and returned them to Romulus. A shame the Romulan Empire didn't seem to appreciate of this act. Nevertheless, the episode demonstrated the Federation's goodwill toward the Romulans despite past hostilities, and it presented a very unique and memorable story.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 6x26 - Descent, Part I**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-6-21

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Borg return to do battle with the Federation.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Stephen Hawking asked to have a scene in an episode whilst on a visit to the set. Obviously, he was granted one.
- This is the first episode to mention that the Borg use transwarp conduits. They appear to be already laid down structures. They enter a conduit and ride it like a railroad. They get increased speed by traveling through it, similar to a wormhole. They travel at at least 20 times faster than the maximum warp of the Enterprise. They travel 65 light years in a mere few seconds. Notably, the Enterprise is able to enter one of these conduits at will with a deflector tweak, though at considerable risk and no way of locating conduits without some kind of point of reference, such as witnessing another ship enter and exit one.
- This is the first episode in which we see the emblem of the Borg.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data's poker game with great historical scientists.
- Data getting angry.
- Data describing feeling angry by mimicking Geordi's hand motions.
- Admiral Nechayev laying into Picard for not wiping out the Borg Collective with Hugh.
- Data's conversation with Troi about emotion.
- Data trying to recreate his anger by killing a holographic Borg over and over again.
- The captured Borg listing the ways to instantly kill each species he sees.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is a little retarded. Unlike DS9's season finale, this one is jam packed with action. Unfortunately, this episode mixes too many unrelated concepts together in a very unwieldy manner. Borg, Data, Lore, Hugh, sorry, I didn't like it. Most of all, I disliked the Borg in this episode. They were completely out of character. Of course we're given a fine explanation for this, it doesn't make the episode any more enjoyable. One nice detail is Dr. Crusher being placed in command of the ship, setting her up for some more rare nice screen time.



---

### **Star Trek TNG - 7x01 - Descent, Part II**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-9-20

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard, Troi and Geordi are held prisoner by Data.*

#### **Problems:**

- It seems unlikely that Hugh's individuality could have caused so much chaos in the collective and that a whole ship of Borg would just somehow all become individuals. It makes sense that the Borg would have severed the renegade Borg from the collective though. We can rationalize this by saying the whole thing was some kind of fluke. But it's a stretch.

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the last Lore episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Crusher in command of the Enterprise.
- Data trying to be funny amidst the torture.
- Beverly executing her tricky warp speed exit to get people off the planet.
- Beverly using metaphasic shielding to enter the sun's corona. Excellent continuity with TNG: Suspicions.
- Taitt destroying the Borg ship.
- Data's announcement that the emotion chip was damaged when Data fired on Lore.
- Data almost phasing the emotion chip.
- LaForge: "Maybe some day. When you're ready."

**Comments:**

This episode provides the expected explanation for the Borg's seemingly silly behavior in the previous episode, along with Data's emotions. Lore, who believes himself perfect, happened to be in the right place at the right time when Picard returned Hugh to the Borg in TNG: I, Borg. Lore takes over the confused Borg and uses them to assemble an army. Also as expected, Dr. Crusher gets the nice screen time she deserves. She does an excellent job commanding the Enterprise. Unfortunately, despite these details, while the premise sets itself up weakly, the conclusion finishes the episode off even weaker than before. The only redeeming qualities are Beverly's performance commanding the ship and Data's final scenes with Geordi at the end. Beyond that, a disappointing plot.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x02 - Liaisons**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-9-27

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The crew hosts a cultural exchange.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Terellians have four arms, according to Picard.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf "having problems."
- Beverly trying to explain the concept of a buffet to the ambassador.
- Worf attempting to tolerate his diplomatic assignment.
- Data insulting Worf accidentally(?).
- Worf: "I am going to kill him with my bear hands. I will take him by the throat and rip out his esophagus!"
- Worf: "You are an insulting pompous fool and if you were not an ambassador I would disembowel you right here!"

**Comments:**

This episode is entertaining though not very credible. The aliens motives just don't seem realistic at all. It's nice that they're not a bunch of psychotic obsessors but are in fact just conducting some harmless research, but their methods leave much to be desired. The pleasant redeems this episode for an extra point. It's always nice to see an understanding and compassionate cast.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x03 - Interface**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-10-4

**My Rating - 2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Geordi defies Picard's commands in a rescue attempt.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Captain LaForge's ship contained mostly Vulcans.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- I like the teaser, with Geordi's interface.
- Geordi phasering the door with his hand while he's the probe. Nice!
- Data attempting to appreciate poetry.

**Comments:**

This episode is annoying in that I think the cast was too quick to dismiss Geordi's plan to find out if his mother was really down on that planet. Sure, he was wrong, but he really did have to try. Additionally, his try saved the lives of some aliens, yet this is not considered at all when Picard yells at him in the end! How insensitive! This episode really makes you feel sorry for Geordi. He loses his mother and he gets yelled at all episode! Finally, why do we never see this interface used ever, ever again?

**Star Trek TNG - 7x04 - Gambit, Part I****Originally Aired:** 1993-10-11**My Rating - 7****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Picard disappears and is found posing as a smuggler.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The alien describing Picard being vaporized.
- Riker forcing more information from the alien who witnessed Picard's "death."
- Data questioning Riker going on the away team, since he's captain now.
- Data becoming captain!
- Worf: "Sir, they have taken Commander Riker. We must do something. We cannot just sit here!"
- Data: "On the contrary, Lieutenant. That is precisely what we must do."
- Picard appearing on the smuggler ship, voting to kill Riker!
- The engine trouble aboard the smuggle ship.
- Picard explaining why he wasn't vaporized. A beaming gun! Cool!
- Picard hitting Riker as soon as the smuggler captain walks in.
- Picard's conversation with the Romulan.
- The fake battle.

**Comments:**

I loved seeing Data as captain and I absolutely love how Picard and Riker maneuvered whilst aboard the smuggler ship. This episode sets up an exciting premise to the two parter. The captain's supposed death is contrived, but well played nonetheless, and Riker's capture makes both the Enterprise plot thread and the smuggler ship plot thread quite interesting. Overall, this episode is wonderful very intelligently written.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x05 - Gambit, Part II****Originally Aired:** 1993-10-18**My Rating - 8****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Picard and Riker masquerade as mercenaries.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker hitting Picard back. Go Riker!
- Data's chat with Worf.
- Picard: "Oh what a tangled web we weave. I have difficulty remembering whose side I'm on!"
- Picard: "Will, you always seem to be after my job."
- The "revelation" that the Romulan was a Vulcan.
- Worf's "health and safety inspections" idea.
- Beverly nervously introducing herself to the pilot of the Klingon shuttle and conducting her search.
- I love the behavior of the Klingon pilot.
- Picard taking over the smuggler ship.
- Picard carefully testing his "Vulcan" friend.
- Picard's solution to the resonator.
- Picard jokingly ordering Data to escort Riker to the brig and Data following his orders very thoroughly. Hilarious!

**Comments:**

The second half of this episode retains the same level of excitement and intelligence. It goes slightly sour with the psionic resonator, a super god weapon, suddenly real. I love the ending though. The weapon is useless against a disciplined mind! Overall this is one of the most memorable episodes of TNG.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x06 - Phantasms**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-10-25

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data's first bad dream turns into a real-life nightmare.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard lamenting about being invited to a dinner with a bunch of admirals.
- Data staring at his cat.
- The Troi cake.
- Data "oversleeping."
- Riker: "Talk about going nowhere fast."
- Picard trying to be useful in engineering.
- Data stabbing Troi.
- Worf attempting to command Data's cat to come to him.
- Data: "And you must talk to him. Tell him he's a pretty cat. And a good cat."
- Troi's Data cake.
- Data: "I wonder what Dr. Freud would say about the symbolism of devouring oneself."

**Comments:**

This episode features good continuity with TNG: Birthright, when Data first discovered his dreaming program. It's nice to see more about this program. I'm glad they don't just sweep the whole incident under the rug like certain other episodes. The Enterprise's engine troubles were thoroughly fun to watch. Every time they try to go to warp the engines blows! Hilarious. Overall the episode is entertaining despite a rather weak plot.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x07 - Dark Page**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-11-1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Lwaxana has a psychic breakdown.*

**Problems:**

None



**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Lwaxana talking Picard to death.
- Lwaxana calling Worf "wolf" again.
- Lwaxana telling Worf and Riker that their brains aren't sophisticated enough.
- Maques telling Troi about how her mother told him about her "need" for a husband.
- I like Troi's comments about how Lwaxana for some reason isn't wearing elaborate clothing.
- Data using his experiences dreaming to assist Troi decipher what's going on with Lwaxana.

**Comments:**

This is a very interesting episode at first; I love the aliens who are so telepathic they have no need for verbal words, but must relearn how to speak in order to join the Federation. Another detail I liked was that they literally couldn't speak and needed a special device to amplify their weakened vocal chords. The episode very quickly ceases to be about the aliens, but about the personal demons Lwaxana was dealing with. This takes all of the intrigue away from the episode in my opinion. An exploration of Troi's lost sister is certainly worthy of story, but it was slapped on top of a for once interesting alien of the week, which voided plenty of important story time they could have received. I would have really enjoyed seeing these guys join the Federation instead of watching a chick flick emotional bonding between Troi and Lwaxana. The two stories should have been separated and made into two episodes. They conflict with one another badly here.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x08 - Attached****My Rating - 4****Originally Aired:** 1993-11-8**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Picard and Beverly face their feelings for each other.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard and Beverly sensing each other's thoughts.
- Riker handling the Kes. I'm most fond of his beaming up one of the Kes without permission.
- The sad scene at the end, where Beverly rejects Picard.

**Comments:**

This episode opens with another interesting idea, a new Federation world where only part of the planet is joining. I like Picard's discontent with this concept, it is really weird. The episode quickly becomes the long awaited confrontation of love between Picard and Beverly. The scenes where they read each other's minds are very convincing, and very entertaining. The episode comes off as a little annoying in the end though when Beverly rejects Picard. There's certainly realism and logic in Beverly's decision, but the entire point of this episode was to setting the romantic tension between Beverly and Picard, and this episode seems only to have made it worse.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x09 - Force of Nature****My Rating - 0****Originally Aired:** 1993-11-15**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Warp drive may be destroying the universe.***Problems:**

- Much of this episode drowns in technobabble, but Data's idea to "warp coast" through the rift is simply ridiculous. Warp speed without a warp field? WTF is that? If it were possible, every ship would already be doing this. Furthermore, how was Data planning to beam away the entire crew at warp anyway?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Worst Episode of TNG Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Worst Episode Ever Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Geordi describing his little "contest" with the Intrepid.
- Data attempting to train his cat.
- Serova killing herself to prove her theory.

**Comments:**

This episode is very annoying. The idea that warp drive destroys the universe is simply ridiculous. Even if the Federation agreed to throw away warp drive altogether, what incentive is there for the Klingons, the Romulans, or any other race ignorant or uncaring of the danger from continuing to use it? The resolution in this episode is simply ridiculous too. A warp speed limit does not solve the problem, and nobody obeys the speed limit anyway. The implications of this episode are largely forgotten in future episodes, by necessity of course. Sure, a few episodes reference this one slapping the fans in the face that it's still canon, but I just can't accept it. There are rationalizations floating around about how new engine designs such as that used by Voyager allow ships to use warp "safely," but again, what about old ships still in service? What about ships used by other races? This episode just unleashes far too many cans of worms to be considered acceptable.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x10 - Inheritance****My Rating - 5****Originally Aired:** 1993-11-22**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Data meets a woman who claims to be his mother.***Problems:**

- Geordi can see clear differences between humans and Androids as evidenced by TNG: Heart of Glory. Geordi should have instantly recognized Juliana was an android.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there were 3 more androids before Lore, one of which is featured in Star Trek X: Nemesis.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data describing Lal to Juliana. Good continuity there.
- I like the music scenes in this episode.
- Seeing Juliana an android.
- Data describing the reasons he suspected Juliana was an android before.

**Comments:**

This is one of the better "Data's past" episodes. Juliana was essentially the perfect android Soong set out to create, despite the ironic circumstances surrounding her creation. She fooled everybody, even herself. But the episode is severely lacking in overall plot. It's nice to get info about Data's past, but it literally dominated this episode. In the end it feels like a big stretched out waste of time, even if a nicely done one.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x11 - Parallels****My Rating - 9****Originally Aired:** 1993-11-29**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Worf finds reality changing, but no one else notices.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is presumably the beginning of Worf's short lived relationship with Troi.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Worf's surprise party.
- The crew singing "He's a jolly good fellow" to Worf in Klingon.
- Troi: "It wasn't easy to translate. There doesn't seem to be a Klingon word for jolly!"
- I love the first few scenes of small things changing.
- Worf proposing Troi become Worf's stepsister so that she could become Alexander's godmother. I love Worf's reaction when Troi tells him that would make her mother his stepmother. Worf, very seriously: "I had not considered that! It is a risk I am willing to take."
- Worf appearing on an alternate Enterprise.
- Troi married to Worf!
- Worf asking Data for details regarding "when, where, and how" Worf and Troi coupled.
- Worf becoming first officer and Riker becoming captain. I like the mention of Picard being killed by the Borg.
- Wesley appearance!
- The mention of the Bajorans overpowering the Cardassian Empire and becoming a hostile power in the galaxy.
- Thousands, maybe millions of Enterprises!
- Wesley: "Captain, we are receiving 285,000 hails!"
- One of the Rikers: "We won't go back. You don't know what it's like in our universe. The Federation's gone, the Borg are everywhere! We're one of the last ships left. Please, you've got to help us."
- Riker destroying his counterpart.
- Troi: "I know Klingons like to be alone on their birthdays. You probably want to meditate, you hit yourself with a pain stick or something."

### Comments:

This one's a classic. Worf was perfect for the role because he remained defiant of the changes in the timelines longer than anyone else would have. Another good detail in the episode is the incredible amount of continuities with other episodes. Too many to even list. All of them excellent and entertaining. This one is a gem among the 7th season and among all of TNG itself.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x12 - The Pegasus**  
Originally Aired: 1994-1-10

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Riker is ordered to conceal information from Picard.*

### Problems:

- Admiral Blackwell authorizes Picard to exceed warp speed limitations. What warp speed limitations? The ones they constantly ignore in most subsequent episodes because TNG: Force of Nature is ridiculous?
- Why didn't the Romulans make some kind of demand on the Enterprise for violating inter stellar treaty instead of just letting them leave?

### Factoids:

- This episode establishes that a treaty with the Romulans prevents the Federation from developing cloaking technology and that it's kept the peace for about 60 years.
- Commander Riker faced a deep moral crisis in this episode regarding whether or not to tell Picard about his involvement in the coverup with Pressman. In order to solve his moral crisis, he sought Troi's advice in secret. She recommended that he review a historic holo program in which Commander Tucker of the first starship Enterprise disobeyed orders to save his captain. This holodeck visit is documented in the finale of Enterprise, Ent: These Are The Voyages... The events of Enterprise's finale are most likely spread across much of this episode. Here's my analysis of the integration between the two episodes: Riker went to the holodeck right after Admiral Pressman arrived on counselor Troi's recommendation, then discusses it with her in Ten Forward. Riker then goes back to holodeck, stays a while, then leaves the holodeck to look at the records of those who died on the Pegasus after talking to T'Pol about following his instincts. Troi comes in to talk to him. Troi and Riker then go back to the holodeck. Eventually Troi leaves to go counsel Barclay. Riker stays in the holodeck until Trip and Archer save Shran's daughter. These events all probably occur right after Pressman's briefing, just after the teaser, but before the Enterprise encounters the

Romulan Warbird. In the next scenes, we can see the Enterprise entering the asteroid field through the windows. Data contacts Troi about a counseling session, then Riker enters Troi's office. Riker tells Troi about The Pegasus. "It's past office hours," so this scene probably occurs after Riker discusses his beard and whatnot with Pressman in Ten Forward and probably after Riker was injured by Worf. Riker then goes back to the holodeck and talks to the crew about Tucker. After watching the rest, Riker says to Troi he's ready to talk to Picard then exits the holodeck for the final time. These events probably occur right after Picard chews Riker out for keeping information about the Pegasus from him. The only lingering question is why Riker doesn't tell Picard before they take the ship into the asteroid. Instead he maintains the secrecy clear up until they reach the Pegasus and he and Pressman discover the cloaking device still intact. According to my timeline of events, Riker proposes to destroy the Pegasus as soon as they find it, which is after all the events of Enterprise's finale. Maybe he was hoping he wouldn't have to tell Picard anything. By the time he realized this wasn't true, it was too late and he was ordered to accompany Pressman. A worthy explanation, but it would have been nice if it wasn't necessary.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Picard and crew's reaction to "Captain Picard Day".
- Picard arranging for a "Commander Riker Day" as revenge. :)
- Picard talking to Pressman about why he chose Riker as his first officer, a reference to what Picard told Riker upon their first meeting in TNG: Encounter at Farpoint.
- The revelation that Pressman was developing a cloaking device.
- The Enterprise cloaking.

#### Comments:

So the Federation can't develop cloaking devices because of a treaty. That certainly explains why they've never used them, especially after TOS: The Enterprise Incident. I much enjoyed this episode, all except for a few small details. First of all, this is a much more powerful device than a simple cloaking device. Seems to me that phase cloaking goes beyond the scope of a regular cloaking device. Just how broad are the terms for that treaty? The Romulans and Klingons have never developed anything like a phased cloaking device, and the Federation completely abandons the research. The facts surrounding the usefulness of the technology leave me with a sort of sympathy for Pressman. Another detail I didn't like was the ending, where the Romulans just let the Enterprise go after a blatant violation of inter stellar treaty. The episode was good, but it could have been much better if they had chosen to handle the details a little better. I'm disappointed that we don't see this technology again. It would have been much less a disappointment if it was just a regular cloaking device, but alas they needed a reason for the Enterprise to actually use one, so they made this one uber powerful; utterly trite but still a decent episode.



#### Star Trek TNG - 7x13 - Homeward

Originally Aired: 1994-1-17

My Rating - 5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Worf's brother tries to save a doomed alien race.*

#### Problems:

- Isn't leaving Nikolai with the Boraalans just the kind of cultural contamination this whole episode was trying to avoid? He's introducing alien DNA into a pre warp culture!

#### Factoids:

- Penny Johnson, who plays Dohara in this episode will go on to play Kasidy Yates on DS9.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Nikolai transporting the Boraalans onto the Enterprise without permission.
- Worf calling the holodeck malfunction an omen. "The sign of LaForge."
- One of the aliens escaping the holodeck.
- Picard trying to convince the escaped alien to stay with the Federation.
- The stunt transporting the Boraalans to their new home.
- The escaped Boraalan committing suicide.
- Worf making up with Nikolai and proclaiming his actions honorable.

#### Comments:

This episode features a very complex issue concerning the morality of the prime directive. A

primitive culture is facing annihilation. If the Federation doesn't help, they all die. Personally, I don't see how letting them all die is preferable to saving them. Faced with 1. contaminating their culture and 2. making a conscious decision to let their culture be destroyed despite the fact that you can easily save it, option 1. seems the best choice. That said, I agree with Nikolai's decision in this episode. Obviously, Nikolai crosses the line impregnating one of the villagers. But at least I agree with him on the principle that doomed people should be saved whenever possible. It disappoints me that Nikolai is not forcibly separated from his "new home" because an alien procreating with another species covertly is clearly just the sort of prime directive violation everyone was trying to avoid in the first place! The Boraalans will have (admittedly small) amounts of human DNA in their future generations! Despite that, I enjoyed the episode anyway, as it makes us all take a good hard look at the prime directive and just how well it applies to certain situations.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 7x14 - Sub Rosa**

**My Rating - 1**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-1-31

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Crusher falls under the spell of a ghost lover.*

**Problems:**

- In one scene, the Enterprise was in standard orbit during the power transfer, which seems like an impossible situation to maintain, as eventually the Enterprise would be on the other side of planet, unable to maintain a moving beam on a fixed target. In another scene they were motionless, as they should have been in the previous scene. In another scene, they were in standard orbit again!

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that it is a trivial matter to change the color of one's eyes in the 24th century.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The foggy Enterprise.

**Comments:**

This episode is severely boring and cheap ghost story horror all set in a 24th century old Scotland clone colony. Quite trite. Have the writers not learned to how to write science fiction in the last few decades? Essentially the story amounts to Beverly quitting starfleet to sit alone in her house with a candle waiting for her phantom man to sweep her off her feet and Picard and crew becoming ghost hunters. Finally, the episode reeks of tastelessness when Beverly's grandmother is briefly and spontaneously resurrected by Ronin for absolutely no reason. In the end, Beverly kills the energy life form of the week out of anger; completing the circle of cliches.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 7x15 - Lower Decks**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-2-7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Four junior officers are involved in a top-secret mission.*

**Problems:**

- In the junior officer Poker game, Ben has a King, a Jack, a Ten and an Eight. Lavelle has two Sixes and two Sevens. It is impossible for Ben to win no matter what his other card is! Why does Lavelle fold even though his victory is a certainty?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Lavelle complaining about Taurik as his room mate.
- Lavelle attempting to be social with Riker.
- Picard chewing out Sito.
- Geordi bluffing about "testing the hull" of the shuttle and Taurik seeing straight through it.
- The two Poker games running simultaneously.
- Worf teaching Sito to stand up for herself.

- Sito standing up for herself to Picard.
- Sito attending the senior staff meeting and volunteering for the mission.
- Sito's tragic death.

**Comments:**

This one's a classic. One thing I liked was one of the inclusion of Nurse Ogawa in the lower decks posse, reusing an existing character along with the three new characters. Besides the excellent acting by all characters, the main plot is enticing. A Cardassian, who's a spy for the Federation, needs to get back to Cardassian space. The two plot threads about the Cardassian and the junior officers are wonderfully integrated with one another and the ending is quite tragic and touching. My only regret regarding this episode is that we never see these characters again, with the obvious exception of Ogawa, as I especially liked Levelle and Taurik and it's a shame they're wasted. Though it should be obvious by now that Star Trek throws away good guests of the week all the time.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x16 - Thine Own Self**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-2-14

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A stranded Data loses his memory.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nice to see Beverly in command.
- Data having lost his memory.
- Troi's "Riker bashing."
- Troi discussing her desire to gain rank.
- Data's physical. Data is an "ice man."
- Data lifting the anvil.
- Troi's holodeck simulation, getting herself killed.
- Data contradicting the school teacher about fire and water being elements.
- Troi arguing with Riker about being cut out from the tests.
- Troi ordering Geordi to his death in the simulation.
- Data proving the concept of radiation.
- Data losing his skin.
- Data impaled.

**Comments:**

This is a very intelligently written episode giving us one plot where Data has to prove the concept of radiation to a primitive culture and another where Troi has to face ordering someone to their death to pass a promotional test. Both plot threads are interesting, and given a nice share of time. Troi's testing reminds me quite a bit of the one which Kirk faced and cheated on as mentioned in Star Trek II. And while sending Data into backward cultures is starting to become a cliché, it was handled well in this episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x17 - Masks**

**My Rating - 1**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-2-21

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Data is taken over by personalities from an extinct civilization.*

**Problems:**

- Troi says the two alien personalities are like the sun and the moon; that only one can be in control of Data at any given time. Has she never heard of a solar or lunar eclipse? In fact, on Earth, there are cases when both the sun and the moon are visible at the same time. What a terrible analogy. They should have just used night and day instead.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Data: "What does it feel like to lose one's mind?"

**Comments:**

I'm not fond of this one. Brent Spiner's usual excellent acting is wasted on a silly android multiple personalities plot. The biggest problem with the overall plot is that it seems to go nowhere and make no point. It wanders aimlessly to the inevitable reset button conclusion. There is no character development because Data is out of character virtually the entire episode. Only Picard is interesting in the episode, because he's so fascinated by ancient cultures. Overall the idea behind the episode is a good one, but this particular implementation just came off as silly.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x18 - Eye of the Beholder****My Rating - 3****Originally Aired:** 1994-2-28**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Troi and Worf become romantically involved.*

**Problems:**

- Another reference to that horrible episode Force of Nature, Picard says they've been given authorization to exceed the warp speed limit.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the Enterprise was built at the Utopia Planitia Mars colony, eight years ago.
- There were thousands of people involved in building the Enterprise, according to Troi.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing the inside of a warp nacelle.
- Worf "asking permission" of Riker to date Troi.
- Riker: "Worf, you sound like a man asking his friend permission to date his sister."

**Comments:**

Some form of mental attack is causing people aboard ship to become suicidal. It's not very credible that people would immediately think of jumping into a warp nacelle to commit suicide; what's wrong with a phaser set to kill? It's certainly easier to get ahold of a phaser to kill oneself than it is to jump into a warp nacelle without someone stopping you. The time in this episode is largely wasted on trying to discover the source of all this; not enough time is spent on the developing relationship between Troi and Worf which is what the episode was supposed to have been about.

**Star Trek TNG - 7x19 - Genesis****My Rating - 7****Originally Aired:** 1994-3-21**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew de-evolves into prehistoric beings.*

**Problems:**

- Much of the science in this episode makes little to no sense. Why would a cat de-evolve into an iguana? Or a human (Barclay) into a spider?

**Factoids:**

- According to Data, there are 12 male cats on board that could have impregnated Spot.
- This episode was directed by Gates McFadden (Dr. Crusher). She did a superb job; though this is the only episode they let her direct!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ogawa pulling cactus thorns out of Riker.
- Barclay appearance.

- Barclay's self-diagnosis.
- Worf's "enhanced guidance system" glitching.
- Data describing to Barclay injuries to the crew Spot has inflicted on her previous babysitters.
- Worf and Troi's odd behaviors near one another.
- Barclay with lots of energy.
- Worf's attack on Troi.
- Worf venom attacking Beverly.
- Amphibious Troi.
- Neanderthal Riker.
- Spider Barclay.
- Picard and Data duplicating Troi's pheromones and Picard luring him away from Data.
- Primal Worf.

**Comments:**

This is an extremely entertaining episode. It's a shame the science behind it is a bit questionable. Then again, much of the science of this episode isn't questionable. Data's cure is very innovative. The idea to create a cure based on the natural defenses of a pregnant woman is certainly original. The episode has such a fast and fun pace that by the time it's over, you wonder where the rest of it is. This is a controversial episode because of the bad science involved, but in my opinion the bad science is pretty minimal; compare it to something like *Voy: Threshold*, or *TOS: The Alternative Factor*, then you might agree with me that the technical issues of this episode are largely minor. That said, I very much enjoyed this one.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x20 - Journey's End**  
**Originally Aired:** 1994-3-28

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Wesley re-examines his future.*

**Problems:**

- Beverly claims that the Traveller is from Tau Ceti. But he's actually from Tau Alpha C according to *TNG: Where No One Has Gone Before* and *TNG: Remember Me*.

**Factoids:**

- This episode marks the beginnings of the Maquis.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Wesley reuniting with the crew.
- Picard arguing with the admiral, pointing out the disturbing historical parallels with forcibly removing Native Americans.
- I love the way Picard handled the admiral. He was very diplomatic.
- Wesley's "attitude" in engineering.
- Anhwara citing that Picard's ancestor participated in an atrocity against the Native American people.
- Wesley making a complete ass of himself spoiling Worf's covert transporter plans.
- Time stopping before Wesley's eyes.
- The peaceful ending.

**Comments:**

A much needed episode to conclude Wesley's story. Offscreen, he was written out of the show due to some retarded TV show politics, but thankfully the writers gave him a nice send-off here. Additionally, this episode features a fantastic bit of irony. Picard is ordered to forcibly displace some Native Americans from their new home. Besides the great historical parallels, this episode has great implications. These events are what spark the Maquis rebellion against the Federation. The peaceful ending in this episode is awesome. But misleading. Watch the next DS9 episode to find the beginnings of the Maquis! A stellar episode.





**Star Trek TNG - 7x21 - Firstborn**  
**Originally Aired:** 1994-4-25

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Worf worries about the fate of his son, Alexander.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- This is the only TNG episode in which Quark appears.
- Quark makes a reference to the Pakleds in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf's preoccupation with Alexander.
- Worf participating in the Klingon ceremony telling the story of Khaless and Molor.
- Alexander defeating the actor Molor.
- Riker mentioning the Duras sisters' incident on Deep Space Nine. Good continuity.
- K'mtar's speech to Alexander about the appeal of becoming a warrior.
- Quark's conversation with Riker.
- Alexander's lesson in the holodeck.
- K'mtar trying to encourage Alexander to become a warrior.
- Riker uncovering a Klingon Bird of Prey.
- Worf regarding the tarnishing of the good name of the Duras sisters: "You cannot tarnish a rusted blade!"
- Future Alexander telling his story.

**Comments:**  
This episode features a pleasing Klingon story. Alexander still does not want to be a warrior, Worf's family's status in the empire is still being challenged by the Duras family once again. The plot twist at the end revealing K'mtar to actually be Alexander from the future was excellent. Made a rather ordinary albeit above average Klingon episode much more exciting and interesting. Another well done episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x22 - Bloodlines**  
**Originally Aired:** 1994-5-2

**My Rating - 2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Picard learns he has a son.*

**Problems:**

- The Enterprise travels at maximum warp in this episode. I guess we're all very quick to forget about the events TNG: Force of Nature, eh? Not that I care too much, I rather like the fact that that dreadful episode is being ignored.

**Factoids:**

- A very similar technology to this subspace transporter used by Bok will be used in Ent: Daedalus. It seems just as unstable in this century as it was in Archer's!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Riker: "The Ferengi government is debating an amendment to the Rules of Acquisition. It could be a while until we hear from them."
- Picard: "You'll never look at your hairline again in the same way!"

**Comments:**  
This episode would have been much more effective this supposed "son" of Picard's actually ended up being for real. Instead, we get a TOS style reset button, for our characters are not allowed to incur lasting consequences! \*rolls eyes\* This episode bears decent continuity with TNG: The Battle, for Bok has returned. It's convincing that Bok would pull such a ridiculous scheme, but watching it all play out is frankly a little boring. Since Picard does indeed have no son, all the character development between Picard and his new son is thus wasted, and the episode itself comes off

largely as a waste of time. Normally I wouldn't count off much for that, but in the late final season of a show, there shouldn't be filler episodes!



---

**Star Trek TNG - 7x23 - Emergence**

**My Rating - 0**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-5-9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise develops its own intelligence.*

**Problems:**

- Uhh... so... the Enterprise develops an intelligence and even reproduces! And then suddenly just stops? For no reason?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Worst Episode of TNG Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Enterprise starting to freak out.
- Data holding back a car.

**Comments:**

More filler, this time worse because we've got bad sci fi to go along with it. Throw in the stock holodeck malfunction along with a no consequences plot, among many other things, and we've got ourselves one hell of a cliched episode. Besides the cliché, the science in this episode is really, really bad. I just find it hard to believe the Enterprise could come alive and reproduce, then never do it again, all of which for no reason.



---

**Star Trek TNG - 7x24 - Preemptive Strike**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-5-16

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Ro Laren infiltrates the Maquis.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Maquis attacking a Cardassian ship.
- Ro taking her ship through the Enterprise's shields and beaming away medical equipment.
- Ro Laren betraying the Enterprise crew.
- Picard's reaction to learning of Ro Laren's betrayal.

**Comments:**

This episode is finally TNG doing something valuable with its finite time left after two bad episodes in a row. Some nice points are the continuity with DS9: The Maquis, and the return of Ro Laren, a character who almost became a missed opportunity for a good episode. If only TNG could have wrapped up more of its loose ends. The graphics were certainly above TNG's average, and the story of Ro Laren's betrayal was enticing. Though I like what happened to Ro, I really wish we could have seen her again. It would have been more interesting if her contract was inclusive such that she became a member of the crew of Voyager or something. Oh well, all things considered it was a great episode considering it was the last stand alone TNG episode.

---



**Star Trek TNG - 7x25 - All Good Things... Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1994-5-23

My Rating - 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard tries to prevent the destruction of humanity.*

**Problems:**

- This episode recreates the past so well that they even copied one of the technical problems of the first episode. Data and O'Brien's positions appear to be reversed.

**Factoids:**

- This episode (both parts) won the 1995 Hugo Award for Best Dramatic Presentation.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Picard beginning to drift through time.
- Picard appearing during the time of the first episode.
- Yar appearance!
- Data's maid regarding Data's grey streak: "Looks like a bloody skunk!"
- O'Brien appearance!
- Picard's odd behavior during the first episode.
- Data's objections to "burning the midnight oil" turning out (almost) exactly as before.
- The USS Pasteur. Captain Beverly Picard!
- Q's game of yes/no questions.

**Comments:**

Troi's relationship with Worf finally reaches its apex, but the series ends and we never see them together again! One thing I liked about this episode was the remarkable detail the put into Picard's past experiences. The uniforms of the 7-years-ago Enterprise D were exact. Looked just like the first season! And Tasha's return was nicely done. The cliffhanger is exciting, one of the most exciting of the series, though not as much so as TNG: The Best of Both Worlds, Part I. I was nevertheless impressed with this episode.



**Star Trek TNG - 7x26 - All Good Things... Part II**  
Originally Aired: 1994-5-23

My Rating - 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Picard tries to prevent the destruction of humanity.*

**Problems:**

- People like to bitch about "warp 13" in this episode, but those orders were given during one of Q's future fantasies, so who cares?
- Data sat in the helmsman's position during the present in this episode.

**Factoids:**

- This episode (both parts) won the 1995 Hugo Award for Best Dramatic Presentation.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A clean-shaven Riker!
- Picard investigating the anomaly in all 3 time periods.
- The three nacelled Enterprise!
- Geordi's regenerated eyes and Ogawa losing her baby.
- Q showing Picard the primordial soup.
- Picard senilely describing a temporal paradox and Data catching what he's actually talking about.
- Picard manipulating the Enterprise in all 3 time periods.
- Picard: "Mr. Data, you are a clever man in any time period."
- The sight of all 3 Enterprises together.
- Q: "I'm going to miss you Jean-Luc, you had such potential. But then again all good things must come to an end..."
- Picard thanking Q.

- The crew discussing the changes in the timeline.
- Picard joining the Poker game.
- The last line on of TNG TV series: Picard: "So, five card stud, nothing wild, and the sky's the limit!"

**Comments:**

This episode finishes off with a bang, much more exciting than the first part. The issue of Troi and Worf's relationship is neatly tied up here. It would have been nice if in the TNG movies it was at least somewhat addressed, but it's certainly better than no explanation at all. The series ends making just as grand a point as it began with. Humanity is evolving and its collective mind is expanding. I like the sense of camaraderie at the end of the episode, both between Q and Picard regarding their relationship; Q really is a good guy, guiding humanity, and protecting humanity as they grow. Also the camaraderie between Picard and his crew as he finally plays Poker with them for the first time. This episode is a wonderful conclusion to Star Trek: The Next Generation.

---

# STAR TREK

## DEEP SPACE NINE



## **Star Trek DS9 - 1x01 - Emissary, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-1-3

**My Rating**

**- 8**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On a distant outpost at the edge of the final frontier, an untested crew embarks on an unprecedented journey.*

#### **Problems:**

- Inconsistencies regarding Dax and Odan from TNG: The Host are discussed in the TNG: The Host problems section.

#### **Factoids:**

- O'Brien is the first character we see using the "new style" uniforms that will be common in early DS9 and all of Voyager.
- Cardassian architecture maintains a tradition that the Prefect's office is in a central and higher location in bridge or ops settings, so that all under his command must look up with respect.
- Kira's hair is a one time thing. The style she wears in this episode quickly disappears.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing Sisko as first officer of the Saratoga fighting the Borg.
- Viewing the destruction of the Saratoga from the escape pod.
- The first sight of DS9, orbiting Bajor.
- The DS9 intro, my favorite of all the Star Trek intros.
- O'Brien and Sisko discussing the poor state of the station.
- O'Brien asking Sisko if he had ever served with Bajor women. O'Brien remembered how feisty Ro Laren could get. ;)
- Kira's adversarial first meeting with Sisko.
- Odo's first scene; a shape shifter!
- Odo's first line to Sisko: "Who the hell are you?"
- Picard: "Have we met before?" Sisko: "Yes sir, we've met in battle."
- Picard disturbed, trying to ignore Sisko's angry attitude.
- Quark complaining that he can't run his establishment under Federation rules, and Sisko telling Quark that he'll bend the rules because the station is owned by Bajor, not the Federation.
- Sisko's meeting with the Kai. Opaka: "Ironic. One who does not wish to be among us is to be the Emissary."
- Sisko's first orb experience, freaking out about meeting his wife again for the first time.
- Jennifer: "Do you use this routine a lot with women?" Sisko: "No. Never before. And never again."
- Opaka's confidence in Sisko.
- Bashir's first scene... trying to seduce Jadzia.
- Sisko's first discussion with Dax.
- Bashir's faux pas with Kira.
- Sisko's first use of the nickname "old man" for Dax.
- Dax having an orb experience, flashbacking to Curzon's death.
- Dukat's first scene.
- Dax discovering the wormhole.
- Odo sneaking aboard the Cardassian ship, as the bag for the Cardassians' game winnings.
- The first sighting of a runabout class vessel.
- Morn appearances; 1. When Sisko enters Quark's Bar for the first time. 2. gambling with the Cardassians at the Dabo table. 3. In the crowd Odo is moving when the station is attacked.

#### **Comments:**

Probably the most remarkable first episode for a Star Trek series ever. This is a complex episode with oodles of internal continuity and nice small details. It opens with an absolutely stunning flashback scene of Sisko fighting the Borg as first officer of the Saratoga, in which Sisko's wife, Jennifer dies. There are some small things I liked a lot about this scene. The whole scene was perfectly tied into the look and feel of TNG. They could have inserted the whole scene into TNG: The Best of Both Worlds and it would have fit in seamlessly. That said, this episode plays well into modern (season 6) TNG as well, since it picks up on the story displayed in TNG: Chain of Command. Cardassia has withdrawn from Bajor, and they need help from the Federation. So Sisko is assigned to take command of the ore processing slave labor station in orbit of the planet, which they planned to convert to a center of interplanetary operations to oversee the rebuilding of

Bajoran society. Since the station is under Federation control, despite now being owned by the Bajorans, it has been designated Federation Deep Space Station 9, or Deep Space 9. This premise is complex, but not overly so. It makes for some interesting political developments later on. Additionally, the smaller TNG continuity bits are great. O'Brien gets promoted to Chief of Operations of DS9, so both O'Brien and Keiko move the DS9 show on which O'Brien becomes a main character! Also, Sisko's confrontation with Picard adds some flare to the episode. It's interesting to contrast Sisko's initial attitude with the attitude he develops later in the series. When he talks to Picard, he nothing but loathes his assignment. But later in the series he comes to love his posting on DS9 and wouldn't trade it for anything. Similar parallels are shown throughout this episode as well. Just about every character is at every other character's throat in the beginning, and they slowly begin to like one another. Finally, this episode ends with a marvelous cliffhanger; Sisko trying to investigate the Celestial Temple on behalf of the Bajorans. But to do so he must elude the maliciously close-by Cardassians. Even in the first episode, we're shown how readily DS9 uses a vast set of characters, a tradition which enhances the overall quality of the show quite a bit. A stunning pilot.



### **Star Trek DS9 - 1x02 - Emissary, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-1-3

**My Rating**

**- 6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On a distant outpost at the edge of the final frontier, an untested crew embarks on an unprecedented journey.*

#### **Problems:**

- The behavior of the prophets are a little confusing. They don't understand the nature of linear time, nor do they claim to interfere in the world of the corporeals. Yet, they encouraged Bajor to develop an entire religion around them and shaped their society for 10000 years. I'd say that's a pretty good set of interference in corporeal matters, and requires a pretty vivid understanding of linear time. We could write this off by saying the prophets are vastly more superior to corporeal beings, which isn't hard to imagine, and that their confusing display of behaviors is just a misinterpretation of a greater purpose.

#### **Factoids:**

- Sisko's love for baseball is first established here when Sisko is talking with the prophets.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo crashing the Cardassian ship's computers.
- O'Brien getting the Cardassian computer to work by kicking it.
- Sisko and Dax' first trip through the wormhole.
- Sisko's first meeting with the prophets.
- Moving DS9.
- O'Brien getting in a fight with the computer.
- O'Brien: "Computer, you and I need to have a little talk."
- Odo: "Doctor, in my experience, most people wouldn't know reason if it walked up and shook their hand."
- O'Brien mentioning his participation in the border wars to Bashir.
- Morn appearances; while Odo is evacuating everyone to safer parts of the station.
- The special effects used in the battle with the Cardassians were quite good.
- The Rio Grande towing Dukat's ship back through the wormhole.
- Sisko treating Picard better in his second conversation with him.
- Kira to Quark: "If you don't take that hand off my hip, you'll never be able to raise a glass with it again."
- Morn appearances; 1. In background when Sisko is reunited with Jake; 2. In the background in the last shot.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is a fine sequel to the first part, but it suffers from the scenes with the prophets being far too lengthy. That, and all the great fun trivia and whatnot was all introduced in the first part. So the second part is merely a conclusion to the simple plot of the first. In the end, we're left with a nice premise for the show. In particular, the wide cast of characters is exceptional. I'm most fond of the commander Sisko. He's not as cowboyish as Kirk was, but he's not as rigid and stuck up as Picard is. Kind of the best of both worlds and he grows on me even more quite a bit as the show develops. Other notable highlights are Odo and Quark. The interplay between them is and will be

consistently good throughout the series. Indeed, DS9's greatest strength is its wide cast of characters.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x03 - Past Prologue**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-1-10

**My  
Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A reunion with a member of the Bajoran underground forces Kira to choose between her people and her duty as a Federation officer.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- It seems the Runabouts are all named after Earth rivers.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak (his first) appearance.
- Garak imposing himself on Bashir.
- Garak to Bashir: "What a thoughtful young man. How nice that we've met!"
- Garak: "Ah, an open mind. The essence of intellect!"
- Bashir's reaction to having met Garak, then talking to the senior staff like an excited child.
- Sisko to O'Brien: "When Gul Dunar docks, it'd be nice if there were a few docking regulations to keep him outside a while."
- Sisko and Kira chewing each other out.
- Kira going over Sisko's head, discussing his actions with an admiral.
- O'Brien hinting at the Cardassian torture techniques to Sisko... additionally hinting that he wouldn't turn over anyone to the Cardassians, no matter what the crimes.
- Dunar complaining about the manufactured docking procedures.
- Tahna complaining about the Federation presence in Bajor.
- The Duras sisters showing up on the station.
- Odo: "We have specific regulations. You can leave your weapons or leave the station. Your choice. Please make it now" B'Etor: "Who are you?" Odo: "I'm the one giving you the choice."
- Odo trying to convince Sisko to let him lock up the Duras sisters summarily.
- Garak: "Join me doctor. Enhance my evening!"
- Garak trying to give Bashir subtle hints regarding the Duras' sisters malicious intents.
- Odo spying on the Duras' sisters using his shape shifting abilities.
- Sisko to Kira: "Go over my head again and I'll have yours on a platter."
- Garak negotiating with the Duras' sisters.
- Garak trying to give Bashir more subtle hints.
- Bashir to Garak: "I'm a doctor--" then he gets interrupted. Bashir was probably going to say something like, "I'm a doctor, not a spy!" A tribute to McCoy's many famous "I'm a doctor, not a (something)!" lines.
- Bashir seeking advice from Sisko regarding Garak.
- Bashir eavesdropping on Garak's conversation with the Duras sisters.
- Bashir realizing Garak's purpose for the "new suit".
- Tahna hitting Kira. Ouch! That looks like it hurt!
- Morn appearances; 1. Passes by Kira and Sisko while they argue; 2. Can be seen on the upper level of the Promenade when Odo confronts the Duras Sisters; 3. Quark's bar while the Duras sisters are there "just sitting".

**Comments:**

An episode where no one knows who to trust. Kira, Tahna, Sisko, The Duras sisters, Garak, and Bashir all trying to push their own agenda. This makes for an interesting political episode, especially with regards to its placement directly after DS9: Emissary, in which hints to this kind of political unrest is inevitable. Garak, however, stole the show. Cardassian spy? We don't know. He's a mystery character introduced for the first time in this episode, and I'm happy to say my favorite character in all of Star Trek. The slow development of Garak's character over the years is brilliantly done, and it all starts here. The truly great thing about the character is how the writers let the actor, Andrew Robinson, shape his personality on his own. So Garak ends up starting as a mystery, and at the end of the show becoming one of the most complex and interesting characters.





**Star Trek DS9 - 1x04 - A Man Alone**  
Originally Aired: 1993-1-17

**My Rating**  
- 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Security Chief Odo's character is questioned when he is implicated in the murder of a shady Bajoran.*

**Problems:**

- Sisko calls the Bajorans, Bajora in this episode when he's speaking with Keiko.

**Factoids:**

- Ibudan's files has a note in it that says "Departure from Alderaan spaceport." Alderaan was the planet destroyed by the Death Star in Star Wars IV, A New Hope. ;)
- Odo: "You have 26 hours to get off this station." This is the first episode to mention the 26 hours Bajoran day.
- It is established in this episode that Odo has to return to his natural state once every 18 hours to regenerate. He "sleeps" in a pale in the back of his office.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir trying to seduce Jadzia again.
- Keiko appearance.
- Odo being a fascist prick.
- Jake's first meeting with Nog.
- Odo realizing that he'd been set up.
- Rom appearance.
- Quark and Odo bickering.
- Sisko: "Care for lunch?" Bashir, not realizing Sisko wasn't talking to him: "Sure!" Dax: "No, thank you."
- Odo: "Killing your own clone is still murder."
- Keiko's first day as a teacher.
- Morn appearances; 1. On the Promenade while Odo and Quark are talking, before Odo freaks out at the stranger; 2. Can be seen while O'Brien and Keiko attempt to resolve their argument on the Promenade; 3. Can be seen on the Promenade when Odo goes to his office; 4. Odo sits next to him when he sits at the bar. Everyone, including Morn, leaves when he sits down; 5. Morn was also in the mob outside Odo's office.

**Comments:**

A man with a grudge against Odo clones himself, then murders his clone so that everyone will draw the conclusion that the only man who could have committed the murder was Odo, because his DNA would be at the scene of the crime due to the fact that he was the first investigator on scene. This is a somewhat overcomplex and slightly weak premise, but it works. The more emphasized plot regarding the Odo angst in this episode is a little more interesting. Unfortunately the mob mentality of this episode is offensive, and hard to believe. Fortunately, we'll see better episodes in the future regarding anti shape shifter sentiment. But not in this one.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x05 - Babel**  
Originally Aired: 1993-1-24

**My Rating**  
- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A mysterious epidemic sweeps over Deep Space Nine, and Kira must find an antidote.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Quark mentions that the Ferengi immune system is stronger than most humanoids.
- Odo mentions the station was built 18 years before this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The chief's bad day; feeling overwhelmed by people's demands.

- Sisko: "Chief! I thought you were going to fix the replicator!" O'Brien: "You're absolutely right sir, I knew I'd forgotten something. Can't have the operations chief sitting around daydreaming when there's work to be done, can we? Hohohoho... I'll get right on it!"
- Odo picking on Quark.
- O'Brien starting to talk funny.
- Dax: "I'd forgotten what it was like." Kira: "What what was like." Dax: "Being female. I haven't been one in over 80 years."
- O'Brien speaking jibberish.
- Dax talking jibberish.
- Random crewmembers speaking jibberish.
- Odo discovering Quark was making unauthorized use of crew quarters replicators. Quark: "How did you figure it out?" Odo: "You claimed Rom fixed your replicator. Rom's an idiot. He couldn't fix a straw if it were bent." Completely untrue, as we later learn Rom is somewhat autistic. But Odo's hunch had merit.
- Jake talking jibberish.
- Bashir succumbing to the disease.
- Kira kidnapping the good doctor and infecting him.
- Sisko talking jibberish.
- Quark coming to Odo's aid and teasing him.
- Sisko's coffee in the end burning him again.
- Morn appearances; 1. In Quark's Bar when Quark talks to Dax and Kira; 2. in Quark's Bar when Odo goes in to ask Quark about the the quarantine.

#### Comments:

This is a great episode, but it was too early. DS9 is just starting to get popular, and all of a sudden a fatal virus is contracted by a bunch of people and the station is quarantined and shut off from trade. Of course, the miracle cure fixed that. The episode's credibility may be stretched, but it was certainly fun to watch. Everybody speaking jibberish is great. See if you can repeat a few of those lines to some of your friends mid conversation, it will get you some funny looks. Horseback green undertow in the backwater. Sun rising crest between two ducks. Appalling nature exacts vast insurgency. Oh what fun.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 1x06 - Captive Pursuit**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-1-31

**My  
Rating -  
6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Through a new friendship with a bizarre alien, O'Brien and the rest of the officers of Deep Space Nine learn that other beings do not respect life as much as they do.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- The "Ferengi Print" at the beginning of this episode is a nod to the Earthly expression "Fine Print" with regards to contracts.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Sisko discussing Miss Sadra's grievance with her.
- Tosk's funny accent and behavior.
- Odo refusing to use a phaser. The first of many times.
- Tosk to Quark: "I live the greatest adventure one could ever desire."
- The hunter's opening lines belittling Tosk.
- Tosk to O'Brien: "I am Tosk. The hunted. I live to outwit the hunters for another day. To survive until I die with honor."
- Quark to O'Brien: "More trouble with the little woman?" A reference to DS9: A Man Alone when Quark overheard his conversation with Keiko.
- O'Brien regarding the hunter: "Glass jaw. Now I know why you wear a helmet."
- Sisko "officially" chastising O'Brien for his conduct, but secretly admiring him.
- Morn appearances; 1. Quark's Bar as O'Brien and Tosk stop at the entrance; 2. Quark's Bar, can be seen in the background with his back to the camera when Quark tries to cheer up O'Brien.

#### Comments:

Our first look at life on the other side of the wormhole shows us the gamma quadrant's xenophobic

and arrogant ways. This is a connotation reinforced by later episodes. One wonders if Tosk's race and the hunters' race are a small part of the Dominion? Some highlights: Odo's handling of Tosk's minor crime aboard the station was great. Odo isn't always the "ill tempered old crosspatch" Quark would have us believe. More interesting is O'Brien's role in the story. First O'Brien makes friends with Tosk, then he tries stick up for Tosk to Sisko, then he feels responsible for him, then he helps him escape. Notable as well is Sisko's subtle hint to O'Brien that he completely respects the judgment call he made, even though he officially chewed him out. Finally, Tosk himself was a great character who was played wonderfully by the actor. The accent was especially pleasing.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x07 - Q-Less**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-2-7

**My  
Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Frequent U.S.S. Enterprise visitors Q and Vash introduce themselves to the crew of Deep Space Nine, while the officers struggle to save the station from imminent destruction.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a continuation from TNG: QPid and TNG: Captain's Holiday.
- This is the only episode to feature Q on DS9.
- Q has never seen a space station torn apart by a wormhole before.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir telling the story of his medical finals; the first time of many.
- Vash and Q appearing.
- O'Brien explaining what he knows of Vash's relationship with Picard.
- Vash to Q: "You're arrogant, overbearing, and you think you know everything." Q: "But I do know everything!" Vash: "That makes it even worse!"
- Quark ignoring the weirdness of being transported about by Q due to his strong desires to do business with Vash.
- Vash haggling with Quark using oomax.
- Q toying with Julian.
- O'Brien's reaction to seeing Q: "Bloody hell."
- Q to Sisko: "Is Starfleet penalizing you, or did you actually request such a dismal command?"
- I like the inside joke about the uniforms. Q: "I like your new tailor." He then magically switches from the TNG uniform to the DS9 uniform. :)
- The conversation between Quark and Odo regarding Odo eavesdropping on him. Quark: "What were you this time? The table? One of the chairs? The wine bottle!" Odo: "When are you going to realize that you have no secrets from me?" Quark: "I have nothing to hide. I'm selling quality merchandise to select clientele." Odo: "And what makes them so... select." Quark: "They're all ridiculously wealthy. And not too bright." Odo: "I'll never understand this obsession with accumulating material wealth. You spend your entire life plotting and scheming to acquire more and more possessions until your living areas are bursting with useless junk and then you die. Your relatives sell everything and start the cycle all over again." Quark: "Isn't there anything you desire?" Odo: "I have my work. What more do I need?" Quark: "A suit of the finest Andorian silk. A ring of pure sorax! A complete set of Tenaish pottery. How about a latinum plated bucket to sleep in?" Odo seemed tempted by the last one. :)
- O'Brien to Q: "O'Brien. From the Enterprise." Q: "Oh yes, weren't you one of the little people?"
- Q mentioning that the station is "hurtling toward its doom" to the auction crowd.
- Julian having slept through the whole episode thanks to Q.
- Morn appearances; 1. Can be seen walking behind Vash and Sisko during their first meeting. 2. Behind Quark when he tries to convince Vash to sell him her artifact at an absurdly low price. 3. In the crowd when Q creates a boxing match between himself and Sisko. 4. In Quark's Bar when Vash is leaving in the end of the episode.

**Comments:**

Certainly a bonus to bring back Vash and Q, further tying the series to TNG, yet allowing us to see that it can stand on its own against TNG "villains". This episode bears a resemblance to TNG: Encounter at Farpoint. Both episodes featured Q, both episodes featured a trapped alien being

exploited, both episodes ended in the release of that alien as a puzzle for the starfleet crew to solve, and both episodes ended with Q being proven wrong. The repercussions of this episode are of course not as grand as Farpoint's, but it is nevertheless a great fun episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x08 - Dax**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-2-14

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Curzon Dax, Jadzia's former Trill identity, is accused of murder.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- O'Brien is said to be visiting a 100 year old relative in this episode, to explain his absence. Interestingly, the arbiter mentions she is 100 years old as well. I wonder if the parallels between these two extreme old age mentions have anything to do with the remark about Dax' age.
- This episode marks the first mention of Raktajino, Klingon coffee. Bashir has the honor of the first line mentioning it.
- Jadzia is said to be 28 years old in this episode.
- Bashir says that 93 hours after a symbiote is joined to a host, they cannot be separated without killing the host.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir flirting with Dax again.
- Kira and Sisko finding a political loophole to keep Dax on board.
- Odo blackmailing Quark into cooperation.
- The scenes in which arbiter has lines. She's hilarious.
- Sisko making an entirely bias argument in Dax' favor.
- Odo interrogating Enina Tandro.
- Arbiter: "Lieutenant Dax, you are either 200 years older than I am or you're about the same age as my great granddaughter. At first I wondered which of those you were. But now I am bothered by the likelihood that you may be both."
- Enina Tandro showing up and admitting the embarrassing truth at the hearing, proving Dax' innocence.
- Morn appearances; 1. When Sisko and Odo are walking on the Promenade, just after Odo blackmails Quark into cooperation; 2. Can be seen behind Quark as the hearing is beginning.

**Comments:**

I don't particularly like this one. It seems a failed attempt to reproduce TNG: Data's Day. For one, we don't know Dax well enough yet to care very much. Second, the legal grounds for extradition in this episode are pretty damn solid. Sisko was defending her blindly. He didn't care if Dax was a murderer or not, he was going to save her either way. In that respect, it's good that Dax did end up being innocent for the sake of continuity, and to keep Sisko from looking more like a hypocrite. That said, I enjoyed hearing details of Curzon and Sisko's history. Really, the whole purpose of this episode was just an excuse to develop Dax' character though. Unfortunately, Dax acted like an idiot in this episode. Her blind sense of honor almost got her killed. It just doesn't seem anything like the Dax we will come to know.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x09 - The Passenger**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-2-22

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew's efforts to thwart a hijack scheme are complicated when a sinister alien criminal hides his consciousness within the brain of someone aboard the stati*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Bashir: "The closest thing I've encountered is synaptic pattern displacement. But I've never seen

it done by a non Vulcan." This is probably a reference to when Spock transferred his soul into McCoy in Star Trek II.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira complimenting Bashir and Bashir being completely immodest about it.
- Odo and Quark talking about Dax. Quark: "It's good to want things." Odo: "Even things you can't have?" Quark: "Especially things I can't have."
- Odo being grilled by a starfleet security officer about how he does his job.
- Sisko: "Odo was probably making sure Quark knows we know he knows."
- Odo's first declaration of his resignation. Something he will threaten again and again. I also like Odo's objections to being called "constable."
- Odo regarding Quark: "I always keep an eye on him."
- Vantika inside Bashir's body.
- Bashir, disoriented when he woke up aboard the freighter.
- Kajada murdering her prisoner.
- Morn appearances; 1. At the bar in the background as Odo and Quark talk about Dax.

**Comments:**

A pleasing mystery episode about a man obsessed with preserving his own life even at the expense of other people's. Some highlights are the contention between Odo and the starfleet security officer. Additionally, Vantika whilst inside Bashir's body is extremely well acted. Props to Alexander Siddig there. I'm not fond of DS9's affinity for alien of the week especially in its earlier seasons, but the cliché doesn't hurt the episode much here. This isn't the most spectacular episode of DS9 but it's most certainly decent, especially if you're fond of Bashir, who gets an excellent showing in this episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x10 - Move Along Home**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-3-14

**My  
Rating -  
1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Quark's attempt at deception toward a newly-encountered alien race places the space station's senior officers in a labyrinth of danger.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko laying into Bashir for not packing his dress uniform.
- Quark after his decidedly negative reaction to the nectar: "One man's priceless is another man's useless!"
- Kira: "I'm aajoran administrator. This is not what I signed up for!"
- Odo laying into Primmin for letting all the senior staff disappear without noticing.
- Odo: "And don't call me constable, I'm chief of security!"
- The hopscotch game with the little girl. Hilarious!
- Morn appearances; 1. Seen just after the credits rolls walking by the camera. 2. Seen behind Quark and Sisko when they talk just after the credits.

**Comments:**

Most definitely a filler episode. There is next to no substance and decidedly manufactured danger. It's completely incredible that there was no real danger; the aliens of the week should have seen that the DS9 people all thought it was real. Instead they just egged on the hysteria. More annoying, we never see this race again. Were they wiped out by the Dominion?

---



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x11 - The Nagus**  
Originally Aired: 1993-3-21

My  
Rating -  
6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Quark is suddenly named leader of the Ferengi financial empire, and discovers that he's not only popular, he's now a target for death.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first mention of the Bajoran fire caverns.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Zek's "death."
- Quark's reaction to Rom wanting to take over the bar.
- Sisko: "Going through my own adolescence was difficult enough. Surviving my son's is going to take a miracle."
- Dax taking generous helpings of Sisko's dinner.
- Jake teaching Nog to read.
- Rom and Grax attempting to execute Quark.
- Rules of Acquisition; 1. Once you have their money, you never give it back. 6. Never allow family to stand in the way of opportunity.
- Morn appearances; 1. Quark tells him a joke about Andorians at the bar. We hear Morn laugh! 2. Quark shoes him away when he tries to come in during the Ferengi conference. 3. Can be seen on the bottom level during Nog and Jake's argument. 4. Can be seen walking by after Gral threatens Quark. 5. Can be seen in Quark's through the window during the discussion about whether or not to take a Dabo girl. 6. Passes by during Quark and Nog's final conversation regarding the airlock execution stunt.

**Comments:**

Introducing the Pope of the Ferengi. The Grand Nagus. The Ferengi have always been a wonderfully overly exaggerated representation of American capitalism. This is the first of many great Ferengi episodes. It's nice to see Quark isn't all a hack job. He now has ties with the Ferengi elite, the odd Grand Nagus. Though still an unpopular Ferengi, it's nice to see him get a little success. Honest success at that! I also like how Quark held no grudges against Rom for his actions. Indeed, he congratulated him! All things considered, a fine episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 1x12 - Vortex**  
Originally Aired: 1993-4-18

My  
Rating -  
6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien criminal from the other side of the wormhole tempts Odo by telling the shape-shifter he can put the changeling in contact with others like himself.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Quark: "You think the whole galaxy's plotting around you, don't you? Paranoia must run in your species, Odo. Maybe that's why no one has ever seen another shape shifter! They're all hiding!" Words oh so true.
- Odo: "There's no profit in kindness. Your favorite charity is your own profit."
- Odo luring his pursuer into a trap.
- Odo releasing his prisoner to the custody of the Vulcans.
- Morn appearances; 1. Can be seen as the Miradorns walk by in the teaser, back to camera. 2. Odo takes the honor of being the first to refer to Morn by name by pointing him out to Quark.

**Comments:**

This is the first episode in which Odo's past is examined. We learn Odo is one of a kind and that he has possible ties to the Gamma quadrant. We also hear the name of his species for the first time: Changeling. While the plot is somewhat meager and strung together from seemingly random elements, the effect is still nicely profound for Odo's character. It's nice to see Odo so curious about his origins and it's nice to see Odo so compassionate to one of his prisoners. All very nice changes of pace for the character.

**Star Trek DS9 - 1x13 - Battle Lines**

Originally Aired: 1993-4-25

**My Rating****- 1****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko, Kira, and Bashir are stranded on a war-torn world where it is impossible for the combatants to die.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira's reaction to her "disappointing" file. She feels "under appreciated."
- Sisko taking the Kai through the wormhole simply to indulge her.
- Bashir: "I've discovered we can't afford to die here. Not even once."
- Morn appearances; 1. Walks by with a bag on his shoulder when Sisko and Bashir are discussing the Kai in the teaser.

**Comments:**

I don't like this one. This episode is a complete misuse of a great character, Kai Opaka. A completely unfitting end for a character who was never given a chance. The science fiction issue of nanites sustaining eternal life is never revisited again; there's no attempt to discover how to modify them so that everyone may live forever. And worse yet, the people of the planet are shown as nothing but mindless savages who Opaka is supposed to begin anew and somehow bring together these bitter enemies. These concepts have been explored better elsewhere, and nothing particularly remarkable happens in this episode.

**Star Trek DS9 - 1x14 - The Storyteller**

Originally Aired: 1993-5-2

**My  
Rating -  
2****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Against his will, O'Brien becomes spiritual leader of a Bajoran village and the only one who can save them from a destructive energy force.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien trying to avoid Bashir in the teaser.
- Bashir trying to be friendly with O'Brien.
- Quark offending yet another woman.
- Odo taking pleasure in ordering the kids to stop dangling over the Promenade.
- Rules of Acquisition; 9. Opportunity + Instinct = Profit!
- Morn Appearances; 1. Quark is talking to him as Kira enters his bar. 2. Crosses the Promenade with a jumja stick, as Jake and Nog walk by.

**Comments:**

Another weak DS9 episode. The only thing I like about it is the interplay between Bashir and

O'Brien. Their friendship is beginning to form. The major problem with this episode is the sheer ridiculousness of a single village of Bajorans who must fight off a monster every so often. The idea that it was needed to create unity at one time is convincing, but the idea that it must be done routinely to maintain unity is just lunacy.



### **Star Trek DS9 - 1x15 - Progress**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-5-9

**My  
Rating -  
5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A stubborn old Bajoran farmer forces Kira to take a good look at how much she has changed since her alliance with the Federation.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to mention self-sealing stem bolts and Cardassian Yamok Sauce.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Jadzia discussing Morn asking her out with Kira. Jadzia thinks Morn's few wiry hairs make him look cute.

- Jake and Nog bartering for profit.

- Mullibok's insistence on calling Kira a girl, getting her all mad.

- Mullibok's exaggerated stories about how he colonized the moon.

- Mullibok: "The Cardassians probably told you you didn't stand a chance either. Did you surrender?" Kira: "No." Mullibok: "Why do you expect me to act any different than you?"

- Jake and Nog trying to figure out what self-sealing stem bolts.

- Bashir "requesting" Kira stay on the planet.

- Kira's nasty old tree analogy.

- Kira destroying Mullibok's home.

- Morn appearances; 1. Seen talking to someone as Jake and Nog talk to the Lissepian captain on the Promenade. 2. Sitting on a barstool when Nog walks into Quark's. 3. Sitting at bar while Odo and Quark talk about Nog and Jake's land.

#### **Comments:**

A story about a luddite. The episode's name is progress but the primary plot is about a man who will not accept the changes that progress brings about. Mullibok actually is quite a likable character in this episode and Kira establishes a nice relationship with him. For once, Jake and Nog's childish exploits are entertaining, they keep trading stuff for more stuff in the hope of ending up with gold pressed latinum. Also, this episode features a nice scene between Kira and Sisko. It seems they've come to terms with each other. There's a mutual respect now instead of a rivalry. In the end, Kira does her duty. A little harsh about it, but the effect is the same.



### **Star Trek DS9 - 1x16 - If Wishes Were Horses**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-5-16

**My  
Rating -  
1**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When members of the station find their fantasies coming to life, it becomes the prelude to a very real danger which threatens everyone.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Changelings have no sense of smell.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Julian trying to seduce Jadzia again.

- Keiko appearance.

- Molly professing that Rumpelstiltskin is in her room and the look on O'Brien's face when he actually sees him there.



- Julian's first meeting with fake Jadzia.
- Odo animal herding.
- Jadzia arguing with herself.
- Morn appearances; 1. Sitting at a table in the very first scene in the background in Quarks. 2. In the same scene, he seems to have moved to the bar. 3. Walks in front of Odo when Odo tries to get the attention of the people in Quark's.

#### Comments:

Another filler episode; one wonders how much better DS9 could have been if they hadn't waited so long to do anything really cool. It's kind of interesting that the figments of people's imagination were just aliens exploring through the hole in space, but, again, the whole episode is filler. The aliens of the week never return, the episode has no consequences, and ultimately is a waste of time.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 1x17 - The Forsaken

Originally Aired: 1993-5-23

My  
Rating -  
7

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*While an alien entity wreaks havoc with the station's computer, the irrepressible Lwaxana Troi sets her sights for romance with Odo!*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Lwaxana claims that Betazoids can't read Ferengi.
- Odo claims that Doptarians are distant relatives of the Ferengi.
- This episode establishes that Odo does not need to eat.
- We get tidbits about Odo's past in this episode. He was discovered and "raised" by a Bajoran scientist. Odo's appearance is designed to mimic that scientist.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Sisko handing off the duty of "handling" the ambassadors to Bashir.
- Lwaxana's appearance. I love how she calls Quark a troll. Good continuity with her previous Ferengi encounters.
- O'Brien having another fight with the computer. Reminds me a lot of Scotty. :)
- Bashir: "The 'young woman' over there has over 300 years experience."
- Lwaxana trying to seduce Odo.
- Odo discussing his "problem" with Sisko.
- Odo trying to avoid Lwaxana.
- Kira: "Great. Everything's in working order, but nothing's working!"
- Lwaxana telling Odo the story of her experiences in TNG: Menage a Troi.
- Bashir: "Nothing makes them happy. They are dedicated to being unhappy and to spreading that unhappiness wherever they go. They are ambassadors of unhappy!"
- Sisko taking "perverse pleasure" in giving Bashir this assignment.
- O'Brien trying to point out the subtle differences in the computer. "A different attitude."
- O'Brien: "Working with the Enterprise computer was like dancing a waltz. With this computer it's always been like a wrestling match."
- Odo describing his past.
- The main cast overloading the computer with commands. O'Brien "building a dog house."
- Bashir saving the ambassadors.
- Morn appearances; 1. Can be seen in the background when Bashir is talking to the ambassadors.

#### Comments:

This is one of the best episodes of the first season, simply because of the sheer wonderful humor. The alien probe plot thread isn't particularly interesting, but it is original and the way the crew deals with it is greatly entertaining. I most enjoyed the dialog between Lwaxana and Odo toward the end, where they finally begin to connect with one another. Lwaxana then protects Odo from leaking into the active current. Odo rarely places his life in someone else's hands and it's done well here. The thing that makes this episode both nice and unusual compared to other first season offerings is its wide use of characters and its number of plot threads. First there's the plot thread about Bashir and his ambassadorial duties. Then there's the plot thread about Lwaxana and Odo. Then there's the plot thread about O'Brien and the computer. Arguably another, albeit short, when

Sisko splits away from O'Brien to save Bashir from the fire. There's four separate stories going on simultaneously by the end of the episode. A nicely complex story, especially for the first season.



### Star Trek DS9 - 1x18 - Dramatis Personae

Originally Aired: 1993-5-30

My  
Rating - 2

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Odo is caught in the middle when an alien influence pits Kira against Sisko in a deadly struggle for control of the station.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Sisko's clock he built will be a permanent decoration in his office from this point forward.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Odo: "How am I?" Bashir: "How do you feel?" Odo: "Fine." Bashir: "Good. Because I have know way to know. Your body chemistry defies analysis."
- The crew starting to act... weird.
- Kira attacking Quark.
- Morn appearances; 1. Behind Quark when he serves Jadzia her drink.
- Odo manipulating Bashir.

#### Comments:

This episode is largely pointless. It may have been more interesting if it had aired earlier in the season; Kira's loyalties are hardly in question anymore. What's more, the whole episode is an excuse to get the characters acting completely out of character without much of a reason. The only redeeming quality of this episode is how Odo saves the day, by manipulating both sides. He was the perfect man for that job and he did the job well. It was certainly entertaining to watch Odo bring the station back to order, but unfortunately the episode comes off as being little more than another hour of filler.



### Star Trek DS9 - 1x19 - Duet

Originally Aired: 1993-6-13

My Rating  
- 9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Kira discovers that a Cardassian visiting the station could actually be a notorious war criminal.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira: "If your lies are going to be this transparent, it's going to be a very short interrogation." Marritza: "Well in that case I'll try to make my lies more opaque."
- Marritza: "Gul Darhe'el himself called my computer filing system a masterpiece of meticulous exactitude."
- Dukat: "This Bajoran obsession with alleged Cardassian improprieties during the occupation is really quite distasteful." Sisko: "I suppose if you're Bajoran, so is the occupation."
- Kira wanting Marritza to be something worse the punishment can mean more.
- "Gul Darhe'el" reminiscing fondly about his accomplishments. Gloating about the horrors he inflicted.
- Odo breaking into Quark's private stock to give Kira a free drink!
- Kira: "Nothing justifies genocide." Gul Darhe'el: "What you call genocide I call a day's work."
- Marritza's breakdown in the end.
- Marritza murdered.

#### Comments:

This is the best one of the first season, superbly acted all across. A truly deeply affected

Cardassian, Maritza, feels a profound sadness for what his people did to the Bajorans during the occupation. He served in the Cardassian military, and therefore feels responsible. He never played a major role in the atrocities though, so he pretends to be Gul Darhe'el, the butcher of Gallitep, so that he can let the Bajorans exact satisfying revenge on him. It's a win-win situation both ways. He gets personal redemption and in his mind an honorable death and the Bajorans get the satisfaction of putting to death one of their greatest enemies. He's not Darhe'el though, and Kira is forced to toss aside her personal hate and her racism to stop this man from committing suicide for something that really isn't his fault. In the end, the profoundly tragic character is killed by the Bajorans anyway, by a man who can't let go of the hate. There are elements of this story that are contrived, most especially the lack of security at the end setting up Marritza for an easy ambush, but the episode is still fantastic and will always be one of my favorites of DS9's offerings. Bravo.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 1x20 - In The Hands of the Prophets**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-6-20

**My Rating**

**- 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Bajoran spiritual leader threatens to destroy the alliance between Bajor and the Federation.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature Winn, a character who will become increasingly important throughout the series.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Keiko appearance.
- Keiko defending herself against Vedek Winn's religious zealotry.
- Vedek Winn stating that she told Kai Opaka that she would do anything to look into the eyes of her gods. This is a sort of indirect declaration of her unstoppable ambition for power. Nicely done too.
- Jake talking to his father about the parallels between Galileo and the current situation.
- Vedek Bareil: "I'm sorry commander. The Vedek assembly will not see you." Sisko: "Why not?" Vedek Bareil: "Some fear you as the symbol of the Federation they view as godless. Some fear you as the emissary who walked with the prophets. And some fear you because Vedek Winn told them to."
- Sisko's speech about DS9 as a symbol of successful cooperation between the Federation and Bajor.
- Kira: "I envy Vedek Winn because she's a true believer." Watch the rest of this series, then you will see why this statement is so ironic.
- Rules of Acquisition; 7. Keep your ears open.
- Morn appearances; 1. Passes by Keiko and Miles in the first Jumja scene. 2. Passes by Keiko and Miles in the second Jumja scene when the vendor refuses to sell to them. 3. Keiko and Miles walk by him as they leave the uncooperative vendor. 4. In the crowd when the school explodes. 5. In the crowd when Vedek Bareil arrives on the station.

#### **Comments:**

This is the expected outcome of the premise of this show. The Bajorans are a spiritual people, deeply held in their beliefs. The old Kai was essentially killed earlier in the season, and a replacement is now necessary. Finally, an episode that outlines the political structure of Bajoran society was definitely something that needed to happen. Expectations are of course satisfied, but as a season finale it leaves much to be desired. DS9 got off to a very slow start. Though this can be said of any of the Star Trek series to some degree, DS9 is probably a slower start than the others. What this episode lacks in excitement it makes up for in its message. I'm very fond of the religious issue and how it's handled. Our crew will eventually learn that the truth is somewhere in the middle of the Federation's stark godless philosophy and Bajor's zealous religion. I like Sisko's conversation with his son about how since the wormhole aliens are indeed powerful supernatural aliens with technology and abilities far beyond the understanding of either the Federation or Bajor that they could easily be interpreted as gods. Or that their abilities to control time could easily make them prophets. This is the first of many of Winn's grand political schemes. I like the look on Winn's face when Kira accuses her of attempted murder. She the look screams of "damn, my plan failed". She then just walks off in disgust. A fine episode, if not a particularly good season finale.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x01 - The Homecoming**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-9-26

**My Rating**  
**- 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kira risks her life, and war with the Cardassians, to rescue a mythical Bajoran hero from a distant prison colony.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first part of the first three part episode ever shown in Star Trek.
- This is the first episode in which Morn did not appear.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo unable to explain Quark helping him crack a case.
- Quark visiting Kira's quarters.
- Sisko and Jake talking about Jake's first date.
- Dax one step ahead of Sisko in their conversation about whether or not to give Kira the runabout.
- Kira making up a high ranking Cardassian to fool the border police.
- Gul Dukat's mysterious cooperative mood.
- Quark being tagged by the terrorists.
- Li Nalas telling his story to Sisko.
- Sisko trying to convince Nalas to be Bajor's "symbol", even if he's not a great leader at heart.
- Rules of Acquisition; 76. Every once in a while, declare peace. It confuses the hell out of your enemies.

**Comments:**

More Bajoran politics. Again, the timing is right, but it's not particularly exciting. There are many things to redeem this episode though. Jake's aborted girlfriend, Kira's successful mission in Cardassia, and especially Dukat's odd cooperation. I found this first part of the very first three part episode arc to be very pleasant, even if a bit cliched in the end when Kira loses her job for no good reason.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x02 - The Circle**  
**Originally Aired:** 1993-10-3

**My Rating**  
**- 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Relieved of her post and sent back to Bajor, Kira helps to reveal the hidden force behind The Circle and a greater secret that could destroy them all.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The scene with Kira, Odo, Dax, Bashir, O'Brien, Quark, and finally Vedek Bareil. I love all the fast and confusing dialog.
- Kira's orb experience.
- Kira: "If you want to change the government, minister Jaro, you vote to change it. You don't sneak up from behind it with a dagger."

**Comments:**

This episode offers no surprises, no turning points other than the revelation that the Cardassians were supplying the Circle with weapons, which again, isn't much of a surprise. Winn is scheming again, and the reason for Kira's reassignment is revealed as being a mundane political maneuver. The whole episode is just dragged out far too long. Only Sisko's decision to disobey orders and stay aboard the station to fight the political uprising is interesting. By the time he makes this decision,

the episode is over! A necessary transitional episode for the three parter, but not very exciting. This arc could have been done as a two parter.



### Star Trek DS9 - 2x03 - The Siege

Originally Aired: 1993-10-10

My  
Rating -  
5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*While Sisko leads a daring last stand against the Bajoran takeover forces, Kira and Dax embark on a desperate mission to reveal the truth about the coup.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Keiko appearance.
- Dax: "Whoa! What is that, a spider or a dog!?"
- Kira's feeling of enthusiasm flying the old broken down ship.
- Kira and Dax's dogfight. Cool!
- Rules of Acquisition; 31. Never make fun of a Ferengi's mother.
- Morn appearances; 1. Sitting behind Quark and Nog when they initially talk about the evacuation.  
2. Attempting to board a runabout.

#### Comments:

The final part of this three parter resolves the plot exactly as expected. Kira proves the Cardassians were behind the contraband and the fight ends. Just like that. I'd give it another low rating, but I thoroughly enjoyed Kira and Dax's scenes in this episode, they did an excellent job together, especially during the dogfight.



### Star Trek DS9 - 2x04 - Invasive Procedures

Originally Aired: 1993-10-17

My Rating  
- 5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*The crew must fight for Jadzia's life when a desperate Trill takes the group hostage and steals the Dax symbiote.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- O'Brien has two brothers.
- Tim Russ, who plays T'Kar in this episode, will later play Tuvok on Voyager.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Quark regarding Rom: "He couldn't find a cup of water if you dropped him in a lake."
- Bashir laying into the Klingon to help him try and save Jadzia's life.
- Sisko reminiscing with the new Dax.
- Quark faking his injury.
- Quark cracking the lock on Odo's box cage.
- Sisko shooting the new Dax.

#### Comments:

This episode features a most remarkable guest star, a disgruntled Trill never given the chance to join with a symbiote. We learn many interesting things about Trill in this episode. Symbiote joinings are rare on Trill, due to the high standards of compatibility established by the Trill society. It's nice to see a guest bad guy who's essentially good at heart. It's also nice to see an episode like this, which is very violent by necessity, end with zero loss of life. The final scene is tragic, you really feel sorry for Verad. Sure his methods sucked, but his motives were honest and pure. He was almost likable. The best part of this episode is how Sisko works so hard at reasoning with the

bad guys. He does an excellent job too. I'm most fond of the scene just after Verad becomes Dax when Sisko reminisces with him. The whole episode was very nicely done.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x05 - Cardassians**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-10-24

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A young Cardassian, orphaned in the war and raised by Bajorans, causes turmoil on the station when his people attempt to reclaim him.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the second episode Garak appears in.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak to Bashir: "I'm no more a spy than you are--" Bashir: "A doctor?"
- Dukat pretending to respect Garak. Now that's ironic. I like Garak's reaction when Bashir mentions what Dukat said to Sisko.
- Bashir addressing Gul Dukat without permission.
- Keiko appearance.
- Bashir asking Sisko for a runabout.
- Garak's behavior at the Bajoran orphanage.
- Bashir to Garak: "You know how to fix computers?" I love Bashir's tone of astonishment regarding learning about one of "plain and simple" Garak's unusual talents.
- Bashir proving that Gul Dukat was manipulating events to his political advantage.

**Comments:**

This is the second episode to feature a complex political plot involving Garak, a rare treasure. The episode is hardly exciting, but Garak's scenes certainly make up for any lack of interesting plot development. My favorite scenes are the ones where Bashir and Garak borrow a runabout to go to Bajor and then Garak's hilarious behavior at the orphanage. This plot does little to advance the series, though. Despite how cool Garak's scenes were, and how much I like his character, there have been and will be better episodes featuring him. The thing that annoys me the most about this plot is how confused and ignorant the Cardassian boy was made to seem. As if he's too stupid to come to a rational decision. A decent, if a bit flawed an episode.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x06 - Melora**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-10-31

**My  
Rating -  
2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*After falling in love with a woman whose species is unable to walk in "normal" gravity, Bashir develops a technology that could free her of her wheelchair forever.*

**Problems:**

- The gravity Melora is used to is extremely, extremely low. So low that there's barely any at all; she floats around like a feather. Why would her species evolve as bipedal life forms when they can just fly around most of the time?

**Factoids:**

- Bashir's father was a Federation diplomat.
- Bashir is supposedly no good at Tennis.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Fallit Kot just after walking into Quark's bar: "I've come to kill you, Quark."
- The Klingon restaurant scene. I love when the Klingon chef throws the plate behind him. Hilarious!
- Melora: "What kind of architect would design a raised limb at the entrance of every door?!" I wondered this myself in the pilot episode. :)
- Melora and Dax discussing alien relationships.
- Melora kicking some low gravity ass!

- The Klingon chef singing.
- Rules of Acquisition: 16. A deal is a deal.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Seen sitting behind Bashir and Dax in the opening scene while they're talking to O'Brien about the wheelchair. 2. In Quark's bar just before Quark attempts to be really really nice to Fallit Kot so he won't kill him.

**Comments:**

This episode is an attempt to prove handicapped people can contribute to society, in a Federation enlightenment sort of way, but instead just comes off as a bit obnoxious. Geordi LaForge was a much better example of how handicapped people can contribute to society, but admittedly in some ways, Geordi is a poor example because they eliminated his problem with technology. Melora is a better example of how handicapped people can contribute to society because her "problem" is natural to her species. To me, Melora was the obnoxious thing about this episode. Her behavior was just annoying, whereas Geordi was a very likable guy. The idea of a medical "cure" for her situation is obnoxious too. The science behind it is a little fuzzy, but far less so than Melora's species' curious bipedal evolution in a low gravity environment. What I didn't like most about it was the episode should have been more about Melora living on the station with a handicap and less about curing it. And even that would have been a little lame. Fortunately, the ending redeems quite a bit of the episode's mistakes. Melora is not going to "fix" her handicap, as that would be insulting the rest of her species. But unfortunately, we never see Melora again, and she doesn't say one damn thing about leaving the station. As far as DS9 episodes goes, this one had the best of intentions but the fuse was a dud.



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x07 - Rules of Acquisition**

**Originally Aired:** 1993-11-7

**My Rating**

**- 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Ferengi female who has defied the law and disguised herself as a male risks it all when she falls in love with Quark.*

**Problems:**

- Pel kisses Quark in this episode. I sure hope they didn't tongue it, the Ferengi have razor sharp teeth!

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to show Ferengi playing Tongo.
- This episode establishes that there are 285 Rules of Acquisition and that in addition to memorizing them, Ferengi are encouraged to memorize the various official commentaries on them as well.
- This is the first episode to feature a female Ferengi.
- This episode establishes that Quark doesn't have all the Rules of Acquisition memorized. He didn't know rule 103.
- This episode is the first to mention the Dominion.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Rom describing how he likes his women: "Naked and submissive."
- Zek "negotiating" with Sisko and Kira.
- The revelation that Pel is a female Ferengi.
- Zek smacking Kira on the ass!
- Quark and Pel negotiating with the Dosi on Deep Space Nine.
- Zek's gift for Kira. I love Kira's ensuing insults about the Ferengi.
- Dax telling Pel about a supposed time when Quark recreated the bedroom she slept in as a child in the holosuite from memory of a conversation he overheard between Dax and Kira.
- Dax discovering Pel a female.
- Zek slapping Kira on the ass again!
- Pel's reaction to being forced to sleep with Quark.
- Zyree, the first to mention the Dominion.
- Zek's reaction seeing Pel a female.
- Rules of Acquisition: 21. Never place friendship above profit. 22. A wise man can hear profit in the wind. 33. It never hurts to suck up to the boss. 48. The bigger the smile the sharper the knife. 59. Free advice is seldom cheap. 67. The riskier the road the greater the profit. 103. Sleep can interfere with--(Pel is interrupted, we don't hear the rest. It might be "profit").
- Morn appearances; 1. Odo catches him sleeping on the promenade. When awakened and told to

"go home," he goes to see if Quark's is open! 2. In the background behind Quark, Rom, and Pel. 3. Can be seen just after Odo and Rom talk about brothers.

#### Comments:

Another episode to feature another smashing performance by Wallace Shawn as Zek. He's so funny. Quark and Rom are excellent Ferengi characters too, but something about Zek just strikes me as great. Everything about his character is just perfect for his role. All the nuances and all the little details add up to a most remarkable character. Additionally, Pel's secret love for Quark makes for most remarkable story. The Dosi are interesting as well; the Gamma Quadrant equivalent of the Ferengi. My only regret about the episode is that we don't see the Dosi again, because they were an excellent race. The Dominion is first mentioned in this episode, the Dosi are probably under their control. All the nice little things in this episode add up to a most entertaining and funny Ferengi episode.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 2x08 - Necessary Evil

Originally Aired: 1993-11-14

My  
Rating -  
8

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*An attack on Quark's life brings Odo face to face with a five-year-old unsolved murder for which Kira was a prime suspect.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This is the first episode to mention Odo's Cardassian neck trick.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Odo: "Commence station security log Stardate 47282.5. At the request of commander Sisko, I will hereafter be recording a daily log of law enforcement affairs. The reason for this exercise is beyond my comprehension. Except perhaps that humans have a compulsion to keep records and lists and files. So many in fact that they have to invent new ways to store them microscopically. Otherwise their records would overrun all known civilization. My own very adequate memory not being good enough for starfleet I am pleased to put my voice to this official record of this day: Everything's under control. End log."
- Rom revealing some of his hidden talents.
- Rules of Acquisition: 139. Wives serve. Brothers inherit.
- Odo: "You're not as stupid as you look!" Rom: "I am too!"
- Odo's first meeting with Dukat.
- Odo's first meeting with Kira.
- Odo's first meeting with Quark.
- Dukat: "You're not afraid of anyone, are you shape shifter? Not even me! I was right about you. You are the man for this job."
- Rom saving his brother's life by screaming.
- The revelation that Kira was the murderer.
- Morn appearances; I've read that Morn appears briefly here, but I couldn't find him in this one.

#### Comments:

This episode features a wonderful history lesson; we get to see Terok Nor as it was during the occupation. And it features an old murder investigation which Odo can now solve. The whole plot is wonderfully interesting with multiple turning points and lots of intrigue. The title "Necessary Evil" is symbolic of Kira's deed (or perhaps all of her deeds) as a member of the underground. It may also represent Odo's collaboration with Dukat. Granted, Odo doesn't fit the strict definition of the collaborator. He wasn't gaining anything by working with Dukat, and he wouldn't have lost anything but refusing. Though Odo did walk the line between being for Bajor and being against Bajor, he was essentially in it for justice. All things considered, this is one of the most memorable episodes of season 2.

---





**Star Trek DS9 - 2x09 - Second Sight**  
Originally Aired: 1993-11-21

My  
Rating -  
3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko falls in love for the first time since his wife's death, but the object of his affections may not be all that she seems.*

**Problems:**

- This is the first of many episodes to directly and blatantly ignore the events of TNG: Force of Nature. This is one of the worst offenders too; Jadzia and O'Brien tweak a starships engines to fly at warp 9.6!
- The captain of the Prometheus seems to hold the rank of Lieutenant...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko's odd behavior the next morning in ops.
- I love Seyetik's cheerful arrogance.
- Sisko's conversation with Odo about his phantom girl.
- Sisko: "Seyetik is one of the Federation's greatest minds." Kira: "I know. He told me."
- Seyetik's death. His final words: "Let there be light!"

**Comments:**

This episode is certainly original, but in many ways annoying. Sisko's profound loss of his wife is exploited in an inappropriate way, and the topic of reviving dead stars along with Seyetik's wonderful character are all thoroughly wasted. I give it extra points for Seyetik's heroic end and all the coolness associated with it, but other than that, a disappointment.



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x10 - Sanctuary**  
Originally Aired: 1993-11-28

My  
Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kira is torn when a displaced alien race arrives on Deep Space Nine and claims Bajor as its people's legendary homeland.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the station can hold 7000 people, according to Odo.
- This is the second episode to mention the Dominion. Haneek claims that the race which conquered her's was conquered by the Dominion.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The universal translator failing in the beginning.
- The universal translator beginning to work.
- Haneek and Kira discussing the horrible dress.
- The Bajoran minister and Vedek carefully explaining their reasons for denying the Skreeans' request to immigrate to Bajor.
- Jake trying to be nice to the Skreeans.
- Haneek's final words with Kira.
- The Bajorans accidentally killing the Skreean attempting to land on Bajor.
- Morn appearances; 1. Watching the Bajoran play music in Quark's bar. He cries to Varani's playing. 2. Window shopping on the promenade. 3. At the bar when Varani plays for the Skreeans.

**Comments:**

I like the beginning of this episode when the universal translator failed. It's nice to see technology isn't infallible! Their race's language is too different for it! Unfortunately, that whole idea is sort of ruined by the fact that their race looks extremely similar to humans. Not identical, but very close. That said, the issue of a group of people wanting to immigrate to Bajor is interesting, but could

have been handled better. The Skreeans demanding to immigrate to Bajor, despite a major famine on the planet, despite the fact that Draylon II was more than adequate for the Skreean's needs, without any good reason just came off as offensive. I lose all of my sympathy for the Skreeans very quickly when they start getting belligerent and angry that they can't live on Bajor. They redeem themselves well though in the ending; I'm most fond of Haneek's final words with Kira. She finally comes off as convincing, making a decent argument for once. But by now, the decisions have been made. Why didn't she be so rational when she had a chance at moving into Bajor instead of just proclaiming a bunch of religious nonsense?



### Star Trek DS9 - 2x11 - Rivals

Originally Aired: 1994-1-2

My Rating

- 8

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Quark feels threatened when a charming swindler arrives on Deep Space Nine and opens a competing bar.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This is the first time we get to see an El-Aurian other than Guinan.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Bashir's tennis exercises. Hahaha!
- Bashir presenting O'Brien with quite a challenge at the game.
- Keiko appearance.
- O'Brien: "'I guess you prefer old style rules!' Like I was some kind of fossil! In my day I coulda wiped the court with'm!"
- Bashir talking to Dax about O'Brien having severe high blood pressure problems during the game.
- Bashir throwing his second game with O'Brien.
- I like the scene where Quark is pleading with Sisko to get Mazur off the station. They got on the turbolift. The door closes. The camera pans down. The door opens. You can barely hear Quark rambling on to Sisko behind the closed door. Hilarious detail.
- Quark: "You owe me! You begged me to stay here when you first came on board! And I did! Against my better judgement." Sisko: "I didn't beg, I blackmailed you. And don't pretend it hasn't paid off for you either!"
- Scene begins with O'Brien on the floor. Bashir: "I am so sorry!" O'Brien: "What happened?" Bashir: "Well, you served, I returned low, you slipped on the ball." O'Brien: "I slipped on the ball!?" Bashir: "Stepped right on it mid-flight, never seen anything like it."
- Keiko: "Kick his butt!"
- Quark trying to get Bashir to throw the match.
- O'Brien being able to pull off impossible shots and Bashir not being able to "hit the broad side of a Plygorian mammoth."
- Dax and Sisko phasering the luck devices.
- Rules of Acquisition; 47. Don't trust a man wearing a better suit than your own. 109. Dignity and an empty sack is worth the sack.
- Morn appearances; 1. Plays Quark at prosecco and loses. 2. Sleeping at the bar when O'Brien enters Quark's. 3. At Quark's when Quark gives his commercial speech to the crowd advertising a Racketball match he conned Bashir and O'Brien into. 4. Watching the match between Bashir and O'Brien.

#### Comments:

This episode features an original plot, finally another El-Aurian! The title is a reference to the rivalry between Martus Mazur and Quark, as well as the rivalry between Bashir and O'Brien playing Racketball. There are a great number of small details in this episode that make it so good. It's so wonderfully funny and tactful too. The character-driven nature of the episode is entirely to its advantage. The sci fi regarding the luck changing devices isn't particularly interesting, but it didn't need to be. They were quite literally plot devices, pun intended. Bashir and O'Brien have a developing friendship, which began with rivalry earlier in the show, and continues with rivalry in this episode. But as the time passes, you can tell they're becoming more and more fond of one another. Bashir always wanted to be friends with O'Brien, since the beginning. But O'Brien despised him, refusing to even spend any time with him at first! Now with the Racketball games, O'Brien

wants to spend time with Bashir; even if it's to satisfy a rivalry, it's still an improvement. An excellent episode.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x12 - The Alternate**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-1-9

**My Rating**

**- 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo's mentor arrives on Deep Space Nine intent on resuming his search for Odo's true origin.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo: "Humanoid death rituals are a hobby of mine. Everybody needs a hobby!"
- Odo, regarding the nickname "constable": "It's a nickname I barely tolerate."
- Morn appearances; 1. In the first scene.

**Comments:**

Introducing Dr. Mora, the scientist who raised Odo. An exploration of Odo's past is certainly an interesting and expected storyline. This episode features another silicon based life form, the one on the planet Dr. Mora wanted to investigate. The first of this type was discovered in TOS: The Devil in the Dark, and again in TNG: Silicon Avatar. It's nice that the show is being largely consistent about this. The episode goes sour though when it ceases to be about Odo's origins and becomes dominated by the recycled mystery monster attacks the ship (or in this case station) plot cliché.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x13 - Armageddon Game**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-1-30

**My**

**Rating -**

**4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Bashir and O'Brien work to rid two alien races of deadly weapons, unaware that their hosts intend to sacrifice them as part of the peace process.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien and Bashir discussing women and marriage.
- Bashir offending O'Brien by mentioning his marital problems.
- Dax describing reading Bashir's journals.
- Quark's tribute to Bashir and O'Brien.
- Keiko discovering the recording a fake.
- Sisko faking out the aliens with the other runabout.
- Keiko realizing that her "Coffee" clue was nothing but good luck because O'Brien does indeed drink coffee in the afternoon.
- Rules of Acquisition; 57. Good customers are as rare as latinum. Treasure them.

**Comments:**

This episode facilitates more bonding between Bashir and O'Brien, due to their being stuck on a desolate planet with O'Brien slowly dying. Unfortunately, the reason for their misfortune was terribly conceived. The plan to kill Bashir and O'Brien just because they possess knowledge of the harvesters was simply ridiculous. As Bashir and Sisko said, what's the damn point? Oh well, despite the annoying premise, the good moments between Bashir and O'Brien do well to brighten up the episode.

---



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x14 - Whispers**  
Originally Aired: 1994-2-6

**My Rating**  
- 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*O'Brien returns from a security mission to notice that the entire crew has seemingly turned against him.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- There was a Pakled on DS9 in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien and Bashir during the medical exam.
- O'Brien: "I haven't had a physical take this long since I was born!"
- Jake accidentally inferring that O'Brien is "really, really old."
- O'Brien: "They even broke into my personal logs to see what they could find there. I hope they enjoyed the sexy letters I sent to my wife."
- O'Brien freaking out at Quark.
- O'Brien fleeing the station and stealing a runabout.
- The revelation that there are two O'Briens!
- Rules of Acquisition; 194 (maybe, Quark's not sure): It's always good business to know about new customers before they walk in your door.

**Comments:**

A decent premise is slightly ruined, drowning under the weight of another "conspiracy" plot. A decent plot twist at the end saves the episode from a lower rating, but I just wish the plot twist was revealed a little sooner than the last two minutes of the episode. Though it is fun to watch O'Brien freak out at everybody and everything, there is very little plot advancement until the somewhat anticlimatic ending. A decent ride though.



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x15 - Paradise**  
Originally Aired: 1994-2-13

**My Rating**  
- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko and O'Brien are stranded on a planet inhabited by a colony of humans who have rejected any form of technology.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien talking about how he discovered his talents.
- Alixus justifying trying to "buy" Sisko's loyalty with sexual favors.
- Dax's "rope trick" with the tractor beam.
- Sisko crawling back into the penalty box rather than sacrifice his uniform.
- The engineer guy voluntarily letting himself get knocked out by O'Brien.
- O'Brien phasering out Sisko.

**Comments:**

A colony of luddites dominated by a meglomaniac dicatator with brainwashed followers. Not my favorite topic to address in Star Trek, but certainly an interesting and memorable episode. By the end of the episode all I wanted was to see O'Brien phaser Alixus. Her misguided philosophy of life was just annoying. But Sisko's and O'Brien's resolve against her makes the episode nicely watchable, a good pick of the second season.

---



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x16 - Shadowplay**  
Originally Aired: 1994-2-20

**My Rating**  
- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo and Dax try to solve the mystery of an alien planet whose inhabitants are disappearing without explanation.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Omicron particles can only be created by rare matter-antimatter reactions, according to Dax.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo denying that there are women chasing him.
- Odo beaming himself up and back to demonstrate his power to leave, but he remains as a matter of good faith.
- Bashir eager to spy on Quark because he wants to try out the surveillance techniques he learned from Garak's lectures.
- O'Brien telling Jake to stand up to his Dad.
- Another mention of the Dominion. Rurigan mentions the Dominion conquered his race and he fled to the planet of this episode to set up a new holographic life.
- Jake standing up to Sisko.
- Odo shape shifting in the end.

**Comments:**

This episode tackles the building up issue of Sisko trying to control his son's actions too much. In earlier episodes, Sisko makes plans with O'Brien for the internship featured in this episode. Even earlier, Sisko tries to dictate to Jake the "proper" dating procedure. Even earlier, Sisko tries to discourage him from dating at all, and even discourages him from being friends with Nog! In this episode, Sisko must finally confront the fact that Jake wants to shape his own life. There are some annoying things in this episode, such as the residents of Yadera Prime looking exactly like humans, and the fact that this is another episode which opens with the hope of exploring Odo's origins yet yields no answers. Otherwise, this is a largely successful episode, a decent season two offering.



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x17 - Playing God**  
Originally Aired: 1994-2-27

**My Rating**  
- 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While hosting her first Trill initiate, Dax discovers a tiny, developing universe, which threatens to destroy the station as it expands.*

**Problems:**

- Nothing about this "proto universe" makes any sense whatsoever.

**Factoids:**

- Runabouts are 17 meters wide according to Jadzia.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Dax: "It always takes me longer to get ready as a female."
- O'Brien and Kira chasing voles.
- O'Brien's sonic weapon he developed for the voles causing Quark great pain.
- The Klingon chef singing.
- O'Brien's chat with the Cardiasian about the voles.
- Jake accidentally spilling the beans about his Dabo girl girlfriend to Sisko.
- Rules of Acquisition; 112. Never have sex with the boss' sister.
- Morn appearances; 1. Behind Arjin during his conversation with Quark. 2. Behind Dax at Quark's when she talks to Arjin.

**Comments:**

This episode features some nice Trill trivia, but a bad sci fi plot. The idea that an entire universe could be trapped inside of a lab on DS9 is just ridiculous. Personally, I agree with Kira's solution. Step on the damn ants! The way they stopped this proto universe thing from expanding after they

dropped off back in the Gamma quadrant isn't really explained and the whole Trill plot seems to be wasted as a result. I've seen worse, but this was definitely bad.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 2x18 - Profit and Loss**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-3-20

**My  
Rating -  
6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When Quark is reunited with the love of his life, a Cardassian who is now a fugitive, he is ready to sacrifice everything to win her back.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Garak's third appearance.
- Garak's conversation with Toran firmly establishes that Garak was exiled from Cardassia.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak continuing to avoid Bashir's inquiries into the truth about Garak's past.
- Garak's meeting with Quark.
- Sisko accusing Garak of being more than "just a simple tailor."
- Natima shooting Quark.
- Natima: "Oh Quark. I've always loved you! Even when I hated you!"
- Sisko being forced by the Bajorans to turn over their Cardassian guests.
- Garak's conversation with Toran.
- Quark begging Odo to let Natima and the others go.
- Garak confronting Quark, Natima, and the others during their escape.
- Garak killing Toran.
- Rules of Acquisition; 223. (Quark is interrupted before he can cite it.)
- Morn appearances; 1. At the bar in the scene where Odo confronts Quark about the prospect of Quark procuring a cloaking device.

#### **Comments:**

This is a very strange and entertaining episode with regards to Quark. It's difficult to accept Quark actually fell in true love with Natima to the point where profit (almost?) stopped mattering. But that's what fuels the greatness of this rather unusual story because as unbelievable in theory it is, it is portrayed absolutely convincingly. The story portrays two parallel plots; Quark's love for Natima and Garak's love for the state which exiled him. Garak's presence always enhances an episode; the combination of Quark's unusual behavior and Garak's involvement make this rather dry plot quite a bit better than it should have been.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 2x19 - Blood Oath**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-3-27

**My Rating  
- 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dax risks her life and her future with Starfleet to fulfill a blood oath made with three aged Klingons.*

#### **Problems:**

- This episode made the Klingon forehead problem much worse before Ent: Affliction solved it.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Klingons live much longer than humans.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kor and Koloth's appearances.
- Odo lamenting about having a "Klingon afternoon."
- Koloth: "A sharp knife is nothing without a sharp eye."
- Kor, regarding the albino: "I will cut his heart out and eat it while he watches me with his dying breath!"
- Dax dueling Koloth.
- Dax describing her alternative tactical strategy.
- Kang killing the albino.

- The silence when Jadzia returned to her duties.

**Comments:**

Introducing Kor, Koloth, and Kang. Oh, do you remember them? Yep, seems Klingons live for an extremely long period of time. These were some Klingons who gave Kirk some headaches in the original series. The three Klingons and Dax's previous host Curzon swore a blood oath to avenge the death of their Klingon sons murdered by the treacherous albino. In this episode they band together for one last glorious battle together. In the end, Koloth and Kang die, but Kor lives. And we will see him again. I very much enjoyed this episode. DS9 did the Klingon stuff very well; this is the first of many such episodes.



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x20 - The Maquis, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1994-4-24

**My Rating**  
- 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko uncovers a Federation terrorist group whose actions could start another war with the Cardassians.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Cardassians tend to have photographic memories. They also put their children in intensive mind training programs at the age of four.
- This is the first mention of the badlands, an area of space where ships are lost due to plasma storms.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Jadzia mentioning dating captain Boday, a Gallamite with a transparent skull. The first of many mentionings.
- Hudson and Sisko reminiscing.
- Sakonna discussing a business proposition with Quark.
- Dukat sitting in Sisko's quarters.
- Kira's report on what Jake is doing.
- The first sight of a Maquis vessel destroying Cardassian ships.
- Quark's meal with Sakonna.
- Sakonna: "I wish to procure weapons."
- Quark's reaction to Sakonna's request for weapons.
- Odo defending the security procedures of DS9 when it was Terok Nor.
- Rules of Acquisition; 214. Never begin a business negotiation on an empty stomach.

**Comments:**

This episode marks the official beginning of the Maquis, obviously, given its name. One thing I like is the direct continuity with TNG: Journey's End, the previously aired episode. I'm fond of Sisko's attitude toward the Maquis. Sympathy, but no exceptions for they're criminals and should be stopped at all costs. This is the first of many of Sisko's strong stands on moral issues. The episode ends with a cliffhanger as Sisko realizes his friend Hudson is in fact a member of the Maquis. A very good episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 2x21 - The Maquis, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 1994-5-1

**My Rating**  
- 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko and Gul Dukat join forces in an effort to avert a war between the Cardassians and a group of Federation colonists led by Sisko's old friend.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Properly trained Cardassians can resist Vulcan mind melds.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko's speech to Kira.
- Sisko and Odo leaving Quark in jail.
- Legate Parn regarding Gul Dukat being held by the Maquis pending execution: "What difference does it make whether we do it or they do it?"
- Dukat ridiculing his interrogators.
- Odo using his shape shifting abilities in battle.
- Dukat describing the Cardassian legal system. Entertainment, not justice.
- Kira: "With that kind of firepower, the Bajorans could have lost a full scale assault on Cardassia!" Dukat: "And lost."
- Dukat scaring the wits out of the contraband freighter.
- Sakonna: "I am a Vulcan. My emotional state is irrelevant." Quark: "Well I'm a Ferengi and my emotional state is very relevant."
- Sakonna to Quark: "Do you propose to lecture me on logic?"
- Quark's lecture about buying peace at a bargain price to Sakonna.
- The space battle. Nice!
- Rules of Acquisition; 3. Never spend more for an acquisition than you have to.

#### **Comments:**

Nothing unexpected here. One notable detail is how Sisko saves Dukat's life; something he will do again, and something he will come to regret. Sisko working with Dukat was definitely surreal. Sisko's resolve remains strong, he is more willing to defend the Cardassians, the treaty, and the peace; turning on former Federation members, even his former friends, to accomplish this. I liked the way he balanced his loyalties and duties in this episode so perfectly. His actions were the perfect model for a Starfleet officer, in my opinion. Everything from his chats with Cal to his handling of Dukat was great. The climax was a lot of fun to watch, the space battle of unexpectedly high quality. I liked this second part better than the first part.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 2x22 - The Wire**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-5-8

**My  
Rating - 8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Bashir fights to save his Cardassian friend Garak, who is slowly being killed by a brain implant to which he is addicted.*

#### **Problems:**

#### **Factoids:**

- Garak's 4th episode.
- This is Andrew Robinson's (the actor who plays Gark) favorite episode.
- This episode marks the first appearance of Enabran Tain.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak and Bashir discussing "The Never Ending Sacrifice", a supposed classic Cardassian novel.
- Bashir regarding Jadzia's plant: "In my expert medical opinion, I'd say it's sick."
- Bashir: "I'm a doctor, not a botanist!" Count 10 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Garak's seizure.
- Odo: "I routinely monitor all of Quark's subspace communications." Bashir: "Is that legal?" Odo: "It's in the best interest of station security."
- Odo regarding the Obsidian Order: "It is said that Cardassian citizens cannot sit down to a meal without each dish being dually noted and recorded and by the Order."
- Garak telling inflamed stories of his past.
- Bashir's meeting with Enabran Tain.
- Tain regarding Garak: "That man has a rare gift for obfuscation."
- Garak foreshadowing a Cardassian Klingon war.
- Bashir: "Out of all the stories you told me, which ones were true and which ones weren't?" Garak: "My dear doctor, they're all true." Bashir: "Even the lies?" Garak: "Especially the lies."
- Morn appearances; 1. I've read that Morn appears in this episode somewhere around Quark's, but I've not been able to see him.



### Comments:

Finally, a Garak's past episode! Up to this point, we know literally nothing about his past other than that he was most certainly exiled from Cardassia. At the end of this episode, all we know for certain is that his first name is Elim and that he has some connection to the head of the Obsidian Order, Enabran Tain because we don't know which of his stories are lies and which are the truth. Though, it's fun to rewatch this episode after one's seen all of DS9 just to see Garak tell all his stories again with full prior knowledge of his full past, though I'm going off a tangent here. This episode features one of the best acting performances in all of Andrew Robinson's entire career, with his performance as Garak in this episode. A splendid showing.



### Star Trek DS9 - 2x23 - Crossover

Originally Aired: 1994-5-15

My  
Rating -  
5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*A mishap in the wormhole sends Kira and Bashir into the mirror universe where Bajor is a tyrannical power and humans are slaves.*

### Problems:

None

### Factoids:

- This episode is the first to mention "New Bajor", the first Bajoran colony in the Gamma quadrant.
- Garak's 5th appearance.
- This episode is a reference to TOS: Mirror, Mirror.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira and Bashir crossing over into the mirror universe.
- Evil Kira describing the events of TOS: Mirror, Mirror.
- Mirror Quark: "Gold pressed what?"
- Mirror Quark shot down a hero.
- Mirror Sisko calling Mirror O'Brien "smiley".
- Bashir killing Mirror Odo.

### Comments:

The second of a long line of Mirror Universe episodes, the first was TOS: Mirror, Mirror. It seems the Terran Empire has been destroyed thanks to Kirk convincing Mirror Spock to initiate reform. In its place, the Alliance. Some kind of joint Klingon, Cardassian, and Bajoran Empire. While I like the idea behind these types of episodes, this one serves as little more than as an introduction to the DS9 Mirror characters and as a result features not very much else content. Thankfully, the introductions are not wasted. We will see them again.



### Star Trek DS9 - 2x24 - The Collaborator

Originally Aired: 1994-5-22

My  
Rating -  
4

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Kira must investigate the man she loves when she learns he may be the Cardassian collaborator responsible for the massacre of 43 Bajorans.*

### Problems:

None

### Factoids:

None

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira insulting Vedek Winn.
- Kira and Odo talking to the collaborator.
- Vedek Winn's meeting with Sisko.
- Kira and Odo waking in on Quark. Kira: "Don't be so defensive!" Quark: "I can't help it, between the two of you I'm developing a persecution complex!"
- Rules of Acquisition; 285 (last rule). No good deed ever goes unpunished.

**Comments:**

Vedek Winn manipulates Vedek Bareil to get him to withdraw his candidacy for the next Kai. An interesting idea, but drowns under the weight of zero plot development. The whole thing plays out exactly as it was expected to with no major surprises. One thing to note is that the consequences of this episode are majorly important to the series. Kai Winn becomes twice as destructive as Vedek Winn was, Kira already regrets Winn becoming Kai, but she'll have twice as many reasons to later in the series.

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x25 - Tribunal**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-6-5

**My Rating**

- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*O'Brien is arrested by the Cardassians and put on trial for a crime he insists he did not commit.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien finding it difficult to leave the station.
- Keiko appearance.
- O'Brien's reaction to being captured by the Cardassians.
- O'Brien's objections to the Cardassian legal system.
- O'Brien to Odo regarding his capture: "They did some dental work that wasn't much fun"
- Odo pestering Makbar at the trial.
- Makbar laying into O'Brien for being a racist against Cardassians.
- The abrupt change in the attitude of the Cardassian court when Sisko showed up with the Cardassian spy.

**Comments:**

This episode was the much expected closer look at the Cardassian justice system. We've gotten tidbits of information about it since TNG: The Wounded and onward. This episode bears the most resemblance to TNG: Chain of Command. When O'Brien is first captured by the Cardassians, his treatment is nearly identical to how Picard was treated in the said episode. Unfortunately, this trial is largely a waste of time. While I enjoyed all of the ironies concerning it, one wonders how such a court could exist in the Cardassian Empire for so many thousands of years. Nevertheless, an enjoyable episode.

**Star Trek DS9 - 2x26 - The Jem'Hadar**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-6-12

**My**

**Rating -**

**9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*During a trip to the Gamma Quadrant with Jake and Nog, Sisko and Quark are imprisoned by soldiers working for a mysterious power known as the Dominion.*

**Problems:**

- Eris' telekinetic abilities seem largely inconsistent with the Vorta later featured in the series. My guess is we're forced to assume she was genetically enhanced by the Dominion for this mission and that she was lying about her species when she told Sisko the story of her people.

**Factoids:**

- This episode marks the first appearance of the Jem'Hadar (obviously, given the name), the ever vigilant army of the Dominion. And the Vorta, the ever vigilant administrators of the Dominion. This episode also is the first to mention the founders, though no information about them is given other than the fact that they founded and control the Dominion.
- The Dominion use a phased-polaron beam weapon to penetrate Federation shields.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Quark asking Odo to let him use the station's monitors to run commercials for Quark's bar. Hilarious.
- Quark pleading with Sisko about his advertisement plans.
- Sisko and Quark captured by the Jem'Hadar.
- The Jem'Hadar soldier discussing his extensive knowledge of the Alpha Quadrant. I like his preoccupation with the Klingons, and wanting to meet a Klingon. A warrior race vs. a warrior race.
- Jake and Nog on the runabout.
- The first sighting of a Jem'Hadar ship.
- The Jem'Hadar soldier beaming through the station's shields and walking through the station's forcefields then telling Kira to her face that the Dominion has annihilated the colony of New Bajor.
- Sisko: "Quark, maybe you'd better take a look at this." Quark: "Sure! Quark be quiet. Quark stand watch. Quark pick a lock! All you ever do is order me around! You know, commander I think I've figured out why hew-mons don't like Ferengi." Sisko: "Not now Quark." Quark: "The way I see it, hew-mons used to be a lot like Ferengi. Greedy, acquisitive, interested only in profit. We're a constant reminder of a part of your past you'd like to forget." Sisko: "Quark, we don't have time for this." Quark: "But you're overlooking something. Hew-mons used to be a lot worse than the Ferengi. Slavery, concentration camps, inter-stellar wars. We have nothing in our past that approaches that kind of barbarism. You see? We're nothing like you. We're better. Now, if you'll excuse me, I have a lock to pick."
- Kira and Odo discussing Quark fondly. Odo: "I'd rather see him in jail than in the hands of the Dominion."
- I love seeing another galaxy class starship! The battle with the Jem'Hadar ships was awesome.
- The destruction of the Odyssey.
- Sisko confronting Eris. Eris: "You have no idea what's begun here."
- Rules of Acquisition; 102. Nature decays but latinum lasts forever.
- Morn appearances; 1. Quark offers to counsel him, then cuts him off just as he's about to speak, forgetting about his offer.

### Comments:

This episode begins the much needed Federation confrontation with the Dominion. I suspect this wasn't done in the first season, or earlier in the second, because of the TNG wrap up. Now that all the attention is on DS9, DS9 can finally start to do cool things of its own. This episode bears nice continuity with the previous episode mentioning the Dominion. Especially with regards to Quark's mentioning that the Ferengi have been trying to enter into trade negotiations with the Dominion for quite some time. So we get our expected confrontation, and what a confrontation! The Dominion destroyed the new Bajoran colony and demonstrated its ability to beam across long distances through shields! The crew of the USS Odyssey was handled very nicely, I loved the uniforms. They had TNG style uniforms, which is consistent with the commonly held belief at the time that older starships still had old-style uniforms, but Starfleet was giving newly commissioned ships and bases new-style uniforms. A slow transition. The battle with the Jem'Hadar in this episode was fantastic. The destruction of the USS Odyssey was downright shocking; to see a galaxy class starship taken down so easily! A great finale.



### Star Trek DS9 - 3x01 - The Search, Part I

Originally Aired: 1994-9-26

My  
Rating -  
9

### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Hoping to avert an invasion, Sisko takes his officers into the Gamma Quadrant on a dangerous mission to find the mysterious leaders of the Dominion.*

### Problems:

- Why do Odo's people emulate his imperfect humanoid form? We're often told Odo is not an expert at shape shifting. I guess we're supposed to assume his people take his imperfect form as some sort of polite gesture of affection.

### Factoids:

- This is the first episode to feature the Defiant.
- This episode features an odd hair arrangement for Dax which won't last.
- This episode marks the first real cooperation between the Romulans and the Federation in a

- military manner, with the Romulans allowing the Federation to use one of their cloaking devices.
- The Defiant can house at least one shuttlecraft.
- This episode is the first to feature the leader of the Dominion, the female shapeshifter.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The first appearance of the Defiant!
- Sisko: "I've brought back a little surprise for the Dominion!"
- Sisko: "Officially, it's Defiant is classified as an escort vessel. Unofficially, the Defiant's a warship, nothing more, nothing less." Kira: "I thought Starfleet didn't believe in warships." Sisko: "Desperate times bring desperate measures. Five years ago, Starfleet began exploring the possibility of building a new class of starship. This ship would have no families, no science labs, no luxuries of any kind. It was designed for one purpose only. To fight and defeat the Borg. The Defiant was a prototype. The first ship in what would have been a new Federation battle fleet."
- Dax: "So what happened?" Sisko: "The Borg threat became less urgent. Also some design flaws crept up during the ship's shakedown cruise. So Starfleet decided to abandon the project." O'Brien: "What sort of design flaws?" Sisko: "You'll have complete access to the ship evaluation reports. But to put it simply it's overgunned and overpowered for a ship its size. During battle drills, it nearly tore itself apart when the engines were tested at full capacity."
- Lt. Commander Michael Eddington's first appearance.
- Odo getting pissed about the Starfleet security officer "stealing" his job.
- Quark: "I'm a little confused, Commander. You want me to go with you to the Gamma Quadrant to help you locate the founders?" Sisko: "See? It's not so confusing after all." Quark: "You're joking with me aren't you, you're having a little fun with Quark."
- Bashir lamenting about the terrible medical facilities.
- Odo getting angry at Quark before reverting to his liquid state.
- Sisko leaving Dax and O'Brien behind.
- Odo describing his "return home" instinct.
- The Defiant blowing up a Jem'Hadar ship.
- Odo meeting his people.

#### Comments:

Holy crap! The Defiant is awesome. I love the history behind her, which I've carefully documented above. Sisko's report about the Dominion to his crew was just really cool. I like the continuity reference to DS9: Rules of Acquisition regarding Quark's dealings with Dominion member races. It makes a great excuse to bring Quark along to pester Odo. \*snickers\* They do a very good job showing us how "unusual" Dominion technology is and how secretive they like to be, what with all the oppression in the Gamma Quadrant. I love how Odo goes on a personal quest trying to find his origins. This episode covers a lot! And does it well. A fantastic episode to begin the season with.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 3x02 - The Search, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-10-3

**My  
Rating -  
7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While Odo struggles to learn the ways of his people, Sisko discovers that the price of peace with the Dominion may be too high.*

#### Problems:

- Why does it takes a mere photon torpedo to destroy the wormhole in this episode but when they actually do attempt this later it takes a complexly configured deflector pulse?

#### Factoids:

- Garak's 6th episode.
- This episode establishes that the shape shifters are the leaders of the Dominion.
- This episode confirms the conjecture that the changelings are a paranoid race because they were hunted. They created the Dominion to protect themselves.
- This episode establishes that the founders sent out 100 infant changelings to explore the galaxy.
- This episode establishes that the Dominion controls hundreds of races in the Gamma Quadrant.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira and Odo meeting the founders.
- Female shapeshifter: "The link is the very foundation of our society. It provides a meaning to our existence. It is a merging of form and thought; the sharing of idea and sensation."
- Female shapeshifter: "To become a thing, is to know a thing. To assume its form is to begin to

understand its existence."

- Garak: "There's an old saying on Cardassia: Enemies make dangerous friends and I fear the Dominion will make a very dangerous friend indeed."
- Sisko barging in on the Dominion negotiations.
- Odo describing what it's like to be a bird.
- Garak's conversation with Sisko.
- Garak's "plan".
- Garak's "final words": "Doctor, I'm afraid I won't be able to have lunch with you today."
- Female shapeshifter: "Major, the changelings are the Dominion."
- Female shapeshifter: "No changeling has ever harmed another."

#### Comments:

Odo found his people! And they're the mysterious founders of the Dominion! Unfortunately, this episode features a minor reset button, which is a poor choice for an episode like this. The Dominion was in fact running test scenarios on real Federation crewmembers. Something about these "it was all a dream!" type episodes just annoys me. I enjoyed it, especially the parts with Odo and the founders, but then those parts were real! ;) I like how Odo uses his influence as a changeling to get everyone freed. I also like the female shapeshifter's resolve, claiming she will not be so generous next time. I like the way the female shapeshifter justifies her conquests. She's "imposing order on a chaotic universe." I like how she parallels her desire for order with Odo's desire for justice. As much as Odo would hate to admit it, he really is just like the Dominion. But he has none of their ethnocentrism, and believes that everyone was born equal. So he can't join the oppressive Dominion.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 3x03 - The House of Quark**

Originally Aired: 1994-10-10

My  
Rating -  
6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*In order to boost his business and gain respect, Quark lies about killing a Klingon, then winds up forced to marry the dead man's widow.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Quark accidentally killing the Klingon.
- Keiko lamenting about having no children to teach.
- Quark manipulating Klingon honor.
- The dead Klingon's wife barging in on Quark.
- O'Brien talking to Sisko about Keiko.
- Gowron appearance.
- Gowron mispronouncing Quark's name.
- Quark discovering the financial trickery of the opposing the Klingon house.
- Quark trying to walk the Klingons through the financial trickery in the high council.
- Gowron: "If you can stand here and murder this pathetic little man, then you have no honor."
- The divorce.
- O'Brien encouraging Keiko to go to Bajor and put her skills to good use on the 6 month expedition.
- Rom showing respect for his brother.
- Rules of Acquisition; 286. When Morn leaves, it's all over. (This is a fake rule that Quark made up.)
- Morn appearances; 1. The first scene.

#### Comments:

A great humor episode clashing Klingon and Ferengi cultures. The thing that most benefits this episode is the skillfully intelligent writing. Klingon honor and ceremonies are accurate with regards to continuity with previous episodes dealing with the Klingons and the culture clash is a convincing, downright enticing story. I very much enjoyed Quark's almost taboo desire for true respect. It shows how much color the Ferengi have. They're not entirely stereotypical greedy profit mongers after all. Despite these changes in pace, everyone was completely in character and the episode

came off as quite enjoyable. I'm also fond of the secondary plot with Keiko and O'Brien. Their marital problems haven't just gone away with Keiko becoming a teacher. I like this. It's some of the best real anti sexism I've seen on Star Trek. Keiko is a person! You can't just give her a hobby to shut her up and keep her happy. She's a Botanist. And as O'Brien said, she should "be the best damn Botanist she can be!"



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 3x04 - Equilibrium**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-10-17

**My Rating -**  
**5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A deadly secret from Dax's past could mean the end of Jadzia's life.*

#### **Problems:**

- Is the Defiant Sisko's own private spaceship or something? Shouldn't it be defending DS9 instead of using it to go galavanting around the Federation? Wouldn't a runabout have been better suited for the trip to Trill?

#### **Factoids:**

- The dates of Joran's birth and death are four digit Stardates which is consistent with his living in the time period of TOS. :)

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko's home-cooked dinner. I am particularly fond of Odo's behavior.
- Jadzia skillfully playing the piano out of nowhere.
- Jadzia getting pissed at Sisko and Kira.
- The Trill Guardian.
- Sisko discovering that Joran held the Dax symbiont.
- Dax: "If you want to know who you are, it's important to know who you've been."
- Dax playing the piano in the end.

#### **Comments:**

This episode opens with funny Dax behavior and initially comes across as being another DS9: Dramatis Personae, maybe with a little DS9: Dax mixed into it as the episode develops. Instead, it ends up being one of the better Dax character development episodes. The issue of Joran is revisited several times, best revisited in the 7th season in my opinion. So this episode isn't just some kind of filler. This episode also reveals a Trill coverup, that almost any Trill can be joined with a symbiont. This could actually go a long way toward explaining away a few of the inconsistencies in TNG: The Host. Perhaps any species may join with a Trill symbiont after all. Obviously, this episode doesn't explain away all those problems, but it helps. Overall, I'm satisfied with this episode at large.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 3x05 - Second Skin**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-10-24

**My Rating**  
**- 5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kira is kidnapped by the Cardassians, who try to prove to her that she is really one of their people.*

#### **Problems:**

- Why didn't the Defiant cloak through Cardassian space instead of risking exactly the kind of incident with the Galor class warships they ran into?

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first of many episodes in which Kira declares her hatred of the holosuites.
- Garak's 7th episode.
- Garak mentions being claustrophobic for the first time in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira meeting people who remember her who she's never met.
- Kira a Cardassian.
- Kira chatting with "her father."
- Sisko and Odo extorting Garak to help them.

- Kira seeing her own dead Bajoran body.
- Garak bluffing(?) his way past the Galor class warships.
- Kira uncovering the plot to ruin the Legate.
- Garak killing his old nemesis.
- The Legate telling Kira never to trust Garak despite how he helped them.
- Kira's expression of respect to the Legate in the end.

#### Comments:

This is a nicely constructed episode. The mystery plot is enticing all the way up to the end. All through the episode, the mystery just gets more and more confusing; personally, I enjoy an episode I can't immediately figure out which surprises me in the end. I like how the climax involved a minimal amount of senseless violence. Garak's pointed murder of his old nemesis being the exception, but this is Garak we're talking about. He's forgiven! It annoys me once again that the Defiant is being used as Sisko's personal taxi, but we're given a better reason this time, the ship almost came to blows with Cardassian warships. Finally, I enjoyed the ending, especially the final scenes. Usually in stories like this, the victim (in this case Kira) is left with a profoundly traumatic experience. But Kira has developed a new respect for Cardassians, similar to what we saw of her in DS9: Duet. This episode could have been much better though if so much time wasn't wasted on the mystery. I'm not sure what they could have replaced it with, but if you watch this episode and compare it to DS9: Duet, something about DS9: Duet just feels better. A fairly average episode.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 3x06 - The Abandoned Originally Aired: 1994-10-31

**My Rating**  
- 6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Odo tries to convince a young, violent Jem'Hadar that there is more to life than fighting and killing.*

#### Problems:

- How do the Jem'Hadar grow so quickly with no sustenance? For that matter, how can they live at all even after fully grown with no sustenance? It seems ridiculous to me that anyone can live without eating, drinking, or sleeping by living off of small amounts of a single drug.

#### Factoids:

- This episode marks the first sight of Odo's odd quarters.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Odo closing his door behind him as Kira looks in curiously when he answers his door chime.
- Odo placing Kira's plant inside the bucket he no longer needs to use.
- The dinner with Jake, Sisko, and the Dabo girl.
- O'Brien: "Seems a pretty cold-blooded thing to do." Odo: "Chief, my people don't have blood."
- The Jem'Hadar boy fighting on the holosuite.
- Rules of Acquisition; (unknown number) Inspect the merchandise before you make the deal. Sisko suggests that there should be a rule of acquisition like this and Quark says that there is one like this, but doesn't provide a number.

#### Comments:

I'm quite fond of this one. It was a clever way to show us more about the Jem'Hadar without some sort of meaningless conflict. Additionally, Jake's relationship with the Dabo girl and Sisko's objections to it come to a climax here. Sisko is forced (once again) to accept his son for what he is, and it turns out he's pleasantly surprised. The ending is a little contrived. It may have been a cooler episode if more effort was put into capturing and studying the Jem'Hadar by Starfleet. I admit this that they crew did the more moral thing in this episode, but sometimes bending morality makes for a more fun episode, which DS9 will do later as its conflict with the Dominion escalates.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 3x07 - Civil Defense Originally Aired: 1994-11-7

**My Rating**  
- 7

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*A trapped crew fights to save the station from self-destruction when an automated Cardassian security program is accidentally activated.*

#### Problems:

- Why would destroying the computer terminals which send commands to the life support system destroy the life support system itself? Surely the life support system isn't actually centered in ops behind those controls?

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 8th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien accidentally triggering Gul Dukat's security program.
- Quark: "You mean I'm stuck here with you?" Odo: "No. I'm stuck here with you!"
- Garak appearing on ops, passing through forcefields freely.
- Odo telling Quark he's the most devious Ferengi he's ever met and Quark thanking him for the compliment.
- The computer replicating phasers set to kill and shooting at everyone in ops! One of the funniest moments of DS9.
- Dukat showing up. I love how the phaser shoots around him.
- Dukat using the replicator. It gives him red leaf tea, then rereplicates the phaser! Hahaha!
- Dukat and Garak insulting each other.
- Dukat triggering another automated program featuring a recording from one of his superiors, condemning him for his cowardice.
- Jake saving O'Brien.
- The reactor overload being absorbed by the shields. Cool effect.
- Odo naming several Ferengi he knows to be more clever than Quark in the final scene, to get under his skin. Rom is among them!
- Rules of Acquisition; 75. Home is where the heart is, but the stars are made of latinum.

**Comments:**

An automated security program with many, many surprises. This is a very memorable episode. Garak and Dukat's scenes are simply classic and the danger is very realistic. The curious circumstantial alliance between Dukat and the main cast was fun to watch. It may be considered a cliché to keep making Dukat an ally, but in my opinion every time they do it it's done right. The climax of the episode is very nice. I love how Jake saves O'Brien's life and Sisko saves the station. An action packed, fun episode to watch which makes excellent use of a broad set of characters.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x08 - Meridian**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-11-14

**My Rating**

**- 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dax falls in love with a man who will soon disappear with his planet into another dimension for 60 years.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Jeffrey Combs plays Tiron in this episode. He will later go on to play the most remarkable Weyoun, Brunt, and Shran characters among others! AFAIK, he plays more (different) characters on Star Trek than any other actor and it all begins here. Interestingly, Jeffrey Combs originally auditioned for the role of Riker in TNG; obviously he didn't get the part, but Frakes liked him so much that he cast him as Tiron for this episode along with some of his other characters later.
- According to Jadzia, the Trill spots go "all the way down."
- Sisko mentions that they managed to get the probe "deeper into the sun's corona." This implies they were using the recently developed metaphasic shielding technology to shield the probe.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira sarcastically proclaiming her love for Odo to get rid of Tiron.
- Quark making a deal with Tiron to get a holographic image of Kira!
- Quark trying to take a holo image of Kira.
- Quark: "Isn't there some petty thief you can harass?" Odo: "Just you."
- Kira sabotaging Quark's holo program.
- Kira with Quark's head in the holo program. Hilarious!



- Jadzia unable to shift with her new friends.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Not technically an appearance, but Kira says she got a message that Morn wanted to see her in Quark's.

#### Comments:

This episode is a little ill-conceived. It's nice that they're taking the Defiant into the Gamma quadrant instead of using it as their personal taxi, and it's nice that they're meeting new, non-Dominion people with it in the spirit of Star Trek, but this love story between Dax and Deral is just tiresome. I also found it hard to believe Dax would throw away her career just because she fell in love with alien guy of the week. Frankly, that comes across as just a little sexist. Something Star Trek tries hard to avoid, but doesn't do a very successful job this time around. Finally, it's obvious throughout the whole episode that something will happen to force Jadzia away from her new companion, so nothing comes as a surprise. Frankly, the silly B plot onboard the station is far more interesting to watch. Though the ending is a redeeming quality. Despite the predictability, they do a good job making you feel sorry for Jadzia, which is nice.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 3x09 - Defiant**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-11-21

**My  
Rating -  
7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Wil Riker's renegade duplicate steals the Defiant and attacks Cardassian territory, forcing Sisko to assist Gul Dukat in stopping him.*

#### Problems:

- So I just got done ranting about the uniforms in Star Trek VII: Generations. Now, Riker is wearing an old-style TNG uniform in this episode. Since the various cast of the Enterprise seems to have migrated from the TNG to the DS9 uniforms before our eyes throughout the course of the film, this must mean all starships are finally making this transition now. So shouldn't Riker have been wearing a DS9 style uniform? Maybe not... In fairness, I'll let this one slide.
- There was no mention of the destruction of the Enterprise in this episode. They really should have taken care of that nitpick, or aired this episode before Star Trek VII: Generations.
- Why is Kira on duty in the scenes just after Bashir relieved her?
- Riker: "I have nothing to say to you, O'Brien. I think you know why." Why are we not given an explanation regarding this? I guess we're just supposed to assume Riker was lying and creating a false hostility between them to make him go away.

#### Factoids:

- The Thomas Riker in this episode is from TNG: Second Chances.
- This episode establishes that the Romulans loaned the cloaking device on the Defiant to the Federation under the condition that it's used only in the Gamma Quadrant and that the Federation shares all intelligence they gather about the Dominion with the Romulans.
- Dukat claims the Central Command and the Obsidian Order's adversarial relationship with one another has (somehow) maintained stability in the Cardassian government for five centuries.
- This is the first episode to feature quantum torpedos.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira getting pissed at everybody.
- Riker stealing the Defiant!
- Sisko and Odo telling Dukat the story of Thomas Riker.
- Sisko's visit to Cardassia Prime. I love how Dukat makes a fool of himself.
- Riker: "Tough little ship."
- Dukat and Sisko discussing their sons.
- Kira chewing out Riker, telling him he's bad at terrorism.
- The Defiant battling Cardassian ships!
- Kira convincing Riker to surrender.

#### Comments:

Another very nicely done episode in which Dukat is an ally. A very exciting episode at that. The idea to bring back Thomas Riker was certainly interesting, but I have misgivings with how it was done. This episode should have been aired before Star Trek VII: Generations. There are other issues as well, see the problems section. Watching the Defiant strut her stuff, kicking the crap out of Cardassians was a lot of fun indeed, and watching Sisko on Cardassia Prime was excellent drama as well. Even though very flawed, I still think the story was nicely woven together. My final nitpick

for the episode is Kira's final words to Riker. She promises she'll get him out of Cardassia somehow. Well, she thoroughly does not keep that promise. There could be many reasons why though. Cardassia goes through a series of political shakeups and wars in the next few seasons. There's a strong possibility Thomas Riker was killed. Still, in the end, this episode turns Thomas Riker into twice the loose end he was before! Despite all that, I enjoyed the episode very much.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 3x10 - Fascination**

**Originally Aired:** 1994-11-28

**My  
Rating -  
4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Bajoran celebration on the station serves as the backdrop for an epidemic of inexplicable romantic attractions among the crew.*

**Problems:**

- Why does Lwaxana's telepathic influence only affect the senior staff?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Keiko, having not had a good time on her trip back because of Lwaxana. :)
- Keiko and O'Brien arguing.
- Jake trying to seduce Kira!
- Bareil trying to seduce Dax.
- Jealous O'Brien.
- Quark: "You hew-mons, you never learn. You let your women go out in public, hold jobs, wear clothing, and you wonder why your marriages fall apart!"
- Jadzia seducing Sisko.
- Kira and Bashir falling for each other.
- The staff figuring out what's going on.
- Bareil attacking Sisko and Sisko's response.
- Quark trying to seduce Keiko.
- Lwaxana seeing through Odo, noticing he's attracted to Kira.
- Morn appearances; 1. Talking to Jadzia about his problems. (Never actually says anything onscreen.) 2. Seen behind a juggler while Quark is selling festival items at the promenade.

**Comments:**

This is a successful humor episode, but in many ways comes across as far too silly. The issues between O'Brien and Keiko are only barely convincing. The story itself is acceptable, but the humor in the episode makes the whole endeavor between Keiko and O'Brien seem more silly than it should have been. I'm fond of the ending, where everything is "fixed" and made to be serious again, but personally, I would have preferred O'Brien and Keiko's meetup to be under completely different circumstances.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x11 - Past Tense, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-1-2

**My Rating  
- 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A transporter accident sends Sisko, Bashir and Dax three centuries back in time to a crucial point in Earth's history.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to the Star Trek timeline, in the year 2024 the United States had "Sanctuary districts" grouping homeless, bankrupt, or otherwise "undesirable" people (assuming of course no criminal record, otherwise they'd be in prison) all into a single ghetto. According to the rest of the Star Trek timeline, that places the historical events of this episode after the Eugenics war of the 1990s but before the third world war.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Dax and Kira complaining about the water color on Earth.

- Dax smoothly lying about who she is and easily fitting into the historical Earth.
- Sisko realizing the importance of the current date.
- Sisko assuming Gabriel Bell's identity.
- Rules of Acquisition; 111. Treat people in your debt like family. Exploit them. 217. You can't free a fish from water.

**Comments:**

This is a very intriguing episode. The first point to discuss is the temporal repercussions. Star Trek has a long history of "predicting" events which do not come true, the first of which are the Eugenics wars of the 1990s. From the period of the Eugenics wars on, we're supposed to assume that in the Star Trek universe, events are no longer parallel with real Earth history. That said, the "revised" Star Trek timeline has a number of plot holes. Most notably the Eugenics wars and the third world war and the discrepancy regarding whether or not they are in fact the same war. There is much to redeem this time travel episode though. My favorite detail is the mention of the US going through a rough economical period, which would seem to mesh together well with the supposed occurrence of the Eugenics wars in the 1990s. Large scale wars tend to mess up the economy.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x12 - Past Tense, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-1-9

**My Rating**  
- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Trapped in Earth's past, Sisko must assume the role of a pivotal historic figure in order to restore the future.*

**Problems:**

- Why does everyone keep pumping their pump-action shotguns? The pump isn't there to intimidate people. It's there to eject an empty round after a shot.
- How could O'Brien speak during transport?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira's disguise on her "Bajoran heritage."
- Kira and O'Brien beaming into the 60s.
- Kira and O'Brien beaming away in front of the (probably stoned) people from the 60s.
- Jadzia's scene with the crazy guy, declaring she's an alien.
- The chaos as the government attacks the Sanctuary.
- Sisko's photo appearing in the historical records for Gabriel Bell.

**Comments:**

The second part of the episode has a nice ending. I'm glad to see they handled Sisko's involvement in the past so eloquently. I'm also fond of the little surprise at the end to find Sisko's photo in the place of Gabriel Bell's. In the end, this episode was trying to make a point about American social policy. A paradise can easily become oppression. A society of equals can easily become an aristocracy. Maintaining true freedom takes constant vigilance. Overall, I'm usually very displeased with time travel stories in general, but this one avoided a lot of the common pitfalls, even though it didn't really repair any previously done damage either. Overall, a fine two parter.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x13 - Life Support**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-1-30

**My Rating**  
- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Bashir must use questionable methods in order to keep Vedek Bareil alive long enough to help bring about a Bajoran peace treaty with Cardassia.*

**Problems:**

- Bashir claims removing the rest of Bareil's brain and replacing it with a positronic matrix would remove the "last bit of humanity he has left." Shouldn't that be Bajoran or something? Bareil is clearly not human.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there are many things about the brain still not fully understood in the 24th century.
- Interestingly, Bareil's brain replacements are positronic, the same as Data's brain. Cool continuity.
- Jake and Nog as "arrested" on charges of stealing from a Tholian ambassador. The Tholians were first featured in TOS: The Tholian Web.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bareil's "death".
- Bareil's return from the dead.
- Nog being a chauvinist pig.
- Bashir laying into Kai Winn.
- Sisko encouraging Jake to make up with Nog.
- Bashir: "The brain has a spark of life that can't be replicated."
- Odo arresting Jake and Nog.
- Nog: "I don't even know what a Tholian looks like!" Hah, nor does the audience. We never actually saw them on screen in the episode they were featured in TOS: The Tholian Web. :)
- Jake and Nog making up.
- Odo leaving Jake and Nog in the jail cell for a while.
- Kira pleading with Bashir to keep Bareil alive by removing the rest of his brain and replacing it with a positronic matrix.

**Comments:**

I have mixed feelings about this episode. Bareil's decision to sacrifice his life help Winn was frankly foolish, but was nicely symbolic in many ways. Bareil's death once again demonstrates his humility. He threw away his chance to become Kai, and how he throws away his life to help a virtual enemy. Another good point is that Bareil's death frees Odo to pursue Kira. Of course this won't happen any time soon, creating the conditions for it is important. Another high point is once again Kai Winn is manipulating events. It's almost as if she had Bareil's death planned. Maybe she even sabotaged their ship! Okay, maybe that's a little paranoid. Overall, I'm pleased with the episode, despite how annoyed I am with Bareil's behavior. An otherwise intelligent man throws his life away...

**Star Trek DS9 - 3x14 - Heart of Stone**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-2-6

**My Rating**

**- 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A desperate situation that could cost Kira her life forces Odo to face the depth of his feelings for her.*

**Problems:**

- Odo says he prides himself on being an acute observer of "human nature." Shouldn't he have said "humanoid nature?"

**Factoids:**

- This is the episode in which Nog first expresses interest in joining Starfleet.
- O'Brien just can't get enough of that Kayaking stuff. Now he's enlisted Odo, according to this episode. :)

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo brooding over a supposed faux pas Kira committed unknowingly.
- Nog asking Sisko to help him join Starfleet.
- Kira getting stuck in the crystal formation.
- Quark to Rom: "Everything that goes wrong here is your fault. It says so in your contract!"
- Jake thinking Nog joking about wanting to join Starfleet.
- Sisko and Dax giving Nog busywork to test his seriousness.
- Kira and Odo discussing O'Brien's Kayaking fetish.
- Odo protecting Kira using himself as a giant shield.
- Odo discussing the origins of his name, Odo Ital.
- The female changeling revealing herself.

- Rules of Acquisition; 18. A Ferengi without profit is no Ferengi at all.

**Comments:**

I like this one, as it appropriately explores the developing relationship between Kira and Odo. I like how Odo hides his feelings for Kira at the end of the episode. "Just a slip of the tongue, nothing important." This episode also nicely explores Rom and his son. Rom is a mechanical genius indeed. His hidden talents have surfaced a number of times. But I think he's closer to being autistic than a genius. He's weak in many areas, but extremely strong in others. Overall, I'm glad to see the Ferengi are being taken seriously in this episode and I enjoyed the rather complex character-driven plot.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x15 - Destiny**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-2-13

**My  
Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko ignores an ancient Bajoran prophecy of doom in order to undertake a joint scientific venture with the Cardassians.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo: "It's been my experience that all humanoids have an agenda of some sort."
- O'Brien's contentious dealings with the Cardassian scientist.
- The Cardassian scientist hitting on O'Brien because she thought O'Brien desired her.
- The Defiant firing on the comet.
- The comet leaving a selithium trail through the wormhole so that communications could be possible.
- Vedek Yarka describing another prophecy. If you've seen all of DS9, this will sound strangely familiar! ;)
- Rules of Acquisition; 34. War is good for business. 35. Peace is good for business.
- Morn appearances; 1. Bashir mentions Morn came to the infirmary after drinking some of Quark's bad Kanar. He's not actually seen.

**Comments:**

This episode nicely examines Sisko's refusal to accept his designation by the Bajoran people as Emissary. In fact, for the first time ever, I think he has finally begun to accept his title as Emissary, for he has seen a Bajoran prophecy come true before his eyes! Beyond this, this episode makes some nice progress with regards to the wormhole. It is now possible to communicate through it! An overall fine episode even though it's not spectacular.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x16 - Prophet Motive**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-2-20

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When the Ferengi leader suddenly decides to abolish his race's greedy ways, Quark is determined to find out the truth behind his actions.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir's negative reaction to being nominated for the Carrington award.
- Zek's revised Rules of Acquisition and Quark and Rom's reaction.
- Bashir and O'Brien getting under each other's skin during the dart game.
- Odo: "I have a friend at Starfleet Intelligence and she has a friend who has a cousin who's

married to the assistant of one of the members of the Federation medical council." Bashir: "Really..?" Odo: "And according to my friend, her friend heard something from his cousin that his wife heard from the council member that I thought you might find interesting." Bashir: "Which is?" Odo: "Dr. Wade is not going to win the Carrington." Bashir: "Oh, not you too."

- Odo just "knowing" somehow that Bashir was working on his acceptance speech.
- Rom having embezzled money from the Nagus.
- Rules of Acquisition (revised by Zek); 1. If they want their money back, give it to them. 2. Never (we don't hear the rest) Never () 3. Keep (we don't hear the rest) 4. Profit (we don't hear the rest) 5. A (we don't hear the rest) 6. Good (we don't hear the rest) 7. Smile (we don't hear the rest) 8. Honesty (we don't hear the rest) 10. Greed is dead. 21. Never place profit before friendship. 22. Latinum tarnishes, but family is forever. 23. Money can never replace dignity. 285. A good deed is its own reward.
- Rules of Acquisition (real); 10. Greed is eternal.
- Morn appearances; 1. Behind Zek just after Zek orders everyone a week. 2. In Quark's orb experience.

#### Comments:

Another humorous Ferengi episode. The Prophets have turned Zek into a "more pure" Ferengi by de-evolving him. :) Though I like this episode, nothing particularly groundbreaking actually happens. This is a filler episode. Though a well done filler episode.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 3x17 - Visionary** Originally Aired: 1995-2-27

**My  
Rating -  
6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An accident causes O'Brien to inadvertently jump briefly into the near future, where he witnesses his own death ... and worse.*

#### Problems:

- How does future O'Brien who goes back in time call Sisko when has no comm. badge.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- O'Brien seeing himself in the future.
- The Romulans demanding the Federation give them more intelligence in exchange for the cloaking device.
- O'Brien seeing himself again, this time as the other O'Brien.
- O'Brien timeshifting into a bar fight at Quarks.
- Kira: "I'm always diplomatic!" The next scene during her interview, Kira, very pissed off: "That's the most ridiculous thing I've ever heard!" Nice scenework there.
- Kira telling Odo about her conversation with the Romulans. I like how Kira and Odo both deny their love for each other. Ah, the blind leading the blind!
- Miles seeing himself die in the future.
- Sisko, surprised that Odo listed Quark as possibly being involved: "You think Quark had something to do with this?" Odo, surprised at the question: "I always investigate Quark."
- Future Bashir giving O'Brien instructions on how to get present Bashir to find the damage to his brain and correct it before it's too late. Very surreal.
- Similar to the last episode with Bashir, Odo's listing of his connections to Sisko was complex and drawn out. Funny.
- Bashir: "Well then. Who am I to argue with me?"
- Odo interrogating the Klingons.
- O'Brien seeing the future station explode.
- O'Briens: I hate temporal mechanics.
- Sisko confronting the Romulans regarding their hidden plans.
- Sisko: "I'll tell you what's not a theory. We tracked the tetryon emissions back to your warbird and I have about 50 photon torpedoes locked onto it right now."
- O'Brien predicting Bashir's dart hit and a Dabo score at Quark's.
- Morn appearances; 1. Near O'Brien as he sets up the dart board in Quarks. Quark hits him with a dart. 2. In the bar fight. 3. Quark's bar while Bashir plays O'Brien at darts.

#### Comments:

I like this one. The Romulans finally came to collect on their cloaking device loan. It annoys me that they plotted to destroy the station and collapse the wormhole out of paranoia, but it's certainly in character. I do wish that relations between the Federation and the Romulans could have been smoothed by allowing this intelligence exchange to take place, but I suppose peace between the Romulans and the Federation will take far more encouragement than a single joint operation. O'Brien's timeshifting is credibly displayed, and suitably entertaining. For the most part, it was used as comic relief, but there were a few intelligent scenes regarding it. My favorite of which are the ones where future Bashir gives O'Brien instructions to give to present Bashir on how to save his own life. Confusing predestination stuff can be fun when done correctly. A decent episode, though largely a missed opportunity to do some cool Romulan political stuff.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 3x18 - Distant Voices**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-4-10

**My  
Rating -  
2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Comatose and dying after an alien attack, Bashir must access different parts of his personality, which take the form of crew members, to save his life.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 9th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir expressing more misgivings for Cardassian literature.
- Quark and the Lethian approaching Bashir asking for bio-memetic gel.
- Bashir: "You represent my doubt and my disbelief." O'Brien: "No I don't!"
- Bashir and Garak playing tennis.
- The Lethian belittling Julian, telling him he gave up on tennis even though he was good enough, he purposely answered a question wrong on his final medical exam because he didn't want the pressure of being first, and he gave up on Jadzia, he could have tried harder to bag her.
- The final scene, where Garak praises Bashir for still not trusting him.

**Comments:**

Oh, my favorite! An "it was all a dream" plot! \*rolls eyes\* All right, I'll give it some credit, plots like this can be done successfully. TNG: The Inner Light comes to mind. That said, this episode's basic premise has been done before and it has been done better before. The episode has redeemable qualities though. I'm fond of the Lethian's speech belittling Bashir for decisions he made in his past and of course Garak's involvement in a story always brightens it up. I'm a little dismayed to note that this is the second episode this season in which Garak has been a character in a dream event, the first being DS9: The Search, Part II. Overall, as I've already alluded to, I'm not fond of episodes which are mostly big dreams, but DS9: The Search, Part II, and this episode avoid some fatal mistakes. Just like in TNG: The Inner Light, the audience is made well aware of the fact that events are occurring within a virtual reality, so the episode becomes less an obvious reset button and retains a certain level of thrill and mystery. That said, I'm not particularly fond of this one at all.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 3x19 - Through the Looking Glass**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-4-17

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*In a parallel universe, Sisko must assume the role of his dead counterpart in order to save the mirror version of his late wife.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the third mirror universe episode.
- Garak's 10th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok's appearance.
- Mirror Kira: "I think you'll find that random and unprovoked executions will keep your workforce alert and motivated!"
- O'Brien regarding Bashir: "Hit him! That's what the captain would do."
- Sisko outsmarting Mirror Kira with his knowledge of Terok Nor.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Not shown on screen, but Morn and Quark were caught painting numbers on voles for a vole fight.

**Comments:**

The second installment of the DS9 mirror universe has some decent plot development, unlike the first. The Terran rebellion is in full swing now, but more interesting, Sisko's wife Jennifer is still alive in this universe and she's not quite the woman he remembers marrying. It's a nice adventure for Sisko, but the first viewing can leave you a bit underwhelmed. There are a few nice details in the episode. My favorite is Tuvok's appearance. There are few opportunities for crossover between DS9 and Voyager, and this one is well handled. While the episode was a nice ride, you can't help but wonder why Sisko didn't express some desire to bring Jennifer back with him to his universe. Different from the "real" Jennifer or not, Sisko was infatuated with her. Seems like a missed opportunity to me.

**Star Trek DS9 - 3x20 - Improbable Cause**

Originally Aired: 1995-4-24

My  
Rating -  
9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Garak's shop mysteriously explodes, launching Odo on an investigation to determine who is trying to kill the Cardassian exile and why.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 11th episode.
- This episode is kind of a runaway idea. Someone on the writing staff just kind of blurted out an idea, wondering what would happen if Garak blew up his own shop. Eventually the idea got so large, it didn't fit the constraints of a single episode. In fact, this is one of the most loved two parterers of all of DS9!
- This episode establishes for certain that Garak was once a member of the Obsidian Order and one of Enabran Tain's close associates.
- Mila's first appearance.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak and Bashir discussing Shakespeare, and then the difference between human and Cardassian eating habits.
- Kira and Bashir discussing the atmospheric requirements of the Yalosians. Their atmosphere dissolves carpets and they can't see red or orange colors.
- Garak, lying in the debris after his ship blew up: "I'm afraid your pants won't be ready tomorrow after all."
- Bashir telling Garak the story of the boy who cried wolf.
- Bashir: "The point is if you lie all the time, nobody's going to believe you, even when you're telling the truth." Garak: "Are you sure that's the point, doctor?" Bashir: "Of course, what else could it be?" Garak: "That you should never tell the same lie twice."
- Odo: "I'm not about to leave you in here alone so you can look through my security files." Garak: "What makes you think I haven't already looked through them?"
- Odo's interrogation of the Flaxian. I like Odo's mixing of the perfumes, revealing the Flaxian's assassination arsenal.
- Garak: "The truth is just an excuse for a lack of imagination."
- Odo's conversation with his Cardassian contact.
- Odo getting pissed at Garak, realizing he blew up his own shop.
- Odo: "Well that's an interesting way of scrambling a signal." Garak: "Yes, I thought you might appreciate it on an aesthetic level."
- Garak's joking instructions to Bashir,



- Odo speculating that Enabran Tain means something to Garak.
- A Romulan Warbird decloaking just above the Runabout.
- Garak's meeting with Enabran Tain.
- Odo: "You both go to such lengths to hide the true meaning of your words you end up saying nothing."

**Comments:**

This episode is crazy! Talk about a web of complex hidden agendas that blows up into some major events going down. There is much to redeem this episode, so many details. My favorite is the reference to the buildup in the system controlled by the Obsidian Order in DS9: Defiant. But there are many more. The thing I like the most about this episode is how carerfully Garak manipulated events in order to determine who was trying to kill him and why. We finally know now for sure that Garak and Enabran Tain were very close at one time, working together in the Obsidian Order. Something went bad between them at about the time Cardassia evacuated Bajor and Tain exiled Garak from Cardassia. But Garak truly cares for Tain for some reason and went with Odo on what appeared to be a mission of mercy, only to discover that the Obsidian Order and the Tal Shiar are working together to deploy a joint Romulan-Cardassian attack on the Dominion. This is probably one of the most complicated plots ever done on Star Trek, and not to this episode's disadvantage! An excellent first part to the two parter.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x21 - The Die Is Cast**

Originally Aired: 1995-5-1

**My  
Rating -  
9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On the eve of a Romulan/Cardassian attack against the Dominion, Garak may have to prove his loyalty to his former mentor by eliminating Odo.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 12th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A fleet of Cardassian and Romulan ships decloaking near DS9.
- Enabran Tain reminiscing with Garak about the old days. Supposedly, Garak got a confession out of someone during an interrogation by just sitting and staring at him for four hours straight. Disturbing...
- Eddington revealing he sabotaged the cloaking device.
- Sisko to Eddington: "I'd stay out of the Chief's way if I were you."
- Odo's initial reaction to Garak's torture.
- A peeling Odo. Very disturbing...
- Odo revealing his desire to return to his people to Garak.
- The attack on the Founders' homeworld and the revelation that it was all a trap.
- Enabran Tain staying on the warbird.
- Odo saving Garak.
- The Defiant showing up in the battle.
- Garak: "Do you know what the sad part is, Odo? I'm a very good tailor."

**Comments:**

A quality ending to a quality story. Garak and Odo finally have some respect for each other and the Dominion once again proves its valor. I'll never forget the Romulan officer aboard the warbird reporting that 150 Jem'Hadar ships were coming out of the nebula. 150 vs. 20! I don't like those odds at all! Enabran Tain certainly got what was coming to him, but in a way it seemed almost tragic. Seeing as how Garak is my favorite character, I felt kind of sad for him. It seems now Garak will never get his old life back, now that the Obsidian Order and the Tal Shiar are all but eliminated. Maybe not gone per se, but definitely disarmed for the moment. I think Garak has finally begun to accept that if and when he does return to his people, that it will be to a very different life than he had and for a very different reason than he had originally expected. This two parter is one of DS9's finest moments.



### Star Trek DS9 - 3x22 - Explorers

Originally Aired: 1995-5-8

My  
Rating -  
7

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko builds a new version of an ancient Bajoran space vessel in an effort to prove the truth behind an 800-year-old legend.*

#### **Problems:**

- How is a ship made of wood supposed to fly through space or especially survive a planetary landing? The friction generated by the atmospheric reentry would burn the ship up! It would burn up a ship made of metal without a properly constructed heat shield. Did the writers of this episode consider the events of Apollo 13?
- The uniforms of the Lexington crewmembers were TNG style. But by this time, even the Enterprise crewmembers no longer wore those uniforms. So what gives?

#### **Factoids:**

- Leeta's first episode.
- This is the first episode to feature Sisko with a beard. He won't be my favorite bald bearded Sisko for a little while longer though.
- This is the first episode to mention a bathroom on Star Trek.
- This episode is the first to mention Cassidy Yates. While her name is not spoken, Jake sets up a blind date for Ben with her.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir's message to Jadzia on the padd: "GO AWAY"
- Kira calling O'Brien a Cardassian and O'Brien calling Kira a Romulan.
- Bashir and O'Brien drinking and singing together.
- Ben and Jake's arrival in Cardassian space.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Seen a couple of times in the first scene. 2. Seen with Quark just after the Lexington docks. 3. Observes as Bashir finally talks with Lense.

#### **Comments:**

This is a very good episode if we overlook the technical issues regarding the ancient Bajoran solar sailing ship. Frankly, if the writing was a little more careful, they could have avoided the technical problems easily. So in light of such a good episode, I'll just ignore these issues. It's just a matter of replacing a few throw away lines with a few other throw away lines anyway. Normally I'd give this episode a 6, but I gave it an extra point because it's kind of a transitional episode between what DS9 was and what DS9 will be. Firstly, Jake has finally decided what he wants to do with his life, be a writer. O'Brien gets drunk with Julian, proving their friendship has finally developed. Or at least that O'Brien definitely "no longer hates" Julian anymore. We also get to see Bashir's rival Dr. Elizabeth Lense, who took Bashir's rightful place as valedictorian at medical school. Finally, this is the episode which introduces Ben's future wife Kassiday Yates, though her name is not actually spoken. A very good episode.



### Star Trek DS9 - 3x23 - Family Business

Originally Aired: 1995-5-15

My  
Rating -  
7

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Quark returns to his home planet to confront his mother, who has broken the Ferengi law prohibiting females from earning a profit.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature Brunt, of the FCA.
- This is the first episode to show us the Ferengi homeworld.
- This is the first episode to feature Ishka, Quark's mother.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira: "You know at the rate we go through Runabouts, it's a good thing the Earth has so many

rivers."

- Dax to Sisko regarding Yates: "Let me put it this way. If I were Curzon, I'd have stolen her from you by now."
- Quark and Brunt's reaction a dressed Ishka.
- Bashir and O'Brien breaking into Quark's with Odo not particularly caring.
- Sisko's first meeting with Yates.
- Quark discovering the full extent of his mother's activities.
- Rom yelling and Quark and Ishka.
- Sisko and Yates discussing her brother's baseball activities.
- Rom and Ishka discussing how she hid the bulk of her profits from both the FCA and Quark.
- Morn Appearances; 1. At Quark's bar when Quark and Rom argue about Nog joining Starfleet.

#### Comments:

Good continuity with the last episode, Jake is still trying to set Sisko up with this freighter captain Cassidy Yates. Jake is wise beyond his years, the match was made in heaven. She even likes baseball. :) I'm extremely fond of the Ferengi plot in this episode. The way Ferengi treat women in this episode is hilarious! A very successful satire, I must say. This episode is a fine example of how DS9 took the silly TNG Ferengi and molded them into one of the most loved species of all of Star Trek. This episode is just articulate in every way while maintaining a certain level of humor too. Very nice.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 3x24 - Shakaar

Originally Aired: 1995-5-22

My  
Rating -  
5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Sent to Bajor on a mission against her former leader in the resistance movement, Kira ends up joining him as a fugitive.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- I like the look on Kira's face when she realizes that Kai Winn's plans for Bajor, improved economy, joining the Federation, and whatnot actually made sense and that she's probably not up to no good for once this time.
- Shakaar: "You cut your hair." Kira: "You let your's grow." Shakaar: "I liked you the old way." Kira: "I was thinking the same thing about you."
- Furel discussing why he didn't replace his missing arm. Very moving.
- O'Brien screwing Quark over with his injury.
- Kira and Shakaar blackmailing Winn.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Watches Dax and O'Brien play darts. 2. In the background when O'Brien dislocates his shoulder. 3. At the bar when Bashir enters "the zone."

#### Comments:

Kai Winn to become first minister of Bajor! Now there's twisted irony. I liked the continuity with DS9: Life Support. Kai Winn is doing exactly what they predicted she'd do. She's taking credit for Vedek Bareil's achievements and grabbing even more power. She's so deliciously nasty! Despite this, Kai Winn's goals were decidedly noble in this episode. She wanted Bajor's economy to grow and for Bajor to make preparations to join the Federation. Unfortunately, her methods leave much to be desired. Pissing off a bunch of your own people unnecessarily is a poor way to run a government. I like the way she is ousted from her position as first minister and I like the B plot with O'Brien in "the zone." An enjoyable episode.

---



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x25 - Facets**  
Originally Aired: 1995-6-12

My  
Rating -  
7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Jadzia Dax must come to terms with her feelings of inferiority when she meets her past hosts in an ancient Trill rite of closure.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nog's simulation in the beginning. I like Jake knocking on the windshield of the runabout while it's at warp.
- Odo's proof that he "keeps tabs" on everyone by describing what Bashir ate for breakfast.
- Quark unknowingly agreeing to embody one of Dax's female hosts.
- Kira as Leela. Visitor did a great job acting like the wise old Leela.
- O'Brien as Toban.
- Quark as one of Jadzia's very feminine hosts.
- Sisko as Joran. He was the perfect choice because Sisko can be so evil at times!
- Odo as Curzon!
- Curzon / Odo spooking Quark.
- Rom getting pissed at Quark and threatening him for sabotaging the holosuites so that Nog would fail the test.
- Morn Appearances; 1. At the bar when Quark and Rom talk about Nog and Rom reveals his uniform. 2. At the bar \*still\* when Curzon and Sisko enter. 3. Sits down at the bar when Nog orders a root beer sporting his new uniform.

**Comments:**

Dax gets to meet all her previous hosts! Cool! I like this episode for many reasons, but mostly because the sheer idea behind it is just cool. And Odo-Curzon, er, Curzon-Odo, er, Ozon, Curzdo, or Curzodo, whatever we call him was a lot of fun to watch. Odo and Curzon's desire to stay together is credibly presented. For a time in the episode, I almost wanted them to remain together. Half because finally being able to see the much discussed Curzon in action was fascinating, and half because the combination of Odo and Curzon was just so cool. Maybe I am a little bias, but from a fanboyish perspective, this is an utterly fantastic episode and I enjoyed it very much.



**Star Trek DS9 - 3x26 - The Adversary**  
Originally Aired: 1995-6-19

My Rating  
- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*One of Odo's people tricks Sisko and the crew into actions that could start a devastating war in the Alpha Quadrant.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first mention of the Tzenkethi species, who will be mentioned many times but never actually shown.
- This is the first episode to show the Defiant's engine room.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko promoted to captain! Cool!
- Two Bashirs.
- Computer: "Auto-destruct in seven minutes." Sisko, regarding the repairs: "Just tell me how long it will take." O'Brien: "Well I guess it will have to be less than seven minutes won't it?"
- Odo killing the changeling.
- Odo reciting the changeling's last words: "You're too late. We're everywhere."

### Comments:

Commence hidden changelings everywhere stories. Personally, I'm not fond of them. But I suppose it was a necessary plot development. That said, the finale of season 3 isn't the big Dominion confrontation we expected, but instead something of a filler episode. It left me somewhat underwhelmed. Some remarkable details, Odo kills a changeling. "No changeling has ever harmed another" isn't quite true anymore, and this action will have serious repercussions for him later on. As O'Brien said, "finally" with regards to Sisko being promoted to captain. Also, from a fanboyish perspective, I enjoyed seeing the Defiant's engine room for the first time. Other than these details, there is little to redeem this remarkably average episode as a season finale.



### Star Trek DS9 - 4x01 - The Way of the Warrior, Part I

Originally Aired: 1995-10-2

My  
Rating -  
9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*When the Klingon Empire withdraws from its peace treaty with the Federation, Sisko must help Klingon Starfleet officer Worf decide where his loyalties lie.*

### Problems:

- Why was Worf wearing an old-style TNG uniform?

### Factoids:

- This episode marks Worf's entry into the DS9 crew turning him into the most used character in all of Star Trek. He appeared in five of the movies and eleven seasons of Star Trek!
- This is General Martok's first episode. J. G. Hertzler, who plays Martok, also played the Vulcan captain in DS9: Emissary.
- This episode features a revised opening credits theme. The music is much better, and the graphics are cooler.
- Garak's 13th episode.
- Captain Yates' ship is named the Zosa.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Bald Sisko! He looks SO much cooler now!
- Odo playing evil changeling for the station's simulations.
- So many Klingon ships!
- Quark measuring the decibel level in the room just with his ears. Hilarious.
- Dax: "Didn't you play make believe when you were a child?" Kira: "Yeah, I used to make believe that the Cardassians would stop killing the Bajorans and just go away."
- Odo having breakfast with Garak, just like he said he would in DS9: The Die Is Cast.
- Garak speaks Klingon!
- Garak assaulted by Klingons.
- Bashir: "I can't believe you're not pressing charges! Garak: "Constable Odo and Captain Sisko expressed a similar concern, but really doctor, there was no harm done." Bashir: "But they broke seven of your transverse ribs and fractured your clavical!" Garak: "Ah, but I got off several cutting remarks which no doubt did serious damage to their egos." Bashir: "Garak, this isn't funny." Garak: "I'm serious, doctor. Thanks to your administrations, I'm almost completely healed, but the damage I did to them will last a lifetime."
- Worf's entrance.
- Quark's reaction to Worf ordering prune juice.
- Worf throwing the dart too hard.
- Jadzia dueling Worf.
- Garak's "participation" in the briefing room.
- Gowron's appearance.
- Morn Appearances; 1. He's harassed by a bunch of Klingons. He's asked what he's doing so far from the Ionite Nebula. 2. At Quark's when Worf enters for the first time. 3. At Garak's shop, buying Vitarian wool undergarments.

### Comments:

To me, this is the first episode of "badass" DS9. Season 4 establishes many things that make DS9 cool in my eyes. Bald Sisko, Worf on the station, the new opening theme, a constant state of military hostility, and many other things. Frankly, I wish DS9 started out this way. :) That said, the beginning to this two parter is highly exciting. The Klingons are back to their old ways! The peace treaty is dissolved! The Klingons have invaded Cardassia! Good stuff.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x02 - The Way of the Warrior, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 1995-10-2

My  
Rating -  
9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When the Klingon Empire withdraws from its peace treaty with the Federation, Sisko must help Klingon Starfleet officer Worf decide where his loyalties lie.*

**Problems:**

- Why was Worf wearing an old-style TNG uniform?

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 14th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf's reaction to the Defiant having a cloaking device.
- The Defiant engaging the Klingons and saving Dukat.
- Dukat: "I find this whole procedure offensive." Bashir: "And I find you offensive."
- Sisko's bet with Dax.
- Quark: "I want you to try something for me. Take a sip of this." Garak: "What is it?" Quark: "A human drink. It's called root beer." Garak: "I don't know..." Quark: "Come on. Aren't you just a little bit curious?" Garak takes a sip. Quark: "What do you think?" Garak: "It's vile!" Quark: "I know. It's so bubbly and glowing and happy." Garak: "Just like the Federation." Quark: "But you know what's really frightening? If you drink enough of it, you begin to like it." Garak: "It's insidious!" Quark: "Just like the Federation."
- Several dozen Klingon ships arriving at DS9 preparing to attack.
- Bashir: "I'm sure there's more than one Klingon who thinks that slaying a Changeling would be worthy of a song or two." Odo: "Doctor, if a Klingon were to kill me, I'd expect nothing less than an entire opera on the subject."
- Gowron: "History is written by the victors!"
- Sisko: "I can assure you, this old cat may not be as toothless as you think. Right now I've got 5000 photon torpedos armed and ready to launch. If you don't believe me, feel free to scan the station."
- The battle... so awesome.
- Sisko convincing Worf to stay aboard DS9.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In the background during Quark and Garak's conversation about the Federation and root beer. 2. Is the first person to enter Quark's bar when it is reopened after the battle.

**Comments:**

A roaring ride, part two loses none of part one's momentum. The highlight of the episode is obviously the space battle. Indeed, DS9 isn't as "toothless" as it was in the pilot episode. Nothing like 5000 photon torpedos at your disposal. The thing to discuss about this episode is the behavior of the Klingons. Certainly unexpected. The first reaction is to say, wow, the Klingons sure were a bunch of idiots in this episode. It's easy to make this claim with hindsight, but consider the events in order. The Changelings are revealed to be "everywhere." The Cardassians closed their borders. A political shakeup ensues. The Klingons take this as evidence that the Dominion has seized control of Cardassia. Even Odo says that that's how his people would have done it. So the Klingons invade. Then Sisko interferes with their war and thoroughly offends the Klingons. The Klingons then attack DS9. All a very natural course of events from a Klingon point of view. Sisko manages to convince Gowron of why they were all making a mistake fighting like this, but Gowron remains offended by the Federation having sided against them in battle. So who wins? The Dominion. :)



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x03 - The Visitor**  
Originally Aired: 1995-10-9

My Rating  
- 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a tragic accident causes Sisko to vanish before his son's eyes, young Jake begins a life-long obsession to bring him back.*

**Problems:**

- Why did the first future Nog wear an old style TNG uniform?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Tony Todd, who plays the older Jake in this episode, also plays Kurn, Worf's brother.
- Rachel Robinson, who plays Melanie in this episode, is actually Andrew Robinson's daughter. Andrew Robinson plays Garak.
- The future uniforms worn by the reunited crew on the Defiant when Jake first tries to rescue his father are the same as the ones worn in the future presented to Picard by Q in TNG: All Good Things.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Future Jake telling Melanie about the death of his father.
- Sisko: "I'm no writer, but if I were it seems to me I'd want to poke my head up every once in a while and take a look around, see what's going on. It's life, Jake! You can miss it if you don't open your eyes."
- Seeing Sisko's death.
- Sisko appearing in Jake's quarters briefly out of nowhere, confused, then disappearing.
- Jake talking about all the changes in the timeline due to Sisko's death. The Klingon situation got worse and the Bajorans allied with the Cardassians! Chilling.
- Sisko appearing again, this time in front of other people.
- Future Jake telling Melanie that the Federation gave control of DS9 to the Klingons.
- Sisko appearing to a middle aged Jake.
- A desperate Jake and Sisko pulled into subspace together, discussing the situation.
- Future Jake: "I want you to promise me something." Melanie: "Anything." Future Jake: "While you're studying my stories, poke your head up every once in a while. Take a look around. See what's going on. It's life, Melanie." Melanie: "And you can miss it if you don't open your eyes."
- Sisko appearing in front of his son now an old man.
- Future Jake: "I've been dragging you through time like an anchor. And now it's time to cut you loose."
- Future Jake: "For you. And for the boy that I was. He needs you more than you know."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Standing behind Quark during Sisko's memorial. 2. Pats Jake's shoulder, seemingly sad for him, in Quark's bar in the scene just after the memorial. 3. Not shown, but Nog tells Jake that Morn runs the bar in the future. He talks his customers' ears off and is probably drinking himself out of business. ;)

**Comments:**

This is one of the best reset-button episodes ever done. The biggest reason for this is that Sisko retains a memory of his son's efforts to save him across the decades. The reason this is cool is that many reset button episodes are just that; total resets. None of it actually happened. But the way this one played out, Sisko is left with an extremely profound memory of his son's heroic sacrifice in the divergent timeline. This episode isn't filler, it's some of the best character development Ben and Jake will ever get. It's a nice ride too. Both actors playing Jake did an utterly fantastic job acting their parts, as did Ben Sisko himself. In the end, the temporal paradox is presented very nicely. Future Jake's sacrifice and Ben's resurrection was one of the most moving scenes ever presented in Star Trek. Ben begging his son not to kill himself on his behalf was very sad and very moving. The episode ends with a deeply moved Sisko who has dodged death thanks to the second chance his son gave him. Only he will ever truly know the pain his son went through in the divergent timeline, and I'm sure it changes his life. Bravo, an unexpectedly brilliant episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x04 - Hippocratic Oath**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-10-16

**My  
Rating -  
9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Held prisoner by a group of rebel Jem'Hadar, Bashir and O'Brien clash over Bashir's desire to help their captors escape Dominion rule.*

**Problems:**

- So Goran'Agar doesn't eat, doesn't drink, doesn't sleep, and doesn't take Ketracel White. Exactly what sustains him?

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Ketracel White is the name of the drug the Jem'Hadar are

genetically engineered to need.

- A Jem'Hadar shoots O'Brien while he is transporting off the runabout and he is not injured when he rematerializes. Earlier transporters, like the one on Star Trek Enterprise, do not have this feature.
- The clock Sisko was playing with at the end of this episode is the one he built in DS9: Dramatis Personae.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Worf lamenting about Odo's inaction regarding Quark.
- O'Brien lamenting to Julian about Keiko's objections to O'Brien having setup a workshop in their bedroom.
- O'Brien: "Exactly! Exactly! See? You understand. Why can't she see that? Why can't she be more like--" O'Brien cuts himself off. He was going to say he wishes Keiko was more like Julian. ;)
- O'Brien: "I'm sorry I couldn't find us a better place to crash land. Should we try again?"
- Goran'Agar revealing that he and his people want to free themselves from the Katracel White.
- Worf and Odo arguing about how Odo performs his duties.
- Goran'Agar: "I have fought against races that believe in mythical beings who guide their destinies and await them after death. They call them gods. The Founders are like gods to the Jem'Hadar. But our gods never talk to us and they don't wait for us after death. And they only want us to fight for them and to die for them."
- Worf's final faux pas with Odo, ruining his investigation.
- Goran'Agar saving O'Brien and Bashir.

#### Comments:

This is another very good episode. The Klingons are attacking the Romulans now, and the Jem'Hadar want to be free of the Katracel White. It seems while the Jem'Hadar have great respect for the Founders, they have little respect for the Vorta. My favorite detail about this episode is Bashir's devotion to helping the Jem'Hadar. The contention between O'Brien and Bashir nicely parallels the contention with Worf and Odo. In both cases, the latter contender was the correct one. If Bashir could have found a cure for the Katracel White, the Dominion could have easily been defeated by the Federation early on. I understand O'Brien's paranoia, but having seen the rest of DS9 it's kind of sad that Bashir's cure never panned out. Though at the same time, I completely understand O'Brien's desire to get Bashir off that planet ASAP. Bashir definitely wouldn't have found the cure in time to save all of Goran'Agar's men. O'Brien only wanted to save Bashir's life. The only regret I have is that we never see Goran'Agar again. He was a cool guy, and could have been a nice regular character added to DS9.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 4x05 - Indiscretion

Originally Aired: 1995-10-23

My  
Rating - 5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Forced to bring along Dukat on a personal mission, Kira discovers the real reason her nemesis wants to accompany her.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This is Tora Ziyal's first episode.
- This is the first episode in which we get to actually see the much mentioned but never before seen Breen!
- According to Dukat, the Breen homeworld is a frozen wasteland.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Dukat's appearance as Kira's traveling companion. Funny.
- Kira to Dukat: "Captain Sisko is right! You are in love with the sound of your own voice."
- Dukat: "I know you find this hard to accept, but I believe that in some ways the occupation actually helped Bajor." Kira: "Which part? The massacres or the strip mining?"
- Sisko's major faux pas with Cassidy at the dinner and his later discussion about with with Dax and Bashir.
- Quark trying counsel Sisko, describing how Ferengi handle women.
- The revelation that Dukat had a Bajoran mistress and even a half Bajoran daughter!
- Dukat sitting on something painful. I bet Kira enjoyed every moment of that.



- Sisko getting advice about his girlfriend from Jake. ;)

**Comments:**

So Dukat has a half Bajoran daughter. And we get to see some Breen! A very decent episode. For several brief moments, I felt that Kira and Dukat actually gained some respect for each other. Beyond the chronicling of Kira and Dukat's adventure and Sisko and Yates' relationship though, the episode offers very little. An average offering.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x06 - Rejoined**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-10-30

**My  
Rating -  
2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Jadzia Dax must choose between her feelings and the rules of Trill society when she is reunited with the wife of one of Dax's previous hosts.*

**Problems:**

- Jadzia says she never let her past lives interfere with her job and that she's not going to start now. Don't the events of DS9: Blood Oath constitute one of her past lives interfering with her job? Oh wait. I get it. If it has to do with Klingons then it's okay...

**Factoids:**

- This episode features a controversial lesbian kiss.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Jadzia's magic trick.
- Quark trying to figure out the specifics pertaining to Dax' relationship with Dr. Lenara Kahn.
- Kira: "What do Klingons dream about?" Worf: "Things that will send cold chills down your spine and wake you in the middle of the night. It is better that you do not know. Excuse me." Kira: "I can never tell when he's joking."
- Bashir getting called away on a medical emergency at the dinner. Saved by the bell!
- The kiss. Disturbing on many levels.
- Jadzia walking on top of a forcefield!

**Comments:**

An episode exploring lesbianism... sort of. The cause is a bit different, the effect is the same. Personally, I don't like this one. Trill society's taboo on previous relationships is frankly absurd. And it gets ignored over and over again. Consider this: isn't the whole point of being a joined Trill to build off the experiences of the previous hosts? The exploration of Jadzia's past relationship is far less interesting than the B plot anyway which is the endeavor to create an artificial wormhole. Unfortunately, it gets very little screen time despite what seemed to me to be remarkable progress, and despite Worf's lack of enthusiasm for the project. ;) A misguided effort of an episode, despite a nice performance by Jadzia.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x07 - Starship Down**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-11-6

**My  
Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A fierce battle with the Jem'Hadar leaves the Defiant trapped in a planet's volatile atmosphere and the crew in danger.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Quark revealed to have been exploiting the Karemma.
- The Jem'Hadar attack and the Defiant entering the atmosphere.
- Quark bragging to Hanok regarding cheating the Federation.
- The probe taking out the Jem'Hadar ship.
- Kira trying to keep Sisko awake.

- A torpedo lodged in the hull of the room with Quark and the Karemma representative.
- Kira praying for Sisko.
- Quark and Hanok disarming the torpedo.
- Worf destroying the other Jem'Hadar ship.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Bashir is talking with him at the end. Appears mystified that he has 17 brothers and sisters. Jadzia rescues Bashir from the conversation with Morn.

#### Comments:

This is very obviously the writers trying to do a submarine episode in space. ;) But I don't care because it's very well done. Besides the fun action which is convincingly portrayed, there's a lot of fun character development as groups of characters are singled out. Bashir and Dax get to explore their attraction with one another, Kira gets to tell Sisko stories and express her undying respect for him as the Emissary, even prays to for him to live. Worf has to learn to go easy on a bunch of enlisted men, and gets some hardcore Defiant command experience. Quark even gets a decent showing with the Karemma representative. I absolutely loved the torpedo disarming scene! I wish Quark had gotten props saving the. ;) Overall, I was very impressed. It was a highly exciting episode and every character got a good showing.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 4x08 - Little Green Men**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-11-13

**My  
Rating -  
9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A mishap sends Quark, Rom, and Nog back in time to Earth of 1947 in Roswell, New Mexico, where military forces mistake them for alien invaders.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This episode establishes (in the Star Trek timeline anyway) that the alleged Roswell alien crash landing was in fact a Ferengi pod with Quark, Rom, Nog, and a disguised Odo aboard. When they escaped, the military initiated a massive cover up, blaming the whole thing on a weather balloon.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Worf's behavior at Nog's going away party. I especially like his interest in the tooth sharpener.
- Nog: "But think about it uncle. That means they went from being savages with a simple barter system to leaders of a vast inter stellar federation in only 5,000 years! It took us twice as long to establish the Ferengi Alliance and we had to buy warp technology from the-" Quark, interrupting: "5,000, 10,000, what's the difference? The speed of technological advancement isn't nearly as important as short term quarterly gains."
- Nog asking Rom why the Gabriel Bell photo from Earth looks like Sisko. A very nice reference to DS9: Past Tense. I like Quark's response: "All hew-mons look alike."
- The scene where Quark, Nog, and Rom are discussing the "Divine Treasury" and the "Vault of Eternal Destitution." Perfect heaven and hell for Ferengi. :)
- The universal translator failure and the resulting head banging.
- The general calling Quark a bad car salesman. :)
- Quark calling the general an Australian.
- Quark's "free advice" telling the general that his people should stop poisoning their bodies with tobacco and atom bombs.
- Quark: "My people have been watching your world for years. We know all about you. Baseball. Root beer. Darts. Atom bombs."
- Nog having Nurse Garland give him oomax.
- Odo's appearance.
- The interrogation.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In the first scene when Nog is selling his possessions. 2. Quark leaves the bar in his hand before his trip to Earth.
- Rules of Acquisition; 203. New customers are like razor-toothed greeworms. They can be succulent, but sometimes they bite back.

#### Comments:

Quark's procured a ship of his own. Scary. Thankfully he loses it in this episode. We don't need Quark running around with a ship, now do we? ;) This episode is a classic and is probably the best humor episode DS9's ever done, maybe one of the best humor episodes Star Trek has ever done.

So many things about this episode were done just right. The reference to the Roswell alien weather balloon fiasco was great. The Ferengi are our crashed aliens! The universal translator failure and the resulting headbanging is a fantastic scene, but my favorite detail of this episode was incessant smoking and Quark's reaction to it. Indeed, Quark puts on the best performance in this episode. I love his constant disgust with 1940s Earth. Nurse Garland was pretty cool too, with her overly accurate dreamy "the future will be so amazing" type lines. Overall, a fantastic episode.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 4x09 - The Sword of Kahless**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-11-20

**My  
Rating -  
3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kor, a revered Klingon warrior, sets out with Worf and Dax in search of a mythical, ancient artifact they believe has the power to unite the Klingon Empire.*

#### **Problems:**

- In TNG: Rightful Heir, the sword of Kahless was in the Boreth monastery. Kahless picked it up and claimed that it was his sword. So why has it been missing for hundreds of years? Was it just a replica, a fake?

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Quark to Worf: "You know what I like about Klingon stories, Commander? Nothing. Lots of people die and nobody makes any profit."
- Worf, Dax, and Kor discovering the sword of Kahless.
- The Duras family trying to steal the sword of Kahless.
- Worf and Kor arguing over who's to blame for the Duras family's interference.

#### **Comments:**

The return of Kor in this episode is certainly welcome. It's always nice to see a ridiculously old Klingon throwing his weight around. The continuity in this episode is spectacular. Continuity with TNG: Redemption regarding Worf sparing the Duras boy and TNG: Rightful Heir with regards to Emperor Kahless. It seems the clone is nothing more than a figurehead, Gowron has all the real power. Unfortunately, this episode falls flat on its face with the contention between Worf and Kor. I found it all rather childish, and I'm especially not fond of the plot hole where clone Kahless held his sword at the monastery of Boreth in TNG: Rightful Heir. If that was his sword, then what was this then? Was the one at Boreth a fake? The final blow to me is the ending. The episode started off so good in the beginning, then Kor and Worf started fighting, then they agreed to beam the sword into space and not deliver it to the Klingons. What happened to the sword restoring Worf's name and improving Federation-Klingon relations?



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 4x10 - Our Man Bashir**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-11-27

**My  
Rating -  
7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Posing as a 1960s secret agent in a malfunctioning holosuite program, Bashir is all that stands between his trapped fellow officers and certain death.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Garak's 15th episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak barging in on Bashir's holosuite program.
- Eddington saving the senior officers storing them in the computer.
- Kira appearing on Bashir's holosuite program.
- Worf's appearance in the holosuite program.
- Sisko's appearance in the holosuite program.
- Rom's modifications to the Defiant. Eddington: "O'Brien's gonna kill me when he gets back..."

- Garak: "Hmm. Kiss the girl, get the key. They never taught me that in the Obsidian Order."
- Bashir shooting Garak.
- Bashir destroying the world in his holosuite program.
- O'Brien: "What'd you do to my ship!?" His first line after beaming aboard the Defiant.
- Garak: "Interesting. You saved the day by destroying the world."

**Comments:**

Bashir plays Bond, James Bond, in a holosuite program with trusty sidekick Garak. This episode features a rather cliched holosuite malfunction, but the implementation is very original and funny. Characters with names like Mona Luvsitt and Professor Honey Bare and great tributes to the James Bond movies. Kira does a great job with her accent. Worf as Sisko's thug is equally convincing. But my favorite performance is Sisko himself. He makes such a fantastic villain! The ending is fantastic. Bashir ultimately takes Garak's advice, opting to destroy the world and join the bad guy just to keep the holosuite program running a little longer. Doing so saves the lives of the senior officers. A fine show.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x11 - Homefront**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-1-1

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Evidence that Changelings are targeting Earth sends Sisko back to his home planet, where he and Odo must prevent or prepare for war with the Dominion.*

**Problems:**

- What's with the TNG style uniforms all over the place in this episode?

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there hasn't been any kind of bombing on Earth in over 100 years.
- This is the first episode to feature Joseph Sisko, Ben's father.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo lamenting about Dax moving his furniture.
- The recording of the bombing.
- Worf: "I prefer Klingon beliefs." Kira: "I suppose your gods aren't as cryptic as ours." Worf: "Our gods are dead. Ancient Klingon warriors slew them a millennia ago. They were more trouble than they were worth."
- Odo lamenting about being the test Changeling for the phaser sweeps.
- Odo discovering the Changeling admiral.
- Armed Federation security officers beaming down all over Earth.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Talking to Quark just before Odo complains to Quark. 2. Enters the bar as Bashir and O'Brien talk to Odo.

**Comments:**

So the wormhole is opening and closing at random. Then there's a bombing on Earth caused by a Changeling. Then Odo discovers a Changeling trying to impersonate an admiral on Earth. Yep, it all adds up. Changelings are indeed "everywhere." This story is credibly presented, but I just don't like it on principle. While it's an enjoyable episode, I personally would have rather seen the time spent on something else. I agree entirely with Odo's objections for coming. What's the point? They already submitted very thorough reports. One thing I did like was the alien president of the Federation, something that was featured in TOS as well. I also enjoyed getting a chance to see Sisko's father for the first time, as well as the restaurant he kept talking about. Other than that, it's all fairly average stuff.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x12 - Paradise Lost**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-1-8

**My  
Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Preparing Earth for war with the Dominion, Sisko and Odo discover evidence of a Starfleet plot to seize control of the planet from the Federation.*

**Problems:**

- What's with the TNG style uniforms all over the place in this episode?

**Factoids:**

- This episode features a mention of the Tzenkethi.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko chewing out the Red Squad cadet getting him to describe his mission.
- Sisko being relieved of command by Admiral Leyton.
- The shape shifter O'Brien.
- Sisko: "Paradise has never been so well armed."
- Odo rescuing Sisko.
- The Lakota attacking the Defiant.
- Leyton starting to freak out as he began to realize he's losing.

**Comments:**

The sequel is a bit better episode than the first part. While crazy power hungry idiotic admirals have been a cliché since TOS, it was fun to watch in this episode. The battle between the Defiant and the Lakota to me seemed far too short, but other than that it was spectacular for which I gave the episode its extra point. Other than that, the episode reminded me somewhat of TNG: The Drumhead, though without most of the offensiveness. Overall, a decent two part episode. It could have been done a lot better, but it was acceptable.

**Star Trek DS9 - 4x13 - Crossfire**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-1-29

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo's hidden feelings for Kira interfere with his duty to protect the Bajoran First Minister, who also happens to be attracted to her.*

**Problems:**

- When the wormhole opened for Kira and Shakaar, no ship went through. Why did it open?

**Factoids:**

- Quark calls Odo colder than a Breen winter. This is more evidence that Breen is a frozen wasteland.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo perfecting his office and his disposition just prior to Kira's arrival to discuss station security.
- Quark complaining about Odo making too much noise shape shifting above Quark's quarters.
- Kira: "It's just Quark's luck that you would be assigned quarters above his." Odo: "Luck had nothing to do with it."
- Odo: "I have a daily routine which I follow unwaveringly. The shopkeepers on the promenade joke that they can set their clocks by me."
- Odo and Worf discussing order in their quarters and reasons/methods of deterring visitors.
- O'Brien has a tendency to drop by a lot and it annoys Worf.
- Kira asking Odo why he doesn't wear a belt anymore. Odo's response: "It didn't really serve a purpose. It's not as if I needed it to hold my pants up." When she said it looked good on him, he materialized it.
- Odo smashing things in his quarters.
- Quark confronting Odo about the noise.
- Odo denying that he knew the floor renovations he requested had sound proofing in it.

**Comments:**

So there's more talk about Bajor's push to join the Federation, this is something I like. It's always nice to see the show advancing its premise. This episode also featured a few nice scenes between Odo and Worf. Though the episode was more about Odo than anyone else. Odo of course is in love with Kira is too afraid to tell her. There are some good scenes between Odo and Quark in this episode too. Their half adversarial half friendship relationship is one of the best character developments of the whole series, and this episode contributes heavily to it. My favorite moment between them in this episode is Odo installing sound proofing in his quarters to make Quark happy, then denying all knowledge of the whole operation to Quark's face. It was a great ending to this otherwise unremarkable episode. Literally, nothing happens in it except we get to watch Odo go through some social pain. I take a point off for the boring qualities, but I add a point for the skillful writing nonetheless.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x14 - Return to Grace**  
**Originally Aired:** 1996-2-5

**My Rating**  
- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A demoted Dukat enlist Kira's aid in regaining his former status in the Cardassian Empire.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature Damar.
- Dukat says that it's bitter cold on Breen.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira's inoculations.
- Dukat's initial meeting with Kira
- Dukat gossiping with Kira her seeming desire to entice powerful men.
- The Klingon Bird of Prey taunting Dukat's ship.
- Dukat's ship attacking the Bird of Prey.
- Dukat destroying his old ship with all the Klingons on board.
- Kira: "'The best way to survive a knife fight is to never get in one."

**Comments:**

It's something of a funny tradition on Star Trek that people keep stealing Klingon Birds of Prey. This episode is an homage to Star Trek III: The Search for Spock and Star Trek IV: The Voyage Home in many ways, in fact. Not only is a Klingon Bird of Prey stolen, but there's even complaints about Klingon technology being odd! :) I was glad to see Dukat as a "good guy" in this episode. In fact, his actions for the most part were downright honorable. The ending was equally pleasing; Ziyal is now a resident of DS9 thanks to Dukat declaring a private little war on the Klingons and Dukat thanks to some convincing from Kira, doesn't want his daughter involved in it. While the episode is nice, there's little else to redeem it, making it a fairly average transitional episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x15 - Sons of Mogh**  
**Originally Aired:** 1996-2-12

**My Rating**  
- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Cast out of Klingon society because of Worf's dishonor, his outcast brother asks Worf to kill him.*

**Problems:**

- How can a minefield prevent entry into a solar system? A ship can just fly over them, under them, around them, and so forth. It would take massive numbers of mines to completely mine an entire solar system. Do the mines have full impulse engines or something and fly into unauthorized ships?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf's faux pas in the beginning with Dax.
- Kira's casual sleeping on the runabout.
- Sisko chewing out Worf and Dax.
- The severely damaged Vorcha class cruiser coming out of nowhere.
- Worf: "He decided to kill me while I was looking him right in the eyes and I never saw it! But Kurn did, and he was three meters away!"
- Kira blowing up the Klingons' mines.
- Kurn learning of his new identity.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Walks by Odo and Dax when Dax figures out that Worf is about to kill Kurn. 2. In the final scene.

**Comments:**

This one's been coming for a while. We all knew Kurn sat on the high council and would be ejected after Worf offended Gowron. Now we finally get to see the the result of Worf's decision and the effect it has on his family. Additionally, there's an interesting subplot in this episode regarding the Klingon minefield. I rather enjoyed watching Kira and O'Brien flush the quale. ;) Overall the episode is still pretty average, just like the last, but in my opinion quite a bit more exciting and moving. It seems this season is quickly becoming the season of transitional episodes!

**Star Trek DS9 - 4x16 - Bar Association**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-2-19

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Tired of workplace mistreatment at the hands of his brother, Rom organizes all of Quark's employees into a union and goes on strike against the bar.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf twinking the Defiant.
- Bashir and O'Brien dressed up for their holosuite program.
- Bashir suggesting to Rom that he should form a union.
- Quark to Rom: "The only thing I regret is not being an only child."
- Odo listing all the security breaches on the Enterprise to rub it in Worf's face that Worf isn't a perfect security officer.
- O'Brien regarding a cyst on the back of his neck: "Either I paint a nose, eyes, and a mouth on it and pretend I've got two heads, or you take it off!"
- Worf lamenting about the station's constant breakdowns while O'Brien revels in it because he likes fixing things. I like how he complains about how boring sitting in the transporter room was. :)
- Holographic Quark approaching Odo.
- Sisko blackmailing Quark into settling the union dispute by threatening to charge him for back rent. ;)
- Worf moving his quarters to the Defiant.
- The Nausicans throwing darts at one another.
- Rom to Quark: "What you were trying to do was make yourself feel important. Making me feel dumb made you feel smart. But I'm not dumb, and you're not half as smart as you think you are."
- Rules of Acquisition; 211. Employees are the rungs of the ladder of success. Don't hesitate to step on them. 263. Never allow doubt to tarnish your lust for latinum.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In front of Rom while he bemoans about his ear. 2. Gets up and leaves after Quark announces the pay cuts. 3. Seen in the background sleeping at the bar during the strike. 4. Next to Rom when he quit his job.

**Comments:**

Worf loves the Defiant and hates the station, Quark's employees have unionized and are demanding better treatment. The FCA shows up and haves Quark beat up. Quark solves the problem by secretly giving into his workers' demands so long as the union is "officially" dissolved. Nothing particularly groundbreaking, but a good show and a decent watch.

**Star Trek DS9 - 4x17 - Accession**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-2-26

**My Rating  
- 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A legendary Bajoran appears mysteriously after more than 200 years and challenges Sisko's claim to be the Emissary.*

**Problems:**

- This episode contributes heavily to the "inconsistent wormhole aliens behavior" problem. I won't go into detail, but essentially, the Prophets seem to contradict their original behavior quite a bit

from this point forward.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien and Bashir cleaning O'Brien's bachelor pad.
- Akorem Laan's introduction.
- Sisko: "I'm just a Starfleet officer again. All I have to worry about are the Klingons, the Dominion, and the Maquis. I feel like I'm on vacation!"
- Quark to Worf: "Did you hear? Keiko's going to have another baby!" Worf: "Now?!" Seems Worf had not so fond memories of delivering Keiko's first baby in TNG: Disaster. ;)
- Keiko playing O'Brien and Bashir back to together.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Playing darts with Bashir.

**Comments:**

This is a complicated episode, which creates a shakeup in the very premise of the show. It seems Sisko is no longer the Emissary; that the real one has appeared from the wormhole. Sisko revels in these events at first, because he hated being the Emissary. But when the new Emissary begins advocating ridiculous new social changes that would ruin Bajor's chances of joining the Federation, Sisko realizes maybe he should be the Emissary after all. To me, more interesting was the whole subplot regarding Keiko, O'Brien, and Bashir. I don't know why, but it had a certain charm to it. I liked the ending where Keiko goes behind O'Brien and Bashir's back both to get them back together. Very cute.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x18 - Rules of Engagement**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-4-8

**My  
Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf faces a hearing to determine whether he should be extradited to the Klingon Empire for destroying a civilian ship ...*

**Problems:**

- Worf's sash seems to appear and disappear throughout this episode.
- Worf orders quantum torpedos fired in this episode during O'Brien's flashback. When we see the graphic of the ship firing, photon torpedos are fired.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that O'Brien has been in Starfleet 22 years. He has been in 235 separate combat situations. He has been decorated 15 times by Starfleet.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The arrogance of the Klingon advocate in the beginning.
- The flashback testimony. I liked Quark's. ;)
- O'Brien's flashback, detailing the battle.
- Ch'Pok, regarding switching sides to defend Worf should he be extradited: "What matters to me is the thrill of the fight. Not which side I'm on."
- The Klingon lawyer provoking Worf.
- Sisko cross examining the Klingon lawyer.
- Sisko chewing out Worf in the end for making poor command decisions. ;)
- Worf: "Life is a lot more complicated in this red uniform."
- Morn Appearances; 1. In Quark's much revised flashback.

**Comments:**

This episode is remarkable in that the Klingon prosecutor is a fantastic guest star. Only a Klingon lawyer would thirst for battle... in the courtroom! The directing is also remarkably interesting. Such as Dax describing Worf's demeanor whilst in a flashback fighting him. And Sisko explaining why he selected Worf for this mission whilst in a flashback. Quark gets a similar scene, but he can't get it right. ;) O'Brien gets one too, set during the battle. Worf as well. One problem with the episode though is the seeming hypocrisy of the Klingon prosecutor's entire argument. Klingon history honors conquerors who murder civilians, yet it is illegal for Worf to murder them now? What's the bloody difference? Well, Klingons are very... odd. And the Federation has to respect their... odd laws. I'm not willing to mark this is a technical problem because of this, but it walks the line. The



ending is superb, Sisko's last minute new evidence was fantastically presented, leaving us with an original question... why was Sisko defending Worf in the first place? Why, he even chewed Worf out for his decision in the end! Sisko defended him blindly. Awesome. :)



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x19 - Hard Time**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-4-15

**My  
Rating -  
7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*After an alien race implants false memories of a 21-year prison sentence into O'Brien's brain, he has trouble readjusting to station life.*

**Problems:**

- A phaser on its highest setting would surely do more than vaporize O'Brien. We've seen phasers on high settings before blow up buildings!

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A disheveled O'Brien in the first scene aged 20 years extra, waking up to his old life.
- O'Brien lying about being alone in his prison memories.
- O'Brien's reeducation.
- O'Brien relieved of duty and freaking out at people, even Molly.
- O'Brien accidentally killing his inmate friend in the flashback.

**Comments:**

A fascinating episode from a science fiction point of view. Similar to what happened to Picard in TNG: The Inner Light. What effect would there be on society if there were no prisons, but in fact you were forced to live the equivalent of years in prison all in your mind, but just in a few hours? I think this punishment method's success rate is overly exaggerated in this episode somewhat. For part of the reason prison is used in society today is to force offenders to be out of touch with society for a certain period of time. Waking up 20 years later and having all your friends and family exactly the way you left them defeats the purpose somewhat. But only partially. Beyond this point, I am very fond of this episode. It's a great O'Brien episode and a very moving one at that. One remarkable detail is the musical score of the episode. It was utterly fantastic all throughout. I was incredibly moved by O'Brien accidentally killing his inmate friend. I only wish the writers had found a way to make this story take place not in a dream world. As incredibly moving as it is and as profound an effect it had on O'Brien, it would have had a much greater effect on the viewer if O'Brien had actually killed someone he cared about accidentally, instead of in a virtual reality. Possibly even rating ten material. Oh well, nevertheless it was yet another high quality offering from DS9.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x20 - Shattered Mirror**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-4-22

**My  
Rating -  
7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko follows his son into a war-torn alternate universe after Jake is lured there by the living counterpart of his late mother.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 16th episode.
- Mirror Kira "knows Breen icicles that are warmer than" Mirror Jennifer is.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Jake walking in and seeing Jennifer sitting with Sisko.
- Mirror Bashir hitting Sisko back to settle the score from the previous mirror universe encounter.
- Mirror Worf, as a regent in the Klingon military.

- Seeing the Defiant under construction. Cool!
- Mirror Bashir and Mirror Dax evading the Alliance fleet.
- Mirror Kira: "You know I bet if we put our... heads together, we could create a little excitement for ourselves." Guard: "You sentenced my wife to death." Mirror Kira: "Isn't that a coincidence? I was hoping you weren't married!"
- The Alliance attacking the station.
- Sisko taking command of the Mirror Defiant.
- Mirror Kira murdering Mirror Nog even though he was on her side!
- The Defiant kicking some ass!
- Mirror Kira murdering Mirror Jennifer.
- Mirror O'Brien: "Shields are down to 40%! That cruiser has us in weapons range! Should we make a run for it?" Sisko: "We run all right, right at it!" Mirror O'Brien: "Ah, pattern suicide!"
- Sisko taking the helm.
- Mirror Bashir and Mirror Dax showing up at just the right time.

#### Comments:

Picking up from where we left off in DS9: Through the Looking Glass, Bashir hits Sisko back. :) Okay, seriously, the rebellion has made progress. They captured Terok Nor, and moved it! (Bajor is no longer in the background.) O'Brien stole the plans for the Defiant during his last visit to DS9. Everybody's manipulating everybody in this episode. Jennifer manipulates Jake, O'Brien manipulates Sisko, Garak manipulates Worf, and so on. A complex web of drama ensues. In the end, we get a rather basic confrontation. The Defiant struts her stuff against a fleet of Alliance ships! Maybe it was all a cheap excuse to show us a completely inconsequential VFX battle, but it was a lot of fun to watch! Nothing like a mirror universe episode to to superfluously spice up a season. :)



#### Star Trek DS9 - 4x21 - The Muse

Originally Aired: 1996-4-22

My Rating

- 2

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*While Odo provides shelter for a pregnant Lwaxana Troi, Jake Sisko falls under the spell of a mysterious woman.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This episode establishes that Cardassian architecture was largely influenced by Onaya having manipulated Tavor Kell to create his life's finest works in the short time he had with her.
- The novel Jake was working on was the same as one he was said to have written in DS9: The Visitor.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Odo: "I was wondering if you wanted to take a walk." Worf: "I would." Odo: "I meant Lwaxana." This is funny on two levels. Not only was Worf's comment funny, but Odo is actually doing Quark a favor!
- Odo surprised that Lwaxana guessed that Odo's furniture was for shape shifting, and not just artwork.
- Jake: "I've never worked on paper before." I like this statement, paper is obsolete!
- Odo and Lwaxana playing hide and seek.

#### Comments:

More of Odo avoiding Lwaxana. Poor Lwaxana. First Picard and now Odo! That woman certainly has a way with men... Onaya is certainly an interesting predatory alien. She makes you complete your life's work in a matter of days at the expense of the rest of your life force. Unfortunately, she behaves a little irrationally. I wonder what she thought would happen when she abducted Jake from the infirmary? Did she seriously believe there wouldn't be a massive search conducted in short order for Jake? He's the son of the commander of the station, after all. Her motives really are never quite clear throughout the episode other than that she gains sustenance, or at least pleasure from her activities. She leaves mysteriously with no apology, nothing is gained from her time on the show. Only Odo's experience with Lwaxana is noteworthy, and even that is a bit silly.



### Star Trek DS9 - 4x22 - For the Cause

Originally Aired: 1996-5-6

My Rating

- 8

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Sisko is shocked to learn that his girlfriend, Cassidy Yates, may be a Maquis smuggler.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Garak's 17th episode.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira participating in the springball tournament.
- Garak expressing attraction for Ziyal to Bashir.
- Sisko gently needling Cassidy about the places she visits on her cargo runs.
- Garak's first meeting with Ziyal.
- Eddington's opinion of the Maquis... or lack thereof. :)
- Ziyal visiting Garak in his shop.
- Jake making fun of his father about his relationship with Cassidy, unaware of the allegations against her.
- Sisko inviting Cassidy to Risa for a few days to try and get her off the hook.
- Quark complaining about his new suit and then Kira threatening Garak about Ziyal. Too much at once! Poor Garak.
- Garak: "Paranoid is what they call people who imagine threats against their life. I have threats against my life."
- Quark egging on Garak's paranoia.
- Sisko discovering the plot against him.
- Eddington stunning Kira.
- Sisko's conversation with Eddington after his betrayal.
- Garak's conversation with Ziyal in the holosuite.
- Cassidy returning to the station, alone.

#### Comments:

A story of secrets, lies, love, tension, betrayal, and perseverance. Garak has fallen in love with Ziyal, and Cassidy is a Maquis supplier! I always suspected something funny about her since her DS9: The Way of the Warrior when she seemed a bit nervous about all the activity on the docking ring. The writers probably did that to make her falsely seem like a Changeling, so this is a nice twist on that continuity. I felt Sisko's pain all throughout this episode and deeply at the ending too. He struggled with his deep love for Cassidy and his duty to the Federation. In the end, he had to sacrifice his love for his duty; then, to top it all off, he's betrayed by one of his most trusted officers, Michael Eddington! You really got to feel sorry for the poor guy by the end of the episode. By contrast, things between Garak and Ziyal couldn't be better. And, since Garak is my favorite character on DS9, I couldn't be happier for him. :)



### Star Trek DS9 - 4x23 - To the Death

Originally Aired: 1996-5-13

My

Rating -

9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Attempting to stop a group of Jem'Hadar renegades from gaining power, Sisko and the Defiant crew must join forces with deadly Jem'Hadar soldiers.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Sisko's opening log entry mentions that they drove away Breen privateers from a Bajoran colony.
- This is Weyoun's first episode.
- According to the script, when Weyoun touches Odo on the shoulder he is infecting him with the disease that will force his return to the Great Link at the end of the season.
- This episode establishes that the Dominion is 2000 years old.

- This episode establishes that solid neutronium can withstand several quantum torpedo blasts.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- DS9 with a whole pylon destroyed!
- Weyoun's first meeting with Sisko.
- Weyoun: "The Dominion has endured for 2000 years and will continue to endure long after the Federation has crumbled into dust."
- Odo: "Are you accusing me of something?" A Jem'Hadar: "It is not for us to accuse a god of betraying heaven."
- The Jem'Hadar soldiers trying to provoke Worf into a fight.
- Omet'Iklan announcing that he knows about the Gateway and that they don't need to keep secrets and use the White to ensure their loyalty because he believes the Jem'Hadar are more loyal to the Founders than the Vorta will ever be.
- Lots of great Jem'Hadar tidbits here. Jadzia: "Am I really that interesting? You've been standing there staring at me for the last two hours." Virak'kara: "You are part of my combat team. I must learn to understand your behavior. Anticipate your actions." Jadzia: "There must be something you'd rather do. Maybe get some sleep?" Virak'kara: "We don't sleep." Jadzia: "How about getting something to eat?" Virak'kara: "The White is the only thing we need." Jadzia: "Don't sleep, don't eat. What do you do for relaxation?" Virak'kara: "Relaxation would only make us weak." Jadzia: "Well you people are no fun at all. Glad I'm not a Jem'Hadar woman." Virak'kara: "There are no Jem'Hadar women." Jadzia: "So what do you do... lay eggs?" Virak'kara: "Jem'Hadar are bred in birthing chambers. We are able to fight within three days of our emergence." Jadzia: "Lucky you. So let me get this straight. No sleep, no food, no women. No wonder you're so angry. After 30 or 40 years of that I'd be angry too!" Virak'kara: "No Jem'Hadar has ever lived 30 years." Jadzia: "How old are you?" Virak'kara: "I am eight." Jadzia: "I would have guessed at least fifteen." Virak'kara: "Few Jem'Hadar live that long. If we reach twenty, we are considered honored elders... How old are you?" Jadzia: "I stopped counting at 300." Virak'kara: "You don't look it..." Jadzia: "Thank you."
- Weyoun staring at Odo, obviously regarding Odo as a god. O'Brien to Odo: "I wonder what would happen if you went over there and ordered him to stand on his head."
- Weyoun administering the White. Worf: "Loyalty bought at such a price is no loyalty at all."
- Omet'Iklan: "I am First Omet'Iklan and I am dead. As of this moment we are all dead. We go into battle to reclaim our lives. This we do gladly, for we are Jem'Hadar. Remember, victory is life!"
- O'Brien: "I'm Chief Miles Edward O'Brien. And I'm very much alive, and intend to stay that way!"
- Omet'Iklan killing Weyoun.

#### Comments:

A real thriller, this episode has many things going for it. Seeing an entire pylon destroyed on DS9, meeting Weyoun, tension with the Jem'Hadar, a big battle, and so many other things. Of course, it's also a reference to the events of TNG: Contagion. I liked the idea of the Iconians quite a bit in that TNG episode, and it was nice to bring them back for this episode. Once again, the Gateways are destroyed, but I'm glad this time. Gateway technology would have had a major effect on an upcoming Dominion war; and to be honest, I was looking forward to the wormhole and the station being the center of attention. ;) Overall, I was extremely pleased with this one because we're finally getting to see some real contention with the Dominion. At the same time, it was a rare moment of truce between the Dominion and the Federation, something we may never see again to this extent.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x24 - The Quickening**  
Originally Aired: 1996-5-20

My  
Rating -  
3

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*While traveling in the Gamma Quadrant, Kira, Dax and Bashir respond to an automated distress call from a planet that the Jem'Hadar destroyed 200 years ago.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This episode features a different and short-lived hair style for Dax.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Quark's "little advertisements."

- Julian's teddy bear story.
- Julian discovering a vaccine.

**Comments:**

Another alien race that looks exactly like humans. This episode examines euthanasia. A blight is killing people on a massive scale. Since there is no cure on this planet, a man is euthanizing people en masse when they come to him to make their death quicker and less painful. Interestingly, Julian and Jadzia both display abhorred reactions to the concept of euthanasia when confronted by it, which is consistent with the Federation's "do no harm" and "never execute anyone" attitude. It also seems a bit impractical. What is the point of prolonging life when life is always painful and there is no hope of a cure? Well, Julian's attention quickly shifts away from the euthanasia problem and dives into finding a cure. The episode thus conveniently avoids making a statement about euthanasia and instead the episode becomes your average miracle cure show. Granted Julina wasn't able to "just" find a cure, keeping the episode nicely realistic, I still feel this episode is a severe missed opportunity to say something profound about euthanasia.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x25 - Body Parts**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-6-10

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Misdiagnosed with a terminal disease, Quark sells his body parts on the Ferengi Futures Exchange to pay off his debts, then finds himself unable to break the contract.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode was conceived as a way to keep a pregnant Nana Visitor on the show.
- This episode establishes that 500 bars of gold pressed latinum equals 10,000 strips, or 1,000,000 slips.
- Garak's 18th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Brunt accusing Quark of being a philanthropist.
- Quark seeking to hire Garak to kill him.
- Keiko explaining morning sickness to Kira.
- Quark and Garak arguing over the death method.
- Everyone chiming in to help Quark in the end.
- Rules of Acquisition; 17. A contract is a contract is a contract. But only between Ferengi. 239. Never be afraid to mislabel a product.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In Quark's bar in the teaser when Quark announces that he's dying. 2. Talking to a Starfleet officer in the background just after the opening credits. 3. At Garak's shop getting a new pair of trousers. 4. Is one of the people coming in to help restock and refurbish the bar. Morn brings in a chair and sits on it. :)

**Comments:**

This is a rather silly Ferengi episode, but a rather clever O'Brien / Kira / Keiko episode. Unfortunately, most of the time is squandered on Quark's silly situation. Very little plot is given to Kira and the O'Briens. This plot would have been worth a few more points if Quark's and the O'Briens' allotted time were reversed.



**Star Trek DS9 - 4x26 - Broken Link**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-6-17

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo is forced to return to the homeworld of his people and face judgment for killing one of his own.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 19th episode.
- Garak was likely an assassin posing as a gardner on Romulus at one time and is likely responsible for the deaths of many Romulan dignitaries.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Garak playing matchmaker on Odo.
- Kira's sneezing.
- Garak keeping Odo company by discussing his past with him. :)
- The Defiant being greeted by a whole fleet of Jem'Hadar ships and the female shape shifter appearing.
- Garak's short and very hostile conversation with the female shapeshifter.
- Seeing the great link.
- Garak attempting to destroy the Founders' homeworld.
- Odo having been transformed into a human.
- The revelation that Gowron is a Changeling.

#### Comments:

Salome Jens as the female shapeshifter is always a welcome appearance, coupled with Garak of course, and a fantastic story to boot. Odo has killed a Changeling, and judgment must now be pronounced on him. Well, they turned him into a human, but that's not all. Odo learned that Gowron is a Changeling whilst in the Great Link. No wonder the Klingons have been acting so strange lately. Not the most action packed finale one could expect, but certainly interesting. Ah, poor Garak. To have his entire race insulted by the female shapeshifter then to fail in his attempt to assassinate them all. Six months in a holding cell does seem like light punishment for attempting to commit genocide, but this is Garak we're talking about! A former mass murderer anyway... besides. We all like him here at DS9. ;) A fine season finale.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 5x01 - Apocalypse Rising

Originally Aired: 1996-9-30

My  
Rating -  
7

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Sisko approaches Starfleet Command with Odo's suspicion that Gowron, the Klingon leader, is really one of Odo's people -- a Changeling.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Season 5 begins a trend of very cool episode names. Granted there were a few creepy cool episode names before this one, I like to officially designate this as the first such episode.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Kira telling Dukat who the father of her child is. I love the confused look he gets on his face when she tells him O'Brien, a married man, is the father of her child. :)
- Sisko, O'Brien, and Odo as Klingons.
- Bashir and Kira arguing about her pregnancy.
- Worf training his crewmembers on how to act Klingon.
- Dukat destroying a Klingon Bird of Prey.
- Klingons bragging about killing Starfleet officers. One Klingon mentions killing a Tellarite and a Benzanite. Sisko attacks him "because he's in the way of his blood wine" but really because the captain of that ship was his friend.
- Martok seeing something familiar in O'Brien.
- Martok discovering the intruders when Sisko is nominated for an award.
- Odo discovering that Martok is the Changeling.
- Hoards of Klingons killing the imposter Martok.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Just after the opening credits.

#### Comments:

Odo is feeling sorry for himself now that he's no longer a Changeling. Starfleet is planning to expose the fact that Gowron is a Changeling. Sisko is stuck with the job of implementing this plan. Their spy mission doesn't go precisely as planned; because Martok is the Changeling, not Gowron. Despite a distinct lack of lines, this is really Odo's episode, not anyone else's. For he has regained his confidence in this episode. He may no longer be a Changeling, but he's still a fantastic observer

of human(oid) behavior and that makes him a brilliant investigator. Odo expertly discovers who the real Changeling is.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x02 - The Ship**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-10-7

**My  
Rating -  
8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While exploring a Gamma Quadrant world, Sisko, Dax, Worf, O'Brien, and Muniz -- one of O'Brien's men -- watch as a Jem'Hadar warship crashes into the planet's surface.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first episode that features the inside of a Jem'Hadar ship.
- This episode establishes that Jem'Hadar weapons unleash an anticoagulant in the victim's blood so that the bleeding never stops.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew all baffled at the technology and layout on the Jem'Hadar ship.
- The Vorta commander contacting Sisko and their subsequent first in-person meeting.
- Worf and O'Brien arguing about how everyone is treating injured Muniz.
- Jadzia, speculating what the Vorta is looking for aboard the ship: "Maybe she lost an earring."
- Worf: "Commander." Dax: "What is it?" Worf: "It may have been the Vorta's computer console. I found it in one of the upper compartments. But the power grid is offline in that part of the ship." Dax: "So you ripped it out of the wall. Very nice! So what do we do with it now, use it for a doorstep?"
- The Vorta and Sisko's meeting again after the founder died.
- Worf and O'Brien honoring Muniz together in the end.

#### **Comments:**

A Jem'Hadar ship crashes before Sisko's eyes. A fantastic opportunity to explore the Dominion from within; used well in this episode. Muniz was a great temporary character; I really loved his interactions with O'Brien. He does, of course, suffer from redshirt syndrome, but the coolness of the episode kind of offsets that. The female Vorta is a very cool character, I absolutely loved her. I wish we could have seen more of her. The sad ending is nicely done; the two sides have become so distrusting of one another that cooperating is now impossible. Episodes like DS9: To The Death will apparently never happen again. Sad, but also very cool, Starfleet has scored a Jem'Hadar warship! Awesome!



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x03 - Looking for par'Mach in All the Wrong Places**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-10-14

**My Rating -  
10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Quark must fight for honor -- Klingon style.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Julian eavesdropping on the "battling O'Briens".
- Worf: "I prefer traditional opera performed in the traditional manner." Dax: "You know, for a Klingon who was raised by humans, wears a Starfleet uniform, and drinks prune juice, you're pretty attached to tradition. But that's okay. I like a man riddled with contradictions."
- Worf in love at first sight when he sees a Klingon woman board the station.
- Worf's reaction to seeing Grilka embrace Quark.
- Bashir and O'Brien discussing O'Brien and Kira growing ever so close. ;)
- Worf attempting to court Grilka.

- Quark talking to Dax about Grilka right in front of Worf.
- Worf: "It is customary among her people that the man bring a leg of lingh'ta on the first courtship dinner. Make sure it's fresh, as if you have just killed it. Then use the leg to sweep aside everything else on the table and declare in a loud voice, 'I have brought you this! From this day, I wish to provide food for you and your house! All I ask is to share your company and do honor to your name!'"
- O'Brien starting to feel as though he's cheating on Keiko.
- Worf listening to Klingon opera very loud on the Defiant's bridge.
- Quark describing his successful dinner with Grilka.
- Quark and Dax reenacting the formation of the Klingon Empire.
- Odo and Kira discussing O'Brien.
- Quark telling Grilka that she's worth more than all the latinum in the quadrant.
- Keiko inadvertently forcing O'Brien and Kira into another uncomfortable situation.
- Jadzia's "idea."
- Quark's puppet battle. Awesome.
- Quark's "Right of Proclamation."
- Jadzia courting Worf.
- O'Brien and Kira finally discussing their "problem." :)
- Quark, Grilka, Worf, and Jadzia all in the infirmary. Gotta love Bashir's reaction.
- Worf laughing. Now that's something you don't see every day.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Worf attacks him.

#### Comments:

A great sequel to DS9: The House of Quark, Worf has fallen in love with Quark's ex-wife. The title of this episode, albeit long, is of course hilarious. This episode is loads and bounds more successful than the first. The various love related character threads floating around in this episode are wonderfully done. Quark pursues Grilka, Worf pursues her too, Dax pursues Worf, and O'Brien and Kira pursue each other, though they don't entirely know it for a while. ;) I don't normally grant ratings of ten to humor episodes, but this one so incredibly profound that exceptions must be made sometimes. While I probably would never grant a humor centric episode such as this the "best episode of [insert Trek show here] award", I still would place this episode on the list of must see episodes for anyone sampling the series. Though, I'd say that about any episode I've rated at ten, now would I. :)



**Star Trek DS9 - 5x04 - ...Nor the Battle to the Strong**  
**Originally Aired:** 1996-10-21

**My Rating - 5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Jake Sisko experiences the horrors of war first hand.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir boring Jake, then Jake getting excited about going into a combat situation.
- The Ferengi view of pregnancy.
- Jake watching the wounded come in.
- Jake running and finding the dying man.
- The discussion about the preferred method of death.
- Jake's random phaser fire turning him into a hero.

#### **Comments:**

A decent episode. I'm a bit annoyed that the Klingons are still attacking the Federation. But once you get over that, the episode is pretty intense and emotional. Jake has his first battle experience, gets lucky, and becomes a hero. I rather like the way he was completely honest with himself about everything. And as Sisko said, "everyone sees a little of himself in this."





**Star Trek DS9 - 5x05 - The Assignment**  
Originally Aired: 1996-10-28

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Keiko O'Brien is taken over by a Pah-wraith.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien meeting a possessed Keiko.
- O'Brien calculating the time various methods of incapacitating Keiko would take.
- O'Brien breaking his glass with his bare hand out of anger at his party.
- O'Brien waking up to a possessed Keiko, briefly forgetting about the possession.
- O'Brien enlisting Rom for his "top secret operation."
- Rom and O'Brien figuring everything out.
- O'Brien using the pah wraith's plan against it.
- Morn Appearances; 1. First scene in Quark's bar. 2. The final scene, Quark's bar while Rom tells Quark about his celebrations for his promotion.

**Comments:**

Another rare episode to mention the fire caves, Keiko was possessed by a Pah-wraith there. One wonders why anyone is allowed to visit such a dangerous place. This is Keiko's episode, which is ironic seeing as how it isn't really her. O'Brien also gets a nice showing; we get to see him interact with his Engineering staff, which kind of like TNG: Lower Decks, is a nice change of pace. I like how Rom figures everything out, proving that he's not as stupid as everyone thinks he is. In fact, he's pretty damn smart; maybe a bit autistic. Oh, and when Dax can't sleep, she scans the wormhole randomly for anomalies. ;)



**Star Trek DS9 - 5x06 - Trials and Tribble-ations**  
Originally Aired: 1996-11-4

My Rating -  
10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Deep Space Nine crewmembers travel back in time and integrate with Kirk's Enterprise crew.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- This episode is a connection with TOS: The Trouble with Tribbles.
- The temporal investigation guys give an interesting set of lines just after the opening credits: "Be specific captain, which Enterprise? There've been five." The other guy corrects him: "Six." This is interesting because at the time this episode was aired, we only did know of five. Kirk's Enterprise, Kirk's second Enterprise (A), the B featured in Star Trek VII, the C featured in TNG: Yesterday's Enterprise, and the D. The mystery sixth ship was long speculated at the time to be the new Enterprise-E that was supposedly either under construction or just built, but the statement now makes more sense when taken in the context of Star Trek Enterprise, if you count Archer's ship among the "six." Though, that assumption is also flawed when Sisko says right after their dialog that he was referring to "the first Enterprise; Constitution class." Maybe Sisko meant the first Federation starship named Enterprise.
- Kirk was "a menace" because of his repeated temporal violations.
- People often claim this episode has wild inconsistencies with Ent: Affliction and Ent: Divergence regarding the Klingon forehead disease when Bashir didn't know anything about the history of this disease and his subsequent awe of the 23rd century Klingons. Yet Bashir repeatedly states in this episode that he knows nothing of the 23rd century. I will now roll my eyes and say, "Next!"
- Emony Dax met Dr. McCoy on Earth and probably had a brief relationship with him when he was a medical student while she was judging a gymnastics competition.

- The intermittent tribbles that fell on Kirk after the initial downpour were actually Sisko and Dax throwing them down the hole. :)

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Dax' faux pas, time joke.
- Bashir and O'Brien making fun of the way Worf smells.
- The crew dressing up in retro uniforms.
- Bashir: "I'm a doctor, not an historian." Count 19 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Sisko: "In the old days, operations officers wore red and command officers wore gold." Dax: "And women wore less."
- O'Brien and Bashir trying to work a 23rd century turbolift.
- O'Brien's and Bashir's confrontation with a local Engineer.
- Worf describing to Odo the history of Klingons and Tribbles.
- Odo: "Another glorious chapter of Klingon history. Tell me, do they still sing songs of the Great Tribble Hunt?"
- Bashir speaking of a possible predestination paradox surrounding his birth: "I could be my own great grandfather! If I don't meet with her tomorrow I may never be born! I can't wait to get back to Deep Space Nine and see your face when you find out that I never existed!"
- O'Brien mistaking a low ranking officer for Kirk.
- O'Brien, Bashir, and Odo not recognizing 23rd century Klingons and Worf's reaction to it: "They are Klingons, and it is a long story." O'Brien: "What happened? Some kind of genetic engineering?" Bashir: "A viral mutation?" Worf: "We do not discuss it with outsiders."
- The bar fight.
- Dax calculating the exact number of tribbles exactly the way Spock did.
- Sisko meeting Kirk.
- Tribbles all over DS9.
- Morn Appearances; 1. At Quark's, drowning in Tribbles.

#### Comments:

This episode is wonderfully funny. They did a great job making everything look retro; even the characters' hair, along with splicing together scenes from TOS: The Trouble With Tribbles into this episode. Dax is ridiculously nostalgic, Sisko wants to ask Kirk about fighting the Gorn, O'Brien can't figure out all this old technology, Bashir thinks he's his own great grandfather, and Worf feels shame about Klingon history. All very entertaining and probably the biggest fanboy episode ever made.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 5x07 - Let He Who Is Without Sin...

Originally Aired: 1996-11-11

My Rating

- 4

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Worf's relationship with Dax hits a rough spot, and he plans to discuss his feelings during their vacation on Risa.*

#### Problems:

- How could a "friend of Curzon's" instantly recognize Jadzia?

#### Factoids:

- The Ferengi have 178 different words for rain.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Another mention of captain Boday, a Gallamite with a transparent skull.
- Leeta declaring that she's in love with Rom then Quark and Bashir's subsequent reactions.
- Worf telling Jadzia a story in which when he was a child he accidentally killed a human boy during a soccer game.
- Morn Appearances; 1. The first scene, hands a Starfleet officer a flower.

#### Comments:

Another attempt at a humor episode finally sparks a dud. We get to see Dax in some interesting clothing again, but the overall plot is just lacking. Some good continuity and decent details in the episode, like the horgon which caused Worf's faux pas in TNG: Captain's Holiday. Bashir's and Leeta's "relationship" in this episode is wonderfully handled. But the plot concerning Worf and the Essentialists is very poor. The idea is sound, and the opening is well handled, but they quickly

become annoying with their childish attacks and petty sabotage and totally fail to make a point concerning the Federation's complacency and overindulgence. To me, despite his redemption in the end, it just seems petty that Worf has to ruin the vacation of hundreds of thousands of people before he can talk to Dax about his relationship with her.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x08 - Things Past**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-11-18

**My Rating**

**- 3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko, Odo, Dax, and Garak find themselves on Terok Nor during the Cardassian occupation of Bajor.*

#### **Problems:**

- During Bashir's initial diagnosis after the opening credits, the computer beeps were consistent with Federation computers, but the voice was of the Cardassian computers.

#### **Factoids:**

- Garak's 20th episode.  
- Kurtwood Smith plays Thrax in this episode. He also plays Annorax in *Voy: Year of Hell*.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Quark gently making fun of Sisko, Garak, and Odo when he offered them jobs.  
- Thrax laying into Quark just like Odo would.  
- Odo cross examining Thrax pointing out numerous flaws in his investigation.  
- Dukat: "Bad manners are the fault of the parent, not the child."  
- Bashir revealing that Odo still has biological Changeling qualities.

#### **Comments:**

Manufactured danger and generic sci fi lend badly to creating original plots. Bashir saved it in the end, implicating that Odo is still a Changeling but locked in form somehow. The plasma anomaly allowed Garak, Sisko, and Dax to link with Odo. This will be useful information later on. Nevertheless, while Bashir's explanation saves the story a bit, the bulk of the plot is Bajoran nostalgia in the form of a flashback, which we've seen a few too many times already. It seems Garak is finally out of jail for his attempt to commit genocide though. ;)



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x09 - The Ascent**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-11-26

**My Rating**

**- 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo and Quark are forced to cooperate when their runabout goes down on an unknown planet.*

#### **Problems:**

- So Worf commanded the *Defiant* in *Star Trek VIII: First Contact*. He and all crewmembers had the new style uniforms on. But now he's reverted back to the first generation DS9 / *Voyager* uniforms?

#### **Factoids:**

- The name of one of Jake's stories is said to be "Past Prologue", which is also the name of a DS9 episode in early season 1.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nog's first conversation with Sisko. Hilarious.  
- Odo antagonizing Quark with noises.  
- Quark and Odo trading insults as they scale down a mountain.  
- Rom and Sisko discussing Nog and Jake.  
- Quark and Odo coming to blows.  
- Quark to Odo: "Don't you get it? I'm not trying to rescue you. I'm taking you along as emergency rations. If you die, I'm going to eat you."  
- The scene where Odo and Quark are in the medical bay of the *Defiant*, telling each other that they meant it when they said they hated each other and the subsequent creepy laughing.  
- Morn Appearances; 1. Not show, but Quark mentions that Odo likes to watch Morn eat when they trek up the mountain.

**Comments:**

This is probably the best episode that directly deals with Odo's new humanoid form. Frankly, this kind of episode simply couldn't have been done before Odo was changed into a humanoid, which in my opinion is a good thing. It's nice to see the writers taking advantage of this instead of just pretending he's the same old Odo, which they've already had a tendency to do. This episode thrives on the complex relationship that has developed over the years between Quark and Odo. Their mutual hate is actually a hidden mutual friendship. When Odo is injured in this episode, Quark could have easily let him die, but Quark takes Odo with him, carrying both Odo and the transmitter up the mountain using the weak excuse that the only reason he was taking Odo with him was to use him as food when he died. In reality, Quark didn't want Odo to die.

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x10 - Rapture****Originally Aired:** 1996-12-30**My Rating -**  
**5****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko has a vision and recommends that Bajor not join the Federation at this time.*

**Problems:**

- Why hadn't the admiral who contacted Sisko converted to the new uniform code? Or his underling? Why was his underling wearing an old style TNG uniform?

**Factoids:**

- This is the first DS9 episode to feature the uniforms debuted in Star Trek VIII: First Contact.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko's instructions to Kira regarding what to tell her concerning why he can't meet with Kai Winn: "Make something up."
- Cassidy's appearance.
- Sisko discovering the lost city.
- Winn: "I was in a Cardassian prison camp for five years. And I can remember each and every beating I suffered. And while you had your weapons to protect you, all I had was my faith and my courage."
- Sisko walking around predicting things.
- Sisko pleading that Bajor not join the Federation.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Quark's bar during the celebration ceremony.

**Comments:**

If there was any single episode where Sisko really, truly converted and finally believed he was the Emissary, it was this one. Sisko turns into quite the prophet in this episode. Most interestingly, he has a vision of locusts swarming over the lost city of Bajor, but they move on. They head toward Cardassia, representing hard times for Cardassia. Bajor would be all right so long as it stood alone, meaning so long as it didn't join the Federation yet. Without spoiling too much of the future story, Sisko's prophecy comes true in chillingly exact detail. Another interesting detail about this episode is Kai Winn as an ally. She was her usual self-serving self, of course, but it was a rare instance when her motives coincided with the main cast. Overall a controversial episode but also a pivotal one. This kind of episode has been building up a while. Sisko as the Emissary had to either mean something or not mean something. And there you have it. It meant something.

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x11 - The Darkness and the Light****Originally Aired:** 1997-1-6**My**  
**Rating -**  
**7****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kira is shocked and saddened when Latha Mabrin, a fellow member of the Shakaar Resistance Cell-turned Vedek, is murdered.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf gently making fun of Jadzia for losing at Tongo.
- Odo: "All you all right?" Kira: "No I'm not all right! I haven't slept in three days, someone is killing my friends, and my back--! Sorry..."
- Lupaza and Furel showing up at Kira's quarters then O'Brien walking into a surprise in his quarters.
- Nog and Jadzia deciphering the messages.
- Kira stealing Odo's list and a Runabout.
- Prin's introduction and his argument with Kira.
- Kira killing Prin.
- Rules of Acquisition; 111. Treat people in your debt like family. Exploit them.

**Comments:**

A fantastic episode for Kira. It's a roller coaster ride of emotions for Kira as someone is killing her friends throughout the episode. Eventually Kira snaps and steals a Runabout, locates the assassin, and confronts him only to be captured by him. The twisted old man attempts to force her to give birth prematurely so that he can kill Kira, but not the baby. The herbs Kira's been taking protect her from his sedative though, and Kira kills her would be assassin. Nana Visitor has always been a fine actress, but this episode is one of the ones where she really shines. It's easy to get caught up in the drama of it all; a very moving episode.

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x12 - The Begotten**  
**Originally Aired:** 1997-1-27**My Rating - 5****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Odo is reunited with one of his own.***Problems:**

- When the baby was born it seems the umbilical cord came pre cut...

**Factoids:**

- The filming of this episode was rather nice. Nana Visitor was actually pregnant during all these episodes. It wasn't fakes. You'll notice in the final scenes of this episode, she wasn't pregnant anymore. The filmed around her real world childbirth!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Quark "haggling" with Odo.
- O'Brien's lack of enthusiasm for the delivery ceremony.
- Worf: "Constable, why are you talking to your beverage?"
- Odo fighting with Dr. Mora.
- Dr. Mora: "The first time you did anything like that was when you formed a tentacle to slap my hand from the console." Odo: "I wanted you to stop zapping me."
- Shakaar and O'Brien fighting.
- Odo being uncharacteristically nice to Quark.
- Odo becoming a Changeling again.

**Comments:**

This episode is something of a sequel to DS9: The Alternate. Basically Odo vs. Dr. Mora part 2. Fortunately they (finally) resolved their differences. I was disappointed with DS9: The Alternate; Mora and Odo never settled their differences. Fortunately, this episode makes up for all that one's mistakes. The O'Brien / Shakaar / Keiko / Kira plot was rather childish though. Honestly, I didn't care much for it. In the end, this episode serves the necessary purpose of giving Odo back his shapeshifting abilities. What the hell were they thinking when they removed his ability in the first place? I mean, it made for a dramatic season finale / premiere, but when those episodes were all over, we were left with a much less interesting Odo. Well, we had one decent episode dealing with Odo's newfound humanoid nature (DS9: The Ascent), so at least it served a purpose. Still, it seems as though Odo regaining his shapeshifting ability was somewhat rushed. Overall, a rather average episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 5x13 - For the Uniform**  
Originally Aired: 1997-2-3

**My Rating**  
- 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko encounters Michael Eddington, his former Starfleet Security Chief, who betrayed him and joined the Maquis.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- This is the first episode in which they use holo projectors instead of a viewscreen for ship communications. Holo projectors won't be used very often after this episode though.
- Odo mentions the encoded Maquis transmission is a heterophonic Breen nursery rhyme.
- Sisko says: "If anyone knows how to keep things cold, it's the Breen."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Eddington and Sisko confronting one another in the teaser.
- Eddington's computer virus stunt.
- Odo: "Sir, have you ever reminded Starfleet command that they stationed Eddington here because they didn't trust me?" Sisko: "No." Odo: "Please do."
- The whole Sisko, Dax, and the punching bag scene. Sisko is an awesome character when he's angry.
- O'Brien and Dax briefing Sisko on all the stuff that doesn't work on the Defiant.
- The whole Defiant half roll thing. Cheesy but funny.
- The ambush.
- Eddington attacking a Cardassian evacuation ship forcing Sisko to save the occupants rather than go after Eddington.
- Sisko strolling onto the bridge dispensing orders to begin modifying quantum torpedos so that they can be used to poison Maquis colony atmospheres. I love the bridge crew reaction. Sheer disbelief.
- Sisko getting pissed at the end. The perfect villain.
- Dax: "Benjamin, I'm curious. Your plan to poison the Maquis planets. You didn't clear it with Starfleet first, did you?" Sisko: "I knew I'd forgotten to do something." Dax: "Big gamble." Sisko: "That's what it takes to be a good villain." Dax: "You know, sometimes I like it when the bad guy wins."

**Comments:**

Sisko becomes the villain! And what a villain! This episode is one of many which show us how great an actor Avery Brooks can be, especially when given parts that deal excessively in anger. Avery Brooks' performance in this episode in my opinion even rivals Patrick Stewart's "Moby Dick" scene with Lily in Star Trek VIII: First Contact. The Eddington loose end is finally tied up and this episode wastes none of the showdown potential. An unexpected gem.



**Star Trek DS9 - 5x14 - In Purgatory's Shadow**  
Originally Aired: 1997-2-10

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf and Garak are taken prisoner by the Jem'Hadar.*

**Problems:**

- Real Bashir is wearing an old style uniform in this episode. This means he must have been replaced while still wearing the old style uniform. If this is true, why didn't the Changeling Bashir kill Sisko in DS9: Rapture? Or prevent the Changeling from dying in DS9: The Begotten, or prevent it from merging with Odo giving him back his shapeshifting ability? Or kill Kira in DS9: The Begotten? It seems obvious that the writers intended Bashir to have been replaced just before this episode began and were using the two uniforms to help viewers distinguish the two characters. But that's no excuse. The audience shouldn't have to come up with this stuff. For the record, Bashir said he was replaced "over a month ago." Take it how you will...

**Factoids:**

- Odo reverts into his gelatinous state when he attempts to sleep.
- Odo is a solid 18 hours a day according to Kira.
- Garak's 21st episode.
- According to Bashir, the Breen have no blood.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Worf and Jadzia arguing about Worf not telling her about going into the Gamma Quadrant with Garak.
- Dukat attacking Garak.
- Worf regarding Garak: "At the first sign of Betrayal I will kill him, but I promise to return the body intact." Sisko: "I assume that's a joke." Worf: "We'll see."
- Worf: "You want me to sponsor your application to Starfleet Academy?" Garak: "What do you think?" Worf: "I think it is a bad idea." Garak: "Well, I'd write the actual letter myself. I'd just need you to sign it!" Worf: "Find someone else." Garak: "Why? Because I'm a Cardassian? You're a Klingon. Nog is a Ferengi. Starfleet Academy is a very accepting place." Worf: "You are not just a Cardassian. You are a spy, an assassin, and a saboteur." Garak: "I know I've done some unfortunate things in the past and I regret them. That's why I want to join Starfleet, why I need to join Starfleet. I'm looking for a fresh start, a way to make up for all the damage I've done. I need to prove to myself that I can be better than I am. But I need your help. Your support to start me on my way to redemption." Worf: "If that is how you feel, I will consider your request." Garak: "That's all I ask. Frankly, I think I can be quite an asset to Starfleet. With my extensive experience, I could skip the lower ranks entirely and begin my career as a commander! Maybe you should suggest that in your letter. Tell them you'd be honored to serve under me." Worf: "Do not play games with me. You have no desire to join Starfleet, do you?" Garak: "No, I'm afraid I don't." Worf: "Then why all of this deception?" Garak: "Because lying is a skill like any other and if you want to maintain a level of excellence you have to practice constantly." Worf: "Practice on someone else." Garak: "Mr. Worf, you're no fun at all." Worf: "Good."
- Garak: "I'd like to get my hands on that fellow Earl Grey and tell him a thing or two about tea leaves." Garak insulting Picard's favorite tea. ;)
- The huge fleet of Jem'Hadar ships.
- The revelation that Enabran Tain is Garak's father. I like how Garak let Bashir hear this private conversation.
- The huge Dominion fleet coming through the wormhole.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In the background when Dukat attacks Garak.

#### Comments:

A classic DS9 episode, this episode features a plethora of major events and revelations. Bashir is a Changeling, the Enabran Tain is Garak's father, Tain dies, and the Dominion invades the Alpha Quadrant. To top it all off, this episode has a cool name, just like I said would start happening in my review of DS9: Apocalypse Rising. There is only one thing I don't like about this episode and it's the technical problem I listed in the problems section. That's got to be one of DS9's most annoying technical problems. Right up there with the whole Vorta telekinesis problem. Overall, a great start to the two parter with a magnificent cliffhanger.



**Star Trek DS9 - 5x15 - By Inferno's Light**  
Originally Aired: 1997-2-17

**My Rating**  
- 9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*The real Bashir, Worf and Garak try to stay alive in the hostile world of a Dominion Internment Center.*

#### Problems:

- Exactly why did the Dominion leave that Runabout in orbit so Bashir, Worf, Martok, Garak, et al could escape? This question is somewhat answered in DS9: Inquisition. Bashir says the Dominion didn't think they'd be able to contact the Runabout.

#### Factoids:

- Garak's 22nd episode.
- When Garak is talking to himself, he mentions, "This isn't like Tsenketh." This means Garak might have once been on the Tsenkethi homeworld as an Obsidian Order agent.
- Worf is shot during transport in this episode but it seems the transporter beam was able to protect him.
- Jadzia in this episode establishes that going to warp inside a solar system is never done because

it's too dangerous.

- According to Bashir's and O'Brien's conversation, Changeling Bashir had been operating aboard the station for four weeks.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Dukat joining the Dominion fleet.
- Worf fighting the Jem'Hadar matches.
- Gowron resigning the Khitomer Accords.
- Dukat threatening to take back Deep Space Nine.
- Martok: "There is no greater enemy than one's own fears." Worf: "It takes a brave man to face them."
- O'Brien: "We're facing a major inter stellar war and you're thinking about darts?"
- Quark: "The Jem'Hadar don't eat, don't drink, and they don't have sex. And if that wasn't bad enough, the Founders don't eat, don't drink, and don't have sex either. Which between you and me makes my financial future less than promising." Ziyal: "It might not be so bad. For all we know, the Vorta could be gluttonous, alcoholic, sex maniacs."
- The Romulans joining the Federation and Klingon task force.
- The Breen firing at a Jem'Hadar while the Jem'Hadar fires at him. The vaporize each other! Awesome.
- Romulan: "My people have a saying: 'Never turn your back on a Breen.'"
- Worf refusing to yield.
- Jem'Hadar: "I cannot defeat this Klingon. All I can do is kill him. And that no longer holds my interest."
- The Defiant going to warp within the Bajoran system, destroying Changeling Bashir's Runabout bomb.

#### Comments:

More major events. The Dominion hasn't in fact invaded. Cardassia has joined the Dominion. So the Dominion is legally moving in. Dukat's betrayal isn't particularly unexpected. I sided quickly Kira. The next time she sees Dukat, she's gonna kill him. :) More episode name coolness, though even more than the cool name I like the cool connection between this episode and the previous one. Rather than Episode Name, Part I and Episode Name, Part II, we have In Purgatory's Shadow and By Inferno's Light. The two episode names are kind of opposites of each other. Very clever. There are some annoying things though, keeping the episode from being a ten. Firstly, another very annoying technical problem. Why did the Dominion leave the Runabout in orbit so everyone in the prison camp could escape so easily? Secondly, it was rather convenient that the Yukon had nothing but Redshirts on it so no important characters had to be placed in jeopardy. \*rolls eyes\* One final note, I found it interesting that the Romulans joined the Federation and Klingon task force in this episode. It's very consistent with their behavior. We already knew they didn't particularly like the Dominion when they gave a cloaking device to the Federation for the Defiant. Now they finally show their teeth to the Dominion!



#### Star Trek DS9 - 5x16 - Doctor Bashir, I Presume?

Originally Aired: 1997-2-24

My Rating

- 8

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Bashir is chosen as the model for the new version of Starfleet's holographic doctor program.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- According to Bashir, he hasn't been home in three years.
- This is another rare episode to feature the use of a holo projector.
- Julian's parents are imprisoned in a minimum security penal colony in New Zealand for two years. Maybe the same one Tom Paris was in in Voy: Caretaker?

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Rom chickening out in front of Leeta.
- Zimmerman's appearance.



- Zimmerman activating the EMH. I like how it starts complaining the minute it's activated. :)
- The interviews. I especially like how O'Brien didn't want Zimmerman to tell Bashir how much respect he has for him. :)
- Bashir's parents showing up. I loved Bashir's reaction to seeing them.
- O'Brien walking holographic Julian into walls. :)
- Zimmerman: "You said you liked cerebral men. And at the risk of sounding immodest, I have a towering intellect!"
- Bashir's parents accidentally divulging their "little secret" to holographic Bashir.
- Bashir telling O'Brien the history of his genetic engineering.
- Quark: "Remember what happened with Nog's mother? Yeah. Don't want to think about her, do you? Let me refresh your memory. You signed a standard five year marriage contract with Prinadora's father because you wanted to have a child. A simple every day business deal. But then you fell in love with your wife and wanted to extend the contract. And you were so in love that you never bothered to read the extension before signing it. So in the end, her father swindled you out of all your money. Prinadora left you for a richer man. And you got stuck with Nog. Hooray for romance."
- Bashir: "No. You used to be my father. Now, you're my architect. A man who designed a better son. To replace the defective one he was given."
- The admiral: "200 years ago we tried to improve the species through DNA resequencing. And what did we get for our troubles? The Eugenics wars. For every Julian Bashir that can be created there's a Khan Singh waiting in the wings."
- Rom finally working up the courage to ask Leeta out.
- Zimmerman: "True love should always win."
- O'Brien discovering that Bashir has been letting him win at darts to keep it looking fair. When O'Brien tells him to "really play", Bashir scores 3 bulls-eyes with ease. :)
- Morn Appearances; 1. The first scene. 2. Kisses Leeta. She pushes him away. 3. Is interviewed by Zimmerman. Does not speak. He shrugs. :) 4. Playing Dabo toward the end just before O'Brien discovers Bashir was letting him win.

#### Comments:

This is the first episode in which we get to meet the real Dr. Zimmerman. One of the funniest and quirkiest characters ever introduced on Star Trek. This episode also features some great story for the ever neglected Rom character. You can really get a sense in this episode of how autistic Rom can be. He's a mechanical genius with zero social skills. I love how Leeta was in love with Rom and Rom was in love with Leeta, but she was waiting for him to make the first move and he was too shy to do it. Almost torturous to watch! :) Additionally, this subplot features great continuity with DS9: Let He Who Is Without Sin... when Leeta first announced she was in love with Rom. I was wondering if they were going to pick up on this. The main plot, however, is the shining star. Not only do we get fascinating character development for Bashir, but we get to see the ever so rarely featured and fascinating Louis Zimmerman character. A very nicely constructed episode.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x17 - A Simple Investigation**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-3-31

**My Rating - 2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo falls in love with a mysterious woman.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Arissa: "You mean you're just doing this out of the kindness of your heart?" Odo: "I don't have a heart."
- Odo showing up during Bashir's holo suite program.
- O'Brien taking advantage of Odo's interruption and cornering Bashir.
- The senior staff gossiping about Odo.
- Morn Appearances; 1. At the bar when Quark is trying to sell stuff to Arissa. 2. Quark locks him in the bar when he goes to close it down accidentally.

**Comments:**

Another Odo episode. It seems for some reason Odo centric episodes are always relatively boring detective episodes. In this case, a girl trying to flee the Orion Syndicate, with whom Odo falls in love. Except the girl is actually a sleeper spy, who happens to be married. And that's about it. Quite underwhelming.

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x18 - Business as Usual**

Originally Aired: 1997-4-7

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Quark wants to pay off his debts, but it may cost him his life.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which we get to meet the much mentioned but never before seen Gaila, Quark's cousin.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko threatening Quark.
- Bashir's diagnosis for Yoshi: "Perhaps he's become prematurely aware of life's existential isolation."
- The whole whispering scene between O'Brien and Sisko in ops.
- Rules of Acquisition; 67. The riskier the road the greater the profit.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Sitting near Quark while he checks for Odo. 2. Sleeping at Quark's bar while Quark complains about the lack of customers.

**Comments:**

Hagath to me was the star of the show here. A brilliant character played by a talented actor. Besides that, the episode is fairly routine, even a little boring. Quark's financial situation certainly was not enough to hold my interest, frankly O'Brien's sideplot was more interesting and amusing. Especially the scene near the end with Worf.

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x19 - Ties of Blood and Water**

Originally Aired: 1997-4-14

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kira's encounter with a Cardassian dissident brings back traumatic memories.*

**Problems:**

- In DS9: By Inferno's Light, Kira said the next time she saw Dukat, she was going to kill him. She had the perfect opportunity to do so in this episode. I guess she was just angry in DS9: By Inferno's Light and didn't really mean it.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a sequel to DS9: Second Skin, in which Legate Ghemor was Kira's "father".
- This episode establishes that the Vorta are expert cloners. Weyoun 4 died in DS9: To the Death.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf: "Cardassian politics are very complex." Dax: "I think they like it that way."
- Dukat's conversation with Sisko.
- Kira's flashbacks.
- The Jem'Hadar battleship arriving at the station.
- Weyoun 5's appearance.
- Dukat showing up at Kira's quarters.
- Sisko confronting Dukat about the poison Kanar.
- Weyoun: "How delightful! The mysterious plots, the subtle innuendoes, the failed threats, it's all so entertaining." Weyoun picks up the poisonous glass of Kanar and drinks it. The look on Sisko's and Dukat's face at this point is priceless. Weyoun: "Oh my. That is quite toxic, isn't it?" Dukat: "Are you insane?" Weyoun: "The Vorta are immune to most forms of poison. Comes in handy when

you're a diplomat."

- Kira: "They kill us, we kill them. It's nothing worth celebrating."
- Kira's emotional scene in the end with Bashir.

**Comments:**

This episode features some very good drama. Picking up where DS9: Second Skin left off, Kira is reunited with Legate Ghemor. Unfortunately, he's dying. But before he dies, he wants to divulge Cardassian secrets to Kira. Dukat, knowing this, shows up to try and stop him from doing so. He meets with zero success. While many of Dukat's and Weyoun's scenes were entertaining, their involvement in the story ended up being largely pointless. It would have been nice if they tried a bit harder. All in all, this is Kira's episode. And she does a fantastic job acting it. Very moving.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x20 - Ferengi Love Songs**

**My Rating -**  
**2**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-4-21

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Quark returns home and discovers some shocking secrets about his mother.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Zek mentions something about trade negotiations with the Breen in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Zek losing his memory and math skills.
- Rules of Acquisition; 18. A Ferengi without profit is no Ferengi at all. 94. Females and finances don't mix. 208. Sometimes the only thing more dangerous than a question an answer. 229. Latinum lasts longer than lust.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Buys a jumja stick from Leeta, who is running the kiosk.

**Comments:**

So Zek and Quark's mother are in love. And Quark's mother has been giving Zek financial advice for god knows how long. Brunt discovers this and tries to grab power. Overall this Ferengi episode is more silly than most, but ironically, more important than most too. It picks up on where many previous episodes left off and the events of this episode will be revisited again. Unfortunately, I just didn't like this episode at all. The comedy wasn't very effective and the story relied too much on it. A final note, I wonder what the writers' fetish for Quark's closet was for in this episode? It seemed to exemplify the overall silliness.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 5x21 - Soldiers of the Empire**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-4-28

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*General Martok regains a ship, but his crew is dispirited.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to the Klingon calendar, the date in this episode was the 53rd day of the year of Kahless 999.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Martok ranting about his insight into the Jem'Hadar.
- Worf challenging Martok.
- The Klingons singing into battle.
- Bashir lamenting about the intelligence business.
- The revelation that Worf lost the fight on purpose so that Martok would regain his vigor.

**Comments:**

A Klingon ship and her crew are the center of attention for the first time in a long while and never has it been done so well. This episode features many nice details, but some remarkable ones are the crew of the Rotarran herself; the bridge crew will reprise their roles in future episodes. Plus the Rotarran itself; we get many beautiful CG renderings of the breathtaking bird of prey. My only complaint is we don't get to see the Rotarran battle the Jem'Hadar, for which I subtract one point from its score. Besides that, an excellent episode.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x22 - Children of Time**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-5-5

**My Rating -**  
**5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When the crew of the Defiant become stranded on a planet, they begin new lives ...*

#### **Problems:**

- So what was that energy barrier doing around the planet in the first place?

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Boy: "Are you the son of Mogh?" Worf: "Yes, I am." Boy: "Is it true you can kill someone just by looking at them." Worf: "Only when I am angry."
- Time displaced Odo's appearance. Odo: "I love you Nerys. I've always loved you." About fricken time.
- The sons of Mogh.
- The revelation that Yedrin wasn't trying to help but recreate the accident.
- Brota to Worf: "Last year I slew a Yar bear three meters tall. Your Mak'leth was my only weapon. The beast mamed me and for a time it seemed I would die from my wounds. Now I wish I had. It would have been a warrior's death."
- The whole communal planting thing. A bit too hunky dory for me in Star Trek, but moving nonetheless.
- Sisko: "They existed. As long as we remember them, they always will."
- The revelation that Odo and the other Odo linked and that the other Odo was responsible for sabotaging the flight plan.

#### **Comments:**

A decent reset-button style episode. It tries to be like DS9: The Visitor but on a larger scale but unfortunately manages to fail. The two episodes are nearly identical in cause, effect, and implications, but this episode puts the whole experience over the top. In DS9: The Visitor, we essentially have two characters who are profoundly affected and the consequences are obvious. In this episode the moral dilemma gets thrown around back and forth. The sympathy for the colonists is a bit forced. The scene with the planting in my opinion is overkill. Largely the whole episode wasn't such a great idea, but it did manage to move me. All in all, it was a decent, moving episode. But it's been done better already.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x23 - Blaze of Glory**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-5-12

**My Rating -**  
**7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko is forced to confront his Maquis nemesis, Michael Eddington.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Nog complaining about working security and dealing with the Klingons. This is actually a good connection with DS9: Soldiers of the Empire when Nog complained about Worf and Martok standing in his way.

- Sisko's meeting with Eddington.
- Kira: "I was in the Bajoran shrine meditating and he bursts in, stark naked, fell to his knees crying out the prophets for protection." Bashir: "Morn of all people. Who would think he'd just snap like that?"
- Odo: "And that's when Morn hit you with a barstool and ran out onto the promenade screaming 'we're all doomed!'"
- Eddington and Sisko arguing on the Runabout.
- Sisko forcing Eddington to help him by getting a Raktajino while two Jem'Hadar ships attack.
- Eddington declaring his intentions to kill Sisko.
- Nog impressing Martok.
- Sisko slugging Eddington for lying to him again.
- Eddington getting himself killed.
- Sisko and Dax discussing Eddington.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Not shown, but mentioned in the beginning as having attacked Quark.

**Comments:**

The perfect final cameo for Michael Eddington. Instead of being defeated and depressed in prison for the rest of his life, he gets one last chance to fight for the Maquis, and he goes down in a blaze of glory. This episode is a tale of rivalry, intrigue, and deception, like any good Maquis story. And for once, Sisko expresses sympathy and even respect for them. This episode represents closure for the entire Maquis arc. We find out what happened to Sisko's friend Cal Hudson; he died fighting for the Maquis. Eddington dies in this episode, and we're told for sure what we thought would happen all along, the Dominion has wiped out the Maquis. There couldn't be a more suitable end to the Maquis arc. Tragic, but moving.



**Star Trek DS9 - 5x24 - Empok Nor**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-5-19

**My Rating**

**- 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Crew from Deep Space Nine must salvage needed parts from a derelict Cardassian space station.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Empok Nor was abandoned about a year before this episode.
- Garak's 23rd episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Garak: "Well it's just that lately I've noticed everyone seems to trust me. It's quite unnerving. I'm still trying to get used to it."
- The detached Runabout drifting away then exploding.
- Pechetti admiring Cardassian military insignia, suddenly being killed by one of the Cardassian assassins. The scene looked straight out of a horror film to me.
- Garak starting to act a little weird.
- Garak assassinating the Cardassians, then turning to Amaro.
- Garak fighting O'Brien.
- Morn Appearances; 1. First scene, sitting at the bar.

**Comments:**

DS9 does horror. Drugged Cardassians moving about, killing people, Garak going psycho, killing people. All very dark stuff. Well, there are good things and bad things about this episode. First, the bad stuff. No less than four redshirts died needlessly. Thankfully, their deaths were not completely meaningless nor forgotten immediately. Second, this entire mission was manufactured danger. It seems highly unlikely that Starfleet couldn't have manufactured the necessary replacement parts rather than plummeting six of its officers (and Garak) into needless danger. The Jem'Hadar threat alone is enough to not want to undertake such a reckless mission, much less this drugged Cardassians part. In the episode's favor are the four redshirts. They may have died needlessly, but their contribution to the story was great. I loved all four of them, especially Pechetti and his emblem obsession. I always like seeing O'Brien take charge of a situation; he's a great leader. And as always, Garak is a fascinating character. One final comment, why was Empok Nor constantly shown tilted in external shots?



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x25 - In the Cards**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-6-9

**My Rating -**  
**8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Jake tries to cheer up his father, who is overly stressed by the Dominion threat.*

#### **Problems:**

- When Nog reads the list of the crazy old scientist's demands, it says 2 liters of anaerobic metabolite. When they present this request to Bashir, he says it's 5.

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko's "party".
- Jake being outbid at the auction.
- Sisko being nasty with Weyoun.
- Jake and Nog meeting with Dr. Giger.
- Bashir lamenting about Leeta having his teddy bear.
- Nog sneaking into Leeta's quarters and taking the teddy bear as she slept.
- Weyoun and the Jem'Hadar investigating what is going on in the quarters below them... where Dr. Giger lives.
- Nog listening to Worf's Klingon opera extremely loud.
- Nog: "Maybe the soulless minions of orthodoxy finally caught up with him." Odo: "The who?"
- Jake: "We don't know who they are, but they were after Dr. Giger's cellular regeneration and entertainment chamber." Odo: "His what?"
- Kai Winn rejecting Weyoun's pleasantries, just like Sisko.
- Nog and Jake beamed to the Dominion ship.
- Weyoun confronting Nog and Jake.
- Jake's time travel story.
- Weyoun and Dr. Giger hitting it off on the immortality topic.
- Sisko: "Even in the darkest moments, you can always find something that will make you smile."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Quarks bar behind Jake and Nog. 2. At the auction. 3. After the auction, walking out with a painting.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is an unexpected bount of brilliance with regards to the writing. Jake and Nog's quest to acquire a baseball card to cheer up Sisko has the unintended effect of cheering up everyone on the station. I love the part when Sisko makes his log and the camera pans by all the major characters Nog and Jake have helped in their quest to get the baseball card. I don't quite know how else to put it, but this is one of those quirky kind of episodes that works really well. The writers managed to make a humor episode that wasn't silly, even when they included Weyoun and the Jem'Hadar directly into the humorous plot! I'm impressed, I must say.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 5x26 - Call to Arms**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-6-16

**My**  
**Rating -**  
**10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*As another convoy of Jem'Hadar ships emerges from the wormhole toward Cardassia, Sisko and his officers face the grim realization that the Dominion is taking over the Alpha Quadrant.*

#### **Problems:**

- So when did the Runabouts leave the station?

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Garak's 24th episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Quark: "Any marriage where the female is allowed to speak and wear clothing is doomed to

failure."

- Another Jem'Hadar convoy coming through the wormhole.
- Nog discovering that the Romulans signed a non aggression treaty with the Dominion.
- The whole briefing room scene where Sisko decides to mine the wormhole.
- O'Brien, Dax, and Rom discussing how to mine the wormhole. I love how Rom was able to think about his wedding and come up with a genius idea for the mines at the same time.
- Odo and Kira addressing their discomfort with each other.
- Kira: "So for now, all we need to concern ourselves with is deploying the minefield, maintaining station security, and preparing ourselves for a possible invasion." Odo: "Well I don't know about you, but I feel more comfortable already."
- Sisko's confrontation with Weyoun.
- Bashir: "You don't think Starfleet could be persuaded to send us a few more ships, say, fifty?"
- Garak: "I must say, constable, I admire your composure. You're an island of tranquility in a sea of chaos." Odo: "What I am is useless. My entire staff has been evacuated to Bajor."
- The Dominion fleet attacking the station.
- The minefield being deployed.
- Sisko evacuating DS9.
- Jadzia announcing she will marry Worf.
- Sisko's goodbye speech.
- Sisko: "I promise I will not rest until I stand with you again... here, in this place where I belong."
- Kira running Sisko's program to sabotage the station. Kira: "Dukat wanted the station back? He can have it."
- The revelation that Jake is still aboard the station.
- Dax: "We should rendezvous with the Federation task force in 48 hours." Bashir: "And then what?" Nog: "And then we make the Dominion sorry they ever set foot in the Alpha Quadrant." Sisko: "Cadet, you took the words right out of my mouth."
- The scene when Kira, Odo, and Quark welcome aboard Dukat, Damar, Weyoun, and the Jem'Hadar.
- Dukat correctly interpreting the reason why Sisko left the baseball in his office.
- The Rotarran and the Defiant joining the Federation-Klingon task force.
- Rules of Acquisition; 190. Hear all. Trust nothing.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In the crowd when Sisko gives his goodbye speech. 2. In Quark's bar after the Federation personnel evacuate.

#### Comments:

Quite possibly one of the best DS9 episodes ever done. Yes, here is where the Dominion war finally, really begins. Numerous major events and major character developments happen here. For one, Rom marries Leeta. Proving that Rom has come a long way from being Quark's second in command, a B-list Ferengi. Now he's married to a beautiful woman. And his technical genius is put to its best use in this episode by O'Brien and Dax. Speaking of Dax, Jadzia and Worf get engaged in this episode. It's interesting to note that it probably wouldn't have happened so soon without the war. Kira and Odo finally deal with their feelings for each other, at least to a certain extent. And then there's Jake. Jake finally got a job! He's a news reporter for the Federation news service. In accordance with his new job, he decided to remain aboard DS9 to report on the ensuing events. His father, furious, finally has to admit that Jake has become a man and can make these decisions for himself. Sisko's speech as he leaves the station is wonderful. Just when Sisko was finally beginning to like his job as commander of DS9 and his appointment as Emissary of the Prophets, it is all ripped away from him. At the beginning of the show, all Sisko wanted to do was get out of there. Now it greatly pains him to leave. Between the political intrigue, the inter stellar space battle, and the captivating villains, this episode takes advantage of everything the five seasons of buildup has to offer. Truly spectacular, and with a cool episode name to boot.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x01 - A Time to Stand**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-9-29

**My Rating**

**- 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko and his crew are given an undercover mission that could change the balance of the Dominion war.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Garak's 25th episode.
- 14 ships out of the 112 in the 7th Federation fleet made it back.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Garak poking at Bashir regarding his genetically engineered past, and Bashir giving Garak the odds of their survival.
- Bashir: "It's strictly a matter of mathematics." Gark: "No, it's strictly a matter of our lives!"
- Dax, regarding the wedding plans: "Okay. Have it your way. First we'll shed blood, then we'll feast." Worf: "As it should be."
- Sisko banging his hand and breaking the glass on the table after he received the news of the 7th fleet.
- Joseph Sisko: "You're always telling me that space is big, that it's an endless frontier filled with infinite wonders." Ben Sisko: "It's true." Joseph Sisko: "Well if that's the case, you would think it would be more than enough room to allow people to leave each other alone."
- Jake discussing an interview and his articles with Weyoun.
- Admiral Ross sending Sisko and crew on a mission into Dominion space using their captured Jem'Hadar ship they acquired in DS9: The Ship.
- Everyone complaining about the design of the Jem'Hadar ship. There aren't any viewscreens, chairs, food replicators, or medical facilities aboard. :)
- O'Brien to Garak upon boarding: "Pull up a chair!"
- Dukat's conversation with Kira, trying to justify his actions to her.
- Garak, upon putting on the headset: "It's like having a viewscreen inside your brain."
- The Federation Starship Centaur attacking Sisko and crew aboard the stolen Jem'Hadar ship.
- Odo walking up to Weyoun, demanding things, and instantly getting what he wants.
- Julian: "We have to go to full impulse 1.3 seconds before the bomb detonates." Sisko: "Dax?" Jadzia: "The computer agrees with Julian." Garak: "Well of course it does. They think alike."
- The bomb exploding early, destroying the facility and nearly destroying their ship.
- Garak: "Forgive my ignorance, but if we don't have warp drive, how long is it going to take us to reach the closest Federation Starbase?" Sisko: "A long time, Mr. Garak." Garak: "How long?" Bashir: "17 years, 2 months, and 3 days. Give or take an hour."

#### Comments:

A fantastic episode to begin the season. This episode kind of sets the ground rules by which much of the rest of the season will play out. War is ugly business and it's spread out over vast distances. There are numerous character threads moving about right now. There's Kira and Odo thinking of a way to undermine the occupation, there's Jake trying to get a story out to the Federation, there's Dukat and Weyoun's constant bickering, there's Dukat and Weyoun trying to destroy the minefield, there's Sisko and his crew fighting on the front lines, and there's Worf and Martok fighting on the front lines. While granted we don't much of Worf and Martok in this episode, this episode does a great job of outlining the rest. These are very exciting times for DS9. As a final note, I love how the writers are openly using Bashir's genetic enhancements now. He's kind of like a replacement for Data. Cool. :)



#### Star Trek DS9 - 6x02 - Rocks and Shoals

Originally Aired: 1997-10-6

My Rating -  
10

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Sisko and his beleaguered crew are captured by the Jem'Hadar.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Garak's 26th episode.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The teaser. Thrown right into the action!
- Seeing the Jem'Hadar ship sinking into the ocean background.
- O'Brien lamenting about tearing his pants, then laughing as he realizes that it's the least of his problems.
- Nog to Garak: "You tied me up and threatened to kill me." Good connection with DS9: Empok



Nor.

- Sisko to Remata'Klan regarding his proposal: "Would you make a deal like that?" Remata'Klan: "No." Sisko: "Then why should I?" Remata'Klan: "You shouldn't."
- I like how when Nog and Garak are released, Nog walks ahead of Garak. ;)
- Yassim committing suicide.
- Keevan betraying his men.
- Everyone debating the morals of slaughtering the Jem'Hadar in this manner. Sisko: "Given the choice between us and them there is no choice!"
- Kira, lamenting about becoming a collaborator: "Half the Alpha Quadrant is out there right now fighting for my freedom, but not me."
- Sisko to Remata'Klan regarding his "decisive advantage": "To fight a battle under these circumstances would serve no purpose."
- Sisko: "Do you really want to give up your life for the 'order of things'?" Remata'Klan: "It is not my life to give up, captain. And it it never was."
- O'Brien: "What'd he say?" Sisko: "All the wrong things."
- The slaughter.
- Keevan showing up just after the slaughter, very pleased with himself.

#### Comments:

An episode exploring the morality of conduct during war. On the station, the monotony of Kira's daily routine is depicted and we begin to see her slowly realize she's becoming a collaborator. In the end, she decides to go against Sisko's advice and form a new resistance after Vedek Yassim kills herself publicly to protest the Dominion occupation. More interestingly though, is Sisko and crew's situation stranded on the planet they crashed on. The Vorta leader, Keevan, decided to betray his own men by giving Sisko and crew his exact plan of attack so that instead of being stranded on the planet, he could surrender as a prisoner of war and spend the war resting comfortably in a Federation prison. Sisko is left with the choice of whether or not to go through the Keevan's plan. He doesn't like the shady morals of it, but he realizes that "given the choice between us and them there is no choice." He tries one last time to appeal to the Jem'Hadar's wits, informing them that Keevan betrayed them and that they'll surely all die if they decide to fight this battle. But instead of surrendering, we're shown instead just how insanely loyal Jem'Hadar soldiers are. They knew Keevan betrayed them and they walked into their own deaths knowingly, and proudly. Because obeying the command structure and the "order of things" means more to them than their own lives. A fantastic episode.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 6x03 - Sons and Daughters

My Rating - 4

Originally Aired: 1997-10-13

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Worf is reunited with his estranged son, Alexander.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Worf nitpicking the wedding again.
- Bashir and O'Brien lamenting about the Klingon food and the Klingon singing.
- Martok: "War is much more fun when you're winning!"
- Worf to his son: "You heard what I expect from the others; twice what I expect from you!" Ouch.
- Ch'Targh picking on then fighting Alexander.
- Ch'Targh to Alexander: "Keep a close watch! There might be more hostile simulation programs out there!"
- Dukat: "You don't like the dress?" Kira: "The dress is fine. I don't like you."
- Dukat giving the dress to Ziyal instead. Opportunistic indeed!
- Martok: "You are both stubborn, tiresome, Qu'vatlh. The only difference is I need him. I do not need you."
- Alexander joining the house of Martok.

#### Comments:

Kira walks the collaborator line again, Jake is frustrated with his inability to send news to the Federation and wants to join the resistance, and we get another episode taking place largely on the Rotarran. Unfortunately, this particular combined rehash is kind of a miss compared to the originals. While I enjoyed the basic story and appreciate its contribution to the current arc, the episode leaves one somewhat underwhelmed. I appreciate the basic theme. The episode title "Sons and Daughters" refers to Alexander and Ziyal. Alexander is having trouble gaining acceptance as a soldier and Ziyal is having trouble gaining acceptance as a student. I'm also glad the writers are tying up the whole "Hey, you know Worf has a son, right? What's up with him?" loose end. Other than that the episode is kind of unremarkable. Even the battle with the Jem'Hadar seemed routine.



### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x04 - Behind the Lines**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-10-20

**My Rating**

**- 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Various Deep Space Nine crewmembers must play a part in the battle with the Dominion.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Eons ago, the Changelings were like the solids, but then they evolved, according to the female shapeshifter.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew collecting empty phaser power cells.
- Kira and Rom orchestrating a brawl in Quarks, getting the Cardassians to fight the Jem'Hadar.
- The female shapeshifter's appearance.
- Odo: "She's just trying to teach me about myself. About what I'm capable of becoming." Kira: "An intergalactic warlord maybe? Because that's what she is."
- Nog: "You mean if I had to take command, I would be called captain too?" O'Brien: "Cadet, by the time you took command, there'd be nobody left to call you anything."
- Sisko and Dax both responding when O'Brien said, "All done here, captain."
- Quark to Damar: "Wait a minute. You started a fight in my bar and now you're getting a promotion? What kind of way is that to run an army?"
- Rom: "Brother! Are you all right?" Quark: "No, I'm not all right. I just shared a bottle of Kanar, with Damar!" Quark begins laughing profusely.
- Quark: "I tried. I tried my best to run my establishment under this occupation. But you know what? It's no fun! I don't like the Cardassians, they're mean and arrogant. And I can't stand the Jem'Hadar. They're creepy, they just stand there like statues, staring at you. That's it. I don't want to spend the rest of my life doing business with these people. I want the Federation back! I want to sell root beer again!"
- Odo: "You haven't told me your name." Female shapeshifter: "What use would I have for a name?" Odo: "To differentiate yourself from the others?" Female shapeshifter: "I don't." Odo: "But you are a separate being, aren't you?" Female shapeshifter: "In a sense." Odo: "When you return to the Great Link, what will become of the entity I'm talking to now." Female shapeshifter: "The drop becomes the ocean." Odo: "And if you choose to take solid form again?" Female shapeshifter: "The ocean becomes a drop." Odo: "Ah, yes, I think I'm beginning to understand." Female shapeshifter: "Then you can answer your own question. How many of us are there?" Odo: "One. And many. It depends on how you look at it."
- The Jeffery's tube Rom crawled into was labeled "A51". ;)
- Rom getting caught.
- Jadzia adding another empty phaser power cell to their collection.
- Kira's pissed off approach to Odo's quarters.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Seen behind Damar, just before the brawl. 2. Behind Dukat and Damar as the cleanup from the brawl begins. 3. At the bar while Quark declares that he's renovating.

#### **Comments:**

A large improvement over the last episode; the Defiant crew has a fetish for collecting empty phaser power cells they use up, the resistance movement on the space station is starting to take shape, the female shapeshifter has appeared again to manipulate Odo, Sisko has been promoted to a fleet captain, and Rom got caught trying to sabotage the station because Odo's being manipulated by the founder. All in all, a complicated episode, but well placed within the arc and

thoroughly entertaining. Once again, I'm a bit annoyed that like in DS9: Soldiers of the Empire there's this big buildup at the beginning of the episode concerning a mission against the Dominion, and once again we don't get to see that mission action, only the aftermath. For this, I once again subtract a point.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x05 - Favor the Bold**  
Originally Aired: 1997-10-27

**My Rating**  
- 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Federation continues to lose the war with the Dominion/Cardassian Alliance and morale is sinking fast.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Garak's 27th episode.
- This episode establishes that Changelings do not age. Perhaps this works by the Great Link constantly rejuvenating itself somehow? Perhaps a Changeling which never returns to the Great Link would eventually die of old age?
- This episode establishes that the Vorta lack a sense of aesthetics.
- This episode establishes that the Vorta have poor eyesight and that the Jem'Hadar have excellent vision.
- This episode establishes that the Vorta have very good ears and can hear very well.
- The enemy Dominion fleet at the end of this episode consisted of 1254 ships. Bashir claimed that a fleet that size outnumbered the Federation fleet two to one.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing the Defiant on the front lines. Finally.
- O'Brien singing his "engage, retreat" tune he started in DS9: A Time to Stand again. Bashir: "Well we'd better think of a new tune fast or the only song we're gonna be singing is hail the conquering Dominion."
- Dax: "We're not going to win this war by running away from the enemy."
- Sisko announcing he wants to retake DS9.
- Sisko presenting his plan to retake DS9 to the admirals.
- Weyoun examining one of Ziyal's paintings.
- Weyoun: "Gods don't make mistakes."
- Weyoun's response to Kira asking him to release Rom: "You can't release a man and then execute him. It makes no sense."
- Martok, regarding his plans to bring Worf with him when he talks to Gowron: "What could be better? An ally and an enemy both telling him the same thing. He'll have no other choice but to agree!"
- Weyoun: "You're not sure? Two large enemy fleets break off from the front lines and rendezvous at a Starbase and you're not sure why?"
- Kira beating up Damar. Ziyal: "Did you kill him?" Kira: "No, but I thought about it."
- Sisko's lofty description of Bajor to Admiral Ross.
- Nog promoted to Ensign! Cool.
- Weyoun: "Weak eyes, good ears."
- The sight of the massive Federation fleet and the sight of the massive twice as large Dominion fleet of 1254 ships.
- Sisko: "There's an old saying. Fortune favors the bold. Well, I guess we're about to find out."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Supposedly just finished bemoaning to Quark about having to attend his mother's birthday party. 2. At Quark's, wrapping a present. His present is used as the method to get a message off the station.

**Comments:**

Another spectacular performance by Salome Jens as the female shapeshifter, manipulating Odo, as well as Jeffrey Combs as Weyoun, manipulating the Cardassians. Even Dukat and Damar get great roles in this episode. We get to see how dedicated Damar is to his job and how maniacal Dukat can be. We get to actually see the Defiant on the front lines for the first time since DS9: A Call to Arms, we get numerous tidbits of cool information and factoids regarding the Dominion, and the episode

slowly but surely builds to the best cliffhanger since TNG: The Best of Both Worlds, DS9: A Call to Arms, and Voy: Scorpion.



### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x06 - Sacrifice of Angels**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-11-3

**My Rating -**  
**10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dukat loses a daughter, while the Alpha Quadrant gains a victory.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Most fans consider this episode the best one ever done on DS9.
- Garak's 28th episode.
- In this episode alone, 2800 Dominion ships were destroyed in the wormhole and at least some of the 1254 ships the Dominion sent against the Federation had to have been destroyed as well, along with some of the ~600 Federation ships that engaged the Dominion and some of the Klingon task force too. That's quite a body count. It must have been in the hundreds of thousands at the very least!

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the two fleets in formation before the battle. Impressive stuff.
- O'Brien: "Canon to the right of them. Canon to the left of them. Canon in front of them. Volleyed and thundered." Bashir: "Stormed at with shot and shell. Boldly they rode and well into the jaws of death. Into the mouth of hell rode the six hundred."
- Sisko ordering the fighters to attack.
- The entire fleet charging into the battle.
- Dukat: "War is such thirsty business, don't you agree?" Weyoun: "Perhaps if you didn't talk so much, your throat wouldn't get so dry."
- Dukat and Weyoun discussing the Bajoran occupation, the current occupation, and future plans. I love how they casually discuss whether or not to completely wipe out Earth's population to quell possible resistance. This conversation really shows you how insane Dukat is. Weyoun? He's a bit twisted. But Dukat is maniac.
- Watching ships get picked off left and right as the Defiant charges through the lines.
- The Klingons showing up and joining the battle.
- The Defiant breaking through enemy lines.
- Quark rescuing Kira, Leeta, Rom, and Jake.
- Dukat detonating the minefield literally one second before Rom disabled the station's weapons.
- I love the speechless looks on the Defiant bridge as they watch the mines go one by one.
- Sisko: "Take us into the wormhole." O'Brien: "What the hell. Only going to meet a couple thousand Dominion ships." Dax: "One ship against an entire fleet? That's a hell of a plan B!"
- Female shapeshifter: "Send a message to our listening posts in the gamma quadrant. Tell the reinforcements that the alpha quadrant awaits them."
- Sisko charging the Defiant into the wormhole.
- Sisko to the prophets: "You want to be gods? Then be gods. I need a miracle. Bajor needs a miracle. Stop those ships!"
- Weyoun, realizing they've been defeated somehow: "Time to start packing!"
- Damar murdering Ziyal.
- Sisko and crew reboarding the station.

#### **Comments:**

And so ends the DS9 occupation arc. This episode is the biggest roller coaster ride ever displayed on Star Trek so far. The massive space battle is indescribably awesome, and the immense use of characters was truly sublime. This episode is everything the conclusion to this magnificent arc should have been and more. It's no surprise why this episode gets voted as the best DS9 episode time and time again. Aside from general declarations of the episode's awesomeness, there are some interesting details I'd like to point out. For one, I enjoyed watching Garak fight for the Federation all through the arc. From Call to Arms and onward, Garak chose his side very clearly. He's no longer the ambiguous player of both sides he was in the first season. Another detail I enjoyed was how it was Odo and the Bajoran security officers that ultimately allowed Rom to

sabotage the station's weapons and kept the Defiant from being destroyed. If you remember back to earlier in this arc, Dukat and Damar expressed dismay about the idea of armed Bajoran security officers on the station. Seems their fears were justified. :) Last, but not least though is Dukat. The way he fell apart at the end of this episode was absolutely perfect. He went from being absolutely sure of victory, to confused, to realizing he'd been defeated, to despair over Damar murdering his daughter, to totally insane and disconnected with reality in the span of a few minutes. One of the most brilliant performances I've seen on Star Trek. When you add it all up, this episode is a stroke of utter brilliance.



---

### Star Trek DS9 - 6x07 - You Are Cordially Invited...

Originally Aired: 1997-11-10

My  
Rating - 6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Worf's plans for a traditional Klingon wedding are threatened when Martok's wife refuses to accept Dax into their family.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Curzon Dax negotiated the Khitomer accords.
- Dax is 356 years old in this episode.
- The goofy dance Nog did with Jadzia at the bachelorette party was made up entire on the spot by Aron Eisenberg as kind of a joke, but everybody loved it, so they went with it.
- Terry Farrell actually (accidentally) hit the actress playing Sirella in one of the takes when Sirella barges in on her bachelorette party.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Sirella challenging Dax.
- For the ritual of blood, Worf asks who will be first. O'Brien, Sisko, and Alexander step back while Worf isn't looking. Bashir does not, because he isn't paying attention. Worf says: "I did not expect that it would be you, doctor." Bashir, now paying attention: "Neither did I."
- Bashir and O'Brien's "vision" of killing Worf.
- Martok: "We are not accorded the luxury of choosing the woman we fall in love with. Do you think Sirella is anything like the woman I thought I'd marry? She is a prideful, arrogant, mercurial woman who shares my bed far too infrequently for my taste. And yet... I love her deeply."
- The wedding.
- Bashir and O'Brien unable to contain their desire to participate in the ritual attack on Worf.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Seen in the opening scene when the flags are unfurled. Is kissed by a woman before he enters Quark's. 2. At Dax's party. Watches Lt. Atoa's fire dance. He gets in a fight with a Bolian offscreen. Later, he happily slam dances with the Bolian. 3. The morning after the party Morn wakes up behind a couch with Lt. Atoa. They get up and leave. 4. Attends the wedding.

#### Comments:

A fair episode. Everyone is in a giddy mood because they have the station back. And Worf and Dax get married. The little feud didn't interest me much, and the episode has no other contention to offer. I mostly gave it extra points for the hilarious Klingon stuff. The wedding itself was fantastic, as was O'Brien's and Bashir's role in the episode.



### Star Trek DS9 - 6x08 - Resurrection

Originally Aired: 1997-11-17

My  
Rating -  
1

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*When a stranger beams aboard the station and takes Kira hostage, she is shocked to see that he looks exactly like her dead love, Vedek Bareil.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene, with a mentioning of captain Boday, a Gallamite with a transparent skull.
- Kira, regarding a prospective date: "His eye bothers me." Dax: "Which one?" Kira: "The middle one."
- The station crew's expert handling of the hostage situation.
- Bariel: "I suppose it must be nice to have that kind of faith. I've always preferred to believe in nothing. That way I'm never disappointed."
- Bariel stealing Worf's Mak'Leth.
- Quark's subtle hints to Kira.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Is seen when Bariel walks by Quark's. 2. Behind Bariel in Quark's.

**Comments:**

This is the worst mirror universe installment yet, mostly because it doesn't actually take place in the mirror universe. Mirror Bariel and mirror Kira show up on DS9, trying to steal an orb, for no discernible reason. They claim they'll use it to form a religion to unite the mirror Bajorans in which they're the central religious figures, but I think that it's questionable whether or not the stolen orb would function at all in the mirror universe. That said, the episode was actually doing pretty good until mirror Kira showed up. The writers just can't stand to waste an opportunity to use that character for some reason. Nana Visitor does a fantastic job playing as her, but the character was totally inappropriate for this story. It would have been a much better story if Bariel really was trying to escape the mirror universe and ended up playing some kind of semi permanent role on the show in later episodes. Instead, the episode was one cup filler with a tablespoon of cliché. In the middle of the Dominion war no less!

**Star Trek DS9 - 6x09 - Statistical Probabilities**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-11-24

**My  
Rating -  
9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*With the secret of his genetically-engineered past out in the open, Bashir is asked to work with a group of others like him.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode accurately predicts that the Romulans will join the war against the Dominion, as well as the anti-Dominion coup on Cardassia.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene. I especially liked Jack.
- Bashir meeting the "mutants." I especially like Jack's "test" of Bashir's mental abilities.
- Bashir discussing the "mutants" with the senior staff and the debate that ensued.
- Jack: "Well why don't you fix it, dear fellow, dear fellow, well why don't you fix it before I go mad!"
- The "mutants" inferring all kinds of correct information just from Damar's speech.
- Patrick staring into Weyoun. Hilarious if you don't know it's all holographic on first viewing.
- Bashir presenting his and the mutants' predictions and analyses to Sisko.
- The whole dancing scene.
- According to Jack, O'Brien is "uncomplicated."
- Sisko's reaction to Bashir's suggestion that the Federation should surrender to the Dominion because there's no hope of winning.
- Patrick walking up to a random person and saying, "I'm Patrick!"
- Weyoun: "Odo!" Odo: "Yes, I know, I honor you with my presence."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Behind O'Brien in the bar when Bashir tries to convince O'Brien that the Federation should surrender.

**Comments:**

This is a great episode with a remarkable set of new guest stars. A group of four genetically engineered "mutants" with mental disorders from their genetic background are taken to the station in the hopes that Dr. Bashir can help them assimilate better into society. Together, the five start working for Starfleet Intelligence, making grandiose predictions about the Dominion. As the episode progresses, their predictions get more and more grandiose to the point where they predict

the Federation can never beat the Dominion. In the end, Bashir convinces them that their assumptions might have been flawed, and that they can't predict everything. The experience, however, leaves them feeling like they've finally contributed something, as some of their analyses were very useful to Starfleet. Most remarkable about the episode though was the characters. First there's Jack, an energetic, athletic, egocentric, super smart, fast talking guy unstable guy who seemed unable to control his behavior. Then there's Lauren, who seems to be sexually attracted to every man she sees... to the extreme; unable to think of anything else. Then there's Patrick. An old man who still acts like a child. And finally, Sarina, who seems unable to focus her attention on anything. She just stands and stares. All things considered, this is one of the most original and entertaining episodes I've seen in a long time.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x10 - The Magnificent Ferengi**  
Originally Aired: 1998-1-1

My Rating -  
10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Grand Nagus calls with news that Quark's mother, Ishka, has been captured by the Dominion.*

**Problems:**

- Why is Empok Nor shown titled in exterior shots? Why is the station abandoned still? Surely either the Federation or the Dominion would be interested in moving it somewhere to be used as a supplementary defensive position?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Breen are among Rom's list of "the toughest mercenaries you can find."
- Vorta are supposed to commit suicide when they're captured, according to Keevan.
- The Vorta Yelgrun in this episode was played by famous musician Iggy Pop.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Starfleet officers stealing Quark's audience. Poor baby...
- Quark telling Rom about the Ishka's relationship with Zek.
- Quark and Rom getting showing up in Sisko's office.
- Leck: "I don't care about latinum." A surreal statement from a Ferengi.
- Brunt to Quark: "A child, a moron, a failure, and a psychopath. Quite a little team you've put together."
- The holosuite practice session.
- Keevan's appearance.
- The whole running scenes on Empok Nor when they thought they lost their prisoner, then running back to the infirmary when the Dominion ship arrived.
- Quark, Rom, and Nog's first meeting with Yelgrun.
- Keevan's final words just after being shot by Gaila: "I hate Ferengi."
- Yulgrun: "And I thought the Breen were annoying."
- Puppet Keevan with his tilted head.
- Puppet Keevan walking into the wall.
- The Ferengi ambushing the Jem'Hadar and capturing Yelgrun. I especially liked Leck throwing a knife into a Jem'Hadar's chest.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Opening scene, listens to Quark's story. 2. Behind Rom in the bar when he talks to Quark about the holosuite practice session results.

**Comments:**

Marvelous; the best Ferengi episode ever shown on DS9. Good connections with DS9: Ferengi Love Songs, with regards to Ishka's relationship with Zek, good connections with DS9: Empok Nor since we get to see Empok Nor again, and good connections with DS9: Rocks and Shoals; we learn the true fate of Keevan. It's a shame we don't get to see Quark tell Sisko the story. I think Sisko would have said something like, "Keevan got exactly what he deserved." Iggy Pop's cameo as Yelgrun was fantastic; the musician makes one hell of a Vorta! The episode features good continuity all around and the team of the six "magnificent Ferengi" is wonderfully constructed and brilliantly played out. I couldn't be happier with this wonderful episode that mixes humor and danger so successfully. Bravo!



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x11 - Waltz**  
Originally Aired: 1998-1-8

**My Rating**  
- 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*En route to Gul Dukat's war crimes investigation, Sisko meets with the former Cardassian leader, now a prisoner.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is one of the favorite episodes of Marc Alaimo, the actor who plays Dukat.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of a new Federation starship. Sure we've seen the design before, but not so up close and personal.
- Dukat's hallucinations.
- Sisko discovering that the comm. system was in fact not working and Dukat was faking it.
- Sisko repairing the comm. system while Dukat was away.
- Dukat confronting Sisko about what Sisko "really thinks" about him. I love how Dukat was talking to his hallucinations in front of Sisko and how Sisko slowly began to realize what was going on; how crazy Dukat had really become. I also loved the behavior of the Kira hallucination.
- Sisko's angry conversation with Dukat after Dukat beat him with a metal pipe.
- Dukat justifying his actions as Prefect of Bajor.
- Sisko egging Dukat on, getting him to boast about how much he hated Bajorans and how he should have killed them all when he had the chance.
- Dukat: "I should have killed every last one of them! I should have turned their planet into a graveyard the likes of which the galaxy had never seen! I should have killed them all!" Sisko: "And that is why you're not an evil man?"
- Sisko: "You know old man, sometimes life seems so complicated. Nothing is truly good or truly evil. Everything seems to be a shade of gray. And then you spend some time with a man like Dukat and you realize that there is such a thing as truly evil."

**Comments:**

A great episode that shows us just how truly sadistic Dukat has always been. The dialog between Dukat and Sisko in this episode is very well crafted; Dukat clearly has always had this obsession that goes far beyond rivalry with Sisko. While I liked the episode in the sense that it shows us what happens to Dukat, which was kind of a loose thread, it is kind of a cheap way to get Dukat out of Federation hands and back into bad guy land again. And I would've liked to have seen the battle between the Cardassian ships and the Federation ship Dukat and Sisko were on, so I subtract from the score a bit.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x12 - Who Mourns for Morn?**  
Originally Aired: 1998-2-4

**My Rating -**  
8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew is shocked to learn that Morn has been killed in an ion storm.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to Worf, Morn was an excellent sparring partner. They held weekly combat exercises in the holosuites.
- Jadzia used to have a crush on Morn... Morn wasn't interested.
- According to Quark, the first time Morn came into Quark's bar was about 10 years ago. he still had his hair then.
- The painting smashed over Quark's head is the same one Morn bought from Quark at the auction in DS9: In The Cards.
- Gregory Itzin, who played Hain in this episode played Ilon Tandro in DS9: Dax.



- Morn's hair fell out because he kept latinum in his second stomach.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Remarkable inside joke: Odo, regarding Morn's hologram: "Why doesn't it talk?" Quark: "Do you have any idea how much an interactive holo projector costs? Besides, it's a relief not to have to listen to him go on. You know Morn, he never shuts up!"
- The revelation that Morn is dead.
- Quark meeting Morn's ex-wife.
- Quark's conversation with the business associates of Morn.
- The scene when all three separate parties chasing Quark for the inheritance money show up at the same time.
- Quark regarding the lack of latinum in the gold pressed latinum: "There's nothing here but worthless gold!"
- Quark reunited with Morn.
- Morn Appearances; ...well, the whole episode is about him. So listing all dialogs pertaining to him would be the entire script. But here's some remarkable appearances: 1. First scene. Odo talks to him. But he's only a hologram. 2. The Bajoran whom Quark places in Morn's empty seat at the bar during the memorial service is Mark Allan Shepherd, the extra who plays Morn. 3. At the end, gives Quark 100 bricks of gold unpressed latinum which he was hiding in his second stomach.

#### Comments:

An episode focused around a minor character. Not just any minor character though, the episode is centered around Morn. To fully comprehend the greatness and hilarity of this episode, you have to understand the Morn character. In DS9 season one, he was an extra, usually seen in Quark's bar. To fill background space. Eventually, people started to notice that he appeared in virtually every episode. He kind of stuck out like a sore thumb because of his odd alien appearance. So the writers attributed him a name and a small backstory over the last five years. Finally, the inside joke culminated to this point, where the writers thought it would be cute to write an episode all about him. The thing is though, part of the fan attraction to Morn's character was the fact that by tradition he's not ever spoken one line. Not one word. He's never once spoken anything onscreen, even though the writers have other characters make references to his talkativeness. So the greatness surrounding this episode is that the writers managed to craft an episode around Morn without ever giving him a single line. And there you have it, the inside joke is complete. Very well done.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 6x13 - Far Beyond the Stars

Originally Aired: 1998-2-11

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*After a friend's ship is destroyed and Sisko considers leaving Starfleet, he begins having visions of his crew as 1950s Americans.*

My  
Rating -  
7

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Armin Shimerman, who plays Quark, has said that this is his favorite episode of Deep Space Nine.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- It's a lot of fun figuring out which actors are which character with their make up off.
- O'Brien, who has trouble choosing his words.
- Quark, constantly complaining. No change there.
- Odo, the editor, and control freak. Not much a change there either.
- Kira, discriminated against because she's a girl.
- Sisko, discriminated against because he's black.
- Dukat and Weyoun. Fascist police officers. Not much a change there.
- Worf, a slick baseball player.
- Dax the secretary.
- Dax: "Oh! She's got a worm in her belly! Oh that's disgusting. Interesting, but that's disgusting."
- Odo, referring to Quark: "Herb's been angry ever since Joseph Stalin died."
- Sisko's breakdown.

#### Comments:

Another fantastic episode in a season that's shaping up to be phenomenal. Far Beyond the Stars is

an episode exploring perseverance in the face of insurmountable opposition. A war weary Sisko receives a vision of the prophets in which he is the main character in a story of racism in 1950s America. If Bennie the writer can persevere, then Bennie the soldier can persevere as well. There are drops of humor in this episode with regards to the odd behavior of the displaced crew, O'Brien was my definite favorite, but the subject matter is quite serious and Sisko's performance during his breakdown at the end is marvelous. Up there with the kind of performances we've seen from Patrick Stewart as Picard in TNG: The Inner Light or TNG: Chain of Command. This episode is a fan favorite for these details, but I'm slightly more critical. I'm not fond of "it was all a dream" plots, as I've ranted about in DS9: Distant Voices and Voy: Waking Moments. Despite my objections to the premise though, the episode is well done and very original. Another shining star of a spectacular season.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x14 - One Little Ship**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-2-18

**My  
Rating -  
9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*In order to investigate a rare subspace phenomenon, Dax, O'Brien, and Bashir board the Runabout, U.S.S. Rubicon, that is shrunken to four inches long.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- The Defiant's registry: NX-74205.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Defiant being taken over by the Jem'Hadar.
- The revelation that the Rubicon is still small. I like the panning shot outside the Rubicon and the Defiant.
- O'Brien suggesting that they take the Rubicon inside the Defiant. Dax' reaction: "I love it. Let's go."
- Dax and O'Brien navigating the impulse exhaust tubes to board the Defiant.
- Dax and O'Brien analyzing Sisko's escape plan.
- Dax flying through the ship stealthily.
- Little O'Brien and little Bashir bypassing huge circuits in the Defiant's computer.
- The little Rubicon firing on Jem'Hadar.
- Odo and Quark picking on Bashir and O'Brien, making them think they're shorter than they actually are by standing on things to make them taller.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Listens to O'Brien and Bashir tell their story.

#### **Comments:**

An interesting episode. It justifies the shrinking by claiming that the space between their atomic structure is actually decreasing. I was equally impressed with Bashir's claim that the oxygen molecules outside would be too large for a one centimeter man to breath. So this episode is in the tradition of TAS: The Terratin Incident in more ways than one. First, we have crew shrinkage, and second, we have exceptionally good science for it which is very pleasing. The rivalry between the gamma quadrant and alpha quadrant Jem'Hadar was not pleasing though. I found it all quite annoying. But it was a necessary plot device to create a way for Sisko and crew to escape with the Defiant. In the end, it does little to spoil the awesome ride. This episode takes full advantage of the visual effects that Star Trek is now capable of and features several very impressive external shots of the Rubicon, the Defiant, and the Rubicon within the Defiant. Another fantastic showing for a great season.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x15 - Honor Among Thieves**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-2-25

**My  
Rating -  
7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Starfleet Intelligence recruits Chief O'Brien to infiltrate the Orion Syndicate, the Alpha Quadrant's leading organized crime ring, to find a Starfleet informant.*

#### **Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien spiking one of Bilby's people.
- Quark and Odo speaking at the same time.
- The numerous system glitches.
- Bilby to his cat: "Well, what do you make of that, Chester? I've found me an honest man."
- O'Brien: "There's a Klingon ambassador here? Gowron must not like him much."
- The Orion Syndicate conspiring with a Vorta...
- O'Brien and Bilby robbing the bank of Bolias digitally.
- Bilby to O'Brien: "I'm going to take care of you. I don't forget my friends. 'Cause friends; they're like family. Nothing's more important. Nothing."
- O'Brien revealing himself to Bilby.
- The final scene with O'Brien feeling bad about what he had to do.

**Comments:**

An Orion Syndicate episode in the tradition of DS9: A Simple Investigation. Though this version of the plot is far more successful. O'Brien begins working for Starfleet Intelligence, attempting to infiltrate the syndicate to try and find out who the traitor to Starfleet is. In this process, he discovers the Dominion is working with the syndicate, and so his mission is extended to discover the full extent of the Dominion's plans. But by the time he finds out, he realizes that he'd have to betray Bilby, the man he worked so hard to earn the trust of all this time. Feeling that it would be dishonorable to let Bilby die like this, O'Brien warns him. But Bilby knew his fate was already sealed. O'Brien let him go reluctantly, but as a final honorable gesture, when O'Brien left he honored Bilby's request to look after his cat, Chester. I love the final scene, showing a distraught O'Brien petting Chester. A moving episode.

**Star Trek DS9 - 6x16 - Change of Heart**

My Rating - 5

Originally Aired: 1998-3-4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf must choose between Starfleet duty and his wife.*

**Problems:**

- So tricorders don't work in the jungle, but Worf uses one to scan Jadzia to determine her medical status?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Worf and O'Brien judging Tongo.
- Worf and Dax discussing their honeymoon plans. Worf wanted to go to the Vulcan Forge. Nice reference to TAS: Yesteryear, and other episodes.
- Worf: "I have a sense of humor! On the Enterprise I was considered to be quite amusing." Dax: "That must have been one dull ship." Worf: "That is a joke! I get it! It is not funny. But I get it."
- O'Brien and Bashir playing Tongo.
- Bashir playing Quark at Tongo. I love how Quark manipulated Bashir into losing by appealing to his love for Dax.
- Worf explaining to Sisko his motives for leaving Lasaran behind and saving Jadzia.

**Comments:**

A moving story showing how dedicated Worf is to his wife. It must have been incredibly difficult for Worf to make the choice between saving family and saving the mission, and I'm sure it was hard to have Sisko chew him out in the end like that. I rather liked how Sisko told him he would have done the same thing though. The B plot regarding Quark and his unending Tongo winning streak was nice as well for some light hearted humor to cheer up a depressing story. I just wish that Quark had actually lost in the end instead of manipulating Bashir so cruelly. In the end, it ended up being fairly average and borderline filler.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x17 - Wrongs Darker than Death or Night**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-1

**My Rating -**  
**1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kira finds out some shocking news about her mother.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien and Bashir discussing participating in a possible new holosuite program: the battle of the Alamo.
- Kira as a comfort woman telling a Cardassian officer why she hates Cardassians so much.
- The Cardassian officer predicting exactly what Dukat would say.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Behind Quark when he gives flowers to Kira.

**Comments:**

Another "flashback to Terok Nor" episode, and all because Kira wants to know if Gul Dukat and her mother were really lovers. Not that I'm insensitive, but isn't this all a little pointless? The only contention the episode presents is the possibility that Kira might alter the future, but as the episode progresses, it becomes clear that the only thing she could do is kill Dukat or her mother. She'd either alter several seasons of Star Trek's history, or erase herself from history. Both options were obviously not going to happen, so the ending was obvious and anticlimactic. A total dud.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x18 - Inquisition**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-8

**My Rating**  
**- 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dr. Bashir is interrogated by a member of Section 31, a branch of Starfleet Intelligence that answers to no one.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- A security officer says 98 ships were lost in the Federation's 7th fleet. This is good continuity with DS9: A Time to Stand.
- This is the first episode to feature Section 31.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- O'Brien injured from kayaking... again...
- Bashir: "I'm going to a medical conference, not on vacation!" Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 24 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Bashir being served Worf's gagh.
- Sloan regarding the events of DS9: In Purgatory's Shadow and DS9: By Inferno's Light: "Why would the Dominion leave your Runabout orbiting the camp unattended?" Bashir: "They didn't think we'd be able to contact it."
- Sloan drilling Bashir.
- Weyoun beaming Bashir off of DS9.
- Bashir realizing that he's in a simulation.
- Bashir: "You function as judge, jury, and executioner. And I think that's too much power for anyone to have."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Watches as Bashir is arrested.

**Comments:**

Introducing Section 31: an autonomous branch of Starfleet that answers to no one, established 200 years ago when the Federation was founded, sanctioned by the Federation charter. It is the equivalent to the Romulan Tal'Shiar or the Cardassian Obsidian Order. Bashir has been "recruited" into it by Sloan, who is seemingly their leader. The episode ends with this; it's obviously meant to

be the start of a longer term arc. While the ending is somewhat unremarkable, the ride taking us there is a decent amount of fun to watch. I was worried this would turn into another TNG: The Drumhead, but fortunately Sloan wasn't a crazed madman but in fact had an ulterior motive, and quite the ulterior motive at that. In the end, the episode is a pretty balanced mix of annoying and cool. It all kind of averages out. In the end though, I just plain don't like misdirection plots, which I ranted about in *Voy: Waking Moments*. The writers shouldn't have to create layers of deception and revelation to hold an audience.



### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x19 - In the Pale Moonlight**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-15

**My Rating -**  
**10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko goes to great lengths to enlist Romulan support in the Dominion war.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode of DS9 Award"
- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode Ever Award".
- This is the 143rd episode of DS9 and the 512th episode of Star Trek, not counting the films. It's the 520th episode counting the films.
- Garak's 29th episode.
- Bio memetic gel is strictly controlled by the Federation and is not for sale at any price.
- The Dominion conquers Betazed in this episode.
- The Romulans declare war on the Dominion in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser, showing the frustration with Romulan inaction and Sisko's determination to put an end to it.
- Dax citing to Sisko the Romulan position from their perspective, pretending to be the Romulan procouncil responding in turn to Sisko's pretend propositions.
- Sisko: "The founders see it as their sacred duty to bring order to the galaxy. Their order. Do you think they'll sit idly by while you keep your chaotic empire right next to their perfect order?"
- Sisko: "Very good old man. You would have made a decent Romulan." Dax: "I prefer the spots to the pointed ears."
- Sisko's initial conversation with Garak, enlisting his help.
- Sisko: "My father used to say that the road to hell is paved with good intentions."
- Garak outlining his plan to manufacture evidence that the Dominion is planning an attack on Romulus.
- Tolar's decidedly negative reaction to his discovery that Garak is aboard the station and that he is to work with him.
- Sisko: "What happened?" Odo: "As I understand it, Mr. Tolar there came in about two hours ago, ordered a bottle of Whelan Bitters, fifteen minutes later he ordered a second bottle, and then a third, half way through his fourth bottle, he decided to dance with Empella; she was otherwise engaged running the Dabo wheel, declined his invitation, he decided to force the issue, a brief struggle ensued, and Quark in an uncharacteristic display of Chivalry, attempted to intervene, so Tolar stabbed him."
- Quark, as part of the bribe he requests of Sisko: "I'm also having a problem station security. Some cargo containers which I've been waiting for because of some missing import license or something--" Sisko: "I'll handle it."
- Garak: "Mind if I join you?" Sisko: "Be my guest." They enter a turbolift. Sisko: "Ops." Garak: "Hold. The less I'm seen parading through ops the better." Sisko: "I couldn't agree more." Garak: "You seem angry." Sisko: "Who's watching Tolar?" Garak: "I've locked him in his quarters. I've also left him with the distinct impression that if he attempts to force the door open, it may explode." Sisko: "I hope that's just an impression." Garak: "It's best not to dwell on such minutia."
- I love Sisko's initial reaction of rejection and then slow acceptance when Garak asks for bio memetic gel to purchase a genuine Cardassian optolithic data rod with.
- Bashir's objections to Sisko's request for bio memetic gel.
- The fake holo recording of Weyoun and Damar plotting against Romulus.
- Sisko freaking out at Tolar.
- Sisko's meeting with Vreenak.

- Vreenak commenting about how for a moment he almost forgot the Romulan drink wasn't the real thing. But only for a moment. Some great foreshadowing there.
- I like how Sisko's conversation with Vreenak went exactly the way Dax predicted it would.
- Vreenak watching the fake holo recording.
- Sisko: "I'm not an impatient man. I'm not one to agonize over decisions once they're made. I got that from my father. He always says worry and doubt are the greatest enemies of a great chef. The souffles will either rise or it won't. There's not a damn thing you can do about it."
- Vreenak: "It's a faaake!" One of the most legendary DS9 quotes.
- Worf delivering the news to Sisko that Vreenak's shuttle was destroyed. I love how Sisko instantly knew Garak did it.
- Sisko confronting Garak about the murder.
- Garak explaining to Sisko why the plan in fact worked perfectly; that the Romulans would in fact declare war on the Dominion.
- The final scene with Sisko trying to convince himself that he can live with what he did, then erasing the entire log entry.
- Rules of Acquisition; 98. Every man has his price.

### Comments:

In the Pale Moonlight exemplifies everything that made DS9 great. It's an episode in the middle of the Dominion war, which is the best arc ever written on Star Trek and it's a pivotal episode in that arc. Also, it manages to stand on its own very well; even without the backstory as a premise, it would remain most touching. For Avery Brooks puts up one of his best performances ever as Sisko in this episode behind some of the most spectacular directing ever featured on Star Trek. Moreover, the episode's narration is unique. Few, if any Star Trek episodes are told in this original manner, nor is there is a single bit of wasted dialog. Every line is carefully crafted. Every discussion is nicely pointed.

But most importantly, this episode examines the moral center of the human condition at its deepest levels. Captain Sisko is overwhelmingly distraught over the nonstop casualties the Federation is facing in the war with the Dominion. He knows that if the Federation doesn't procure an advantage, a big advantage soon, the Federation will either crumble before the Dominion, or exhaust most of its resources defeating the Dominion. To rectify this situation, Sisko decides he must determine a way to bring the Romulans into the war on the Federation's side. But convincing an empire of billions to go to war for you is no small task...

Well, that's where Mr. Garak comes in. How fitting for the best episode of DS9 to center itself around my favorite character? Sisko approaches Garak, asking him to steal proof from his former homeland that they're planning to attack Romulus so the Romulans will join the war. Garak responds by saying that such a mission would use up all the favors owed to him on Cardassia. And that would be a very messy, very bloody business. Garak asks Sisko if he's prepared to accept the consequences of his services. Sisko responds by saying he's already involved in a very messy, very bloody business. It seemed Sisko didn't realize at first the full extent of what Garak was proposing, perhaps consciously anyway, but subconsciously Sisko knew he was willing to anything to lessen Federation casualties and if that meant cooperating with Garak in some shady business, then Sisko was willing to do it.

Even more interestingly though is Garak's plan in the first place. Garak knew exactly from the beginning that blowing up Vreenak's shuttle and making it look like the Dominion did it would be the only way to get the Romulans to declare war on the Dominion. From the impressions I get from Garak, he'd have already done something similar to this deed by now if he had the chance. Yes, Garak skillfully manipulated all of the events of this episode to achieve the result both he and Sisko wanted, even if the means weren't quite what Sisko expected. I saw it in his eyes from his very first scene in this episode: Garak was actually using Sisko to get the Romulans into the war just as much as Sisko was consciously or unconsciously using him.

In the end, Sisko and Garak both knew the same thing: winning the war was going to require the assistance of the Romulans. And as Sisko said in DS9: Rocks and Shoals, "given the choice between us and them, there is no choice." There's no choice but to pay any price to get the Romulans on his side. In this episode of deception and great moral dilemmas we get to see the darkest side of Sisko's personality. We watch as he turns a blind eye to atrocities like murder because the "cause was righteous" and the ends most certainly justified the means.

But even when it was all over, that wasn't the end of our story. Sisko couldn't personally forgive himself for his actions and he felt that maybe recording it all in his log would make him feel better.

In the final scene, Sisko tries to convince himself that he can live with what he did, but it's clear that he's having trouble doing just that. So instead of trying to live with it, he tries instead to forget it all by erasing his entire log entry. That act signifies the hypocritical nature of human morals and how easily we abandon them when the situation calls for it. That said, there is certainly enough evil done in this episode in the name of good. And so you have it, the best episode ever done on Star Trek.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x20 - His Way**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-22

**My Rating**

**- 3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A new Hologuite program gives birth to "Vic," a 60's crooner who also provides advice for the lovelorn.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is Vic Fontaine's first episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew's reaction to meeting Vic.
- Odo "playing" the piano.
- Vic describing how difficult it was to get an holographic image of Kira. He got it from one of Julian's spy programs ;) Good connections with DS9: Meridian and DS9: Our Man Bashir.
- Vic transferring himself to the other holosuite to talk to Kira.
- Vic setting up Kira and Odo.
- Odo figuring out that he's been on a date with the real Kira all along.
- Odo and Kira's frustrated public display of affection on the promenade.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Is sitting at the bar when Bashir walks in to talk to Quark. 2. Can be seen barely when Kira goes into Quark's. 3. Watches Kira and Odo kiss.

#### **Comments:**

Well, all I can say about this episode is "finally!" DS9 fans have had to wait for five years for Odo and Kira to finally realize they're in love with one another. While I'm not fond of the episode in general, nor am I all that fond of Vic Fontaine, the fact that this episode finally brings Kira and Odo together is worth a few extra points. Talk about tying up a loose end.



---

### **Star Trek DS9 - 6x21 - The Reckoning**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-29

**My Rating**

**7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko is called to Bajor when an ancient tablet addressing the Emissary is discovered.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Dax: "I had a pretty good idea what this was the moment I laid eyes on it. That confirms it. It's a slab of stone with some writing on it."
- Kira discussing with Sisko the reason why the Kai doesn't like him.
- Jake talking to Sisko about his worries about the Emissary business.
- Sisko: "I just had this uncontrollable urge to smash the tablet." Dax: "Oh I get those urges all the time. I just never act on them."
- Possessed Kira.
- Prophet Kira ignoring the Kai.
- The Pah-wraith Kosst Amojan taking over Jake.
- The battle.
- Kai Winn ending the battle.

- Morn Appearances; 1. Witnesses possessed Kira.

**Comments:**

A prophecy predicts that if the Prophets are able to defeat the Kosst Amojan at the gate to the Celestial Temple, a golden age of peace and prosperity will be bestowed upon Bajor. The prophecy comes true, and the battle is waged on Deep Space Nine. But just as the prophets are about to win, Kai Winn interferes and stops the fight, revealing just how evil she really is. She claims to walk the path the prophets have laid out for her, but her motivations are purely greed and the desire for respect and power. As Kira said, she couldn't stand the fact that the Emissary had a stronger faith than she did, and that he would sacrifice his son to exact the penance the Prophets asked of him. There are many nice details in this episode, contributing to this overall theme. For example, Kai Winn admits that the prophets have never spoken to her. My favorite detail, however, is when Kai Winn begs the Prophet within Kira to speak to her, it utterly ignores her. It's disgusting and a little sad, but Winn did what she did as a sort of petty revenge against her gods for their disrespect of her. And she did it to protect her power. She said herself, that the golden age of Bajor would no longer require a Kai. She's so incredibly nasty. A great episode.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x22 - Valiant**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-5-6

**My Rating**  
**- 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Jake and Nog find themselves on board a rogue starship, piloted by a fresh-faced crew of Starfleet cadets.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The USS Valiant's registry is NCC 74210.
- Earth's moon was named Luna at some point. Some people, like Jake's father, still call it "the moon, like it's the only one or something."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A squadron of Jem'Hadar ships attacking the starbase.
- The Valiant's appearance.
- The Red Squad crew telling their story to Jake and Nog.
- Collins describing what it's like to live on Luna.
- Jake being accosted by Watters and Farris.
- The battle with the battleship.
- The destruction of the Valiant.
- Morn Appearances; 1. First scene.

**Comments:**

An episode exploring groupthink. Some of the greatest tragedies in our histories were the result of groupthink, a consensus driven mindset in which achieving unity in decisions is more important than making the best decisions. In this case, Captain Watters was a bad captain. He was driven too much by his pride and the crew blindly followed him, despite the fact that some of them knew he was in error. This leads me back to quote Tuvok made in Voy: Year of Hell. He told Seven of Nine never to question the captain because "the captain is always right." At what level is groupthink tolerated and even promoted in Starfleet? This tragic story is but one example of how powerfully negative groupthink can be and it's very touching and well acted all across. Nicely done.



**Star Trek DS9 - 6x23 - Profit and Lace**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-5-13

**My Rating**  
**- 0**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When Zek's status as the Ferengi Grand Nagus is in jeopardy following his revolutionary ideas about female rights, Quark temporarily changes sexes to prove a point.*

**Problems:**

None



**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Worst Episode of DS9 Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Worst Episode Ever Award".
- Zek passes a law in this episode allowing Ferengi females to wear cloths.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo's reaction to Quark's odd behavior after he was turned back into a man.
- Rules of Acquisition; 94. Females and finances don't mix.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In the bar after Quark is turned back into a man.

**Comments:**

An episode that's so bad that it's embarrassing to watch. The whole thing is an excuse to get Quark in drag. I can't believe Armin Shimmerman agreed to do it. The implications go beyond just Quark dressing up as a woman though. As I understand it, Bashir gave him a complete sex change. That's disturbing on many levels. In the end there aren't any technical problems to justify my rating. I just find the episode so distasteful that I can't give it any points. I am willing to consider the episode canon, after all, Zek passes a law in this episode allowing Ferengi females to wear clothing and earn profit. This is no small change in the Ferengi government. So the episode gets a de facto zero.

**Star Trek DS9 - 6x24 - Time's Orphan**

Originally Aired: 1998-5-20

**My Rating**

- 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While on a picnic, young Molly O'Brien disappears in a mysterious vortex, only to reappear as an 18-year-old woman.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing O'Brien's family again. Keiko, Molly, Yoshi, and even Chester! Keiko hates Chester. :(
- O'Brien and Keiko helping Molly assimilate back into society.
- Worf: "I am a Klingon warrior and a Starfleet officer. I have piloted starships through Dominion minefields. I have have stood in battle against Kelvans twice my size. I have courted and won the heart of the magnificent Jadzia Dax. If I can do these things, I can make this child go to sleep!"
- Old Molly saving young Molly.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Is seen when Molly freaks out at Quark's.

**Comments:**

Keiko's return! We haven't seen her since DS9: The Begotten and it's a welcome reunion. I'm kind of miffed that Keiko hates Chester, but I suppose it's only natural. After all, O'Brien "acquired" him without her consent. What a control freak. :( Getting to more serious topics, this is Molly's episode. An innovative and original premise to make Molly prematurely grow up. Michelle Krusiec does a superb job playing the older Molly, convincing the viewer that she was a feral child for the last ten years. The ending is the obvious best moment for the episode; there's no doubt in my mind that she knew what she was doing when she sent her younger self through the little time portal. That's one of those moments that makes you sad and happy at the same time. Well done.

**Star Trek DS9 - 6x25 - The Sound of Her Voice**

Originally Aired: 1998-6-10

**My Rating -**

6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Defiant unknowingly picks up a time-displaced distress call.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo badgering Quark about station regulations and his sudden mood change as soon Kira walked in.
- Cusak playing a practical joke on Bashir.
- Odo eavesdropping on Quark's conversation with Jake.
- Quark believing he beat Odo.
- Odo and Kira letting Quark win for once.
- Seeing the Defiant's shuttlepod!
- Sisko discovering the long dead corpse of Cusak.
- Rules of Acquisition; 285. No good deed ever goes unpunished.
- Morn Appearances; 1. First scene. 2. In Quark's the second time Odo walks in. 3. Is present the third time Odo walks into Quark's bar to show the gift he picked out for Kira to Quark. 4. Is present in the bar when Odo takes Kira to the holosuite.

**Comments:**

A moody episode on the Defiant, a fun episode on DS9. The point about how DS9 could lose a crewmember to the war at any time is well made and the foreshadowing is effective and moving. It was also awesome to see the Defiant's shuttlepod. But the real fun in this episode was the story that developed between Quark and Odo. This episode is all about respect, and in a quirky way, Odo has a deep respect for Quark and visa versa. I've talked about their half adversarial half friendship relationship before, and this episode exemplifies it. I almost couldn't believe it; Odo let Quark get away with smuggling out of a sense of guilt. He felt he owed Quark something. I also found it rather amusing that Odo didn't let Quark know he was letting him get away with it; rather he let Quark think he won. He did this because Quark told Jake in confidence that he respects Odo and he tries to be his friend when he can. The circle of respect is complete.

**Star Trek DS9 - 6x26 - Tears of the Prophets**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-6-17

**My Rating -**

**9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A valued Deep Space Nine crewmember meets an untimely end.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 30th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Martok: "By this time next year, the three of us will drink blood wine in the halls of Cardassia Central Command!"
- Dukat showing up at Cardassia Central Command.
- Romulan senator: "Klingons can be quite entertaining, can't they? Every Romulan zoo should have a pair."
- Quark: "What, is he a telepath?" Vic: "No, I'm a hologram." Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 25 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Jake: "But Dad! We're talking about the invasion of Cardassia! A savage thrust into the very heart of the Dominion!"
- Damar: "How do you fight a god?" Dukat: "I'll show you. You see, we have an ally we never knew we had."
- O'Brien to Jake: "If you ask me, it's an ungodly hour to go to war. You can quote me on that."
- The Jem'Hadar mounting kamikaze attacks on the Klingons.
- The joint Federation and Romulan fleet destroying the weapon platforms.
- The weapon platforms becoming operational and destroying Federation and Romulan ships.
- Dax saying a prayer to the Prophets.
- Dukat attacking Jadzia and sealing the wormhole.
- Kira taking command of the Defiant.
- O'Brien tricking the weapon platforms into attacking their own power generator.

- Jadzia's last words: "Our baby... would've been so beautiful..."
- Worf performing the Klingon death ceremony for Jadzia.
- Sisko taking his baseball with him...
- Morn Appearances; 1. Behind Worf and Dax as they exit the holosuite.

**Comments:**

Got mixed feelings here. It was rumored quite a bit before the season finale that Terry Farrell wanted to leave the show because of her inability to come to terms with the producers regarding a contract for season 7. So they had to kill her off in this episode and the writing reeks of a scramble to achieve that goal. As a result, we have a story where Sisko leaves Bajor at a critical moment, allowing Dukat to attack the wormhole, to seal off the Bajorans from their Celestial Temple and he kills Dax in the process. While I love the way the writers wove everything together, there is one major inconsistency. Why is Dax on the station at all? And Bashir for that matter? Bashir and Dax always joined the Defiant for missions. Personally, I find it funny how Kira goes and they don't. Oh... wait... I remember... the writers had to kill off Dax and they needed them to stay. ;) Aside from this minor inconsistency, the story is pretty concrete. I'm willing to bet they already had the finale written and that they revised it to include Dax' death. Though perhaps it is unwise to speculate about what the writers did and did not intend. The idea to get the Dominion to appeal to the Pah-wraiths was intelligent writing and despite my unhappiness with how Jadzia died, the episode is fantastic. I loved watching Dukat meticulously carry out his plan, I loved the anguish in Sisko's eyes when he realized he never should have left, and the battle for Chin'Toka was spectacular. I like how Garak once again very clearly chooses his side, he's a bridge officer on the Defiant in this battle! I may complain, but this season finished off with just as big a bang as it began with. This has possibly been the best season ever done on Star Trek.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x01 - Image in the Sand**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-9-30

**My Rating -**  
**5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko, now retreated back on Earth to gather his wits, meets an old friend.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode features revised credits. Terry Farrell for Jadzia Dax is removed and Nicole deBoer is added for Ezri Dax.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Colonel Kira! Complete with a new hairstyle...
- Worf's behavior with Vic.
- O'Brien sharing a bottle of blood wine with Worf. I love Worf's reluctance. Nice reference to TNG: Hollow Pursuits as well.
- I love the scene where Martok asks Worf to join him on a dangerous mission.
- Bashir and O'Brien deciding to go with Worf on his dangerous mission to honor Jadzia.
- Ezri's appearance.
- Morn Appearances; 1. In the bar after O'Brien shares a bottle of blood wine with Worf.

**Comments:**

This episode reveals the truth behind Sisko's connection with the Prophets. He's actually descended from one! There's that, and a couple other interesting plot threads. Kira, with her new promotion, is now in command of DS9 and the Romulans have established a permanent presence there. They've also secretly heavily fortified one of Bajor's moons under the guise that it's a hospital. This, of course, pissed off Kira. Also, Worf is angry because he believes that because of the way Jadzia's died, she wasn't granted entry into Sto'Vo'Kor. So Martok, Worf, O'Brien, and Bashir all decide to go on a dangerous mission against the Dominion to honor her memory. Finally, Ezri Dax makes an appearance, the successor to Jadzia Dax. These plot threads are all valid and interesting, but none of them are sufficiently developed in this episode, especially Ezri, who gets a pathetic amount of screen time. The episode was designed to be a cliffhanger, and it was done so in a slow paced, annoying way. Nevertheless, it is a satisfactory beginning to the season.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x02 - Shadows and Symbols**  
Originally Aired: 1998-10-7

My Rating - 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Sisko searches for a lost Orb.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ezri's ranting about how she got the Dax symbiont and her inability to control her new urges.
- Kira declaring she's going to blockade Bajor's moon from the Romulans.
- The desert hike.
- Kira's blockade.
- Kira: "Since when did the Romulans start using Warbirds to deliver medical supplies?"
- I love Kira's bluff.
- Quark complaining about the gagh.
- Sisko suddenly appearing in a mental hospital with a human version of Damar.
- Kira's game of chicken with the Romulans.
- Sisko reopening the wormhole.
- The Rotarran destroying the Dominion shipyards.

**Comments:**

This episode confirms what I initially suspected, Sisko is actually descended from the prophets. This episode does everything its predecessor should have and exceedingly well, too. It's as if the writers wanted to cram all the good stuff into this episode for some reason. Sisko reopens the wormhole, the Rotarran destroys one of the Dominion's shipyards, and Kira successfully blockades the Romulans, forcing them to dismantle their fortifications on the Bajoran moon. It's a successful conclusion to the two parter, though the two episodes would have been worth more points (both rated 7) if they had been spread more evenly. It seemed to me that one part was all buildup and the other was all action. Oh, and I loved those Starfleet sand-planet uniforms. Most cute. Especially on Ezri. ;)



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x03 - Afterimage**  
Originally Aired: 1998-10-14

My  
Rating -  
8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*In addition to coping with the memories of her "past lives," Ezri Dax must deal with the range of reactions her presence generates on Deep Space Nine.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 31st episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ezri: "It's a strange sensation, dying. No matter how many times it happens to you, you never get used to it."
- Quark: "You're a therapist?" Ezri: "Why does everyone sound so surprised when they hear that?"
- O'Brien and Bashir discussing plans for their battle of the Alamo holosuite program. Odo is going to be General Santa Anna. How fitting. ;)
- Sisko to Dax: "What are you gonna learn in the next 3 months that you haven't already learned in the last 300 years?"
- Quark declaring to Julian that he will win over Ezri first.
- Ezri's "misplaced guilt" conversation with Garak.

- Ezri revealing to Sisko that he intimidates Worf.
- Ezri to Bashir: "If Worf hadn't come along, it would have been you."
- Worf freaking out at Bashir and Quark.
- Garak's insults toward Ezri... ouch! Garak: "Now get out of here... before I say something unkind."
- O'Brien visits Worf with a bottle of blood wine. Worf's reaction: "Oh no, not again."
- Ezri discovering the root of Garak's distress.
- Jake: "She is cute..." I would tend to agree.
- Morn Appearances; 1. First scene, Ezri talks to him. 2. Is present at Ezri's promotional ceremony.

**Comments:**

Is this the "let's pick on the new girl" episode? Holy crap. Worf tells Ezri he doesn't want anything to do with her, Sisko lectures her and is generally hard on her, and Garak is downright cruel. Granted everything's resolved in the end, I can certainly see why she was so eager to leave the station. What an emotional roller coaster. The episode presents a convincing story for not only Ezri, but Garak as well, whose claustrophobia makes a welcome cameo. I was pleased that the writers let his part of the story develop beyond the surface. I much enjoyed the revelation that the root of his distress was the fact that by working for Starfleet, Garak has been causing the deaths of countless Cardassian soldiers. Aside from this, the relationship between Worf and Dax as well as the one between Quark / Bashir and Dax is handled nicely; the writers had to make an episode dealing with all these things and they excelled. And I'll be honest with you. I think Dax 2.0 is a significant upgrade. ;)



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x04 - Take Me Out to the Holosuite**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-10-21

**My Rating**  
- 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A group of Deep Space Nine rookies answer Sisko's challenge to try and beat a Vulcan baseball team.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- This episode is one of many which confirms the idea that Starfleet largely segregates their facilities and starships by race. Evidence: all Vulcan crew starship T'Kumbra.
- Cassidy says that Vulcans have three times the strength of humans. Sisko said, "and they're faster too."
- The music at the beginning of the baseball game is supposedly the anthem for the United Federation of Planets.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene introducing Captain Solok of the T'Kumbra. Vulcan arrogance at its best! If I didn't know better, I'd swear the guy was Romulan.
- The particularly pathetic performance of the team during the initial tryouts.
- Sisko asking Odo to be the umpire.
- I love the scene when Kira walks by the security office as Odo is practicing his umpire moves.
- Sisko telling the Solok story.
- Solok eliminating the spectators.
- Worf and Sisko arguing with Odo the umpire.
- Sisko restoring Rom's status in the team and restoring the crowd.
- Rom's accidental bunt and the subsequent run scored because of it.
- Odo throwing out the Solok.
- Sisko and crew's victory celebration.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Is seen in the bar after Sisko kicks Rom of the team. 2. In the bar after Sisko declares "manufactured triumph."

**Comments:**

Hilarious. The "Logicians" vs. the "Niners". This episode is both a spectacle of marvelous humor and a fantastic display of camaraderie. The episode is also highly controversial. Let's have a look why. Here we are, in the middle of the Dominion war, and this ship the T'Kumbra, a ship of all Vulcans, docks on DS9 for repairs. Captain Solok, however, has an ulterior motive for coming to

Deep Space Nine. He has had a long time rivalry with Sisko for many years and wished to challenge Sisko in his favorite game. Many say that this episode which deals with a Baseball game has nothing whatsoever to do with the Dominion war and that it merely serves to waste time; that it's nothing but filler. While in some ways I agree, the episode couldn't have been better filler. The conflict between Sisko and Solok mirrors that of the Dominion war. The Federation faces an enemy many times more powerful than itself, yet they continue to fight and continue to take pleasure in whatever small victories they can achieve. The "small victory" in this episode, or rather the "manufactured triumph" parallels wonderfully the rivalry Solok seems to have manufactured over the years. Sisko wanted to let it go, but Solok didn't. Also, this episode parallels TOS in many ways. The rivalry between Solok and Sisko reminded me a lot of the (admittedly less intense) rivalry between Spock and McCoy. Finally, I think it's remarkable to point out that this episode made extensive use of the holosuites without featuring a malfunction. Overall, this is one of the most successful and intelligently written humor episodes ever written.



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 7x05 - Chrysalis**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-10-28

**My  
Rating -  
8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A group of genetically enhanced humans, once under Bashir's care, escape from their medical facility home in the hopes that the doctor, who himself was genetically engineered as a child, can cure their friend Sarina.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- "Admiral Patrick" and his recurring "That's a stupid question!" line.
- O'Brien: "Julian, I can't break the laws of physics. Nobody can!"
- Jack: "Your friend was right. You can't break the laws of physics. But you can bend them!"
- Bashir: "Sarina! What are you looking at?" Sarina: "Everything..."
- The scene with Sarina, Jack, Luran, and Patrick singing.
- Jack's insinuating that the universe will stop expanding and collapse in on itself in 60 to 70 trillion years while Lauren fantasizes about Nog. Jack's computer diagram title read, "THE END IS NEAR !" :)
- Sarina objecting to Jack's idea, claiming that it's impossible to change the cosmological constant of the universe. This is a nice reference to the way Geordi LaForge objected to Q's idea in TNG: Déjà Q. Notice how Jack's computer diagram has changed to, "HOW TO AVERT DISASTER..." with "DISASTER" painted red. :)
- Morn Appearances; 1. First scene, seen in the background as Julian asks O'Brien to go to the holosuite with him. 2. Walks by as Nog summons Bashir to meet "Admiral Patrick." 3. Seen in the bar when Bashir talks to O'Brien about Sarina's vast speech ability improvement. Morn had previously caught O'Brien up on how his 17 brothers and sisters were doing. 4. Is present at the bar when Sarina joins Bashir's little get together with his friends. 5. Is present at the bar when Sarina plays Dabo.

**Comments:**

A welcome sequel to DS9: Statistical Probabilities. I said in that episode that I wanted to see Jack, Lauren, Patrick, and Sarina again and here we do. We get a bit of closure regarding the characters, especially Sarina's character who steals the show. I am only annoyed with the ensuing aborted love story. The episode relied a bit too much on Sarina being "driven" back into herself, first by Jack and later by Bashir. It's just bad writing to tease the viewer in this manner. Aside from this though, Sarina's character was compelling and I really wished she had stayed aboard to be with Bashir. Then again, this leaves him perfectly single and ready at any time to start a relationship with Ezri, even if Worf may disapprove. :)

---



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x06 - Treachery, Faith, and the Great River**  
Originally Aired: 1998-11-4

My  
Rating -  
9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Odo is lured to a secret meeting site, where he finds himself face to face with Weyoun, the Vorta leader of the enemy Dominion.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Weyoun 4 was murdered by his Jem'Hadar first in DS9: To the Death.
- Weyoun 5 died in a "transporter accident." Though whether or not it was an accident is questionable. Damar may have been involved.
- Weyoun 6 killed himself for his betraying the Dominion.
- This is the first episode to feature a Changeling suffering the effects of the disease which threatens their entire population. The female shapeshifter displays symptoms, which Damar points out. Additionally, Weyoun 6 also tells Odo of the sickness that's spread throughout the Great Link.
- This episode establishes that the Vorta sense of taste is extremely limited.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser, O'Brien's swamped with repairs and Weyoun is defecting...
- Odo: "Aren't you being a little paranoid?" Weyoun: "Of course I'm paranoid, everyone's trying to kill me."
- Odo: "I'm not sure the universe is ready for two Weyouns."
- Damar convincing Weyoun to attack Odo's Runabout.
- Nog explaining to O'Brien his network of trades.
- Weyoun betraying the Jem'Hadar allowing Odo to destroy one of their ships.
- Weyoun: "The Vorta used to be quite different from what we are today. We were forest dwellers. Small, timid, ape-like creatures living in hollowed out trees." Odo: "Eating nuts and berries..."
- Weyoun: "And living in fear of the many predators that would hunt us for food. One day, a wounded Changeling came stumbling through the forest fleeing from a mob of angry solids." Odo: "Why were they chasing him?" Weyoun: "What does it matter? Solids have always feared and mistrusted shapeshifters, you know that. Well, a family of Vorta hid the Changeling from his pursuers. And in exchange for saving his life, the Changeling promised the Vorta that one day we would be transformed into powerful beings. That we would become an important part of a great new empire that would stretch across the galaxy."
- Odo's "become the ice" strategy.
- The ice battle.
- Weyoun 6 committing suicide to save Odo.
- O'Brien relieved to see his trust in Nog was not misplaced.
- Rules of Acquisition; 168. Whisper your way to success.

**Comments:**

Another spectacular episode which skillfully merges several plot threads. Weyoun 5 was murdered, Damar may have killed him. Weyoun 6 is defecting, and Damar and Weyoun 7 are trying to kill him. The founders are all dying from a serious illness, and finally we have the story on DS9 in which Nog is attempting to procure replacement parts for O'Brien. The various plot threads are woven together well, providing a more than sufficiently entertaining episode which has just the right mix between humor, action, danger, and drama. Overall, a brilliant outing.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x07 - Once More Unto the Breach**  
Originally Aired: 1998-11-11

My Rating -  
9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf is surprised to be paid a visit by Kor, an aging Klingon war hero.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

### Remarkable Scenes:

- The Davy Crockett conversation.
- Martok's decidedly negative reaction to both paperwork and Worf's mentioning of Kor.
- Martok: "Clear the bridge!!"
- Martok: "I would not give that man the gnawed bones of my last meal!"
- Martok: "You can wound a man without ever seeing his face."
- Martok telling his story explaining why he hates Kor.
- Ezri and Kira discussing Kor.
- Quark drawing the wrong conclusion after partially eavesdropping on Kira's and Ezri's conversation.
- The battle.
- Kor taking command when Worf and Martok fell.
- Kor's poor decisions.
- Quark confronting Ezri.
- Kor: "Saver the fruit of life, my young friends. It has a sweet taste when it is fresh from the vine. But don't live too long. The taste turns bitter after a time."
- Kor going in Worf's place.
- Martok and crew drinking and singing to Kor's success.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Is seen during the Davy Crockett conversation. 2. Seen at the bar after Quark eavesdrops on Kira's and Ezri's conversation. 3. Is in the bar when Quark confronts Ezri.

### Comments:

A story to wrap up Kor's involvement in DS9. Kor's final cameo couldn't have been done better. It wasn't just the bland and obvious "I want to die an honorable death" story either. It examines real issues with the Klingon aging process, showing us an old Klingon who's losing his memory. The episode has nicely pointed dialog all around, and I'm most fond of Martok in this episode. Despite this episode focusing on Kor, Martok shines. I love watching him go from bitter, to sympathetic, to proud regarding Kor. And I loved watching Kor slowly begin to realize his failings. DS9 proves to us once again that a Klingon centric story taking place on a Klingon ship is a wonderful setting for a story, and this episode reinforces our impression of the deep and honorable culture of the Klingon Empire. Another spectacular episode.



### Star Trek DS9 - 7x08 - The Siege of AR-558

Originally Aired: 1998-11-18

My Rating -  
9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*A brutal battle on planet AR-558 has far reaching consequences for young Nog.*

### Problems:

None

### Factoids:

None

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Vic: "Sometimes being a hologram can be a real pain in the asymmetric photons."
- The Defiant taking out a Jem'Hadar fighter.
- Quark: "Let me tell you something about hew-mons, nephew. They're a wonderful, friendly people as long as their bellies are full and their holosuites are working. But take away their creature comforts, deprive them of food, sleep, sonic showers, put their lives in jeopardy over an extended period of time, and those same friendly, intelligent, wonderful people will become as nasty and violent as the most bloodthirsty Klingon." Nog's response: "I feel sorry for the Jem'Hadar."
- Vargas: "McGreevey put this bandage on me. He ripped up his own uniform to make it." Bashir: "He sounds like a good friend." Vargas: "He was a jerk. I couldn't stand the guy. He wouldn't shut up. Yap, yap, yap. He thought he was the world's greatest authority on everything. And now he's dead and I should have more respect. But god I hated him. One minute he's tying this bandage around my arm talking his head off and the next minute he's lying flat on his back with a hole in his chest. And I just sat there and I looked at him. He was so quiet. He was so quiet! One time in his life he's quiet!"
- Kellin: "I'm an engineer, not a magician!" Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 27 for "I'm a doctor,



not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.

- The Jem'Hadar attack on the scouting team.
- Dax and Kellin revealing the Houdinis.
- Sisko ordering the Houdinis moved into the ravine so they explode on the Jem'Hadar.
- The mines going off as Vic Fontaine's music plays in the background.
- The battle.
- Rules of Acquisition; 34. War is good for business. 125. You can't make a deal if you're dead.

#### Comments:

An episode in the tradition of DS9: Rocks and Shoals, we get to see brutal ground combat when some of the crew intermix with another group of Federation soldiers in a struggle to hold AR-558, a captured Dominion communications relay. The premise is pretty basic, but it's the execution that shines. The physical and mental struggle of the soldiers portrayed in this episode was well crafted and captivating. This episode really gives you a feel for the horrors of the Dominion war. The only annoying thing about this episode is the immense amount of casualties suffered among non main characters. The worst thing that happened to a main character was Nog losing his leg, and in the 24th century that's not much of a loss, seeing as how they can be replaced. An episode like this would have been a much better fit to kill of Jadzia Dax, if they had done it a bit earlier, and it would have added additional significance to an already incredible story. But Jadzia is already dead. What's done is done and I think they made the most out of this episode; it was most impressive.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 7x09 - Covenant

Originally Aired: 1998-11-25

My Rating -  
2

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Dukat returns and he wants Kira to join his cult of Pah-wraith followers.*

#### Problems:

- Again, why is Empok Nor always displayed at a tilted angle?

#### Factoids:

- Dominion transporters have a range of 3 light years when a transponder is in place.
- Due to the maximum range of the Dominion transporters, Empok Nor can only be at maximum 3 light years away from DS9.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Odo: "A glass of Spring Wine." Quark: "Since when do you drink Spring Wine? Or anything else for that matter?" Odo: "It's for Kira."
- Kira: "I've always found that when people try to convince others of their beliefs it's because they're just trying to convince themselves."
- Kira, regarding the religious conflict: "We can't both be right."
- The revelation that the baby is actually Dukat's.
- Kira inciting revolt against Dukat by revealing that he never had any intention of dying with his followers.

#### Comments:

An episode exploring the cult of the Pah-wraiths in detail was a nice idea, but flops here. Dukat loses some of his magic in this episode with his two serious blunders, 1. getting one of his followers pregnant and 2. bringing Kira to Empok Nor. The episode is necessary to in a way to show us what Dukat has been up to since he killed Jadzia, but because of Dukat's absurd behavior, the episode almost contributes negatively to the story. I did enjoy Kira's condescending attitude toward the cult followers, but beyond that the episode is mostly filler and pretty annoying.



#### Star Trek DS9 - 7x10 - It's Only a Paper Moon

Originally Aired: 1998-12-30

My Rating -  
3

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*After losing his leg in battle, a somber Nog returns to the space station to recuperate*

#### Problems:

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The senior staff picking on Julian for his holosuite programs.
- Nog being rude to Jake's girlfriend, then attacking Jake.
- Vic: "She called you a hero? And for that you slugged your best friend? Remind me never to give you a compliment."
- O'Brien: "I'm an engineer, not a philosopher." Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 28 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.

**Comments:**

An episode centered around Nog's difficulty in dealing with the loss of his leg is a natural progression of the events from DS9: AR-558. Unfortunately, the episode falls somewhat flat. I was never quite fond of Vic Fontaine, and this episode steals precious time from what could have been another marvelous Ezri counseling session, but nope, it's all about Vic and his trivial holographic life. Not that I'm totally insensitive to the sentient hologram, nor do I not appreciate the theme of the episode that escaping too much into a fantasy world is bad, it's just that a more "real world" setting episode probably would have better suited the episode. We've seen holoduction handled far better with Barclay on TNG.

**Star Trek DS9 - 7x11 - Prodigal Daughter**

Originally Aired: 1999-1-6

**My Rating****- 4****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Ezri Dax returns to her home and family while trying to gather information on the missing Miles O'Brien.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ezri describing the various types of Gagh.
- Sisko regarding O'Brien: "He is not a detective, he's an engineer!" Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 29 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- O'Brien, sarcastically regarding Bilby's wife: "Yeah. She accidentally hit herself in the head and accidentally threw herself in the river."
- Ezri regarding her family business: "I feel like I'm trapped in some sort of Ferengi nightmare."
- The revelation that Norvo Tigan murdered Bilby's wife.

**Comments:**

This episode skillfully combines a sequel to DS9: Honor Among Thieves with an episode centered around Ezri. As it turns out, the murder O'Brien was investigating was committed by Ezri's brother, Norvo. This is, of course, all very convenient from a writing perspective, but it ended up being an interesting and entertaining episode regardless. Unfortunately, most of the episode is character development on Ezri's family, not so much on Ezri herself, and most of the rest is spent on the murder investigation. Nevertheless, it was nice to meet Ezri's family, and it was nice to see her doing her job as a counselor, even if she was just consoling family.

**Star Trek DS9 - 7x12 - The Emperor's New Cloak**

Originally Aired: 1999-2-3

**My Rating****- 3****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Grand Nagus Zek is abducted and held hostage by Alliance members from the mirror universe.*

**Problems:**

- In DS9: Crossover we saw Klingon ships with cloaking devices. So much for this episode's premise...

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 32nd episode.
- This episode features a controversial lesbian kiss.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Mirror Ezri attacking Quark.
- Quark and Rom hauling a cloaked cloaking device across the station.
- Mirror Julian shooting and killing Mirror Vic Fontaine. Ah, I love it.
- Rom obsessing over why some things in the mirror universe are opposites and some things aren't.
- Mirror Kira kissing Mirror Ezri...
- Mirror Kira killing Mirror Brunt.
- Quark and Rom making fun of Mirror Garak for not being as good at his job as regular Garak.
- Mirror Ezri killing Mirror Garak.
- The Mirror Defiant attacking the Regent's ship.
- Morn Appearances; 1. Behind Quark, who's complaining about Bashir because he's jealous that he has more of a chance with Ezri than he does.

**Comments:**

The final mirror universe installment on DS9, thankfully. It actually does a great deal to wrap up the whole mirror universe story, too. The Regent is captured, right along with his flagship! Unfortunately, there is much to complain about. The lesbianism in this episode was over the top, the fact that we've already seen cloaking devices in the mirror universe was a drastic oversight, we get another overdose of Ferengi silliness. One thing I did like was Rom's objections about how some things are curiously not mirrored in the mirror universe. Like O'Brien being too nice, or the tube grubs not being poison. His ramblings may have been slightly incoherent, but in a way he's right and his statements kind of exemplify the way in which the DS9 writers have continually misused the mirror universe since day one. I can only pray that if it's ever used again that it be a true homage to TOS, and not this mish mash of silliness and plot device exploitation.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x13 - Field of Fire**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-2-10

**My Rating**

**- 10**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Ezri must solve a series of murders by summoning Joran, one of her previous incarnations.*

**Problems:**

- Why the hell did O'Brien and Julian reject Ilario's request to join them in the holosuite? They invited Odo to be Santa Anna!
- Why does Odo have to wear goggles during O'Brien's melon demonstration? It's not as if his eyes needed protecting...
- You've got to wonder why the TR-116 with the microtransporter modification isn't something that Starfleet is producing en masse, especially with the war on and all. Maybe the microtransporter is subject to easy jamming.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- According to Odo there are over 900 Starfleet officers on the station.
- According to the computer, there are 48 Vulcans on DS9. Well, 47 after this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ilario: "You know something, Lieutenant, you're very beautiful." Ezri: "And you're very drunk." Ilario: "True enough. But in the morning, I'll be sober, and you'll still be beautiful."
- Ezri's dream, featuring a brief piano performance by Joran.
- Bashir and O'Brien discussing weapon fetishes and how some historical men would give female names to their guns changing the relationship from owner and object to something resembling man and woman. O'Brien in response: "Maybe I'll start calling my tricorder Sally."

- O'Brien realizing that the killer is using displaced targeting.
- O'Brien's melon demonstration.
- Ezri summoning Joran.
- Joran: "Handsome weapon." Ezri: "If you say so." Joran: "Come now, even you have to admire the aesthetic qualities inherent in its design, it conveys a sense of danger, of power, just looking from the trigger to the muzzle conjures up images of death. Take it down."
- Ezri using the TR-116 like the killer would, on Joran's advice, attempting to come up with a personality profile of the killer.
- Ezri talking to herself, or rather Joran, in public.
- Joran, regarding Quark: "How I'd love to slip a knife between his ribs."
- Ezri almost killing the man Odo was chasing because of Joran.
- Ezri discovering that the killer is targeting people who have pictures of laughing people in their quarters.
- I love the way onlookers kind of stare at Ezri when she talks to Joran in public, wondering who she's talking to.
- Joran staring into the face of the Vulcan on the turbolift, sure that he'd found the killer.
- Ezri looking up Chu'lak's history, then using the TR-116 to spy on him in his quarters only to discover that he picked her as his next victim!
- Ezri shooting Chu'lak.
- Ezri: "Tell me, why did you do it!" Chu'lak: "Because logic demanded it."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Walks down an empty and dark promenade with a giggling woman. 2. Is seen very briefly when Ezri fights the man Odo was chasing in Quark's.

#### Comments:

Introducing the TR-116 with a microtransporter modification. The perfect assassin's weapon. It's a shame that we didn't get to hear Garak's opinion of the weapon. I think he would have been proud. Half the fun of this episode for me is my fascination over the ingenious weapon design. The other half is the wonderful character development we get for Ezri, finally. Joran was an underused concept when Jadzia was Dax, thankfully he gets another shot here and he excels as the murderous madman we thought he was. This is an episode which gets just about every detail right, Ezri as a psychologist is doing her job assisting Odo in a murder investigation, Ezri as a Trill is using the knowledge of her past lives, including that of Joran, and O'Brien the engineer discovers what the murder weapon must have been and builds a replica. For once, everyone is perfectly in character! The musical score is exceptionally good, better than usual, the overall tenseness of the episode is nicely high, and finally the murderer was a perfect fit. I absolutely loved the idea of a Vulcan that hates emotion and his singular reason for why he was doing this was just the perfect thing to say, "because logic demanded it." Overall, this is Ezri's best episode and one of my all time favorites of the series.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x14 - Chimera**  
Originally Aired: 1999-2-17

My  
Rating -  
3

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Odo returns from a conference with an unexpected guest: a Changeling who tracked and boarded his runabout.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- J. G. Hertzler plays Laas in this episode. He also plays General Martok.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The Changeling's appearance.
- Laas: "Odo, we linked. I know the truth. You stayed here because of Kira. If it weren't for her, you would be with our people. War or no war, you would be a founder."
- Laas' rude behavior, insulting humanoids.
- Laas' confrontation with the Klingons.
- Quark advising Odo about Laas.
- Laas: "What higher flattery is there? I who can be anything choose to be like you."
- I love Kira's lie to Sisko about how Laas escaped. "He turned into some kind of plasma energy

and force his way through" the forcefield.

- Morn Appearances; 1. Is present when Laas is "being fog" on the promenade.

**Comments:**

An interesting idea for an episode wrecked by filler syndrome. Introducing the Laas character, the second of the hundred for Odo to meet, was long overdue. Unfortunately just as before in DS9: The Begotten, the writers just didn't want to introduce another Changeling character. So we get a disgruntled Laas who hates humanoids and leaves as soon as he gets a chance. To me, this was a wasted chance to do something cool with the character. Imagine how the founders would have reacted to meeting Laas? Or imagine what Starfleet could have done with another allied Changeling? The only interesting thing this episode contributes to the story is the revelation that without Kira, Odo would be a founder regardless of the war. I think that really says something about Odo's character.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x15 - Badda-Bing Badda-Bang**  
Originally Aired: 1999-2-24

**My Rating -**  
**1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Vic's is about to be taken over by the heavy-handed mobster Frankie Eyes.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Odo stretching out his arm to impress the bar flies.
- I like Bashir's line in which he says he wants his martini "stirred, not shaken," the opposite of what James Bond likes. ;)
- Morn Appearances; 1. Watches as the senior staff enters Quark's to execute their little robbery operation.

**Comments:**

Even worse than DS9: It's Only a Paper Moon, we have another Vic Fontaine episode, but this time there's not even an excuse for Vic's inclusion in the plot. He is the center of the plot. The episode is entertaining, and the light hearted comedy is effective, but the timing is absolutely wrong. An episode like this should have been done in the vast wastelands that were season one, or another one of the seasons filled with filler episodes. The middle of the Dominion war is no time for filler.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x16 - Inter Arma Enim Silent Leges**  
Originally Aired: 1999-3-3

**My**  
**Rating -**  
**5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On the eve of Dr. Bashir's departure for a conference on the Romulan homeworld, he's visited by Sloan, the director of Section 31, a secret and unsanctioned extremist entity within Starfleet Intelligence.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The episode's title is latin for, "in time of war, the law falls silent."
- Garak's 33rd episode.
- The Intrepid class ship, named Bellerophon, was registry: NCC 74705.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Bashir and Garak discussing Romulus.
- Sloan predicting that in the aftermath of the Dominion war, the Romulans and the Federation will

be the only major powers left.

- An Intrepid class ship! A nice way to cut down on sets and ship models, just reuse Voyager's sets.
- :) A nice homage too.
- Bashir's meeting with Koval.
- Bashir discovering what's really going on.

**Comments:**

Dr. Bashir has really bad luck with medical conferences. He was captured by the Dominion on his way to one, he was captured by Sloan on his way to one, and now he is duped into participating in a spy mission on Romulus while on his way to one. So Section 31 finally has an assignment for Julian. I was wondering when the writers would revisit this. It's the usual complicated mess of politics one would expect from an organization like Section 31. Unfortunately, the actual story used by the set up in this episode isn't very good. There are interesting tidbits, such as seeing another Intrepid class ship, and seeing lots of nice shots of Romulus, and the political intrigue is even mildly interesting. But when you add it all up, you get something that barely measures up to average. I expected something more profound from Section 31. Not routine political meddling.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x17 - Penumbra**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-4-7

**My Rating -**  
**6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Worf is missing in action and Ezri takes it upon herself to find him.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ezri talking about Captain Boday, a Gallamite with a transparent skull. Bashir: "Personally, I don't know what Jadzia ever saw in the man." O'Brien: "Well, his brains."
- Weyoun and Damar discussing a Ketracel White facility being run by the Son'a. A nice reference to Star Trek IX: Insurrection.
- I also like the nice reference to DS9: Treachery, Faith, and the Great River regarding the founder's illness and her order to drop the temperature in their primary military facility. It's fitting that Damar, a Cardassian, because Cardassians love the heat would complain.
- Ezri's explanation for why she came to rescue Worf: "You're a fellow officer. I would have done the same for Kira or Julian." A nice reference of the line Worf used on Ezri in DS9: Field of Fire.
- Jake: "Best man, huh? That means I get to plan the bachelor party!"
- Ezri's and Worf's Runabout being attacked and destroyed by Jem'Hadar fighters and their subsequent escape onto a nearby planet.
- Ezri and Worf arguing over hunting, Jadzia, and Boday.
- The sight of a Breen ship. Cool!
- Morn Appearances; 1. Sits next to Ezri in the bar.

**Comments:**

Sisko decides he wants to marry Cassidy (though his mother doesn't want him to), and Ezri and Worf finally confront their feelings for each other. And we get to see a Breen ship. ;) Okay, well maybe the Breen didn't play such a major role, but with the cliffhanger at the end of this episode, I'm sure they will in the next one. This episode is remarkable in that it feels as though the writers are finally beginning to get to the point, ending the constant supply of relatively filler episodes we've had recently. Even though a few of the previous filler type episodes were quite good, DS9: Field of Fire especially, I'm still glad to be getting back to the war. Something big is brewing in the Dominion. The disease continues to wreak havoc on the founders and the female Changeling wanted a subspace communicator installed in her quarters. I smell desperation.

---



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x18 - 'Til Death Do Us Part**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-4-14

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Sisko and Kasidy plan to marry, but circumstances are not in their favor. Meanwhile, Dukat returns posing as a simple farmer.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kai Winn's vision from the "prophets."
- Ezri: "I wonder what the Breen look like under those helmets." Worf: "They say no one has ever seen one and lived to speak of it." Ezri: "Maybe they're all furry. It's supposed to be very cold on Breen."
- Worf regarding the Breen: "They do not tolerate incursions into their space. During the second empire, Chancellor Mow'ga sent a fleet of Klingon ships to conquer their homeworld and were never heard from again."
- Weyoun waking up a hung over Damar.
- The Breen beaming to the Jem'Hadar ship bearing "gifts."

**Comments:**

This episode is most slow in its pacing. A lot of time is spent on Dukat seducing Winn, Sisko wrestling with whether or not to marry Kassidy and ignore his mother's advice or be a good little Emissary, and the general buildup with the Jem'Hadar ship and the Breen ship traveling to meet one another for the cliffhanger. The slow pacing lends poorly to the episode's overall quality, but it works well as a transitional episode in the growing arc. Now we know what Dukat was up to in the previous episode. He is working for the Pah-wraiths still, up to some evil scheme again. We also know what the big Dominion secret is and what the Breen are doing... the Breen have formed an alliance with the Dominion!



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x19 - Strange Bedfellows**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-4-21

**My Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kasidy must adjust to her new role in life, while new Dominion alliances are formed.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The female shapeshifter meeting with the Breen.
- Martok telling Sisko the story of his pet Targ.
- Ezri, whilst hanging upside down as a prisoner on a Jem'Hadar ship: "I hate to say it, but this is doing wonders for my back." Worf: "I doubt that is what our captors had in mind."
- Ezri: "You have the biggest ego of any man I have ever known!" Worf: "Considering how many men you have known, that is quite a statement!"
- Worf killing Weyoun 7. I love Damar's reaction.
- Kai Winn's vision from the Pah-wraiths.
- Damar's reaction to meeting Weyoun 8.
- Bashir, somewhat speechless about Ezri in Quark's.
- Dukat revealing to Winn that he is working with the Pah-wraiths.
- Damar getting pissed at Weyoun for letting the Klingons wipe out 500,000 Cardassian troops.
- Worf and Ezri finally working out their problems.
- Damar, regarding Weyoun being pessimistic about being summoned to see the founder: "Oh, I'm sure she'll understand. But if she doesn't, I'll look forward to meeting Weyoun 9!"

- Winn describing her doubts about her faith to Dukat.

**Comments:**

Damar throws his Kanar at the mirror and helps Worf and Ezri to escape Cardassia. Not only is he shedding his alcoholism, but he's shedding his desire for power and conquest so that he may save his people. Rarely do we see such profound character evolution. The "strange bedfellows" described in the episode title are of course Dukat and Winn; it also describes the alliance between the Dominion and the Breen. And with some loose interpretation it could describe Damar and the Federation, for it seems now he's committed to undermining the Dominion. While the episode pacing has picked up slightly, it's still a bit slow; it seems clear now that the writers are building up to quite a climax in this ever growing and ever complex plot arc.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x20 - The Changing Face of Evil**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-4-28

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew's relief at Worf and Ezri's safe return is tempered by reports that the Breen have attacked Starfleet Headquarters on Earth.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to Weyoun, the climate on the Breen homeworld is quite comfortable, which calls into question why they wear the refrigeration suits.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the destroyed Starfleet Headquarters.
- Bashir and O'Brien playing with an Alamo model.
- Worf making fun of Bashir: "He gets excited playing with toys!"
- Ezri: "You're a good friend, Worf." Worf: "I know."
- Worf criticizing O'Brien's and Bashir's Alamo strategy despite having criticized them for "playing with toys." ;)
- The Defiant prepping for battle.
- The Dominion with the Breen's help destroying the Defiant and winning the battle.
- Damar's resistance speech.
- Weyoun: "I could be the last Weyoun. That's why he picked that target."
- Morn Appearances; 1. Not shown, but is mentioned to have won the betting pool predicting when Worf and Ezri would return.

**Comments:**

Wow. The first attack on Earth in a very long time, another spectacular space battle, the destruction of the Defiant, and the Cardassians are rebelling against the Dominion. This arc is really starting to heat up! Kai Winn has finally discovered she's been working with Dukat all this time, curiously she seems willing to accept that, she has even committed murder to cover up her alliance with him. The Breen energy dampening weapon is amazingly powerful, the Defiant is a tough ship to destroy, I would imagine the Federation, Klingons, and Romulans lost a great deal of ships in that battle, a devastating blow to be sure. This episode was a real thriller.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x21 - When It Rains...**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-5-5

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Kai Winn discovers how to unleash evil, while Damar's rebel movement gains ground.*

**Problems:**

None



**Factoids:**

- 311 ships lost power in the last episode's battle, presumably all destroyed.
- The Romulan fleet commander says that 1500 Klingon ships fighting the Dominion alone are outnumbered 20 to 1. This means the combined Dominion, Cardassian, and Breen fleet must be comprised of 30,000 ships!
- Garak's 34th episode.
- Odo became infected on Stardate 49419. This places the infection date to be somewhere around when he visited Earth. He would have infected the founders when he linked with them in the season finale, when they turned him into a human.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Sisko asking Kira to go behind enemy lines and teach a bunch of Cardassians how to be resistance fighters. Ah the irony.
- Bashir asking Odo for a "cup of goo."
- Bashir jumping to conclusions about Ezri's relationship with Worf, then discovering Odo has the disease the founders have.
- Gowron assuming command of the Klingon fleet, much to Martok's discontent.
- Bashir getting the runaround trying to get Odo's medical scan from Starfleet headquarters.
- Kira, Odo, and Garak arriving at the headquarters for the Cardassian resistance and offering advice.
- Bashir discovering that he was sent a fake medical file of Odo, after Sisko used his intelligence clearance to get him the file he was previously denied.
- Bashir discovering that Section 31 infected Odo with the virus so that he would pass it onto the founders and infect them too.

**Comments:**

So Odo has had the founders' disease for a while. He must have infected Laas when he linked with him. Well. Poor Laas. So much for him and the new great link he wanted to form! This episode is another transitional episode in the long arc that's been developing. We get to see Kira, Odo, and Garak begin assist the Cardassian rebellion. Some of the Cardassians, as predicted, hate their new allies. Gowron assumes direct control over the Klingon fleet and begins making tactical errors, jeopardizing the entire war, Winn and Dukat are still attempting to free the Pah-wraiths, and Bashir is unable to realize Ezri's feelings for him because he's too busy dealing with Odo's infection. The complex story moves along nicely; there's nothing spectacular about this episode, though nothing wrong with it either. Pretty average stuff. But as I said before, this arc is setting up for a huge climax, and I'm sure Odo's illness will play a major role.

**Star Trek DS9 - 7x22 - Tacking Into the Wind**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-5-12

**My Rating**

**- 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Bashir works on a cure for Odo's debilitating illness, while Martok assumes power following the death of Gowron.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Garak's 35th episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kira, Garak, et al analyzing the aftermath of the sabotage of a Jem'Hadar ship.
- Garak stumbling on a deteriorating Odo.
- Female shapeshifter: "If our cloning facilities were operational, I would eliminate this Weyoun immediately."
- Sisko ordering Worf to do something about Gowron squandering resources over his petty political vendetta.
- Rusot provoking Kira again.
- Damar: "What kind of state tolerates the murder of innocent women and children? What kind of people give those orders?" Kira: "Yeah, Damar, what kind of people give those orders?" A nice reference to Ziyal's death.
- Worf: "You are still a member of the house of Martok." Ezri: "This is the first that I've heard of it."
- Worf: "The general and I talked about it weeks ago. He likes you and considers you an honorable

woman. A worthy successor to Jadzia. And so do I." Ezri: "That is very sweet of him." Worf: "Sweet?" Ezri, realizing her faux pas: "Not a very Klingon word, is it?" Worf shakes his head and says: "No." Ezri: "It's very... honorable." Worf: "Better, albeit a little obvious."

- Worf regarding the Gowron situation: "Tell me what you think." Ezri: "Okay, but I'm not sure you're going to like it." Worf: "Tell me." Ezri: "I think the situation with Gowron is a symptom of a bigger problem. The Klingon Empire is dying. And I think it deserves to die." Worf: "You were right. I do not like it." Ezri: "Don't get me wrong. I've very touched that you still consider me to be a member of the house of Martok. But I tend to look at the empire with a little more skepticism than Curzon or Jadzia did. I see a society that is in deep denial about itself. We're talking about a warrior culture that prides itself on maintaining centuries old traditions of honor and integrity but in reality is willing accept corruption at the highest levels." Worf: "You are overstating your case." Ezri: "Am I? Who was the last leader of the high council that you respected? Has there even been one? And how many times have you had to cover up the crimes of Klingon leaders because you were told it was for the good of the empire? I know this sounds harsh but the truth is you have been willing to accept a government that you know is corrupt. Gowron's just the latest example. Worf, you are the most honorable and decent man that I have ever met. And if you're willing to tolerate men like Gowron, then what hope is there for the empire?"
- Kira, Odo, Garak, Damar, and Rusot arriving at the Cardassian shipyards.
- Luaran: "What's this?" Garak: "We have a prisoner." Luaran: "I can see that. Why are you bringing her to me?"
- Odo posing as the female shapeshifter.
- Garak killing the entire bridge crew of the Jem'Hadar ship.
- Worf standing up to Gowron.
- Worf killing Gowron.
- Worf: "Kahless said, great men do not seek power. They have power thrust upon them."
- Worf declaring Martok the leader of the Klingon Empire.
- Damar killing Rusot.
- Kira, Odo, Damar, and Garak stealing a Jem'Hadar ship, equipped with the Breen weapon.

#### Comments:

Some more big events. Odo's disease is killing him faster now that he's been changing shape all the time, Worf kills Gowron and declares Martok the new leader of the Klingon Empire, and Damar kills one of his best friends, Rusot, to prove to Kira his newfound devotion to defeating the Dominion, changing his ways, and changing the ways of Cardassia is sincere. I continue to be extremely impressed with the changes in Damar's character. I was also impressed with Worf's decision to kill Gowron. It's remarkable to note how Sisko told Worf to stop at nothing to eliminate Gowron's threat, similar the devotion he expressed to Garak regarding getting the Romulans in on the war in DS9: In The Pale Moonlight. I also enjoyed Ezri's opinions on the Klingon Empire. I think it really opened up Worf's eyes, and the eyes of many viewers too! Overall, another highly exciting installment of the current arc.



#### **Star Trek DS9 - 7x23 - Extreme Measures** Originally Aired: 1999-5-19

**My Rating**  
- 6

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Bashir gets inside the mind of Section 31's Sloan in an attempt to find a cure for the Founder's disease.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Garak's 36th episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Julian and O'Brien telling Sisko of their plan for a cure.
- Bashir capturing Sloan.
- Sloan telling Bashir a garbled sequence for the cure.
- The scene of friendship and camaraderie after Bashir and O'Brien got shot in Sloan's mind.
- Sloan enticing Julian at the end.
- Bashir, regarding the bottle of the "good stuff": "This is older than I am!" O'Brien: "What? I'm drinking with a child!"

### Comments:

Another illusions plot and the first bit of real filler in a while. The whole Section 31 attempting to commit genocide on the founders thing is the best use of Section 31 ever done though, and the plot of this episode, while a bit slow, is enticing. We get great character development for Bashir and O'Brien and the way Sloan met his death is just the kind of thing we've come to expect from Section 31. Bashir manages to cure Odo, but if it weren't for O'Brien, Bashir would have fallen for Sloan's trap and died with him. So in the end, it's O'Brien's friendship with Julian that saves his life and in a way this entire episode celebrates their friendship over the course of DS9's run. So ultimately, it's hard to rate and review this episode. It lacks the expected Dominion war plot, aside from the necessary curing of Odo, but as a substitute it offers something very touching.



### Star Trek DS9 - 7x24 - The Dogs of War

Originally Aired: 1999-5-26

My Rating

- 9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Bashir and Ezri's feelings for each other increase, as do the consequences of the Dominion war.*

### Problems:

- Weyoun claims that "the Dominion has never surrendered in battle since its founding 10,000 years ago." But in DS9: To the Death, Weyoun said: "The Dominion has endured for 2000 years and will continue to endure long after the Federation has crumbled into dust." These statements would seem to contradict each other.

### Factoids:

- The USS Sao Paulo: NCC 75633, named for the people of Brazil. The dedication plaque had the names of various people involved in the development of DS9, as well as the creation of Star Trek, including Gene Roddenberry's name.
- Garak's 37th episode.
- Jeffrey Combs plays two characters in this episode. Both Weyoun and Brunt.
- Mila's second appearance.
- The footage of the Dominion eliminating rebel bases in Weyoun's address to the Cardassian people were \*all\* actually just recycled visual effects scenes taken from earlier in the show.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Sisko getting another Defiant class starship.
- Bashir regarding the Sao Paulo: "I hate the carpet."
- Admiral Ross pointing out the special dispensation from the chief of Starfleet operations to change the name of USS Sao Paulo to USS Defiant.
- The commandeered Jem'Hadar ship being destroyed.
- Bashir informing Odo that he infected the founders.
- Zek's conversation with Quark, with the nicely timed distortions. ;)
- Weyoun's address to the people of Cardassia announcing that the rebellion has been completely crushed.
- Quark's reaction to the socialist programs being introduced on Ferenginar. My favorite of his quotes while he complained: "What's the point of being in business if you can't corner the market and gouge your customers?"
- Quark: "The line has to be drawn here! This far and no further!" Nice reference to Star Trek VIII: First Contact.
- Ezri and Bashir finally falling for one another.
- Zek declaring Rom the new Grand Nagus.
- Cassidy declaring she's pregnant.
- Morn Appearances; 1. At the bar when Brunt arrives. 2. Is present when Zek and Ishka arrive at the bar to declare Rom the Grand Nagus.

### Comments:

And so the series begins to wrap up. Loose threads are being tied up left and right. Sisko got a new Defiant, Odo is fully cured, Zek is stepping down as Nagus, Rom is to become the new Grand Nagus, Damar is inciting revolution among the common people of Cardassia, Ferenginar is becoming more socialist, more like a Federation world, Ezri and Bashir have finally gotten together, Cassidy is pregnant, and the Allies are about to mount their D-Day invasion. This episode was both great fun to watch because of the unusually large set of guest characters and running plot threads, but at the same time was obviously setting up for a real thriller of a finale. Though one wonders

how long this new Ferengi government will last. Perhaps "Ferengi civil war" will be the title of the next series. Quark mounts a strike against the evil Communist Grand Nagus Rom! The line must be drawn here! This far, no further! ;)



---

**Star Trek DS9 - 7x25 - What You Leave Behind, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-6-2

**My  
Rating -  
10**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*As Cardassians revolt against the Dominion, the Federation and its allies start to get an upper hand in the war. Meanwhile evil brews from another front.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Garak's 38th episode.
- Mila's third appearance.
- The plaque on the Sao Paulo's wall has been changed to reflect the ship's name change to the Defiant. The physical markings on the ship were also changed back as well as the registry.
- Some of the battle footage used in this episode was taken from previous battles. A few ship internal scenes were even taken from the destruction of the Duras sisters' ship in Star Trek VII: Generations.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the massive fleet mounting to attack Cardassia.
- Kira in a Breen refrigeration suit.
- Worf regarding Ezri's relationship with Bashir: "I am happy for you." Ezri: "That's a relief." Worf: "But, I am going to kill him." Ezri: "You're kidding, right?" Worf: "And Jadzia said I did not have a sense of humor."
- Quark realizing Vic Fontaine cheated when they played Go Fish.
- Weyoun announcing that Lacarian city on Cardassia has been leveled in response to the terrorist attacks, killing two million people.
- The beginning of the battle.
- Mila's sarcastic(?) crush on Damar.
- Mila's death. Poor woman. She didn't deserve that.
- O'Brien telling Julian that he's leaving DS9 and moving back to Earth.
- The Cardassian fleet joining the fight against the Dominion.
- Female shapeshifter: "I want the Cardassians exterminated." Weyoun: "Which ones?" Female shapeshifter: "All of them. The entire population."
- Garak: "My Cardassia is gone." Kira: "Then fight for a new Cardassia." Garak: "I have an even better reason, commander. Revenge." Kira: "That works too."
- The sight of the Dominion defense perimeter in orbit of Cardassia Prime.

**Comments:**

Here we go, the final battle. The fighting displayed its usual awesomeness, and we got a few new plot twists as well. In response to the terrorism committed by Kira, Garak, and Damar, the female shapeshifter has begun leveling Cardassian cities. In response to the destruction of Cardassian cities, the Cardassian fleet has switched sides and has begun fighting for the Federation. And as a result of these events, the allied fleet has driven the Dominion all the way back to Cardassia Prime. Seeing as how the planet is surrounded and the population of the planet is revolting, looks like the Dominion's gonna lose. On other fronts, we get an update as to what Winn and Dukat are doing after one episode of silence. We finally get to see the fire caves, which is cool. The Federation and its allies are about to fight a major battle and it looks as though that Prophets and the Pah-wraiths are about to fight one too.



**Star Trek DS9 - 7x26 - What You Leave Behind, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-6-2

**My Rating -  
10**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The confrontation with the Dominion comes to a climax, as does Sisko's fate.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of DS9 Award".
- Garak's 39th episode.
- Well in excess of 800 million were killed on Cardassia Prime during the founder's genocidal campaign.
- One of the punches Sisko throws at Dukat actually landed. Marc Alaimo ended up going to the hospital still in full Cardassian make up to be treated.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Female shapeshifter: "My loyal Weyoun. The only solid I have ever trusted."
- Damar and his group charging into the Cardassian Central Command building.
- Garak murdering Weyoun.
- Winn poisoning Dukat.
- Seeing Cardassia Prime completely destroyed in an external shot.
- Odo meeting with the female shapeshifter.
- Odo linking with the female shapeshifter, curing her, and making her finally understand the solids the way Odo does.
- Martok: "This is a moment worth savoring. To victory! Hard fought and well earned." Martok kept the promise he made at this time last year. Martok, Sisko, and Ross shared blood wine on Cardassia Prime.
- Martok, regarding the dead Cardassians: "Bajorans would call this poetic justice."
- Bashir and Garak discussing the aftermath of the war for Cardassia.
- The female shapeshifter officially surrendering aboard DS9.
- Ross: "Today the guns are silent. The great tragedy has ended. We have known the bitterness of defeat and the exhortation of triumph. From both we have learned there can be no going back. We must move forward to preserve in peace what we've won in war."
- Worf becoming Federation ambassador to the Klingon Empire.
- Sisko confronting Dukat.
- Sisko to Dukat: "First the Dominion, now the Pah-wraith. You have a talent for picking the losing sides!"
- Dukat killing Kai Winn.
- Sisko plunging himself and Dukat into the Pah-wraith's fire.
- Sisko's meeting with Cassidy in the Celestial Temple, declaring that his life isn't linear, that he could be back at any time, future or past, and that he *\*will\** be back, for the prophets still have much for him to do.
- Chief O'Brien finding the little toy soldier he thought Julian lost.
- The flashbacks.
- Quark's last scene with Odo.
- Odo curing his people and rejoining the Great Link.
- Lieutenant Nog. Cool!
- Kira examining Sisko's baseball. He left it... he'll be back...
- Quark, after being accosted by Kira for setting up gambling pools on who's going to be the next Kai: "The more things change, the more they stay the same." These were the last words spoken on DS9.
- Jake and Kira observing the wormhole as the camera zooms away from the station...
- Morn Appearances; 1. Is shown during the flashback to DS9: Badda-Bing Badda-Bang. 2. Sells Morn a compound that's "guaranteed to grow hair within a week." 3. Quark's last line, the final words spoken on DS9, were addressed to Morn.

**Comments:**

Even when the founder is captured, the war is still not over, for the Jem'Hadar and the Breen will fight to the last man. She was so bitter, she was willing to let the war drag on until every one of her soldiers were killed before she surrendered. But Odo, in his everlasting forgiveness for his people, was able to finally make the female shapeshifter understand solids as he does when he linked with her and cured her. And so ends the Dominion war. The war was wrapped up early on, which I liked. It gave the episode time to wrap up the Prophets vs. Pah-wraith conflict that's been building as well; Dukat and Sisko duke it out one last time. As a result, Dukat burns in "hell" with the Pah-wraiths for eternity and Sisko is elevated to "heaven" in the Celestial Temple. I like how the writers left the "fate" of his character relatively open ended. He may, no, he *\*will\** return! Worf leaves the station too, going to the Klingon Empire to spend some time with Martok as the

Federation ambassador to Kronos. And O'Brien leaves as well, returning to Earth to become a professor at Starfleet academy, I'm sure much to Keiko's delight. She never liked DS9. The finale seems to capture everything that made DS9 so great over the years. The attention to detail in the various send offs for the characters was great; I must say I truly feel more satisfied with this finale than I have with any other before. Even if we never see a DS9 movie, or more episodes depicting the station, I'll be happy with how the show ended. This episode gives us real closure for the first time ever in Star Trek. And so ends Star Trek Deep Space Nine, which is in my opinion the greatest Star Trek series ever done.

---

**STAR TREK**

**VOYAGER**



---

### Star Trek Voy - 1x01 - Caretaker, Part I

My Rating - 8

Originally Aired: 1995-1-16

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*The crew of the U.S.S. Voyager is taken far from home.*

#### Problems:

- Tom Paris is an extremely similar character to Nicholas Locarno featured in TNG: The First Duty. They're played by the same actor and they have nearly identical storylines. Why didn't they just reuse the character? Oh, wait, I get it, because Tom Paris sounds cooler than Nicholas Locarno...
- Why did Janeway's first officer hold the rank of Lt. Commander? That must be why he died. ;)

#### Factoids:

- The uniforms the crew of Voyager wear are consistent with the "new style" DS9 uniforms. Interestingly, these uniforms will never change throughout the course of the show, even though DS9's get upgraded.
- Voyager is an intrepid class starship. It has a sustainable cruise velocity of warp 9.975. There are 15 decks, a crew compliment of 141, and the ship features bio-neural circuitry.
- This episode marks Quark as the first character to have appeared in all of the three series which run concurrently.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Chakotay Torres and Tuvok in the Maquis ship in the opening scene.
- Voyager docked at DS9.
- Quark's scene trying to sell Harry Kim worthless junk. I love Harry's faux pas.
- Janeway: "Mr. Kim. At ease before you sprain something."
- The ship being thrust into the Delta quadrant.
- The doctor's introduction.
- Caretaker: "Oh! Well aren't you contentious for a minor bipedal species!"
- Torres to Kim: "I don't find this at all amusing, Starfleet."
- The final scene: Janeway and Tuvok in the ready room.
- Morn appearances; 1. Quark's bar during the scene where Quark tries to sell worthless junk to Harry Kim. Quark says that he acquired his very strange crystals from a creature called "Morn". ;)

#### Comments:

This is probably the best of all the pilot episodes. Not only does it give a worthy introduction to every character, but it's a highly exciting episode. One thing that sets this pilot apart from the others is that the crew is thrust directly into some major action right at the beginning. Several high ranking officers are killed right at the beginning too, such as the first officer, the chief engineer, and the doctor. That's a considerable loss for any Starship. Imagine what Picard would do if he lost Riker, Geordi, and Beverly all at once! Another interesting thing, so far every Star Trek pilot episode has involved superior alien beings putting humans through some kind of test. First Captain Pike in TOS: The Cage being tested by the illusion aliens, then Picard in TNG: Encounter at Farpoint being tested by Q, then Sisko in DS9: Emissary being tested by the Prophets, and now the crew of Voyager, specifically Kim and Torres being tested by the Caretaker. A great first part to a two parter and a great pilot episode.



### Star Trek Voy - 1x02 - Caretaker, Part II

My Rating - 8

Originally Aired: 1995-1-16

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*The crew races to save Torres and Kim.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Voyager's transporter system seems to be more advanced than that employed by TNG, as noted by the new visual effect.
- This episode establishes that the Ocampa live only nine years.



- Janeway claims it would take 75 years to reach Earth from their current position. An accurate approximation.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Neelix' introduction.
- Neelix' reaction to the transporter.
- Tuvok suggesting to Neelix that he take a bath.
- Neelix indulging himself in his quarters.
- Neelix annoying Tuvok.
- Neelix' successful manipulation of the events to save Kes.
- Janeway pulling the plug on the doctor.
- Tuvok discovering that the caretaker is dying.
- Paris saving Chakotay.
- The huge Kazon ship.
- Chakotay: "Tell one of your crackerjack Starfleet transporter chiefs to keep a lock on me!"
- Chakotay crashing his ship into the huge Kazon vessel.
- The Kazon ship crashing into the array.
- The Caretaker's final words.
- Janeway destroying the array.

#### **Comments:**

Following in the tradition of the first part, Neelix and Kes are introduced very nicely in this episode. I like how Chakotay and Tom have settled their differences in this episode. When Tom saves Chakotay's life and asks about the Native American tradition which would dictate Chakotay's life belonging to Tom, Chakotay says "wrong tribe." But at the end of the episode, Janeway tells Tom that Chakotay mentioned something to her about his life belonging to Tom and that he'd be responsible for Tom's safety. He lied! Very funny. The Caretaker's complete motives are finally revealed in this episode, which brings up the moral dilemma regarding whether to use the array to get home or to destroy it to protect the Ocampa. Many fans call Janeway stupid for deciding to stay in the Delta Quadrant to protect the Ocampa, even Tuvok questions the decision in this episode, as does Torres. Janeway herself will question it a few times later in the series. Personally, I wish they had handled the decision in this episode a little differently. Think about it. The Kazon are all over that array like flies on garbage and Tuvok said it would take hours to configure it to send them back. Do you really think the Kazon are going to just sit there while Janeway and Tuvok are tinkering with the array for two hours? No, I don't think so. And for this reason, I say Janeway was forced into her decision, despite the fact that it seems she would have anyway. A fantastic pilot, probably the best pilot episode of any of the series.



#### **Star Trek Voy - 1x03 - Parallax**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-1-23

**My Rating - 5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Tensions rise between the merged Starfleet and Maquis crews.*

#### **Problems:**

- The science regarding the black hole in this episode is a bit absurd. An event horizon is not some kind of barrier around a black hole. It is the dividing line drawn around the black hole at the point where the escape velocity exceeds the speed of light. Well, warp drive lets ships very easily exceed the speed of light. So the event horizon of a black hole is a completely worthless designation in Star Trek as a ship could easily escape its grasp.

#### **Factoids:**

- Tom calls Voyager "the Voyager" in this episode. This is a trend that will soon disappear. I guess people just got tired of hearing "The shipname." "The Voyager" becomes "Voyager". And eventually, "the Enterprise" becomes just "Enterprise."

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The first scene, with Carey bemoaning about Torres having broken his nose.
- Torres throwing something at Chakotay as he enters.
- Chakotay and Torres arguing.
- Janeway's reaction to Chakotay suggesting Torres as the new Chief Engineer.
- Neelix referring to the doctor as an "electronic man", announcing as he speaks it.

- The captain designating Tom a field medic, much to his displeasure.
- Chakotay arguing with Janeway about the Maquis.
- The doctor bemoaning about his new job.
- Kes' first scene with the doctor.
- The shrinking doctor calling Janeway.
- Tuvok: "I will never cease to be amazed by the human capacity for hyperbole."
- The doctor's grudging report.
- Janeway and Torres finally beginning to hit it off and Carey making an ass of himself at the briefing.
- Tom: "Wait a minute, wait, wait a minute. Let me get this straight. We were cruising along at warp seven, then we pick up a distress call and moved in to investigate. But now, you're saying that the other ship is just a reflection of us and that the distress call is actually just the captain's opening hail. But we picked up the distress call before she sent the hail. How could he have been seeing a reflection of something we haven't even done yet? Am I making an sense here?" Janeway: "No. But that's okay. One of the more difficult concepts to grasp in temporal mechanics is that sometimes effect can precede cause. A reaction can be observed before the action which initiated it."
- Torres to Janeway regarding the decision to pick the real ship: "If you're wrong, we're going to have a long time to debate it."
- Carey and Torres making up.
- The shrunken doctor.

#### Comments:

This episode was ill constructed, but still highly entertaining. The primary plot about the black hole ended up becoming secondary to the Federation vs. Maquis conflict. This is mostly a good thing, frankly the Federation vs. Maquis conflict is far more interesting anyway. The major problem with the episode is that the science surrounding this black hole is utter nonsense, among other annoying bits of technobabble. See the problems section regarding the black hole. Beyond that, it's a great episode. I loved seeing the doctor get more and more annoyed with being ignored, and I enjoyed seeing Torres and Janeway beginning to hit it off. The final scenes where Torres and Carey make up are gratifying as well. The whole episode just came off "correctly" with regards to the Federation and Maquis people integrating. Of course we will be seeing more conflict, but I'm glad that they're wrapping most of it up right away instead of letting it dominate the stories. That said, if the science were better in this episode, I'd have given it a much higher rating.



#### Star Trek Voy - 1x04 - Time and Again

Originally Aired: 1995-1-30

My Rating - 6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Paris and Janeway are sent back in time.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- This is the first episode to mention the Delaney sister of Stellar Cartography.
- According to Tuvok, in 2268 an experiment with polaric energy almost destroyed a Romulan colony. The technology was later outlawed.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Paris having shifted through time briefly.
- Janeway and Paris shifting back in time just as she orders the beam up.
- The Doctor bemoaning about Kes' brain not being on file, not realizing the Federation has had no contact with her species.
- The Doctor, after hearing about the captain being missing: "Seems I've found myself on the voyage of the damned."
- Tom scaring away the kid.
- The doomed civilization foolishly suspecting Tom and Janeway as spies.
- Janeway breaking the temporal prime directive.
- Janeway telling the guard she's a hostage. She's got some balls!
- Janeway "fixing and resetting" time.

### Comments:

I don't think it was a very good idea to show two predestination time travel stories back to back, especially this early in the series. Another annoying detail was that the doomed civilization in this episode looked \*gasp\* exactly like humans! You'd figure the writers would be able to sort out these kinds of cliches by now, what with three television series behind them and two in progress. Guess not. That said, this "version" of the predestination plot is far more intelligently constructed. I like how Voyager was in fact the cause of the explosion and how Janeway realizes this and breaks the cycle. As a result, nothing in this episode actually happens. In the ending, Kes retains a memory of the events. Her intuitions make her kind of a combination of TNG's Troi and Guinan, which is both amusing and kind of cool. Overall, a decent episode, I largely forgive the reset button.



### Star Trek Voy - 1x05 - Phage Originally Aired: 1995-2-6

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*An alien race harvests Neelix's lungs.*

### Problems:

None

### Factoids:

- This episode is the first to feature the Vidiians.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Neelix having taken over Janeway's private dining room and turning it into a galley.
- Neelix attacked by the Vidiiian.
- The Doctor coming up with the idea of holographic lungs for Neelix.
- The Doctor demonstrating how real holograms can be by slapping Paris. :)
- The Doctor: "I'm a doctor, Mr. Neelix, not a decorator." Count 11 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Tuvok: "Captain, may I suggest you consider carefully what you are about to do?" Janeway: "How do you know what I'm about to do?" Tuvok: "I could describe to you in detail the psychological observations I've made about you over the past four years which lead me to conclude you're about to take this ship inside the asteroid. But suffice it to say, I know you quite well." Janeway: "One of these days I'm gonna surprise you Tuvok. But not today."
- Tuvok's phaser locator beam trick.
- The Vidiians insulting the Doctor's "primitive" medical knowledge.

### Comments:

The first Vidiiian episode is certainly interesting. It's easy to develop a certain sympathy for them; it's not their fault what's happening to them, and what else are they supposed to do to survive? This makes the episode far more serious than the similar one TOS: Spock's Brain, and much more enjoyable. Janeway's evaluation of her moral options regarding the Vidiians was quite correct and very well executed. And I like how the Vidiians were willing to help, to try and demonstrate in some small way their good faith. A pleasing episode.



### Star Trek Voy - 1x06 - The Cloud Originally Aired: 1995-2-13

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager encounters a living nebula.*

### Problems:

- This episode contributes heavily to the Voyager Torpedo Problem. Chakotay says Voyager has 38 torpedos available and Janeway claims they have no way to replace them after they're gone. This can't be true, or at least it doesn't remain true for long. Voyager will use far more than 38 photon torpedos in the course of its journey. We're forced to assume they find some way to manufacture them. Which, if you ask me, isn't really all that far fetched. It would have been nice if they told us at some point further down in the series though that they were doing this. One throw away line would have sufficed.

- What the hell are they doing running the holodeck when they don't even have enough energy to replicate coffee?
- When Paris ranks up the balls in his pool table, they're very much out of order. When he goes to break, all the balls are now in order. Did the holodeck reorder them for him?

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to mention Dr. Louis Zimmerman, the creator of the EMH, and that he modeled the EMH's appearance after himself.
- At 7 AU, the space nebula creature is the largest living thing every shown on Star Trek.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway's opening log entry.
- Janeway: "There's coffee in that nebula!"
- Neelix criticizing Janeway's exploratory nature.
- The Doctor's appearance, startling Torres. I like how the Doctor bemoans about never being summoned for an important reason.
- The Doctor: "A nebula? What were we doing in a nebula? No wait, don't tell me. We were 'investigating.' That's all we do around here. Why pretend we're going home at all, all we're going to do is 'investigate' every cubic millimeter of this quadrant, aren't we?"
- Janeway's vision quest.
- Torres tried to kill her animal guide. Why does that not surprise me? :)
- Janeway muting the doctor and the doctor waving his hands across the viewscreen later to get attention. Hilarious!
- Janeway's handling of Neelix' objections.
- Voyager behind tossed about by the nebula creature.
- The Doctor's suture suggestion.
- Paris' holodeck characters offending the women.

**Comments:**

This episode has a particular charm to it. There are many little details which illustrate how the crew is (or isn't) adapting to their new journey, and despite being low on resources, the episode is true to the spirit of Star Trek, for they have accidentally injured a space born alien and now they must do their moral duty and repair it. Beyond this there's not much particularly interesting about the episode, we've seen space born creatures before, though perhaps not as large, and perhaps not as well rendered in the VFX department, from strictly a conceptual standpoint the episode offers very little new material. A decent offering though.



**Star Trek Voy - 1x07 - Eye of the Needle**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-2-20

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager discovers a deep space wormhole.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Torres is half human half Klingon. This was actually fairly obvious since the first episode, but it was never mentioned on screen until now.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Crewman addressing Kes with his question: "Can this guy do everything a real doctor can do?"
- The Doctor referring to himself in the third person: "Yes, he can."
- Kes concerned with how rudely the doctor is being treated.
- The Doctor lamenting about people shutting him off, or forgetting to be turned off.
- Janeway's private chat with the Romulan, trying to convince him she is who she says she is.
- Torres discovering that it may be possible to beam through the wormhole.
- The Doctor discovering Kes' photographic memory.
- Voyager beaming the Romulan captain into the Delta Quadrant.
- Tuvok discovering that the wormhole leads to the Alpha Quadrant, yes, but twenty yeas in the past.
- Tuvok revealing that he checked the history and that the Romulan captain died before he could

have sent the crew's messages.

- The Doctor finally getting some respect.
- The Doctor: "I would like a name." He never gets one though...

#### Comments:

Voyager is continuing in its tradition of jumping the gun. A story about getting home was far too premature. They should have saved this up for late in the season, possibly even the finale! The reason is that the audience was 100% certain this wormhole would NOT lead to the safe arrival home of our characters. It's just too early! Even if you don't make this assumption from the beginning, it becomes more and more clear that the wormhole is a lost cause. First it's too small, then there's Romulans on the other side, then they want to beam through the wormhole? Abandon Voyager? Sorry. Didn't have me fooled for a minute. That said, it's still a good episode and I enjoyed watching it, even if it was predictable and premature. One high point is how the doctor is finally getting some respect. I like how it took a while for him to get it though. And it's nice that it took an outsider, Kes, to get everyone to realize that the Doctor and Data from TNG are the same concept. Artificial life is no less life, and the Doctor, just like Data, is a remarkable creation by man which should be respected as a person, not as a slave. A very good episode.



---

#### **Star Trek Voy - 1x08 - Ex Post Facto**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-2-27

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Paris is convicted of murder.*

#### Problems:

- The judicial system of our aliens of the week is a little strange. Seems to me, forcing someone to relive their victim's death once every 14 hours will just further desensitize a murderer, making him more dangerous, rather than discourage further crime.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The Doctor discussing the choosing of his name with Kes. One of the names the Doctor was considering was Spock. :)
- Paris: "Smoking is a bad habit. My species gave it up centuries ago when we finally got it into our heads it was killing us." Lidell: "You must be a very superior species." Paris: "That's not what I meant." Lidell: "Maybe I kill myself slowly because I don't have the courage to do it quickly."
- Chakotay's "play dead" trick.
- Neelix, regarding Tuvok's proposition of mind melding with Paris: "A, a what? What, what did he say? A mind what?"
- The Doctor's objections to Tuvok's mind meld idea. The Doctor: "Believe it or not, I know more about mind melds than you do!"
- Paris regarding taking another man's woman: "Some day it will be you Harry. You'll meet her and you'll know it's wrong from the first moment you see her. And you'll know there's nothing you can do about it."
- Tuvok uncovering the Numiri plot.
- Tom's way of expressing his gratitude to Tuvok.

#### Comments:

This episode uses the classic "flashback" story template. Meaning, we see the effects of the story (Paris' sentence) before the cause (the story of the murder). Fortunately, it doesn't dominate the story, like certain other episodes do. So only parts of the story are wasted, which is mostly the beginning. So the episode gets off to a bad start, but eventually becomes interesting when Tuvok begins his criminal investigation. Tuvok is my favorite character on Voyager, and it's nice to see him shine here. As nice a job as Tuvok did though, the Numiri couldn't have done a worse one. Surely there would have been easier ways to transmit intelligence info than to encode military secrets in someone's mind, set this person up for a murder conviction, and then steal the prisoner? The episode has weak points, but overall comes off as pretty solid, so I don't take off too many points.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 1x09 - Emanations**  
Originally Aired: 1995-3-13

My Rating - 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kim is held by an alien race.*

**Problems:**

- So there are class M "asteroids" orbiting a planet, with breathable atmospheres, and Earth-like gravity? What the hell are the cores of those moons made of that generates this much gravity? Black holes?

**Factoids:**

- The Federation has 246 elements on its periodic table at this time.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kim carefully handling his discussions with the aliens.

**Comments:**

An episode which deals with an alien race's religion. The religious issues are largely handled well, but personally I wish there could have been more discussion of this new element they discovered. Much of the episode is scientific nonsense once the opening scenes are out of the way. The episode starts off giving you the impression that they will explore the rings around a planet, discover a new element, and being creating new technology from it. But it quickly deteriorates into a giant cross cultural religious debate. In the end, this new elemental discovery is largely forgotten; we never hear about it again. To me, this episode is a large missed opportunity and a severe waste of time. Only Harry Kim's performance redeems the episode, as he really does do a good job.



**Star Trek Voy - 1x10 - Prime Factors**  
Originally Aired: 1995-3-20

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*An alien leader refuses to share valuable technology with Voyager.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Harry discovering that he's traveled nearly 40,000 light years using this species' transporter.
- Tuvok walking in on Torres, Carey, and Seska, only to find out that Tuvok is on their side.
- Janeway's surprise and even disgust upon learning Tuvok had betrayed her trust.
- Tuvok: "My logic was not in error, but I was."

**Comments:**

These "here's another way for Voyager to get home! Ooops, sorry!" plots do get rather tiresome, especially in the first freakin' season, and this one is a pretty bad offender. Not only do our aliens of the week look exactly like humans, but with a little more effort, Voyager may have been able to get the literature underground to send Voyager 40,000 light years closer to home instead of going through the unresponsive official channels and leaving when asked. That said, it is credible that people make mistakes. Voyager could have maneuvered their way into a better deal with the literature underground, but that's just not how it went down. A disappointing episode.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 1x11 - State of Flux**  
Originally Aired: 1995-4-10

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*There's a traitor on board Voyager.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- Chakotay is the first to taste the despicable leola root.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Neelix describing the deadly qualities of the local fruit.  
- Janeway: "How long will it take to set this up?" Torres: "We should be able to make an attempt by tomorrow." Janeway: "I want it ready by the end of the day." Torres: "No captain. When I say tomorrow, I mean tomorrow. I don't exaggerate. Tomorrow is the best I can do." Janeway: "Understood lieutenant."  
- Chakotay to Tuvok: "You were were working for her, Seska was working for them. Was anyone onboard that ship working for me?"  
- The revelation that the stolen technology was just a food replicator.  
- Chakotay and Tuvok in the end.

**Comments:**  
Seska is up to no good again, she's developing a very nice reputation for being not-so-honest, well downright naughty. The only thing I don't like about this episode is how blatantly obvious it was that Seska was guilty and not Carey due to the nice bit of foreshadowing in both this episode and the previous one. Granted, I wouldn't trade the foreshadowing for anything, I rather liked it. But it contributes negatively to the mystery plot in this episode. That said, Seska did a pretty damn good job of "pulling the wool" over everyone's eyes. Even by the end of the episode, there remains still some doubt in your mind that she's really a spy because she's a damn good liar. I wonder if she knew Garak? ;)



**Star Trek Voy - 1x12 - Heroes and Demons**  
Originally Aired: 1995-4-24

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Doctor goes on a holodeck away mission.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- The Doctor chose a name in this episode, Schweitzer. This may be a reference to Albert Schweitzer. But he decided at the very end not to go through with this name because it would be too painful.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Chakotay: "Every culture has its demons. They embody the darkest emotions of its people. Giving them physical form in heroic literature is a way of exploring those feelings."  
- Tuvok: "There are no demons in Vulcan literature." Chakotay: "That might account for its popularity."  
- The Doctor meeting with Freya.  
- The Doctor declaring his name "Schweitzer".  
- Freya: "All hail Schweitzer!"  
- Doctor Diplomat in the end, returning Chakotay, Tuvok, and Kim to us.

**Comments:**  
Another episode where Voyager accidentally harms a sentient life form, another energy life form of

the week. Cliches notwithstanding, this is an entertaining episode. The Doctor is finally given a chance to shine beyond his medical duties. It now seems very clear that he is in fact more than just a hologram. Dr. Louis Zimmerman is to holo programming as Dr. Soong was to android construction. The Doctor is the Data of Voyager. I would have loved to have been Garrett Wang in the production of this episode. The episode was more or less all about him and he had a grand total of one scene and one line! Talk about easy money! The ending of this episode is kind of sad, the Doctor gives up the name he chose, (Albert?) Schweitzer, because he lost a holographic loved one. Maybe a little trite, but I found it rather convincing. Poor doctor!



---

**Star Trek Voy - 1x13 - Cathexis**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-5-1

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An encounter with a nebula leaves Chakotay brain-dead.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Harry Kim's mind wandering, and everyone suspecting he's possessed.
- The Doctor briefly describing his miracle cure.

**Comments:**

Energy life form of the week attempts to take over the ship as food. Disembodied non-corporeal Chakotay saves the day. There's really not much else to this episode except for an introduction to Janeway's new holonovel, which serves absolutely no purpose for the plot in this episode seeing as how she's interrupted and she does not return to it. We will see it again though in future episodes. What we have here is an episode which utterly fails to make a point. There's really nothing wrong with the episode if you enjoy relative pointlessness. The original series did stories like this to death and I'm not eager to revisit them on Voyager.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 1x14 - Faces**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-5-8

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Torres is split into two beings.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A fully Klingon Torres.
- The Vidiian scientist with Durst's face.
- Klingon and human Torres meeting each other.

**Comments:**

A fantastic episode for Torres. Kind of like an extreme version of TOS: The Enemy Within, Torres' Klingon and human halves are at war with one another. We get to peek into her psyche and learn about her inner struggle. And then there's the antagonist of this episode. The Vidiian scientist's goals, to cure the phage, were certainly noble, but he had a wonderful tortured, downright sadistic quality to his character. I found it interesting that at first both human and Klingon Torres hated their human half after being separated, human Torres even hated both her halves! But toward the end they began to respect each other.

---





**Star Trek Voy - 1x15 - Jetrel**  
Originally Aired: 1995-5-15

My Rating - 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Neelix confronts his painful past.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok's poor performance in the pool game with Neelix.
- Neelix describing returning to Rinax after the Metreon Cascade.
- The revelation that Jetrel is dying.
- Voyager arriving at Rinax.
- Neelix belittling himself for his failure to report for duty with the Talaxian defense forces. I like how Kes defended his decision because avoiding military service was just as dangerous as fighting; punishable by death.
- Jetrel caught in the transporter room.
- Jetrel pleading with Janeway for her to let him attempt his experiment to prove his theory.
- Janeway attempting Jetrel's plan and failing.
- Jetrel's death right after Neelix forgives him.

**Comments:**

This one is a bit controversial. The parallels between the Metreon Cascade and the Earth atomic bombing of Hiroshima and Nagasaki are rather obvious. An episode like this makes you wonder what Albert Einstein must have thought about his work in nuclear fission. Granted the two wars are quite a bit different. I'd say the atomic bombings were much less destructive and much more appropriate than the Metreon Cascade described in this episode. Because of the severity of the event and Jetrel's importance to the project, now Jetrel is attempting to repent for his sins and makes a rather desperate attempt to save some of the people he killed. I really liked Jetrel in the end, he's not just some crazy scientist, he's not just another evil villain, he's a deeply tortured scientist who wants to do some good to make up for all the evil he's done. Neelix gets an equally good showing, naturally seeing as how the episode was designed to develop his character. I like that he's no longer a plot device for comic relief, but a serious character. Neelix never joined the Talaxian defense forces because he believed fighting in the war was wrong, but he also hated Jetrel's species for invading in the first place. This is a natural bit of hypocrisy, maybe Neelix was a coward. But the punishment for refusing to fight was death anyway, and as Kes pointed out, it takes quite a bit of courage to make either choice. Neelix refused to fight even though he ran the risk of a disgraceful death penalty. In the end, Neelix' hatred for Jetrel diminishes as he realizes what Jetrel was actually trying to do, which gives the episode a very emotional ending. Jetrel's death means something at this point, it resonates with the viewer. You truly feel sorry for Jetrel, and you feel sorry for Neelix too. I wonder how much of an ass Neelix felt like for bearing so much hatred toward Jetrel for no reason. I'm sure the events of this episode were very much a lifechanging experience for Neelix. The one thing I didn't like about this episode was all the pretense. Jetrel should have been upfront with his intentions. The only reason he wasn't was to create some manufactured emotional resonance with the audience. Despite this, the episode was certainly moving. I liked it.



**Star Trek Voy - 1x16 - Learning Curve**  
Originally Aired: 1995-5-22

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Tuvok is put in charge of "boot camp" for the Maquis.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway interrupted again in the holodeck. Funny. ;)
- Another talkative Bolian. :)
- Chakotay confronting Tuvok's students. I love how Chakotay makes his point.
- The Maquis students' wargame simulation.
- Tuvok: "You're saying that the Maquis crew is rigid and inflexible, that they will never adjust to Starfleet rules?" Neelix: "No, Mr. Vulcan. I'm saying that you are rigid and inflexible. But maybe if you'd learn to bend a little, you might have better luck with your class."
- Tuvok discovering the source of the gelpack infection.
- Dalby telling his story.
- Tuvok bending the rules.

**Comments:**

The episode opens with more from Janeway's holo novel debuted to us in *Voy: Cathexis*. It is remarkable that everytime Janeway tries to enjoy herself on the holodeck, she gets interrupted. ;) The story of the gelpacks getting infected is interesting, I was kind of waiting for a story that involved the gelpacks since we first heard about them in the first episode. Unfortunately, the episode is plagued by American stereotypes, namely, that boot camp solves all problems. Drill instructor Tuvok is remarkably out of character; I refuse to believe this is how he taught at Starfleet academy. Maybe boot camp can create a nicely obedient military, but Starfleet is not a military organization. Furthermore, even if it was a military organization, Tuvok's "time honored" teaching techniques just weren't appropriate for the students of this episode, which to me seemed obvious from the very beginning. It kind of annoys me that it takes a life threatening situation before Tuvok and the Maquis can find any common ground, but I suppose it's not unrealistic.

**Star Trek Voy - 2x01 - The 37's**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-8-28

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager encounters humans abducted by aliens in 1937.*

**Problems:**

- How could there still be gas in the engine and water in the radiator of a truck which was floating in space? How could the battery still be charged?

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature the landing of a starship, if we don't count the destruction of the Enterprise D.
- Current crew count is 152.
- Mars was colonized in 2103.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A truck floating in space.
- Tuvok's reaction to Paris starting the truck.
- Voyager's landing.
- Janeway telling Earhart the history of Earth after she disappeared.
- Nobody deciding to stay behind on the planet.

**Comments:**

A decent episode, but a little annoying. Besides the technical issues which largely don't matter anyway, the premise doesn't make much sense. Why would native Delta Quadrant aliens travel to the other side of the galaxy, retrieve a rather tiny amount of slaves from Earth and only Earth, then return to the Delta Quadrant? This just seems too unlikely. Bearing that in mind, this would have made a far better TNG episode than a Voyager episode, but it manages to pull its own weight fairly well. Janeway certainly identifies with Earhart better than Picard would have, and Tuvok's reaction to Paris starting the rusted old truck was something that only would have worked with a Vulcan. ;) A decent, though flawed episode.



### **Star Trek Voy - 2x02 - Initiations**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-9-4

**My Rating - 4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Chakotay faces a Kazon boy.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Kar was played by Aron Eisenberg, who plays Nog on DS9.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chakotay's shuttle fight with Kar.
- Neelix speech about being underused.
- Chakotay's meeting with the Kazon leader and the children.
- Chakotay and Kar's escape.
- Kar killing the maje and earning his name.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is a nice exploration of the Kazon culture. They value the "earning" of their names which they do by accomplishing great feats. By killing people or dying honorably in battle. It seems obvious that the Kazon are supposed to be a less sophisticated delta quadrant version of the Klingons, which is both interesting and annoying. It is interesting in that their culture is diverse and rich, but annoying in that it is an obvious parallel to the Klingons. The highlight of the episode is Chakotay's performance. I like his moral stance on everything. "You'll see no hate in my eyes." We learn about the Trabe in this episode, the Kazon shared their homeworld with them. The Kazon were oppressed by them. There was a revolt and the Kazon conquered the Trabe. Not a particularly amazing episode, but a decent watch.



### **Star Trek Voy - 2x03 - Projections**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-9-11

**My Rating - 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Illusion and reality collide for the Doctor.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the second episode in Star Trek history to mention anything about a bathroom on a starship. The computer mentions the "sewage and waste reclamation systems are offline."
- This episode gives us more facts about Dr. Louis Zimmerman. He designed the EMH and lives at Jupiter station. Also, Dr. Zimmerman looks exactly like the EMH.
- This episode establishes that Barclay helped to design the EMH. He was in charge of testing the doctor's inter personal skills.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Barclay's appearance.
- The flashback into Voy: Caretaker.
- The Doctor deleting people, but failing to delete Janeway.
- The Doctor returning to reality, only to find out that it's another illusion.
- The Doctor confirming reality.
- The Doctor reaching his arm out of sickbay just to make sure he really was a hologram.

#### **Comments:**

This is the first of a long line of Voyager Barclay episodes, as odd as it may sound. Barclay was the best choice for this story though. For one, Barclay has struggled with holodiction, which makes this whole episode a bit ironic. Though Barclay presents a very convincing case arguing the doctor is not a hologram but a real person. Had me fooled pretty well. As such, the plot has lots of intrigue. The one flaw in the logic is Barclay's incessant cries for the doctor to destroy the ship, even though

it's clear that the holodeck safeties weren't working. Even a simulated warpcore breach would surely kill someone on the holodeck with the safeties off. So as soon as Barclay started acting like that, I knew exactly what was going to happen. The climax thus became something of an anticlimax to me. The climax retains some greatness in the end, expressing some of the doctor's hidden desires. Kes as his wife and a struggle to be a real person. Fortunately the twist at the end where the doctor returned to reality but was in fact in another illusion sparked my interest once again. It reminded me a lot of TNG: Frame of Mind in which Riker couldn't figure out what was real and what wasn't. Fortunately, this wasn't overdone and the episode ended with a particular charm. I like how the doctor had to test putting his arm outside of sickbay just to make sure he was really a hologram.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x04 - Elogium**  
**Originally Aired:** 1995-9-18

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Strange creatures accelerate Kes' reproductive process.*

**Problems:**

- So if Ocampo can only reproduce once in their lifetime, exactly how does their species survive? Think about it. It takes two people to have a baby. For any population to remain stable, one couple must have at least two children; more than two is ideal!

**Factoids:**

- This is Ensign Samantha Wildman's first episode.
- Tuvok has four children. Three sons and one daughter.
- A mention of the Breen! The Doctor mentions that the Breen are a warlike species in which pregnancy at a young age is common.
- Ensign Wildman's husband is stationed aboard DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kes eating beetles. Holy nasty.
- Kes can't stop eating. Hah.
- Tuvok: "It appears we have lost our sex appeal, captain."

**Comments:**

A sex episode! Er, well kinda. Lots of relationship stuff in this episode though. Chakotay sees people kissing in a turbolift, more of Neelix' jealousy over Tom's behavior, and of course the main plot with Kes entering puberty early, and the B plot with the space creatures trying to have sex with Voyager. The paralleling themes of the episode are skillfully woven together, but the subject matter just doesn't interest me at all. It seems to me that Chakotay was right, relationships are going to be necessary. For a 75 year trip, it's going to have to be a generational one. Since it's all so obvious, skillful or not, cramming a bunch of relationship stuff into a single episode seems overkill. Though I was pleased to see in the ending the story run full circle when Ensign Wildman proclaims her pregnancy. That was tactful and appropriate; we'll be seeing more of this later.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x05 - Non Sequitur**  
**Originally Aired:** 1995-9-25

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Harry Kim awakens on Earth.*

**Problems:**

- Paris' site to site transporter seems far too small a device for the power it contains.

**Factoids:**

- The space doors aboard the starbase in this episode are a reuse of the Dyson Sphere door from TNG: Relics.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Harry discovering who he is in this new dream world.
- Harry confronting Tom Paris in the dream world. Tom got in a fight with Quark on DS9 and was

thrown in the brig by Odo. :) Apparently now, according to Harry, Tom is a loser and a drunk.  
- Harry: "Why does everyone say relax when they're about to do something terrible?"  
- Harry discovering that he fell into an alien "timestream" and that his dream world is the real but altered world.

**Comments:**

This episode offers an interesting concept. How would you react to waking up into the life you've always wanted at the expense of your friends' lives? Well Harry immediately rejects it. I can see why. Would you be able to forget an entire year of your life and pretend to believe that something entirely different happened to you during that time? I know I couldn't. Besides idealism, this episode offers very little. It develops exactly as expected with no real plot twist. The Federation authorities are annoying in their suspicions of Harry and the entire plot is consumed with Harry's alternate life. So this episode comes off as kind of a dud.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x06 - Twisted**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-10-2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Voyager crew is lost on their own ship.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- People getting lost all over Voyager.
- The Doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a bartender!" Count 12 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Torres barging in on someone's quarters by accident.
- Chakotay debating logic with Tuvok.
- Janeway's condition. Looked like she was flying on acid. :)
- The crew being cornered by the distortions.
- The revelation that it was nothing a harmless communication method.

**Comments:**

This episode presents a pleasing but boring story. It was rather amusing to see everyone getting lost, but also rather redundant after a while. It also doesn't make much sense that a distortion would perfectly cut apart different rooms and whatnot. It's as if someone has been selectively rearranging parts of the ship. This isn't a technical problem so much as a logical problem. I wish they could have come up with better science fiction to justify this behavior. I give an extra point to this episode for the ending. It wasn't random space anomaly of the week. It wasn't a hostile alien trying to kill them. It was a peaceful and very different alien trying to communicate with Voyager. I like all this high brow idealistic stuff. To me, that's what Star Trek is all about.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x07 - Parturition**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-10-9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Neelix and Paris crash land on a toxic planet.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The wormhole imagery during Kes' piloting simulation is a reuse of the wormhole telemetry from Voy: Eye of the Needle.
- The attacking ships during Kes' piloting simulation were Jem'Hadar fighters of the Dominion.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kes' piloting simulation.
- Harry, having replicated a new clarinet, playing for Tom.
- Paris lamenting about having fallen in love with Kes
- Janeway lamenting about the Doctor's eavesdropping.
- The Doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a voyeur!" Count 13 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Neelix and Paris fighting one another then being summoned by Janeway for an away mission.
- Kes' reaction to Neelix and Paris fighting.
- The Doctor: "How delightful!" Kes: "Delightful!?" The Doctor: "You should consider it a high complement! Throughout history men have fought over the love of a woman. Why, I can quote you autopsy reports from duels as far back as 1538."
- Neelix: "You don't need to impress me with your technobabble."
- Harry counseling Kes.
- Neelix and Tom caring for the baby... thing.
- Neelix and Tom settling their differences.
- Paris: "Lock onto us Voyager. If you hear muffled screams, consider that a request for a beam out!"

#### Comments:

All I've got to say is finally. As much distaste I have for Neelix' jealousy and Tom's advances on Kes, at least we're getting some official recognition of it now and in fact a resolution and it actually does make for some decent story. I'm fond of Neelix and Paris being forced to survive together on a hostile planet in order to resolve their problems. Normally I don't like when it takes an unusual situation in order to get two people to get along, but in this case I liked it because in the end Neelix and Tom didn't only resolve their differences but they gained a deep respect for one another. The aliens of this episode were intelligently and credibly displayed. A very interesting and alien reptilian species fights to protect its young. I wish there could have been some kind of communication establishes, or at least some kind of explanation as to why the Reptiles leave their young alone on that planet. A number of rationalizations could have worked, but they give us none. Overall, a very pleasing Voyager episode.



#### Star Trek Voy - 2x08 - Persistence of Vision

Originally Aired: 1995-10-30

My Rating - 2

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*A mysterious force puts the crew in a delusional state.*

#### Problems:

- When Janeway becomes catatonic, why did Chakotay disappear behind her? He was in the turbolift too...

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Busy Janeway.
- Small doctor.
- Kes seeing things. Strange things.
- Everyone becoming catatonic.
- Kes saving the ship.
- Janeway: "Why did you do this?" Bothan: "Because I can."

#### Comments:

I like how the issue of transferring the doctor to the essential parts of the ship is revisited in the beginning. Nice to see it's taking some effort to actually implement. Sadly, not much else is interesting in this episode. I rather liked the detail concerning Janeway getting overworked and stressed out. The little doctor was amusing too. But we've seen far too many hallucination plots already. This episode is really a blatant rehash. The only thing I liked about the main plot as it developed was that Kes saved the ship. Go Kes!



**Star Trek Voy - 2x09 - Tattoo**  
Originally Aired: 1995-11-6

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Chakotay is stranded on a planet.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- Captain Sulu supported Chakotay's entrance into Starfleet.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- The Doctor listing the descriptive words for pain.  
- Chakotay and Janeway discussing the absurdity of religion.  
- The Doctor sneezing.  
- Neelix and Tuvok have something in common. They breed orchids. :)  
- The Doctor at the height of his symptoms.  
- Paris: "The ship might make it with no inertial dampeners, but we'd all just be stains on the back wall."

**Comments:**  
What the crap? Another alien species, from the Delta quadrant no less, has visited Earth many years ago. How many does that make now? How much of a cliché has this become by now? Seriously, what is so interesting about Earth? Well, I at least found Chakotay's flashbacks interesting. Another interesting detail is Janeway's affinity for ship landings. This is her second attempt at landing the ship, she suggested doing it in another episode before this one, totaling three episodes that involve at least a mention of a ship landing. I enjoyed the Doctor's sickness too, but really the most enjoyable things about this episode were the sub plots and not the main plot. An exploration of Chakotay's Native American heritage is cool, but not when it's done with cliché++.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x10 - Cold Fire**  
Originally Aired: 1995-11-13

My Rating - 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kes makes contact with the female Caretaker.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- Gary Graham, who plays Tanis in this episode will go on to play Soval on Enterprise.  
- This episode establishes that the Caretaker species is called the Nacene.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Kes' lessons with Tuvok. She listened to Neelix' thoughts. Funny.  
- Tanis regarding Voyager: "There are people, but there is so little life."  
- Kes burning up Tuvok.  
- Kes burning the hydroponics bay.  
- Janeway's meeting with Suspiria.  
- Tuvok: "Without the darkness, how would we recognize the light?"

**Comments:**  
We've been waiting for this one since Voy: Caretaker. We were told in the pilot episode that there was another Caretaker out there and it was just a matter of finding her. In this episode, when Voyager discovers that the remains of their dead sporecystian Caretaker friend start vibrating, that his companion may be near. Unfortunately, I am rather annoyed that we have yet another Voyager-might-get-home episode so early in Voyager's run. You know going into this that they

won't get sent home by this or any other Caretaker, at least not so early in the show's run. One interesting thing is that Voyager is regarded by the natives as "the ship of death." It seems the Kazon are spreading rumors about them. Janeway once again demonstrates her superb diplomatic skills during her brief meeting with Suspiria. To me though, it's a shame Suspiria just up and leaves at the end of this episode, never to return. This makes this episode somewhat of an unsolved mystery on many levels. We're not entirely sure what the exact relationship between these Ocampo and Suspiria was. This episode clearly calls for a sequel, but unfortunately, it's one which we won't get.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 2x11 - Maneuvers**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-11-20

**My Rating - 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Chakotay faces his traitorous former love.*

#### **Problems:**

- Isn't a shuttle with a wiped computer core still a lot of powerful technology? Can't Seska help restore the computer partially to get certain functionality back? Like the transporter?
- Voyager did a lot of beaming through shields in this episode.

#### **Factoids:**

- Jal Haron refers to Voyager as "the Voyager." A rare usage of the word "the" in front of the word Voyager.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Kazon ship smashing into Voyager's hull.
- Chakotay stealing a shuttle.
- Torres sticking up for Chakotay to Janeway.
- Chakotay's stealth approach to the Kazon ship and beaming aboard undetected.
- Chakotay taunting Culluh about Seska's traitorous nature during his interrogation.
- Chakotay: "You know one thing I especially liked? That little mole on her stomach." Culluh hits Chakotay hard. Chakotay: "I guess you've seen it."
- Voyager beaming aboard all the Kazon leaders.
- Seska's message to Voyager. Seska impregnated herself with Chakotay's DNA!

#### **Comments:**

This episode is an interesting story of deception and betrayal. True to its name, it also features several interesting maneuvers. The Kazon put a knife in Voyager's belly, steal a transporter, Chakotay steals a shuttle, Chakotay approaches the Kazon ship under stealth, and Voyager beams aboard all the Kazon leaders. There are some remarkable inconsistencies, noted in the problems section, but overall I'm pleased with this episode. In the end, the contention between Janeway and Chakotay is appropriate. It seems there's not one member of Voyager's crew Janeway won't have to chew out, which is humorous and amusing as well as a bit annoying all at the same time. The ending of this episode is the best part, Seska is such a twisted, sadistic, evil person that she impregnated herself with Chakotay's DNA just to further infuriate him. A nice if slightly flawed episode.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 2x12 - Resistance**

**Originally Aired:** 1995-11-27

**My Rating - 2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Janeway must escape from the Mokra.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Alan Scarfe, who plays Augris in this episode, also played Admiral Mendak in TNG: Data's Day and Tokath in TNG: Birthright.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**



- Augris describing Voyager's "disreputable" reputation.
- Caylen's distraction.
- Tuvok discussing pain with Torres.

**Comments:**

Could have been a lot better. This episode reminds me quite a bit of DS9: Progress where Caylem is Mullibok and Janeway is Kira. Circumstances certainly differ. I liked hearing more about Voyager's "disreputable reputation", which is good continuity with previous episodes. Unfortunately, the plot is meager. Janeway and Caylem together made for some good acting, but did little to spice up a rather drab plot. The writers could have made a much more exciting plot out of Voyager's recurring fuel problem.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x13 - Prototype**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-1-15

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Torres reactivates a humanoid robot.*

**Problems:**

- How could Torres talk during transport?

**Factoids:**

- Automated unit 3947 claimed he's been in service for 1,314,807 hours. That's 150 years! Yikes!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser was rather cool. Somewhat spooky.
- Neelix attempting to coax Torres to take a break from her work obsession.
- Torres' conversation with the doctor.
- The doctor: "I shouldn't have to remind you, I'm a doctor-" (The Doctor is interrupted.) Torres: "Not an engineer, right." Count 14 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Janeway: "Who are we to swoop in, play god, and then continue on our way without the slightest consideration of the long term effects of our actions?"
- Torres talking about Data to 3947.
- 3947's reaction when Torres told him to cross his fingers.
- The two robot ships fighting each other.

**Comments:**

I was kind of afraid this episode would bring us a Voyager equivalent to Data; thankfully it did not. What we have here is a robotic species which expresses a desire to procreate. They easily elicit the viewer's sympathy; they seem innocent enough. But as the episode progresses, the harmless, misfortunated robots turn into genocidal megalomaniacs. Seems Janeway's gut instinct to uphold the prime directive was the correct choice. The robots who first pleaded for help are now willing to take it by force. The idea that the robots killed their creators reminds me quite a bit of Battlestar Galactica where the robots take the obvious place of the cylons. They even look alike. Though from what I know of Battlestar, the Cylons didn't fight each other, and they never annihilated their builders (entirely anyway.) Overall a very high quality episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x14 - Alliances**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-1-22

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Janeway seeks an alliance with the Kazon.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Trabe guy in this episode refers to Voyager as "the Voyager." The word "the" preceding Voyager is rare.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- The battle in the teaser.
- Chakotay: "A lot of us can say we're alive today because of Kurt Benderan. There was never a better man to have at your side. Never anyone more willing to take on the tough jobs. The first time I met him was in a mining community on Telfas Prime. Some of the miners objected to my sense of humor and decided they should break a few of my bones. There were four of them and one of me and I was taking a beating. Suddenly this man I'd never seen before came out of nowhere and evened things up. We stood back to back and pretty soon the others decided my sense of humor wasn't so bad after all. I thanked the man. He just grinned and said, 'I like a good fight.' He was my friend from that moment on and he kept fighting the good fight right up until the end. I'll miss him."
- Janeway bluntly claiming she'll destroy Voyager before she give the Kazon technology.
- Janeway seeking advice from Tuvok. I like how Tuvok referenced Spock's attempt to ally the Federation and the Klingon Empire. Tuvok himself spoke out against it as a young man!

### Comments:

This is the first of many episodes in which Chakotay tries to impose a cowardly or un-Federation-principles style solution to the current problem, something that (mildly) annoys me. Other than that, this episode is a thriller. End Voyager's isolationist stance in the delta quadrant. We also get some nice cultural information regarding the Trabe and their relationship with the Kazon. It's a nice plot twist to have the seemingly peaceful repenting Trabe attempt an execution of all the Kazon majes. Overall another decent offering by Voyager.



### Star Trek Voy - 2x15 - Threshold

**Originally Aired:** 1996-1-29

**My Rating - 0**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Paris crosses the transwarp threshold.*

### Problems:

- Warp 10 is not transwarp. It is warp 10. There is a fundamental difference in the two concepts.
- Warp 10 is an asymptote on the warp scale. You cannot ever reach the asymptote. You can only approach it into infinity. There is no "threshold" at which you stop approaching the asymptote and you actually hit it. This is why traveling at warp 10 is impossible. And when I say impossible, I mean it. Even for Star Trek. It can't happen.
- Sorry, a more pure dilithium just won't take you to warp 10.
- I love it when Harry and Tom get their "answer". The ship is being torn from the nacelles, not the nacelles being torn from the ship! Okay, back up here. Exactly what is propelling the ship if the nacelles have been torn off? Magic?
- So the crew of Voyager construct the fastest warp engine ever conceived that's so fast that it can take you \*anywhere\* in the time it takes you to say "engage" during their off hours in their spare time? So, uh, why hasn't anyone else figured out how to do this yet? No offense, but surely Tom, Harry, and Torres are not the smartest minds in the entire galaxy.
- So Voyager gets sensor data on every sector in the entire galaxy thanks to the warp 10 flight. Why do we see stellar cartographers and astrometrics officers then after this episode? Maybe because this episode was so absurd even the writers decided to ignore it?
- This episode completely misunderstands the concept of evolution. Evolution is not a process by which a species gets more and more advanced, it is a process by which a species becomes more and more suited to its environment. Are we supposed to believe Paris becoming allergic to water constitutes an appropriate evolution? It almost killed him! Not to mention "evolving" such that he was unable to breathe air and only a toxic gas instead. And all the other things that almost kill him in this "rapid evolution" process...
- So Paris takes Janeway for a little joyride at warp 10. He wanted to get away from Voyager with her. He could have gone anywhere in the entire universe he wanted, but instead he takes her to a planet just a few days away from Voyager. Why?
- The final transformation in this episode, the most advanced form humans will ever achieve is \*drum roll please\* a giant newt!
- And if that wasn't enough, the doctor's miracle cure is to treat them with antimatter! Do I really have to explain this one?
- And the final blow to this silly episode is why the hell do they never use the warp 10 engine ever again? They could send one person back. They could use it for communication. They could use it for \*something\*! Answer: because this episode was so absurd even the writers decided to ignore

it.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Worst Episode of Voyager Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Worst Episode Ever Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor's method of waking up Tom in sickbay. Not a hypospray or a gentle nudge. He screams at him! Hilarious.
- The doctor: "Hmm. It looks like he's having an allergic reaction. What did he ingest?" Torres: "Just a cup of Neelix' coffee." The doctor: "It's a miracle he's still alive."
- Paris: "I lost my virginity in that room. 17, parents away for the weekend." The doctor: "I'll note that in your medical file."
- I like the scene where the traitorous Voyager crewmember sends the warp 10 data to the Kazon. It ridiculously served absolutely no purpose seeing as how the writers will choose to ignore the events of this episode in future episodes. You might say, well doesn't the entire episode? Yes, that's true. But this one serves even less purpose because it does nothing to advance the current plot of the episode; it's supposed to be a tie in to the Kazon arc. But what good is a tie in on a virtually de-canonized episode?
- Janeway and Tom discussing having had children as newts.

**Comments:**

This episode is my favorite of all the zeros in that it's the one I like to rant about the most. Honestly, this is also one of the most watchable of all the zeros as well. There are many things to redeem this episode. Tom gave a great performance and the doctor's humorous remarks were fantastic. And personally, I see this whole episode as so absurd that it's funny, unlike other zeros. Still though, it is absurd, and I won't go easy on it because of its humor intentional or otherwise. Long story short, this episode drowns in a sea of technical problems. They're so absurd and there are so many of them that there's just no saving this episode. You've got to wonder how this crap gets past editors!



**Star Trek Voy - 2x16 - Meld**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-2-5

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A mind-meld brings out Tuvok's "killer instinct."*

**Problems:**

- How can the doctor walk through a forcefield with a PADD? Is it holographic too? But the table Tuvok threw at the forcefield is not?

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to display Tom Paris acting unreliable and rebellious which begins a small plot arc, to be resolved later in the season.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Suder's confession.
- The Doctor gently ridiculing Tuvok's desire to understand the motive.
- Tuvok mind melding with Suder.
- Janeway's reaction to Tuvok's suggestion of an execution.
- Neelix' obnoxious attempts to make Tuvok smile. Hilarious.
- Tuvok attacking holographic Neelix.
- Rebellious Tom.
- Tuvok locking himself in his quarters.
- Tuvok: "I am trained in the martial arts of many alpha quadrant cultures. Sitting here attempting to meditate I have counted the number of ways I know of killing someone. Using just a finger, a hand, a foot. I had reached 94 when you entered."
- The doctor ranting about Vulcan mind melds.
- The first treatment in which had no emotional control.
- Tuvok breaking out of sickbay and confronting Suder.
- Delinquent Tom Scenes; 1. Runs a betting pool. Chakotay chews him out. Tom disses him in front of a bunch of people afterward.

**Comments:**

Suder is a fantastic character which I wish we could have seen more of throughout the series. His eyes are the best part of his character, very cool. Tom is running an illegal gambling pool and is starting to act like a prick. Tuvok and Suder exchange personalities somewhat. Suder becomes more Vulcan and Tuvok becomes more, well, evil. The doctor once again puts up a good show. He's got a lot of McCoy in him, constantly insulting Vulcans. Overall, a thrilling episode even with a distinct lack of action for the most part.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x17 - Dreadnought****Originally Aired:** 1996-2-12**My Rating - 9****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Torres tries to stop a deadly missile.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Dreadnought houses 1000 kilos of both matter and anti matter. Tuvok claims that's enough to destroy a small moon.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor lamenting about not being able to choose a name, then shooting down every name Ensign Wildman comes up with.
- Torres and Chakotay describing their history with Dreadnought.
- Janeway's communication with the planet Dreadnought was intending to destroy.
- Torres' entry into Dreadnought.
- Tom: "When a bomb starts talking about itself in the third person, I get worried."
- Torres beaming back aboard Dreadnought, pissed off.
- Dreadnought engaging the Rakosan fleet.
- Torres' hypothetical game.
- Dreadnought removing life support, trying to kill Torres.
- Dreadnought's identity crisis.
- Delinquent Tom Scenes; 1. Is late for the staff meeting. Chakotay chews him out. 2. Torres confronts Tom about his odd behavior in Engineering. Torres mentions he got in a fight with Lt. Rollins; Tom says it was because his conn. reports weren't punctuated properly.

**Comments:**

This episode is excellent. Torres has to confront one of her old demons, literally. They did a very good job with the sets on dreadnought, it looked very Cardassian. I felt like I was watching a DS9 episode during some parts of it, which is no small compliment indeed! And Torres puts up yet another spectacular performance. There are parallels between this episode and TOS: The Ultimate Computer, as well as other Star Trek episodes. The behavior of Dreadnought's computer reminds me somewhat of 2001: A Space Odyssey. Some details to discuss, Voyager's reputation is once again at issue, which I liked. And Jonas does more traitorous communicating with the Kazon, which annoys me. Frankly, Jonas' scene in this episode seems almost as pointless as the one he did in Voy: Threshold. It seems obvious that it's leading up to a Kazon confrontation, and it doesn't take a genius to guess that Tom's odd behavior is somehow linked to Jonas' traitorous behavior. Jonas' activities are not particularly annoying on principle, it's the implementation I find all wrong. Why do the Kazon care about Voyager's current situation? Does it benefit them? Absolutely not. Why isn't Jonas transmitting real sensitive info instead of giving them harmless updates?



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x18 - Death Wish****Originally Aired:** 1996-2-19**My Rating - 10****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***A rebel Q demands asylum on Voyager.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Voyager Award".
- Quinn caused the Apple to fall onto Sir Isaac Newton's head. Otherwise Isaac Newton would have never become a famous scientist.
- Quinn saved Woodstock by picking up Maury Ginsberg.
- Quinn saved Riker's ancestor's life.
- Without Quinn, the Borg would have assimilated the Federation.
- Quinn created a 100 (assumedly ancient) year war between the Romulans and the Vulcans.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- A new Q showing up.
- The new Q being very appreciative of Voyager freeing him.
- The old Q showing up.
- Tuvok: "I am curious, have the Q always had an absence of manners or is it the result of some natural evolutionary process that comes with omnipotence?"
- The new Q explaining to Tuvok that the Q are not in fact omnipotent. Tuvok's response: "Intriguing. Just what vulnerabilities do the Q have?"
- The old Q calling himself to the stand at the hearing. A double of himself appears. :)
- Tuvok: "You find nothing contradictory in a society that outlaws suicide but practices capital punishment?"
- The old Q bringing people from Earth with the promise that they will not remember the experience and no one will know they are gone. He brings Maury Ginsberg, Sir Isaac Newton, and Commander Riker!
- The new Q demonstrating his prison.
- Old Q: "You could live a perfectly normal life, if you were simply willing to live a perfectly normal life!"
- The old Q bribing Janeway with a free trip back to Earth.
- The visit to the Q Continuum.
- The new Q making his case for self termination. His life's work is complete. Let life end!
- Quinn killing himself.

**Comments:**

One of Star Trek's best offerings. Voyager features a number of rare great Q episodes and this is the first. The humor is mixed extremely well with the very real issue of suicide. Not only does the situation parallel that of present day Earth, for Tuvok's statement "You find nothing contradictory in a society that outlaws suicide but practices capital punishment?" is a reference to the hypocrisy of present day Earth laws regarding suicide and capital punishment, but the episode presents extremely good science fiction at the same time, by presenting us a side of the Q continuum culture we've never seen before. Immortality is unbearable to certain Trek aliens we've seen, even to certain members of the Q continuum. One Q wants to kill himself, and now Janeway must arbitrate the dispute. An episode that many may think is just an excuse to recycle old characters from other shows to me ended up being one of Star Trek's most profound offerings, and a rare gem among Voyager.

**Star Trek Voy - 2x19 - Lifesigns**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-2-26

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor falls in love.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to the doctor, his program contains over 50 million gigaquads of Data which is far more than the most highly developed humanoid brain.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor storing his patient's brain in the computer and creating a holographic body for her.
- Torres' initial reaction to the doctor pleading with her to give him some neural tissue.
- Kes counseling the doctor.

- In the next scene the doctor announces that he's romantically attracted to Denara in the midst of performing surgery on her.
- The doctor: "Mr. Paris, I assume you've had great deal of experience being rejected by women?" Paris: "Thanks a lot, Doc..."
- The doctor's geeky little date with Denara on Mars.
- The revelation that Denara injected herself with a fatal poison.
- Delinquent Tom Scenes; 1. Tom is late in the opening scene. According to Chakotay, it's the third time this week. 2. Chakotay discusses his behavior with Janeway. 3. Chakotay confronts him in the mess hall about his behavior. 4. Is 10 minutes late, and is removed from his post permanently by Chakotay "until he can start taking his job seriously."

#### Comments:

This episode opens with a very cool and innovative medical technique; the doctor transfers a woman's entire consciousness into a holographic body thanks to an odd device she was implanted with. It's also a great episode developing the Vidlians as a people and the effect of the Phage on them. We get to deeply explore the Phage's effect on a single person, and see what the Vidlians would look like without the Phage. In this respect, the episode is extremely intelligently constructed. Once again, the doctor gets a name. This time it's "Shmullus." One wonders why he never sticks with one. Jonas once again talks to the Kazon secretly. In this episode it's all too obvious that there's a connection between Paris' rebellious behavior and Jonas' traitorous behavior. The ending is tragic. The doctor fell in love with Denara, but sadly it was a love that could not be, for she was forced to leave. At the same time, the ending was touching, for the doctor really, truly lived for the first time. An exceptional episode.



#### **Star Trek Voy - 2x20 - Investigations**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-3-13

**My Rating - 6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Neelix smokes out a traitor.*

#### Problems:

- The stardates in this episode have gone backwards since the last, even though the episode is set after the last episode.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a performer." Count 15 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The scene where Janeway tells Neelix that Paris is leaving the ship.
- Neelix talking to Paris about his decision to leave.
- The doctor unable to contain himself concerning his time in the spotlight.
- Jonas trying to cover up his secret transmissions.
- The doctor interrupting Jonas' attempt of murder.
- Janeway and Tuvok spilling the beans on their plan to discover who the saboteur is.
- Neelix killing Jonas.

#### Comments:

This one's obviously been building a while. I was satisfied with the progression of the events. There wasn't anything too amazingly impressive in the episode, but some highlights were Voyager's decent use of arc building. Granted, the whole Jonas / Tom's behavior arc was little obvious and could have been done better, I'd rather have it than do without it. Neelix is where this episode shines. His little local television program reminded me somewhat of cheesy local TV stations, but it gave Neelix something fun(ny) to do for a change. It was nicely shown in this episode; I especially the doctor's (or rather his lack of) involvement in the show, though I am glad we don't see anymore of Neelix' television show. It was a bit obnoxious, and much more of it would have been over the top.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x21 - Deadlock**  
Originally Aired: 1996-3-18

My Rating - 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A space anomaly generates a duplicate Voyager.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Naomi Wildman is born in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The fetal transport.
- Harry being vented into space.
- Janeway discovering the double Voyager.
- The Vidiians boarding Voyager.
- The other Janeway's friendly greeting to her conqueror just before the ship explodes.

**Comments:**

This episode is pretty good from a sci fi perspective. Much of it has some pretty decent technical explanations behind it. Unfortunately, it falls short in the ending. Several plot holes crop up. It seems unlikely that the two ships could in fact merge after being separated, and even more unlikely that one Voyager self destructing would solve the whole problem. Not really avoidable though; a reset button was necessary.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x22 - Innocence**  
Originally Aired: 1996-4-8

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Tuvok crash-lands on a moon.*

**Problems:**

- The whole premise is nonsensical. We're supposed to believe these people are born fully grown and die as children? I mean come on!

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ensign Bennet's death. A touching death for a redshirt.
- Tuvok babysitting.
- Tuvok singing.

**Comments:**

A good Tuvok episode, but a poor sci fi episode. The science of people being born elderly, their age reversing, and they die as children is just ridiculous. You've got to give the episode props for Tuvok's performance; he did a fantastic job with the children. I also liked the initial diplomatic meetings between the crew of Voyager and our aliens of the week. It's nice for once to see peaceful aliens instead of someone who wants to conquer Voyager or steal her crew's organs and whatnot. Janeway also handled the points of contention between our aliens of the week well too. Good acting is nice, but the premise is just too ridiculous to warrant a high rating.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x23 - The Thaw**  
Originally Aired: 1996-4-29

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kim is held hostage by fear.*

**Problems:**

- Tom claims the ship was built for combat performance, not acoustics. Voyager is a ship of combat, and not a ship of exploration?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Clown's ridiculous behavior.
- The doctor's sudden appearance in the dream world.
- The doctor providing a distraction while Torres disrupts the clown's environment.
- Holographic Janeway kicking fear's ass.

**Comments:**

You have to overlook a few things to appreciate this episode. Firstly, why did Janeway even bother beaming up the stasis pods in the first place? Isn't that a whole Prime Directive violation type thing? Well, maybe not as there was evidence of advanced technology. But why send crewmembers in there when it's very obviously dangerous from the beginning? Why not send in the doctor \*before\* crewmembers are in danger? Also, you have to overlook the general silliness of the episode too, because it's intentional. Personally, I found this episode hilarious and the clown a great guest star. The doctor and Janeway both put up fantastic performances against our antagonist. If the writing were a bit more careful, it'd most certainly be an above average episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x24 - Tuvix**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-5-6

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Tuvok and Neelix fuse into one.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Neelix: "I've been studying Vulcan music, do you know that lovely tune that starts, 'Oh starless night of boundless black...'" Tuvok: "That lovely tune is a traditional funeral dirge." Neelix: "I know. But it was the most cheerful song I could find in the Vulcan database."
- Tuvix' appearance.
- Tuvix blurting out "sex" for seemingly no reason at the briefing.
- Tuvix, taking charge of the galley: "All right, everybody out!" Crewman: "On whose authority?" Tuvix: "Chief of security or head chef. Take your pick! Out, out out!"
- Janeway regarding Tuvix: "His cooking is better than Neelix's."
- Tuvix announcing he doesn't want to be separated.
- Tuvix and Janeway arguing over who should live and who should die.
- Kes admitting to Janeway she wants Tuvix to go through with the separation.
- Tuvix freaking out on the bridge when Janeway reached her decision.
- The doctor refusing to perform the surgical separation.

**Comments:**

This episode is somewhat controversial. In one respect it's like Voy: Faces backwards, which is cool. It would have been nice if someone's lines made a reference to that episode given the similarities. I'm sure Torres and Tuvix would have had a lot to talk about. Some highlights, the actor selected for Mr. Tuvix was perfect. His voice indeed sounded like a merger between Tuvok and Neelix. In this episode, Janeway blatantly breaks the Prime Directive when she murders Tuvix. A decision which I wholeheartedly agreed with, though it made the episode no less tragic. Some people totally disagree with her. In fact, AFAIK, neither Tuvok nor Neelix were particularly popular characters when this episode was aired. Granted, Tuvok is my favorite character, I might have had some bias. I wanted them to be split. Though I was disappointed with how Tuvix met his end. Certainly it was realistic for him to try and preserve his life, but he could have gone out with more dignity. Another way this episode could have been better is if Tuvix was a recurring character. It would have been nice to see him in the place of Tuvok and Neelix for several episodes, perhaps



even a season or two. It would make his demise so much more moving. Granted, what Janeway did is downright tragic, this episode seems a minor missed opportunity to me.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 2x25 - Resolutions**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-5-13

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Janeway and Chakotay are forced into exile.*

**Problems:**

- So Voyager just left all that equipment on the planet?

**Factoids:**

- According to Paris, a type 9 shuttle has a top speed of warp 4.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chakotay ridiculing Janeway for her comment about "roughing it."
- Chakotay and Janeway hitting it off as they construct their new home.
- Janeway discovering the primate.
- Chakotay after discovering the primate: "Looking for a pet?" Janeway: "No, looking for a clue about primate physiology on this planet. They must have to contend with insect bites too."
- Tuvok relieving Kim of his duties when he speaks up about the Vidiians.
- Kim approaching Tuvok to present his well thought out plan, only to be rejected again.
- Tuvok agreeing to contact the Vidiians.
- Chakotay : "I can tell you a story, an ancient legend among my people. It's about an angry warrior who lived his life in conflict with the rest of his tribe. A man who couldn't find peace, even with the help of his spirit guide. For years he struggled with his discontent. The only satisfaction he ever got came when he was in battle. This made him a hero among his tribe, but the warrior still longed for peace within himself. One day, he and his war party were captured by a neighboring tribe led by a woman warrior. She called on him to join her because her tribe was too small and weak to defend itself from all its enemies. The woman warrior was brave and beautiful and very wise. The angry warrior swore to himself that he would stay by her side, doing whatever he could to make her burden lighter. From that point on, her needs would come first. And in that way, the warrior began to know the true meaning of peace." Janeway: "Is that really an ancient legend?" Chakotay: "No. But that made it easier to say."
- Tuvok's maneuver at the end.

**Comments:**

A decent offering with some minor flaws. It was obvious from the beginning that Janeway and Chakotay would return to the ship, so the whole "they might never come back" plot came off as annoying. Tuvok's initial behavior as captain was equally annoying; frankly, the first thing they should have done once they left Janeway and Chakotay there was to go find the Vidiians and try to get their help. Harry was right, Tuvok was not. And stretching out the contention was just a waste of time. The episode presents great continuity with Voy: Lifesigns, with Denara showing up again, though the star of this show is the interaction between Chakotay and Janeway. It seems to me that the writers have been trying to get the two of them together for a long time, but they never actually went through with it. Though, this episode gets closer to it than almost any other.



**Star Trek Voy - 2x26 - Basics, Part I**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-5-20

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager has a showdown with the Kazon.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing Suder so peaceful.
- Chakotay's vision quest, discussing the child with his father.
- Suder's meeting with Janeway.
- Janeway, regarding the repeated hit and run attacks: "It feels like we're being pecked to death by ducks."
- The battle with the Kazon.
- The doctor being projected into space.
- Voyager being taken over.
- Culluh putting the crew of Voyager off the ship and leaving with Voyager.

**Comments:**

Welcome back Ensign Suder. A new man, no longer a psychopath. I really enjoyed the teaser. Suder being rehabilitated is a very cool thing. But this isn't about Suder, it's about the Kazon. Here comes the great showdown. Voyager's been avoiding them for a long time now, this confrontation is a long time coming. Chakotay decides he will care for the illegitimate child Seska conceived by stealing Chakotay's DNA. His vision quest equates the situation to when Native American women were raped by European men. The resulting children were not rejected, but cared for by the native tribes and Chakotay must not fight Seska's wrong (stealing the DNA) with another wrong (abandoning the child). I wonder why Janeway decided to play her little holographic game with Culluh, instead of just run. There's not much hope in fighting a battle against eight massive Kazon ships. Culluh's hilarious chauvinism is back in full force. Seska really is smarter than he is; he just refuses to believe it! This episode is thrilling and to a certain extent annoying. Culluh is a major prick, a villain you just love to hate. At the end of this episode, all you want is for him to get what's coming to him. Damn those cliffhangers. Well, many of the questions are already answered by the end. We don't know if Paris lived or not, but Seska thinks he's alive, so he's probably still alive. Suder is still aboard, along with the doctor. The two will probably concoct a way to save the ship. Not a very nail biting cliffhanger, but then, I hate cliffhangers, so it doesn't bother me. :)



**Star Trek Voy - 3x01 - Basics, Part II**  
**Originally Aired:** 1996-9-4

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The crew fights for survival.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom in a damaged shuttle, destroying a Kazon patrol ship that attacked him.
- Janeway taking charge down on the planet, determined to keep everyone alive.
- The revelation that Seska's child was Culluh's and not Chakotay.
- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a counterinsurgent." Count 16 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Chakotay: "Trapped on a barren planet and you're stuck with the only Indian in the universe who can't make fire by rubbing two sticks together."
- Janeway regarding seeing the erupting volcano spewing at them: "I think our top priority has just been dictated."
- Suder mass slaughtering Kazon.

**Comments:**

A hostile takeover plot is a fairly original one in Star Trek so far; the Enterprise D had been taken over, but covertly and far more briefly. This is the first episode to feature a battle in which the ship of the show is directly conquered and the crew put off the ship. As such, part one made for some very exciting story, though not without its flaws (see part 1 review), still exciting nonetheless. Now we have a story in which the cast is split up. Most of them are stuck on a primitive planet. Tom has a shuttle somewhere, the doctor is still aboard, hiding, as is Suder. Unfortunately, aside from the revelation that Chakotay was in fact not the father of Seska's child, nothing all that remarkable

happens. Culluh and Seska are eventually fooled by the doctor, Suder, Paris, and the Talaxians. Suder's character is needlessly wasted, and the crew is reunited with the ship. The first part of this story unleashed so much potential that it seems like the rather adequate second part wasted some of it. Still, I enjoyed the episode. One detail to appreciate: the crew makes peace with the primitive people on the planet rather than waging war with them in the end. Very Trek-like. :)



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 3x02 - Flashback**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-9-11

**My Rating - 8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Tuvok experiences a repressed memory.*

#### **Problems:**

- Valtane dies in this episode, yet in the end of Star Trek VI: The Undiscovered Country he is seen as alive and well aboard the Excelsior.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode was partially intended to see if an Excelsior show helmed by Sulu would be doable.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok: "Mr. Neelix, I would prefer not to hear the life history of my breakfast."
- Tuvok's meditative chant: "Structure, logic, function, control. A structure cannot stand without a foundation. Logic is the foundation of function. Function is the essence of control. I am in control. I am in control."
- Tuvok's "obvious error" regarding scanning the nebula for cloaked Klingon ships.
- Janeway and Tuvok appearing on on the Excelsior. It's Captain Sulu!
- Janeway mentioning Sulu doesn't look anything like his portrait at Starfleet headquarters. Tuvok claims it's because holographic imaging resolutions weren't as good in the 23rd century. Nice way to fix the Sulu's-too-old-for-this-part-problem. ;)
- The scene where Tuvok protests Sulu's actions.
- Janeway and Kim discussing the 23rd century with envy.
- Sulu to Janeway: "Who the hell are you?"
- Janeway's and Tuvok's method of being inconspicuous.
- The doctor eliminating the memory virus.

#### **Comments:**

A very cool episode. It's always fun to draw connections between episodes in the distant past. Sometimes it can be done in a silly way, but this one is very well done. The connection between this episode and Star Trek VI: The Undiscovered Country is very convincing and the events are nicely woven into a virus of the week plot on Voyager. The virus plot may have been something of a cheap excuse, or a lame plot device, but I've never seen a lame plot device exploited so nicely. Overall, this is one of Voyager's better offerings. And since Tuvok is my favorite character on Voyager, this is an episode to remember.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 3x03 - The Chute**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-9-18

**My Rating - 2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Paris and Kim are trapped in a hellish prison.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Harry climbing through the chute only to discover they're in space.
- Neelix' ship's skillful maneuvers.
- Kim: "I was ready to hit you with the pipe. Don't you remember?" Paris: "You wanna know what I remember? Someone saying, 'this man is my friend. Nobody touches him. I'll remember that for a

long time."

**Comments:**

A rather unremarkable episode. It reminds me of all the captured, fighting, violence episodes TOS featured to get ratings. The only interesting thing was the rather intriguing insane character with his philosophies and his manifesto. I also thought Janeway's handling of the situation was rather skillful. It was fun watching her and Tuvok break Tom and Harry out of prison. Finally, the brief, touching moment of true friendship expressed between Paris and Kim in the end was pretty cool. Other than that, a slow mover.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x04 - The Swarm**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-9-25

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager battles a swarm of alien ships.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom hitting on Torres in the teaser.
- The doctor's duet with the diva. I loved her cross-lingual dialog and her constant insulting of the doctor. :)
- The doctor gradually losing his memory.
- A holographic Dr. Louis Zimmerman.
- Torres, in response to an arrogant Dr. Louis Zimmerman: "I can see where you get your charming personality." The doctor: "Not to mention my hairline."
- Janeway: "Mr. Tuvok, keep an eye on those ships. If they so much as twitch, I want to know it."
- Zimmerman: "You've filled your memory with nonsense!" EMH: "It was only during my off hours."
- Zimmerman: "You're supposed to be off during your off hours!"
- Zimmerman: "It wasn't programmed to be a tenor, it was programmed to be a physician!" Count 17 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The doctor, obviously degraded quite a bit now, regarding his new patient: "He's a sick man. This is where sick people come." The alien dies. Kes: "His injuries were too severe." The doctor: "He's a very sick man."
- Kes: "Doctor, you musn't touch those. Here, this one's all right to hold." The doctor: "Shall I use it on the sick man?" (The "sick man" is dead.) Kes: "Yes, that's a good idea..."
- The doctor trying to leave sickbay.
- Kes trying to keep the doctor remembering things.
- Zimmerman: "I am a diagnostic tool, not an engineer!" Count 18 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The doctor gradually regaining his memory.

**Comments:**

This episode is less about the swarm and more about the doctor, and rightfully so. Watching Torres deal with a holographic Zimmerman trying to fix the EMH was great fun and good humor, whilst maintaining a nice level of seriousness. While the episode remains exceptional throughout, the swarm plot ends rather weakly; Janeway figures out a way to destroy one ship in the swarm and the whole swarm collapses? That's a little unrealistic. But the doctor's experiences offset the weak ending and make this episode nicely watchable.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x05 - False Profits**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-10-2

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Ferengi opportunists pose as gods.*

**Problems:**

- The Universal Translator translates rhymes in alien languages into English perfectly?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a sequel to TNG: The Price.  
- The Rules of Acquisition have 47 official commentaries, ~900 official major and minor judgments and ~10,000 considered opinions.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Ferengi pleading to be returned to the surface. I hate the fact that Janeway returns them to the surface, but I at least enjoyed the Ferengi's performance in this scene. They were funny.  
- Rules of Acquisition; 10. Greed is eternal. 22. A wise man can hear profit in the wind. (We don't know the number of this rule). Exploitation begins at home. 95. Expand or die. 299. Whenever you exploit someone, it never hurts to thank them. That way it's easier to exploit them the next time. (This rule is fake; Neelix made it up.) The unwritten rule: When no appropriate rule applies, make one up.

**Comments:**

I'm not fond of this one at all as Janeway makes seriously bad decisions. A wormhole leading to the alpha quadrant is discovered, but Janeway won't go through it because Ferengi are exploiting the planet below. She beams them up and all is well, then she just lets them go for no good reason. All her problems could have been solved by just abducting them, going through the wormhole, and washing her hands of it all, but nope. Janeway's gotta do the "right thing" and let them go. She just takes the word of the Ferengi that their absence could damage the culture even more! Oh, so now we have to make it look like they leave naturally... waste more time on the Ferengi and before you know it they somehow manage to overpower ship security, steal back their shuttle, return to the alpha quadrant, and destroy the wormhole leaving it so Voyager can't go through either. And we're supposed to have sympathy for Janeway after these events? She was royally stupid! Oh yeah; and this episode features yet another alien race that looks exactly like humans. What a waste of a fantastic connection with a decent TNG episode.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 3x06 - Remember**

**Originally Aired:** 1996-10-9

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Torres has troubling dreams.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway's music lessons.  
- Torres revealing the horrors of Anaran history to everybody.

**Comments:**

The Anarans have the ability to directly transfer knowledge telepathically, giving someone the benefit of years of experience in a few seconds. As Tuvok put it, very "fascinating." Aside from that, this episode is remarkable in that the telepathic "attacks" on Torres weren't really attacks but entirely harmless. TNG has shown us far too many telepathic attacks (on Troi), so this episode gives us a refreshing new perspective on an old concept. The telepathic stories resembled Nazi Germany toward the end, with the forced resettlements and whatnot. The "resettlements" are nothing but executions. Torres reveals the horrible truth to everybody in a fit of rage, but with no way to prove any of this, including the murder of the woman, nothing is accomplished. So she shares her new memories with another Anaran directly. The episode ends with hope that the truth behind this coverup will now be revealed. All things considered the story is quite moving. But way too much time is wasted on the flashbacks and the basic plot has been done better in episodes like TNG: The Inner Light. So this episode comes off as nicely crafted, but also as a rehashed filler.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 3x07 - Sacred Ground**  
Originally Aired: 1996-10-30

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Janeway tests her spiritual beliefs.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- One of the old people "waiting" in this episode played George's mother on Seinfeld.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor coincidentally saying to Janeway everything she went through was meaningless.  
- The doctor explaining how the whole thing worked in the end.

**Comments:**

This episode evokes mixed opinions. Janeway's expressed respect for the culture of our aliens of the week is fantastic, along with her scientific skepticism. This episode is designed to explore the science behind religions. Though it's also designed to tell us not everything can be rationally explained, and that we should have faith in something. I'll be frank; the concept of blind faith annoys me more than most other things. Consequently, this episode comes off with an impression like a Final Fantasy game, or a Star Wars film, which is decidedly not what Star Trek is all about. But in the end, everything does have a rational explanation, thanks to the doctor's "very scientific" analysis. As a result, while I don't particularly like this episode much, a certain part of me respects its controversial nature.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x08 - Future's End, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1996-11-6

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager visits 20th-century Los Angeles.*

**Problems:**

- Tuvok says, "Thermal and ultraviolet radiation are at hazardous levels." You grew up on a bloody desert planet, Freakasaurus! I think you can handle a little California.

**Factoids:**

- In 2047, the entire region of southern California sank into the ocean. It became one of the world's largest coral reefs, home to thousands of different marine species.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok catching Janeway's ball.  
- Braxton trying to destroy Voyager.  
- Janeway: "I won't sacrifice this ship and crew based on a ten second conversation, I need proof!"  
- Tuvok: "We could have worn our starfleet uniforms. I doubt anyone would have noticed."  
- Braxton describing the temporal paradox.  
- Braxton lamenting about the 20th century.  
- The phaser fight just after Tuvok wipes Raine's computer.  
- The soap opera scene.  
- Tuvok and Paris in Raine's van. Not very good spies. :)

**Comments:**

This episode used to be one of my favorites of Voyager, but in later years I've grown to like it less. The main problem is that they get a few things just wrong, and during this time in Earth's past the Eugenics wars are going on, yet there is no mention of it. None of the little problems in this episode are serious, but they make the episode that much less effective to the seasoned Star Trek viewer. Some details that annoyed me were the way computers were handled in the episode; I rather like how when people type for two seconds and suddenly the computer does fifteen things automatically. Other than that, captain Braxton was a cool, albeit badly written initially and underused character. The first part presents a convincing story, though not without its flaws.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 3x09 - Future's End, Part II**  
**Originally Aired:** 1996-11-13

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The crew races against time in the 20th century.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor psychoanalyzing Starling.
- "I'm a doctor, not a database." Count 20 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The doctor sporting his new mobile emitter.
- Voyager attempting to beam away Starling.
- The doctor not being phased by punches.
- Chakotay and Torres captured by right wing paranoid fools.
- The doctor's new nickname: "Mr. Leisure Suit."
- Starling: "What are you gonna do, shoot me?" Janeway: "The thought has crossed my mind."
- The doctor taking several bullets.
- The doctor doesn't know his way around the ship.
- The manual torpedo launch, killing Starling.

**Comments:**

The second part is more successful than the first. It avoids none of the first's flaws, but manages to salvage a rather drab time travel story, and make Braxton look less like an idiot. Voyager's inability to get home using the events of this episode is convincingly presented, though still annoying. The thing that I really liked about this episode the most was the doctor's mobile emitter. Setting aside the fact that the emitter is 29th century technology out of time, which in and of itself is annoying, it's something the show definitely needed. The time in this episode could have been better used if it was about how Torres was inventing a mobile emitter, or something similar. Despite my criticisms, this is a decent offering from Voyager.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 3x10 - Warlord**  
**Originally Aired:** 1996-11-20

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kes' body is taken over by a ruthless political leader.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kes and Neelix adversarial date.
- Kes phasering people.
- Teiran using Kes' body to make Resh bleed Darth Vader style.
- Teiran's coup.
- Kes' personality surfacing in Teiran.
- Teiran discovering undercover Tuvok.
- Teiran using Kes' mental powers against Tuvok.
- Kes fighting Teiran's in his sleep.
- Teiran beginning to slip into insanity thanks to Kes' influence.
- Paris to Tuvok regarding the Vulcan neck pinch: "Some day you're gonna have to show me how to do that."

**Comments:**

I like this one, for Jennifer Lien gives a spectacular performance playing possessed Kes, just as when Keiko was possessed in DS9: The Assignment. Moreover, the character of Teiran was nicely presented. Even better a character than the rather simplistic Pah-wraith on DS9. Also in this episode's favor was Janeway; she once again shows us how awesome a diplomat she is. Overall, a rare great Kes episode.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 3x11 - The Q and the Grey****My Rating - 6****Originally Aired:** 1996-11-27**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Q asks Janeway to be the mother of his child.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The line where Q says "galavanting around the galaxy, using my omnipotence to impress females of every species," was bloopered several times, making for some rather entertaining filming sessions.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Q's appearance and declaration that he wants Janeway to be the mother of his child.
- Chakotay regarding Q: "What did he want?" Janeway: "Let's just say he had a personal request."
- The female Q calling Janeway a dog.
- The visit to the American Civil War version of the Q Continuum.
- The female Q's confrontation with Torres.
- Voyager entering the Q Continuum

**Comments:**

A good sequel to Voy: Death Wish. While the episode is thoroughly enjoyable, it does suffer from a distinct lack of realism. This isn't a major problem; the Q are omnipotent and can therefore do anything. But Star Trek viewers like plausibility and the Q civil war just didn't make too much sense on certain levels. In this respect the episode seems more of the fantasy genre than science fiction. That said, virtually every Q episode is a good episode and this is no exception. I'd say the biggest highlight of the show as the female Q and her interactions with the Voyager crew. I rather liked her conversation with Torres. When Torres mentioned something about her having a superiority complex, the female Q responded with something like, "It's not a complex, dear, it's a fact." Good stuff.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 3x12 - Macrocosm****My Rating - 6****Originally Aired:** 1996-12-11**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Voyager comes under siege.***Problems:**

- The concept surrounding the macro viruses is a little ridiculous, but not too bad.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Klingons have a redundant stomach. Good continuity with TNG: Ethics.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway making a fool of herself in front of the Tak Tak.
- Ensign Wildman was watching Neelix' "Good Morning Voyager" program. Good continuity with Voy: Ingestigations.
- Janeway says Neelix has a high fever and fluid in his lungs. Neelix replies, "Lung." Good



continuity with Voy: The Phage.

- Janeway suiting up for war.
- The doctor's "attention to detail."
- The doctor grabbing a macro virus and killing it with a hypospray. He then says: "Well, one down, ten billion to go."
- Janeway using Neelix', Paris', and Kim's resort program as bait for the macro viruses. Just like Picard luring the Borg in Star Trek VIII: First Contact. :)
- Janeway knifing one of the macroviruses then unleashing her antigen bomb.

**Comments:**

So the diplomatic genius Janeway finally falters and Neelix has to save the day in the beginning of this episode. That's a detail I like on many levels. It shows that Janeway isn't perfect, and that Neelix is actually useful. That may sound somewhat cruel, but that's the impression the writers have been giving us since day one. That Janeway is infallible and Neelix is just a cheerful passenger. Unfortunately, this episode spends most of its time on these "macro" viruses which are utter scientific nonsense. The main issue is a scaling problem; the characteristics of viruses scaled a meter wide don't translate at all. My favorite tidbit in this episode is how they were somehow able to hover. In the end, this episode has the same problems that TAS: The Infinite Vulcan had, really. A giant Spock is no better than a meter-wide hovering virus. At the risk of bashing this episode Voy: Threshold style, I must say I'm far more forgiving of this episode than I am of TAS: The Infinite Vulcan or Voy: Threshold because once you get over the science of the episode, it's really quite good. And honestly, some of the macro stuff could be rationalized. Aside from the opening scene where Neelix shines, this is Janeway's episode. I can't really say much else besides bravo and good job. This is one of Janeway's better episodes. The doctor too was also fun to watch. A decent episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x13 - Fair Trade**  
Originally Aired: 1997-1-8

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Neelix gets involved in a narcotics ring.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- Chakotay and Paris bought bio memetic gel in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- The plasma explosion.  
- Janeway confronting Neelix.

**Comments:**  
This episode is particularly annoying. Neelix' sudden lack of self confidence is explained well; he doesn't know anything about space beyond this point. Unfortunately, it takes him the entire episode to talk to Janeway about it. Janeway had every right to be angry with him. I would have been too.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x14 - Alter Ego**  
Originally Aired: 1997-1-15

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A holodeck character is obsessed with Tuvok.*

**Problems:**  
- Tuvok was beamed through shields in this episode.

**Factoids:**  
- This is the first episode to feature Kalto, or "Vulcan Chess".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok regarding the Vulcan game of Kalto: "Kalto is to Chess and Chess is to Tick Tack Toe."
- Tuvok playing Kalto with Marayna.
- Harry: "Hi. My name is Harry read-me-like-a-book Kim."
- Harry freaking out at Tuvok for playing Kalto with the Marayna.
- Marayna transferred herself to sickbay, stole the doctor's mobile emitter, and went to Tuvok's quarters. Hilarious!
- I like the discussion about just what Marayna could be. Nice references to TNG: Elementary, Dear Data and TNG: Ship in a Bottle.
- Tuvok, Paris, and Torres all being attacked by Hawaiian holodeck characters.
- Tuvok beaming to Marayna's space station.
- Tuvok and Harry making up in the end.

**Comments:**

This episode is interesting and original in a few ways. Firstly, we have our main characters obsessing over a holographic woman. First Harry wants to learn to be more Vulcan, then Tuvok seems to act more human when he lets himself get swept away by Marayna. Then Marayna turns into Moriarty style sentient hologram and attempts to take over the ship. Well, Marayna actually ended up being a woman on a space station keeping the nebula from blowing up; controllign the holographic woman remotely. The episode nicely explores the personalities of Harry, Tuvok, and Marayna respectively. The only thing neglected is this fascinating dampening technology. Personally, I would have liked Voyager to have spent some time figuring out how to adapt the technology to come up with a new way to prevent a warp core breach.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x15 - Coda**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-1-29

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Janeway is trapped in a time loop.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The repeating time loop.
- Everyone forgetting the time loop except Janeway.
- Janeway contracting the Vidiian Phage.
- The doctor attempting to euthanize Janeway.
- Janeway being disembodied.
- Janeway's dead father appearing.
- The memorial service.
- Janeway discovering what's really going on.
- Alien: "You're in a dangerous profession, captain, you face death every day. There'll be another time and I'll be waiting. Eventually you'll come into my matrix. And you will nourish me for a long long time." Janeway: "Go back to hell, coward."

**Comments:**

First a repeating time loop TNG: Cause and Effect style. Then nobody remembers the timeloop but Janeway. Then Janeway gets the Phage. Then the doctor tries to kill her. Then Janeway is disembodied TNG: The Next Phase style. Then Janeway's dead father appears and tells her she's dead. Then Janeway realizes she drempt it all. I'm not sure this episode could get more random if it tried! There are mixed opinions about this of course. Some of the beginning is largely a waste of time, but it's done in such a nicely exciting way that I forgive it. Honestly, the episode gets better and better as it goes along. The teaser was a lousy shuttle crash. We've seen enough of those and they're not particularly remarkable stories. In the end we have an alien who seems to feed on consciousness playing a game of illusions with Janeway. In this respect, the episode is much like TOS: The Cage, which also made good use of illusions. Much like TNG: Where Silence Has Lease, I must say bravo to this episode for it's skillful waste of time. Filler with style.



### Star Trek Voy - 3x16 - Blood Fever

My Rating - 7

Originally Aired: 1997-2-5

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Torres gets involved in a Vulcan mating ritual.*

#### **Problems:**

- You'd figure that in the 200 years the Federation has existed, there'd be more medical information about the Pon Farr by now. The original Enterprise's incident with Spock in TOS: Amok Time couldn't have been the only such Pon Farr incident between then and now.

#### **Factoids:**

- There are 73 male crewmembers aboard Voyager according to Vorik.  
- Tuvok was once injured in a combat simulation. He was artificially implanted with a new elbow joint.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres' very polite reaction to Vorik's proposal of marriage.  
- The doctor: "For such an intellectually enlightened race, Vulcans have a remarkably Victorian attitude about sex." Tuvok: "That is a very human judgment, doctor." The doctor: "Then here's a Vulcan one. I fail to see the logic in perpetuating ignorance about a basic biological function." Tuvok: "There is nothing logical about the Pon Farr."  
- Torres' moodswings.  
- Tuvok confronting Vorik.  
- The doctor suggesting that Vorik take out his... desires... on a holographic Vulcan female.  
- Torres finding Tom irresistible.  
- Vorik challenging Tom.  
- Vorik fighting Torres.  
- Tom and Torres discussing what happened in the turbolift at the end.  
- The Borg corpse...

#### **Comments:**

Vorik undergoes the Pon Farr, showing us once again how ridiculous Vulcan mating rituals are. I couldn't agree more with the doctor's complaints. The episode does make for some interesting entertainment though. Vorik pursues Torres, Torres pursues Tom. Tuvok tries to stay neutral but can't, and the doctor complains the whole way. Besides the emotional characters and the fighting, I was quite impressed with Chakotay's and Tuvok's handling of the xenophobic aliens in this episode. Someone invaded their world, so they dug deep underground and camouflaged their colony. At the very end of the episode, we find out who it was that invaded their world. The Borg... a very interesting cliffhanger.



### Star Trek Voy - 3x17 - Unity

My Rating - 8

Originally Aired: 1997-2-12

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Chakotay becomes involved with Borg exiles.*

#### **Problems:**

- Sure is a shame Janeway didn't think to steal a Transwarp Coil in this episode, when they had full unrestricted access to an undefended Borg ship, isn't it?  
- While the Borg coming back to life in this episode was a lot of fun to watch, the doctor did point out earlier in the episode that it was completely impossible. Seems he didn't know what he was talking about.

#### **Factoids:**

- Ensign Kaplan mentions a prospective Voyager ship landing.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Voyager running into a Borg ship. Creepy.  
- Chakotay discovering his guests' little secret.

- The doctor: "I must say, there's nothing like the vacuum of space to preserve a handsome corpse."
- The Borg corpse waking up in sickbay.
- Chakotay's neural link with the ex Borg.
- The Borg ship reactivating.
- The Borg ship self destructing.

**Comments:**

First, the bad. This episode suffers from redshirt syndrome. Ensign Kaplan is quickly disposed of to make this a Chakotay episode. That said, this is a great episode. It picks up on the cliffhanger in *Voy: Blood Fever*, the Borg Cube ghost ship is creepy and cool, and Torres' notion that the Borg may have been defeated by an enemy more powerful than they were is chilling, even if it turns out to be incorrect. This episode creates good continuity also with *TNG: The Best of Both Worlds*. Some of the people in this mini Collective were assimilated at Wolf 359. The moral dilemma of this episode is well presented. A group of ex Borg are killing each other so a faction pushes for the establishment of a new, independent Collective. In the end, Janeway refuses their request. I would too. But they impose their collective will on Chakotay and get their way. It is regrettable that Janeway squandered her opportunity to steal technology from the Borg ship, though she'll learn to stop playing it so safe later.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x18 - Darkling**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-2-19

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor turns violent.*

**Problems:**

- Janeway said: "I'm downloading the coordinates into Tuvok's tricorder." The proper term would have been upload, not download.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor consorting with holographic historical figures.
- The doctor displaying odd behavior to Torres.
- The doctor's fire assault. Clever, seeing as how he can't be burned. :)
- Torres explaining to the doctor that by integrating personalities of historical figures, he also acquired the "dark" traits of their personality as well, explaining his odd behavior.
- The evil doctor torturing Torres.
- Evil doctor regarding the doctor: "What a hollow excuse for a life."
- The holograms of historical figures after being tortured by the evil doctor.
- Kes: "What you're doing is wrong." The evil doctor: "Not at all! It's working perfectly!"
- The mid air beam up.

**Comments:**

A largely unremarkable episode. The doctor is once again yelled at for tweaking his program and causing it to glitch; one wonders why he keeps attempting this if he keeps screwing it up. Kes broke up with Neelix in *Voy: Warlord* and finds a way to fall in love at first sight with alien of the week. She eventually realizes such a relationship is a bad idea and opts not to leave the ship; all very predictable. The evil doctor was overly cliched and the focus of the episode was too much on interpersonal relationships and too less about the doctor's struggle to improve himself at all costs. Having said all that, there were many scenes to redeem this episode, even if it was flawed somewhat in premise and execution.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x19 - Rise**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-2-26

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A planet is bombarded with deadly asteroids.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Neelix' overly enthusiastic attitude and his fumbling with the backpack.
- Tuvok's little strength pissing contest with one of the aliens, crushing his fist.
- Neelix freaking out at Tuvok.
- Tuvok: "I am looking for Mr. Neelix' instinct. Perhaps it will be marked."
- Alien regarding having pushed Tuvok off the lift: "Mr. Tuvok returned to the surface."
- Neelix to the ambassador: "Mr. Sklar returned to the surface."

**Comments:**

Redirecting asteroids to planets as a method of conquest is an interesting concept and an original plot. Unfortunately the episode concentrates very little on these would-be conquerors and nearly exclusively on Tuvok and Neelix. Not that there's anything wrong with that; it's just that the aliens of the week were particularly more interesting to me than another Neelix vs. Tuvok conflict. With respect to their conflict though, the episode reminded me quite a bit of the conflicts Spock and Dr. McCoy used to have. And in that respect, the episode was quite entertaining. Overall the episode is decent. It has some untapped potential though.

**Star Trek Voy - 3x20 - Favorite Son****Originally Aired:** 1997-3-19**My Rating - 2****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Kim becomes convinced he's a native of Taresia.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- We get to see Harry's mother in his dreams.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok: "Perhaps you are experiencing a paradoxial state-dependent associative phenomenon."
- Janeway: "Déjà vu."
- Kim firing on the alien ship seemingly unprovoked.
- Harry tying up one of the women and knocking out the other to escape.
- The beam out.
- Harry and Tom talking in the end.

**Comments:**

Another "Harry finds paradise" type episode. Unfortunatley, the aliens in this episode were far more interesting than Harry's situation. I would have preferred to see more confrontation between the two peoples and perhaps some kind of outlining of their history, but we didn't get it. It's remarkable to note that every time Harry finds paradise, it's a fake and it's ripped away from him. I wonder why the writers enjoy doing this to him? Poor guy.

**Star Trek Voy - 3x21 - Before and After****Originally Aired:** 1997-4-9**My Rating - 9****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Kes begins moving backward in time.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is ridiculously prophetic. Many of the events of this alternate future that we see do come true in one form or another, such as the meeting of the Krenim and the ensuing Year of Hell, as well as Joe Carey's death, and Tom's relationship with Torres. Additionally, this episode predicts that Voyager will encounter the Krenim between 6 and 11 months from now.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Doctor "Van Gogh", complete with hair.
- Captain Chakotay.
- Kes married to Tom.
- Harry married to Tom's daughter...
- Neelix: "It's good to see that old lung is still working, Kessie."
- Neelix as a security officer.
- Neelix: "You keep working on that sense of humor, Commander Vulcan. You'll get it one of these days."
- Tom describing the Krenim and the Year of Hell. Janeway, Torres, and Carey all died in the Year of Hell.
- Tom regarding the chronoton torpedos: "They were able to penetrate our shields because their torpedos were in a constant state of temporal flux."
- Harry: "So how does it feel to be a grandfather?" Tom: "A lot better than it does to have you as a son in law."
- Tom: "Doctor Van Gogh? I thought you settled on Mozart?"
- Kes giving birth to her daughter.
- Chakotay: "I don't understand how these torpedos are ripping right through our shields!"
- Kes: "These torpedos are chronoton based. They're passing through our shields because they're in a state of temporal flux."
- Kes discovering the temporal variance of the chronoton torpedo.
- Kes jumping back to the end of Voy: Caretaker.
- Kes' birth.
- Kes' mother: "I think one day she'll see the sun."
- The doctor asking what kind of medical breakthroughs he's going to make, and the crew asking about other future events.

**Comments:**

This episode is much like TNG: Future Imperfect, TNG: Cause and Effect, and TNG: Parallels all combined. And I must say, a fantastic combination. There is one episode which uses the Kes character better than any other, it is this one. There are numerous repercussions of this episode. One interesting, though perhaps trivial change, is that Kes now has long hair. This perhaps signifies that the time period Kes woke up in as the "present" is in fact quite a bit later than the time period of the previous episode. Besides this, Kes has given Janeway foreknowledge of the Krenim, a race which they will encounter later. Additionally, this episode predicts that Tom and Torres will form a relationship, as well as Lt. Carey's death. I hate putting mass spoilers in a review, but this is the most prophetic episode of Star Trek ever done. I'll be referencing it several times in later Voyager episodes.

**Star Trek Voy - 3x22 - Real Life**

Originally Aired: 1997-4-23

**My Rating - 6****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***The Doctor experiences family life.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Harry beamed a whole shuttle directly into the shuttle bay in this episode. Interesting.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor's "ridiculously perfect" family and Torres' reaction.

- Tom hitting on Torres.
- Tom getting sucked into the space anomaly.
- The death of the doctor's holographic daughter.

#### Comments:

The doctor chooses another name in this episode. This time it's "Kenneth". I guess the events of the episode make it seem pretty obvious why he doesn't stick with this name either. One wonders how Torres could be so cruel to the doctor as to program up something like that. The episode would have been better if Torres' involvement in it hadn't ceased immediately after she reprogrammed the doctor's family. Overall, it's very moving in the end, and I enjoyed the anomaly of the week plot too. But the distinct lack of real consequences leaves one sort of unsatisfied.



#### **Star Trek Voy - 3x23 - Distant Origin**

**My Rating - 10**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-4-30

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien professor kidnaps Chakotay.*

#### Problems:

- There are 148 life forms aboard Voyager according to Voth sensors. This would seem to be too many people, considering how many people have died since the last time we got a crew count in Voy: The 37's, which was 152 people. Way more than 4 people have either died or left the ship since then. Though it's possible there are crewmen aboard with pets, which would certainly constitute a life form to Voth sensors, though perhaps unlikely.

#### Factoids:

- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode of Voyager Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Best Episode Ever Award".
- The Voth have transwarp.
- Gegen calls Voyager: "The Voyager." Another rare use of the word "the" to prefix Voyager, unlike the common use of it on front of "The Enterprise".

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The Voth analyzing the human remains.
- Gegen approaching the Ministry of Elders with his Distant Origin theory, the human remains, and his request for an expedition.
- Good continuity with regards to the station at the Nekrit Expanse from Voy: Fair Trade. It's kind of ironic that the Voth believe the fake green plasma is actually Voyager's warp plasma.
- Gegen: "Simple binary system. I've downloaded their database." Wow. That was fast.
- Veer regarding the Voyager social structure: "It's obviously hierarchical with clear differences in status and rank. The males appear to be subordinate to that female. Perhaps a matriarchy."
- Gegen: "My conclusion exactly."
- Chakotay's meeting with Gegen.
- Janeway plotting the evolutionary model of the Voth.
- The Voth city ship beaming Voyager into its hull... Wow.
- Gegen and Chakotay confronting the Ministry of Elders.
- Chakotay: "I know from the history of my own planet that change is difficult. New ideas are often greeted with skepticism, even fear. But sometimes those ideas are accepted and when they are progress is made. Eyes are opened." Minister: "When I open my eyes to this theory, what I see appalls me. I see my race fleeing your wretched planet. A group of pathetic refugees. Crawling and scratching their way across the galaxy. Stumbling into this domain. I see a race with no birthright. No legacy. That is unacceptable." Chakotay: "I see something very different, minister. An ancient race of saurians. Probably the first intelligent life on Earth. Surrounded by some of the most terrifying creatures that ever lived. And yet they thrived. Developed language and culture. And technology. And when the planet was threatened with disaster, they boldly launched themselves into space! Crossed what must have seemed like unimaginable distances! Facing the unknown every day. But somehow they stayed together. Kept going. With the same courage that had served them before. Until they reached this quadrant where they laid the foundation of what was to become the great Voth culture. Deny that past and you deny the struggle and achievements of your ancestors. Deny your origins on Earth and you deny your true heritage."
- Minister to Chakotay: "It would be in your best interest if I never saw you again."

### Comments:

For almost the first entire 15 minutes of the show, there isn't a single scene aboard Voyager. We're shown the perspective of a mysterious reptilian alien race, the Voth, investigating what is to them a strange species: humans. We get the rather surreal experience of watching "dinosaurs" excavate human bones (who is actually Hogan who died in Voy: Basics, this is genius writing in more ways than one), then as they catch up to Voyager we get to see them analyze the alien human culture. Some great funny tidbits, like the Voth watching Tom court Torres, the conclusion that Voyager is a matriarchy after watching Janeway for a few minutes, and Gegen's first words to Chakotay: he knew his instinct was to flee. ;) These details aside, the critical issue of the episode is of religion vs. science and it couldn't have been explored better. The Voth culture satirizes our own present day culture's evolution vs. scripture controversy with this fictional Distant Origin theory vs. Doctrine controversy. The dialogue of the episode couldn't be more nicely constructed; there is pointed discussion all around. No character involved is wasted and the episode leaves the viewer profoundly moved, with a deep sympathy for Gegen, for he, like our very own historical Galileo Galilei goes down a martyr. He sacrifices his science to save Voyager from the wrath of the Minister's power; her power is absolute, like a 16th century Pope. She prevails despite the fact that she neither disproves Gegen nor seems entirely convinced of her own Doctrine herself. My final comment regarding this episode is that I hope we once again some day see the Voth. They've got to be one of the best alien races ever presented in Star Trek and this episode was one of the best Star Trek episodes I've ever seen. Well done.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x24 - Displaced**  
Originally Aired: 1997-5-7

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager is pirated by an alien race.*

### Problems:

- Why didn't Janeway steal the translocator instead of "disabling" it?

### Factoids:

- This episode confirms the last episode's crew count at being 148.
- The translocator has a range of ten light years.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Torres and Tom arguing in the teaser.
- Torres asking hostilely asking Harry if she's in fact hostile. Irony.
- The doctor: "Welcome to sickbay. Take a number."
- Chakotay sabotaging the ship.
- The doctor, regarding Torres reconfiguring him: "Then I can begin my new career as a tricorder."
- Torres disabling the doctor's speech during her and Tom's argument.
- Torres: "Klingons have much less tolerance for the cold than humans do." Tom: "I thought that was the Cardassians?" Torres: "They just complain about it more."
- Janeway taking over the translocator.

### Comments:

The extraordinary is becoming routine. This episode is totally boring. Only the basic premise is actually interesting; taking over a starship with a long range transporter, making it look like an innocent anomaly. Speaking of this transporter, one would think that a transporter with 10 light years range would be something Janeway might want to appropriate for her troubles. Oh well. A decent premise with an annoying execution. An extra point for some good scenes with the doctor as well as Torres and Tom.



**Star Trek Voy - 3x25 - Worst Case Scenario**  
Originally Aired: 1997-5-14

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A holo-novel program becomes all too real.*



**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Kes loses her wig... er... I mean her long hair in this episode since her role takes place in Voyager season 1.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chakotay starting a mutiny out of nowhere...
- Seska's appearance.
- Tom walking in on Torres' holodeck experience.
- Neelix, Tom, and Torres discussing the how the holonovel reacts to different situations.
- The holonovel ending right when Tom meets Tom. :)
- Tuvok declaring himself the author of the holonovel.
- Janeway showing enthusiasm for the holonovel. That's kind of surreal.
- Holographic Janeway vaporizing herself due to the sabotaged phaser rifle.
- Tuvok reconfiguring the phaser to overload on Seska.

**Comments:**

The writers were trying to set up a mysterious opening plot, similar to what they did in Voy: Distant Origin. But it seemed pretty obvious directly after the opening credits that things weren't exactly as they seemed. Tuvok mentioned something about Chakotay's "new duties" as first officer, and Torres was called an ensign by Chakotay. If the mystery was to be successful, they should have cleaned up those details. Instead, the mystery was totally unsuccessful and I knew right off the bat that this was all holographic. Seska's appearance kind of solidified this. Yes, we're on Voyager in early season one. Either through a holodeck program or some kind of temporal anomaly. At least the holodeck thing was more original. That said, I did enjoy the concept of this story quite a bit. And it's something of an irony that in the last aired episode of Star Trek, we get a story in which all the Maquis are slaughtered. (DS9: Blaze of Glory) In this episode they come back in full force through Voyager. I guess the writers don't want to let them die. ;) This harmless and cute story goes quickly sour once again though. It seems so petty that Seska had nothing better to do than to tamper with Tuvok's holonovel in the small chance that it might score her some revenge some day. So while the episode is entertaining and exciting, the flaws make an average episode at best.

**Star Trek Voy - 3x26 - Scorpion, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-5-21

**My Rating - 10**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Janeway faces an enemy more dangerous than the Borg.*

**Problems:**

- The Borg vessels are disabled 5.2 light years away and Janeway orders to go there at warp 2. This would take months!

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Voyager Award".
- This episode is the first to feature Janeway running the Leonardo Da Vinci program.
- Tuvok claims the Breen use organic vessels.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing the Borg annihilated so easily in the teaser.
- 15 Borg vessels passing by Voyager. Chilling.
- Janeway: "In the words of Jean-Luc Picard: 'In their collective state, the Borg are utterly without mercy. Driven by one will alone. The will to conquer. They are beyond redemption. Beyond reason.' Then there's captain Amisov of the Endeavor: 'It is my opinion that the Borg are as close to pure evil as any race we've ever encountered.'"
- Paris upon seeing the destroyed Borg vessels: "Who could do this to the Borg?"
- The alien attacking Harry. I love his blood curdling scream.
- The alien bio ship firing on Voyager.
- Kes, regarding the alien that spoke to her: "It said the weak will perish."

- Chakotay regarding the Northwest Passage: "It's clear of Borg activity for a very good reason."
- Leonardo: "What do you see?" Janeway: "A wall. With candlelight reflecting on it. Why? What do you see?" Leonardo: "A flock of sterlings. The leaves of an oak. A horse's tail. A thief with a noose around his neck... And a wall with the candlelight reflecting on it."
- Chakotay: "A scorpion was walking along the bank of a river wondering how to get to the other side. Suddenly he saw a fox. He asked the fox to take him on his back across the river. The fox said, no. If I do that you'll sting me and I'll drown. The scorpion assured him, if I did that, we'd both drown. So the fox thought about it and finally agreed. So the Scorpion climbed up on his back and the fox began to swim. But halfway across the river, the scorpion stung him. As the poison filled his veins, the fox turned to the scorpion and said, why did you do that? Now you'll drown too! I couldn't help it, said the scorpion. It's my nature."
- Voyager confronting a Borg vessel.
- Species 8472 destroying a Borg planet. The cliffhanger with a Borg vessel fleeing 8472 with Voyager in tow was fantastic.

#### Comments:

One of Voyager's best offerings. Right from the beginning we're shown the ominous destruction of Borg ships by an unseen force. Afterwards, we see more Borg ships in one episode than we've seen in all of Star Trek so far. The exciting plot and the great musical score grow more and more intense as the episode progresses until finally it ends with the best cliffhanger since TNG: The Best of Both Worlds.



#### **Star Trek Voy - 4x01 - Scorpion, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-9-3

**My Rating - 10**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager gets a new shipmate.*

#### Problems:

- This episode establishes that there are 32 photon torpedos left on Voyager. Unless they've found some way to manufacture them themselves, this number is WAY too high.
- How could Seven of Nine talk over the comm. whilst she was on a depressurized deck?

#### Factoids:

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Voyager Award".
- The opening credits were altered for this episode. Jeri Ryan was credited for Seven of Nine and Jennifer Lien's name for Kes was removed. The Kes character is actually a guest star in this episode!
- The diagram Seven shows for the "multikinetic neutronic mine" is actually a picture of the Borg ship from TNG: Descent.
- We see Seven of Nine as a young girl and her parents in this episode very, very briefly during Chakotay's invasion of her mind during the "Scorpion" backup plan. Interestingly, all the same actors in the extremely brief flashbacks will be hired again for future episodes. That's some nice preplanning.
- This episode establishes that Seven of Nine's given name is Annika.
- Borg species designation: 8472, name unknown. The Borg fought a war against them which they almost, but Voyager allied themselves with the Borg to stop the 8472 threat.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The teaser. Picks up right where part one left off brilliantly.
- Janeway and Tuvok aboard the Borg cube.
- Seven of Nine's introduction.
- Seven of Nine: "Seven of Nine, Tertiary Adjunct of Unimatrix Zero-One, but you may call me Seven of Nine."
- Seven of Nine: "Your torpedos are inadequate. They lack the necessary range and dispersive force."
- Tuvok: "How did you obtain this information?" Seven: "We are Borg." Tuvok: "Naturally."
- Seven of Nine: "If we transport 500 drones onto your vessel, do you believe you could offer sufficient resistance?" Janeway: "We'd die trying."
- The Borg ship defending Voyager from species 8472, then sacrificing itself to protect Voyager.
- Seven of Nine: "You are erratic. Conflicted. Disorganised. Every decision is debated, every action questioned, every individual entitled to their own small opinion. You lack harmony, cohesion,

greatness. It will be your undoing."

- Chakotay blowing all the Borg out into space.
- The revelation that the Borg started the war with species 8472.
- Chakotay to Seven regarding species 8472: "A species as malevolent as your own."
- Seven of Nine regarding species 8472: "They are the apex of biological evolution."
- The doctor being underappreciated after he healed Janeway.
- Janeway: "I won't be caught tinkering with the deflector when those aliens attack."
- Janeway: "We're going to war."
- Kes, in telepathic contact with species 8472: "They say our galaxy is impure. Its proximity is a threat to their genetic integrity. They said your galaxy will be purged."
- Voyager engaging species 8472.
- Seven of Nine attempting to take over the ship and Chakotay invading her mind, initiating the "Scorpion" backup plan.

#### Comments:

The Chakotay vs. Janeway conflict comes to a head here. Interestingly, I think they're both right. I think Janeway's idea to form an alliance with the Borg was the correct decision and I think the judgment call Chakotay made to end the alliance when he did was correct also. It's something of an irony. The two needed each other. Voyager needed them both in command at certain times. Janeway's too aggressive and Chakotay is too passive. But their combined leadership saved the day. Personally, I thought species 8472 backed off way too quickly. They must have overestimated the Borg's ability to defend themselves with the modified nano probes. This isn't necessarily unrealistic, just annoying. I was looking forward to a long and drawn out conflict between the Borg and species 8472 with Voyager entangled in the middle. The writers, however, were not. And it's largely all wrapped up at the end of this episode. In the end, Voyager is still in Borg space, but the Borg are ignoring them. Probably because they have lost so many planets, ships, and drones that they're still rebuilding their society. A single ship in their space would seem inconsequential. Most importantly, Voyager has gained a new crewmember though. A human former Borg.



#### **Star Trek Voy - 4x02 - The Gift**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-9-10

**My Rating - 5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager adjusts to its new crewmember.*

#### Problems:

- According to Janeway, Tuvok's meditation lamp was purchased from a Vulcan master who doubled the price when he saw the Starfleet insignias. Well, the Federation does not use a currency driven economy. The Vulcans as Federation members wouldn't be selling things to other Federation members. Furthermore, the Vulcan master would have no reason to double his price upon noticing that his buyers were Starfleet officers, seeing as how Starfleet officers do not get paid. On the contrary, Janeway seemed to imply that Starfleet officers are very well paid and that the Vulcan master knew this which is why he doubled his price.

#### Factoids:

- Like the previous episode, the Kes character is actually a guest star in this episode.
- This episode establishes that Seven of Nine's given name is Annika Hansen.
- Species 259 was assimilated in galactic cluster 3. They contributed autonomous regeneration sequencers to the Borg. Galactic cluster 3 is supposedly beyond Ensign Kim's comprehension. Seven of Nine described it as being a "transmaterial energy plane intersecting 22 billion omniscordial life forms."
- Janeway claims to have met Borg who were freed from the Collective. Given her lines, it would seem she's talking about people other than Jean-Luc Picard.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The opening scene showing Voyager still "augmented" with Borg systems everywhere.
- Kes beginning to display extraordinary powers.
- Janeway researching Seven of Nine's past.
- Kes saving Seven of Nine's life.
- Seven of Nine working in Engineering.
- Kes manipulating the flame in Tuvok's Vulcan mental exercises.
- Kes stopping Seven of Nine from contacting the Borg.

- Janeway: "I've got an Ocampan who wants to be something more and a Borg who's afraid of becoming something less. Here's to Vulcan stability."
- Janeway: "One voice can be stronger than a thousand voices."
- Kes blowing up the corridors as she walked through them.
- Kes throwing Voyager 9,500 light years closer to home.

#### Comments:

This episode is more like *Voy: Scorpion, Part III*, as it directly deals with the events of the two parter. Never before has Voyager done a three part arc before. Interestingly, Seven of Nine says in this episode that Janeway won't be able to change her nature and that she will betray Voyager. When Seven said that, Chakotay's scorpion speech was ringing in my head. I'm not sure if the connection was intentional or not, but certainly interesting. In some ways I could have done without the scene depicting Janeway's private goodbye conversation with Kes. It was a little too feminine and tearful for my tastes. But I understand that it was necessary. It's just that I find it vaguely ridiculous trying to imagine a scene like that between Troi and Crusher, or Kira and Dax. In some ways it felt overacted. In the end, I suppose Kes was given a suitable amount of closure. Her scene with Neelix certainly could have been done better. The reason for their breakup is written off as a joke. And the suddenness of her leaving the ship is kind of annoying. I realize that behind the scenes, Jennifer Lien wanted to leave the show and all, but I would have expected a better farewell. To me, the loss of the Kes character really is a loss. I like Seven of Nine, but I liked Kes more. And I was really looking forward to seeing her grow old like was depicted in *Voy: Before and After*. Oh well. What's done is done. No more Kes. As a final comment, it's remarkable to note that this is the first of many times Voyager cuts substantial sum of time from its journey due to some extraordinary means. Thanks Kes!



**Star Trek Voy - 4x03 - Day of Honor**  
**Originally Aired:** 1997-9-17

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Torres learns the true meaning of honor.*

#### Problems:

- Paris says: "I've never navigated a transwarp conduit before." This would seem to contradict *Voy: Threshold*. Not that I care. Most fans, including myself, do not consider that episode canon.

#### Factoids:

- This is one of the only Torres-centric episodes in the season because the actress got pregnant and the writers didn't want to work it into the story.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Torres' bad day in the teaser.
- Seven's response to when Torres asked her if she ever feels remorse for the things she did as a Borg: "No."
- Torres' decidedly negative experience on the holodeck, attempting to celebrate the Day of Honor.
- Seven to Paris regarding any advice she can give him regarding navigating a transwarp conduit: "You will have no idea what you're doing."
- Torres ejecting the warpcore.
- Tom: "How much worse could it get? Having to dump the warpcore has to be the low point of any day."
- Torres and Tom having to evacuate the shuttle.
- Tom: "Why is it that we have to get beamed into space in environmental suits before I can initiate first contact procedures?"
- Seven's solution.
- Torres declaring her love for Paris just before Voyager rescues them.

#### Comments:

A multifaceted episode exploring both Seven of Nine's desire to integrate smoothly with Voyager's crew and the developing relationship between Torres and Paris. Additionally, the aliens of the week were interesting as well. While I found them personally annoying in execution, the idea for them was really cool. Voyager just leapt 9,500 light years closer to home, and they're still so close to Borg territory that they're still seeing the aftermath of the Borg Collective everywhere. Additionally, I thought it was very intelligent to use Seven of Nine's character to attempt to reproduce Borg

transwarp technology. It seems Voyager's systems aren't capable of creating a transwarp conduit. Finally, Seven of Nine helping the Caatati was very much in the spirit of Star Trek, and is just the kind of thing I wanted to see from her character. All in all, a slightly above average Voyager episode.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 4x04 - Nemesis**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-9-24

**My Rating - 2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Chakotay is caught in the middle of a war.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode is not to be confused with the film Star Trek X: Nemesis.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom's over enthusiasm for wanting to go rescue Chakotay.
- The revelation that Janeway and Chakotay are on opposite sides.
- Tuvok encountering Chakotay.
- Chakotay: "I wish it were as easy to stop hating as it was to start."

#### **Comments:**

There are nuggets of gold in this episode but you have to work hard to find them. Much of the basic premise is quite flawed, but there are nice things in the execution. I was especially fond of the alien slang. Unfortunately, the first entire 20 minutes of the episode is pointless fighting. We get a few decent scenes on Voyager concerning the plans to rescue Chakotay. I liked Tom's overly enthusiastic desire to rescue Chakotay. And I liked the fact that Janeway and Chakotay were siding with opposite sides. But again, the fighting took too much of the episode's time and served only to waste time. Additionally, the aliens Vori in this episode looked exactly like humans. Granted, we could justify this by saying there was a fair amount of illusionary tactics and mind control involved causing that, it still came off as kind of cheap.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 4x05 - Revulsion**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-10-1

**My Rating - 5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor encounters a psychopathic hologram.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- The attraction between Tom and Torres has obviously been building up a while, but the fact that it would actually blossom into a real relationship was predicted by Voy: Before and After. This episode marks the coming true of that prediction.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok's promotion ceremony.
- Torres and Tom finally getting together.
- The doctor enlisting Paris as his new nurse.
- Seven to Kim: "The last time we worked together I struck you at the base of your skull and attempted to contact the Collective." Kim: "These things happen." Seven: "I assure you it will not happen again." Kim: "That's good to know." Seven: "I've designed new navigational sensors. Some of the alphanumeric are Borg." Kim: "No problem. I always wanted to learn Borg!" Seven: "That is difficult to believe." Kim: "I was kidding. It was a joke. You know, humor." Seven: "I understand the concept of humor. It may not be apparent, but I am often amused by Human behavior."
- Kim trying to protect Seven from the electrical conduit, not realizing that her arm can withstand the charge because of Borg implants.
- The isomorph freaking out at Torres.

- Tom insinuating that Harry's attracted to Seven of Nine.
- The isomorph reaching into Torres' chest and squeezing her heart.
- Seven of Nine catching on to Harry's advances and becoming a bit... aggressive.

**Comments:**

A decent, though rather average episode. In fact, the main plot was rather dull. It was pretty obvious from the beginning, especially because of the teaser scene that the isomorph was blatantly evil. So the plot turned into "watch as our unsuspecting heros get crossed trying to help evil hologram." More interestingly, it's the subplots that make the episode nicely watchable. Tuvok was promoted, Tom was enlisted as the doctor's new nurse, Tom and Torres finally started having a real relationship, and they're building a new astrometrics array out of Borg technology. This could lead to a faster route home, and/or better sensors and maybe even some new sets aboard ship. I even liked the Harry pursues Seven of Nine subplot. Tom was right, the poor guy just has no luck with women!



**Star Trek Voy - 4x06 - The Raven**

**My Rating - 6**

**Originally Aired:** 1997-10-8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Seven of Nine seeks to rejoin the Collective.*

**Problems:**

- The graphics for Seven of Nine's shuttle change from one model to a completely different type a few times in this episode.

**Factoids:**

- Borg species designation: Talaxian, 218. A relatively low number, indicating that the Borg first encountered Talaxians many thousands of years ago.
- Borg species designation: Vulcan, 3259. The Borg must have first encountered Vulcans in the battle of Wolf 359.
- We see Seven of Nine and her parents in her flashbacks in this episode. They're the same actors as we saw in Voy: Scorpion.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven of Nine's negative reaction to Janeway's Leonardo Da Vinci program.
- Seven of Nine insisting that being a member of the Borg Collective was not a traumatic experience, that she was in fact raised by the Borg.
- Seven: "You are Talaxian." Neelix: "Guilty as charged." Seven: "Species 218. Your biological and technological distinctiveness was added to our own." Neelix: "I hadn't realized that." Seven: "A small freighter. Containing a crew of thirty nine. Taken in the Dolmine sector. They were easily assimilated. Their dense musculature made them excellent drones."
- Seven of Nine's first eating experience.
- Seven of Nine's Borg shielding starting to work again.
- Seven of Nine walking through the forcefields.
- Seven of Nine destroying the shuttlebay door.
- Chakotay suggesting that Janeway has failed to change the nature of the beast, citing one of her quotes: "I will betray you."
- Seven of Nine's tweaked out shuttle making quick work of the B'omar.
- Tuvok fighting Seven of Nine. She Vulcan neck pinches him!
- Seven: "Vulcan, species 3259. Your enlarged neocortex produces superior analytical abilities."

**Comments:**

A good episode with good sprinklings of continuity. Nice continuity with the previous episode, with Torres poking at Harry for being in love with Seven. And nice continuity regarding Seven's personal logs. Seven of Nine finds Harry's behavior easy to predict. Great connection with previous episodes when Harry lamented about people saying that. Especially when he's in love. ;) Finally, good continuity with regards to Voy: Scorpion. We get to see more of Seven's parents and we get to see the wrecked ship on which she was assimilated. Unfortunately, we don't get her full biographical past. That'll have to wait for another episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 4x07 - Scientific Method**  
Originally Aired: 1997-10-29

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*An alien race conducts dangerous experiments.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there are 257 individual rooms on Voyager. I don't know if this counts the corridors.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom's site to site transport.
- Janeway enduring the doctor's "therapy."
- Janeway pickong on Torres and Paris for their lack of discretion.
- Chakotay losing his hair, and his rapid aging.
- Chakotay and Neelix competing with each other over their disabilities.
- The doctor hiding on the holodeck in the Leonardo Da Vinci simulation and Seven of Nine the tricorder.
- Janeway: "Don't 13 department heads report to you every day?" Tuvok: "Yes." Janeway: "Well, straighten them out." Tuvok: "Shall I flog them as well?"
- Tuvok getting in the way of Seven of Nine, then Seven exposing the aliens to prove her point.
- The aliens killing a Voyager crewmember. He blood pressure was 360 over 125!
- Janeway flying Voyager into a binary pulsar.
- Torres and Tom speculating that the aliens started the relationship between them.

**Comments:**

An intelligently constructed episode that uses the full range of characters the show has to offer and features a satisfying climax. Janeway flying Voyager into the binary pulsar has to be one of my all time favorite Voyager moments. That's just the kind of "reckless" behavior I like about her. And despite what she might want others to think, she is pretty reckless! Hell, it's her recklessness that got them all stranded in the delta quadrant after all. I wouldn't want to serve under her command, but her behavior makes for some interesting episodes. That said, this episode's basic theme has been done before. We got to see aliens experimenting on the crew in TNG: Schisms already. But this episode is not just some blatant rip off of TNG: Schisms. There are elements from at least 3 other episodes incorporated into the plot as well, making this episode one of the best "rehashes" I've seen in a while. It felt mostly original, it was exciting, it didn't center on a single character too much, and the story flowed well. Overall, above average.



**Star Trek Voy - 4x08 - Year of Hell, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1997-11-5

My Rating - 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A temporal weapon threatens Voyager and the timeline.*

**Problems:**

- Why didn't Janeway change course as soon as she heard the species name "Krenim"? Did she forget her warnings about the Krenim from Kes in Voy: Before and After? Maybe, and perhaps interestingly, one of Annorax' temporal incursions erased the warning from history?

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Voyager Award".
- Thanks to the astrometrics lab, Seven of Nine plotted a more efficient route to the alpha quadrant. This eliminates 5 years from Voyager's journey. This means Voyager has traveled the equivalent of 18 years. (10 years [Kes boost] + 5 years [Seven of Nine boost] + 3 seasons = 18 years.)
- The temporal variance of the chronoton torpedo is 1.47 microseconds. This is exactly what Kes determined in Voy: Before and After.
- Janeway's birthday is May 20th.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- The doctor: "Who would have thought that this eclectic group of voyagers could actually become a family? Starfleet, Maquis, Klingon, Talaxian, hologram, Borg, even Mr. Paris."
- The temporal shockwave changing everything.
- Chakotay: "I still don't understand why these torpedos are ripping right through our shields."
- Tuvok: "Their weapons are chronoton based. They're penetrating our shields because they are in a state of temporal flux." I love how the dialog is exactly like *Voy: Before and After*.
- Janeway deploying torpedos like mines.
- The conduits on deck 5 exploding.
- The doctor unable to keep the hatch open long enough for two of the crewmembers who couldn't make it in time.
- Janeway: "Abandon ship? The answer's no. I'm not breaking up the family, Chakotay."
- Seven: "The Phoenix." Harry: "What?" Seven: "The correct response to your query. The vessel Ensign Kim was describing. It was designated the Phoenix." Harry: "Not bad. I didn't realize you knew so much about Earth history." Seven: "I don't. But the Borg were present during those events." Harry: "Really?" Seven: "It's a complicated story. Perhaps another time."
- Tom, regarding his transverse bulkheads: "I was inspired by an ancient steam ship, the Titanic. The engineers of the day constructed a series of special bulkheads, sort of like a honeycomb, that would lower into place if they suffered a major hull breach. In theory, they could stay afloat even with half the ship filled with water." Janeway: "The Titanic? As I recall, it sank."
- Seven of Nine examining the undetonated chronoton torpedo exactly the way Kes did in *Voy: Before and After*.
- Paris: "Physician heal thyself."
- Tuvok shielding Seven of Nine from the chronoton torpedo explosion.
- A blind Tuvok, being assisted by Seven of Nine.
- Seven of Nine and Tuvok discussing the "less than meticulous" domestic habits of most humanoids.
- Janeway: "Seven, we could use a little bit of that Borg efficiency right about now."
- Voyager protected from Annorax' temporal incursion because of their temporal shielding. I love how confused everyone got when they witnessed the incursion without being affected themselves.
- Janeway to Annorax: "It seems your Imperium never existed. Perhaps you could shed some light on this?"
- Voyager losing its outer hull.

### Comments:

This is an amazing episode. While the cliffhanger isn't particularly compelling, the basic story is. It seems that the Krenim Imperium built a temporal weapon and something went wrong. Annorax is on a quest to "restore" his Imperium. To what end, we don't know. But surely the second part reveals this information. Besides the already downright thrilling story and the wonderfully intelligent construction of this episode, there's oodles of trivia, tidbits, and fascinating details. One of my favorites of which is the connection between this episode and *Voy: Before and After*. Everything is nearly exactly what that episode said it would be in chilling detail. Even the lines of the characters regarding the chronoton torpedos are exact, as is the timing; Kes said Voyager would encounter the Krenim in six to eleven months. Sure enough, she was right. Another nice detail is the new astrometrics lab. It ties up the loose end left by *Voy: Revulsion* a few episodes ago. Supposedly Harry and Seven of Nine have been working on that lab since that episode. Additionally, there's the episode's marvelous eye candy to redeem it. Everything from deck five blowing apart, to the space battles, to the outer hull ripping off were all well done. I liked the detail regarding Seven of Nine mentioning that the Borg were present during *Star Trek VIII: First Contact*, and I loved her interaction with Tuvok in this episode. The friendship they had seemed to me to be a very natural and logical (pun intended) development. Overall, some of the finest quality writing ever shown on *Star Trek* and it's only the first half!



**Star Trek Voyager - 4x09 - Year of Hell, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 1997-11-12

**My Rating - 10**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The destruction of Voyager changes history.*



**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Voyager Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor: "I told you eight minutes on that deck. Not eight and a half, not nine, and certainly not twelve!" Janeway: "Would you rather have an indoor nebula?"
- Annorax serving a dinner of "lost histories" to Chakotay and Paris, comprised of "artifacts" of extinct civilizations.
- Annorax: "Beyond study and instrumentation, there is instinct. Not everybody has the ability to truly perceive time. It's colors, it's moods."
- Seven regarding Neelix' new endurance drink: "It is offensive. Fortunately taste is irrelevant."
- Tuvok discussing with Seven her questioning the captain's orders.
- Chakotay's simulation, wiping out a comet and because of the comet's history, wiping out 8,000 civilizations.
- Janeway going into deflector control despite the fire.
- Janeway discovering the watch Chakotay replicated for her. He disobeyed orders by not recycling it.
- Chakotay: "You're trying to rationalize genocide! One species is significant! A single life is significant!"
- Annorax: "When I tell you that time has moods, a disposition to be intuited, I'm not speaking metaphorically." Chakotay: "What do you mean?" Annorax: "Anger is one of its moods. Anger and the desire for retribution. Vengeance. Time itself is trying to punish me for my arrogance. It has kept me from my wife; denied me my future!"
- Tom: "This guy thinks that time has a personal grudge against him! That's called paranoia, Chakotay, with a hint of meglomania!"
- Janeway's reason for staying on Voyager while everyone else leaves: "Captain goes down with the ship."
- Tuvok: "Curious. I have never understood the human compulsion to emotionally bond with inanimate objects. This vessel has done nothing. It is an assemblage of bulkheads. Conduits. Tritanium. Nothing more." Janeway: "Oh you're wrong. It's much more than that. This ship has been our home. It's kept us together. It's been part of our family. As illogical as this might sound, I feel as close to Voyager as any other member of my crew. It's carried us, Tuvok, even nurtured us. And right now it needs one of us."
- The final battle with Annorax' ship.
- The free view of space with the front portion of Voyager's bridge ripped off.
- Janeway: "If that ship is destroyed, all of history might be restored. And this is one year I'd like to forget... Time's up!"
- Voyager crashing into Annorax' ship.

**Comments:**

Well, first let's talk about what I didn't like. Putting everyone off the ship except the main characters was a petty trick and I didn't see much point to it. Additionally, the coalition Janeway formed with the aliens seemed a little convenient. I realize a great deal of time has passed, but it would have been nice to see at least a little bit about how this coalition was formed, or even a few sets aboard the alien ships, or at least see a few of the aliens themselves! Finally, it was obvious from early on in the first episode that this was a reset button episode. That said, this has to be one of the best reset button episodes ever done. And now let's talk about Annorax. We learn the weapon ship was constructed by Annorax because he wanted to use it against his people's greatest enemy. When he did, the Krenim were instantly awesomely powerful again, but a rare disease broke out and devastated them. Annorax failed to consider a key antibody his enemy he erased from history had introduced into the Krenim genome. Additionally, every time he made a temporal incursion, he could never restore the colony on Kyana Prime, no matter how close he got to a complete resoration of the Krenim Imperium. And Annorax had no plans of stopping these incursions until his wife was restored. Ironically, the only way to restore 100% of what he had lost was to erase the timeship from history and undo all the changes he had done. The final scene is the best scene. Annorax is on Kyana Prime, with his wife, making temporal calculations, presumably building his weapon again. But his wife asks him to stop for a moment and enjoy the day. This signifies that Annorax will build his weapon again and repeat his mistakes, but his wife will delay him long enough for Voyager to make it past Krenim space... A brilliant ending.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 4x10 - Random Thoughts**  
Originally Aired: 1997-11-19

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A telepathic race arrests Torres.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres under arrest for "aggravated violent throught resulting in grave bodily harm."
- Seven of Nine having no sympathy for Torres.
- Tuvok bluffing about wanting in on the dark throughts black market.
- Tuvok sharing his dark thoughts with Guill.
- Tuvok and Torres talking after Voyager left the Mari planet.
- Seven of Nine expressing concerns regarding Voyager's exploratory nature.
- Janeway to Seven regarding their disagreement: "I dread the day when everyone on this ship agrees with me."

**Comments:**

A fair episode with a meager premise but a decent set of details which make the episode quite pleasant. Beside the fact that the Mari look exactly like humans, the Mari are shown to think of themselves perfect; there's a certain arrogance and aristocracy in their behavior which is quite annoying. Fortunately, Tuvok wastes no time pointing out the imperfections in their legal system. In the end, the Mari are a much more complex race than they first appear, which peaked my interest. The idea of a black market for thoughts is analogous to the black market for drugs, or child pornography. This episode makes a point about how prohibiting certain things can have both positive and negative effects on a society. The idea of restricting what people can and cannot think in a race of telepaths has some merit, but it isn't sufficiently explored in this episode. Voyager just kind of packs up and leaves, leaving the reforms and decisions of what to do to the Mari. This is certainly consistent with the Prime Directive, but leaves the viewer somewhat unsatisfied, as if all Tuvok's work to point out the "dark side" of the Mari culture went partially to waste. Sure, he saved B'Elanna, but we'll never know what effect this incident has on Mari culture. Some details I really liked were Seven of Nine's few brief scenes. She may not have had much screen time, but her dialog was well crafted. The scenes at the end depicting Tuvok and Torres then Janeway and Seven both having their own small argument reminded me a lot of the scenes at the end of TOS episodes, usually between Spock and McCoy. The dialog in both scenes was interesting and funny, a suiting end to the episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 4x11 - Concerning Flight**  
Originally Aired: 1997-11-26

My Rating - 3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Janeway gets help from Leonardo da Vinci.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The aliens use a "translocator" to steal stuff from people's ships, the same type of technology used in Voy: Displaced. It is believed that this translocator is stolen. I wonder if they got it from the aliens in Voy: Displaced?
- Voyager's computer processor technical specifications: "Simultaneous access to 47,000,000 data channels. Transluminal processing at 575,000,000,000 calculations per nanosecond. Operational temperature margins from 10 degrees Kelvin to 1790 degrees Kelvin."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Da Vinci in "America."
- Tuvok: "Vulcans do not make small talk."
- Da Vinci: "This fascinating conversation has left me as dry as Vulcan." Tuvok: "Vulcan?" Da Vinci: "An island off Sicili, have you been there?" Tuvok: "No."
- Tuvok objecting to leaving the Da Vinci program running on the mobile emitter.
- The doctor forcing Seven of Nine to recount the argument she had with Torres in the mess hall.
- Da Vinci: "These fortresses, I've been to half a dozen of them. All are similar but each is different."
- The glider flight and the beam up.

**Comments:**

This episode was ill constructed. The idea to set Da Vinci loose in the "real world" for some comedy was a good idea and the idea to have Voyager pirated by an alien race was also a good idea, but the two good ideas are a mismatch in this episode. That said, there are some entertaining moments. I especially enjoyed getting technical specs regarding Voyager's computer processor. Other than that a big miss.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 4x12 - Mortal Coil****My Rating - 2****Originally Aired:** 1997-12-17**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Neelix dies and is brought back to life.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Borg species designation: Kazon 329. They were declared unworthy of assimilation.
- The technique Seven of Nine used to resuscitate Neelix was assimilated from species 149.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven: "The Kazon, Species 329." Neelix: "You're familiar with them?" Seven: "The Borg encountered a Kazon colony in the Gand Sector, Grid 6920" Neelix: "Were they assimilated?" Seven: "Their biological and technological distinctiveness was unremarkable. They were unworthy of assimilation." Neelix: "I didn't realize the Borg were so discriminating." Seven: "Why assimilate a species that would detract from perfection?" Neelix: "Good point."
- Seven of Nine resuscitating Neelix.
- The traditional PRIXIN salutation: "We do not stand alone. We are in the arms of family. Father, mother, sister, brother, father's father, father's mother, father's brother, mother's brother, fa-- suffice it to say the list is extensive."
- The doctor: "The early stages of Ktarian development are astounding. Naomi has grown five centimeters since her last physical and that was only three weeks ago." Samantha Wildman: "It seems like every time I turn around I'm recycling her cloths back into the replicator." Seven: "Children assimilated by the Borg are placed in maturation chambers for seventeen cycles." Samantha Wildman: "... Interesting. Well if you'll excuse me, I need to go talk to Neelix." The doctor: "In these maturation chambers, the development of conversational skills I suppose is a low priority?"
- Neelix' vision quest.

**Comments:**

The episode was pretty good up until the part where Neelix began to lose his faith in god (or at least the Talaxian version of it) because he didn't get to see heaven (or at least the Talaxian version of it) when he was dead for 18 hours. Frankly, Neelix' spiritual issues failed to peak my interest and as a result the episode largely flopped. There were some interesting tidbits though. Seven of Nine's resuscitation technique is fascinating and getting to see a walking, talking version of Naomi Wildman was a nice development. It seems Ktarian kids grow up faster. Overall though, another miss.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 4x13 - Waking Moments**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-1-14

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The crew is attacked in their dreams.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to show Torres wearing an overcoat (which the actress called an "ugly smock") to hide her real life pregnancy.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene of nightmares.
- Harry's reaction to Seven's request for assistance in the Jeffrey's tube when he woke up.
- Torres: "I wonder what a Vulcan nightmare would be like." Neelix: "Alone, exiled on a planet where the only form of communication is laughter."
- Seven of Nine's diversion.
- The doctor, regarding himself: "No rest for the never weary."
- Janeway: "Either I've become impervious to antimatter explosions, or we're still dreaming."
- Chakotay's solution.
- Chakotay, regarding everyone showing up the mess hall because they can't sleep: "Neelix, I think it's time for breakfast."

**Comments:**

There are elements of TNG: Schisms (once again) in this episode with the crew all sharing similar bad dreams and attempting to mutually figure them out. This is an interesting twist to the "illusionary world" or "holodeck" plot, but it got rather annoying when everybody kept waking up, then realizing they were still dreaming, then waking up, and so on. I got tired of it at about the third time it happened. This trick is cheap in the first place and using it over and over again is a little insulting. I commented in DS9: Distance Voices about how much I hate "it was all a dream!" type plots, but this one is a bit less annoying. It isn't centered around one character, but the whole crew. And although the narrative misdirection gets annoying, the plot is overall effective. With a little tweaking the plot could have been worth a few more points.



**Star Trek Voy - 4x14 - Message in a Bottle**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-1-21

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager makes contact with the Alpha Quadrant.*

**Problems:**

- When the doctor dematerializes, his mobile emitter seems to go with him, instead of dropping to the floor like it should.

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature the use of of the Hirogen subspace network.
- This is the first Voyager episode to mention the Dominion. The EMH Mark 2 Tells the EMH Mark 1 that the Romulans haven't gotten involved in the Federation's fight with the Dominion.
- EMH Mark 2 insinuates that the doctor's program must not be functioning correctly after having been active for four years. A good reference to Voy: The Swarm.
- Two Defiant class Federation ships and an Akira class ship fought against the Romulans to get the Prometheus back.
- Voyager was declared officially lost 14 months before this episode according to the doctor.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres feuding with Seven of Nine again.
- Chakotay: "Astrometrics?" Janeway: "I've been summoned. Any guesses what this is about?"

Chakotay: "None."

- Seven of Nine detecting a Starfleet ship.
- The sight of the USS Prometheus.
- The Nebula class starship attacking the Prometheus.
- The EMH Mark 2 insulting the EMH Mark 1.
- EMH Mark 2: "I'm a doctor, not a commando!" Count 22 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Paris: "I'm a pilot, harry! Not a doctor!" Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 23 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Torres arguing with Seven of Nine.
- The doctor's interrogation.
- EMH Mark 1 to EMH Mark 2: "You know, you should really keep a personal log. Why bore others needlessly?"
- EMH Mark 1: "Stop breathing down my neck." EMH Mark 2: "My breathing is merely a simulation." EMH Mark 1: "So is my neck! Stop it anyway!"
- The Hirogen on the viewscreen is electricuted. Janeway: "What happened?" Seven: "I generated a feedback surge along our sensor link." Torres: "You killed him?" Seven: "It was a mild shock. He will recover." Janeway: "And when he does?" Seven: "He wasn't responding to diplomacy."
- The replacement doctor reciting Gray's Anatomy.
- The battle.
- EMH Mark 2: "The secondary gyrodyne relays in the propulsion field intermatrix have depolarized." EMH Mark 1: "In English!" EMH Mark 2: "I'm just reading what it says here!"
- The Prometheus attacking the Romulans.

#### Comments:

It seems Dr. Louis Zimmerman finally finished his new EMH program he was working on in DS9: Doctor Bashir, I Presume? :) While this episode is probably too silly, it's still one of Voyager's best. Voyager finally makes a connection with the alpha quadrant and we get an enticing story as a result. This episode is actually one to watch if you're just a DS9 fan too, because it shows us what the Romulans are doing; for we haven't actually seen them do anything since they stepped in to defend DS9 from the false Dominion attack in DS9: By Inferno's Light. It seems they wanted to steal the Prometheus. Unfortunately, neither the Romulans' motives nor the Prometheus were elaborated sufficiently. Like my objections to TNG: Birthright, this episode screams "I'm a Voyager episode! Not a DS9 episode." But we didn't get to see any of the crew alive nor any Starfleet people whatsoever talk to the doctor for any substantial period of time. This is forgivable though, seeing as how this is just the first of many episodes in which Voyager talks to the alpha quadrant. Additionally, this episode introduces a new alien species, the proprietors of the alien network of relay stations. We'll surely see them again; I would imagine that the Hirogen was less than happy about what Seven of Nine did to him. ;)



#### **Star Trek Voy - 4x15 - Hunters**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-2-11

**My Rating - 8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew receives letters from home.*

#### Problems:

- Janeway: "We know the relay stations extend almost all the way into the alpha quadrant." Nope, from what Seven of Nine showed us in the previous episode, they would seem to extend well into the alpha quadrant. Not "almost."
- Why is everyone so impressed that there's a quantum singularity at the heart of the relay stations powering them? The Romulans use quantum singularities to power their warp drive.

#### Factoids:

- Borg species designation: 5174, unknown species name. The Borg encountered a small ship of species 5174. They were gutted by the Hirogen.
- Tuvok's son Sek went through the Pon Farr and had a daughter, whom he named T'Meni after Tuvok's mother.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Chakotay: "It's over B'Elanna. There are no more Maquis." Torres: "What are you saying? There are thousands of us!" Chakotay: "All wiped out. It seems the Cardassians have an ally. A species

from the gamma quadrant who've supplied them with ships and weapons."

- The Hirogen capturing Seven of Nine and Tuvok.
- Seven's reaction to being tied up on an alien ship: "This is most uncomfortable."
- The Hirogen confronting their captured prey.
- Tuvok: "I suggest you think carefully about your decision. If you kill us, our captain will hunt you down and show no mercy." Hirogen captain: "I'm not concerned."
- Hirogen captain: "A long, coiled intestine. An interesting trophy." Seven: "What possible use could you make of my intestines?" Hirogen captain: "Unusual relics are prized. Yours will make me envied by men and pursued by women." Seven: "You are a crude species. Only your size makes you formidable." Hirogen captain: "Your insults are as pitiful as your efforts to escape."
- Tuvok's feeble attempt to attack the Hirogen. He slits the neck of one with their own blade. He shrugs it off, picks Tuvok up, and throws him across the room.
- Janeway: "Open the antimatter injectors to 120%!" Harry: "Captain that could breach the core!" Janeway: "So will that black hole, now just do it!"

#### Comments:

This episode is more like *Voy: Message in a Bottle, Part II* than a new stand alone episode, as its events directly tie in with the previous episode. We've seen the Hirogen before, in fact, in that episode. Personally, I like these kinds of arcs. *Voyager's* writers have shown a consistent improvement in the quality of their writing this season, and this episode is no exception. We get a close look at the Hirogen in this episode. They're a species of hunters. They hunt seemingly any other race but their own. Based off of the size of their relay network, they must be spread all through the galaxy in packs of ships, like wolves. They seek to collect "relics" or body parts from other species regarded as trophies. Based on their attitudes toward Tuvok and Seven of Nine, it would seem they regard other species as lower life forms. Additionally, their strength and size are both quite formidable, as Seven of Nine puts it. A very impressive and unique species. More importantly though, this episode destroyed the alien relay network. That's kind of a severe blow to the show in some ways. I was hoping more than the crew that *Voyager* would have regular contact with the alpha quadrant; maybe even return home early to join the war effort against the Dominion. In fact, news of the Dominion reaches *Voyager* in this episode. It's a shame that the writers seem to want to keep the two shows completely separate from one another. But I digress. This was a very successful action episode and the Hirogen were a very convincing villain.



#### Star Trek Voy - 4x16 - Prey

Originally Aired: 1998-2-18

My Rating - 6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Voyager is caught in the middle of a deadly game.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The Hirogen hunting species 8472. Awesome.
- Seven of Nine's "social skills" exercise.
- Tom's "look's like somebody lost their helmet" scene.
- Species 8472 crawling around on *Voyager's* hull.
- Hirogen: "I once tracked a silicon based life form through the neutronium mantle of a collapsed star." Tuvok: "I once tracked a mouse through Jeffries tube 32."
- Seven of Nine firing at a floating PADD as a result of her anxiety. Tuvok's response: "You missed."
- Janeway's story about fighting in the Cardassian border conflict.
- Seven of Nine: "A lesson in compassion will do me little good if I am dead."
- Seven of Nine beaming the Hirogen and species 8472 to the enemy ships.

#### Comments:

And here we have *Voy: Message in a Bottle, Part III*. Kind of. Actually, I'm rather fond of the episode's actual name *Voy: Prey* as a reference to the previous episode *Voy: Hunters*. Kind of like *DS9: In Purgatory's Shadow* and *DS9: By Inferno's Light*. It shows intelligent writing to name

episodes in such a manner. Similarly, this arc writing that Voyager's been using is very effective. Each episode leading into the next, DS9 style. This episode addresses both Voyager's new enemy and old enemy at the same time, the Hirogen and species 8472. Janeway the pacifist to the extreme is unwilling to take sides in the conflict between species 8472 and the Hirogen. She thinks she can use the situation to resolve her differences with both at the same time, but she was mistaken. Fortunately, Seven of Nine wasn't so stupid and saved the lives of the crew. Overall, another nice episode.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 4x17 - Retrospect**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-2-25

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Seven of Nine experiences repressed memories.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The set for Kovic's craft was a reuse of the Federation time ship Aeon.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The first scene depicting the test firing.
- Tom regarding the haggling session: "That guy's worse than a Ferengi."
- The experiment proving Kovic's innocence.
- The destruction of Kovic's ship.

**Comments:**

Another episode depicting Seven of Nine having hallucinations and personal issues. Thanks to that, an innocent man dies and Voyager didn't get that really cool "isokinetic canon." And that's pretty much it. Seven of Nine and the doctor make a big mess, get someone killed, and Janeway forgives them. Aside from the remorseful ending, this episode is truly not in the spirit of Star Trek and I'm completely unfond of it.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 4x18 - The Killing Game, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-3-4

**My Rating -**

**6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Crewmembers believe they are characters in a holodeck simulation.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Torres' holopregnancy in this episode wasn't faked. She was actually that pregnant in the filming of the episode. The directors have just been hiding it when they filmed the other episodes recently.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway as a Klingon...
- The Hirogen leader discussing with his comrade how the Hirogen have lost their way.
- Seven of Nine being placed into the holodeck in an awkward situation.
- Janeway about to kill Seven of Nine, then she regains her control of her thoughts.
- The simulated explosion blowing up the Nazi building as well as causing severe damage to Voyager.

**Comments:**

A slow paced but effective action episode. Only the "Nazis in space" repeat of the blunder that was the premise of TOS: Patterns of Force is annoying. In the positive side, we get to see the Hirogen again, and we get to learn even more about their culture besides the tidbits from Voy: Hunters and Voy: Prey. It seems some of them believe the Hirogen are dying race because they're too nomadic. Voyager was boarded and conquered in this episode, but the Hirogen found Voyager's holographic technology interesting, and wanted to replay select bloody conflicts in Federation history. So they

took over the crew's minds and are forcing them to believe they are characters in the simulations. Interestingly, Harry is spared so he can maintain the ship's systems and expand the holodecks. It's remarkable to note that Harry has managed to expand the holodeck several decks to pacify the Hirogen, and the doctor now has free reign on much of the ship without his mobile emitter. It's also remarkable that without the safety systems on, the holographic explosion severely damaged the ship. A fascinating first part to the two parter.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 4x19 - The Killing Game, Part II**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-3-4

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A World War II holodeck simulation goes awry.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Torres' holopregnancy in this episode wasn't faked. She was actually that pregnant in the filming of the episode. The directors have just been hiding it when they filmed the other episodes recently.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The drunk Klingon Neelix.
- Janeway warning the American soldier Chakotay about the "eccentric people" who live in the "caves."
- Tom: "Boy or girl?" Seven: "It's a holographic projection." Torres: "Unfortunately a very good projection. I feel 20 kilos heavier. It even kicks."
- Janeway's discussion with the Hirogen captain.
- Hirogen: "Sing." Seven: "I will not." Hirogen: "Sing, or you will die." Seven: "Then I'll die." Tuvok: "Seven, you're a valued member of this crew. The logical response would be to grant his request." Seven: "Logic is irrelevant. One day the Borg will assimilate your species, despite your arrogance. When that moment arrives, remember me."
- Neelix: "Pardon me, gentlemen. I wonder if I might have a word with you." The doctor: "They're Klingons. Not kittens."
- Seven of Nine and her photonic grenade.
- Janeway using the range limit of the holographic projectors to her advantage.
- The doctor and Neelix unleashing Klingons into World War II...
- Janeway killing her would-be hunter.
- The peaceful ending.

#### **Comments:**

Why couldn't we get the Wolf 359 simulation mentioned in Part I instead of World War II? I was really, really looking forward to that. It would have made the episode loads less cliched and a lot more fun from a fanboy perspective; for we've not been able to see an unabridged version of the battle of Wolf 359. Also, the death of the Hirogen leader was somewhat cliched. It manufactured some new danger for the last few minutes. And I found it hard to believe Janeway could negotiate a peace so easily even after the two leading Hirogens were killed. Despite that, the peaceful ending was no less gratifying. While giving technology to the Hirogen may be borderline Prime Directive violation territory, I thought that it was truly in the spirit of Star Trek that Janeway cares about helping Hirogen society even after all she'd been through. Well done.



### **Star Trek Voy - 4x20 - Vis a Vis**

**My Rating - 3**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-8

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien switches bodies with Paris.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None



### Remarkable Scenes:

- The doctor complaining about Tom's delinquency.
- Steth becoming Tom and Tom becoming Steth.
- Steth as Paris trying to fit in.
- Tom as Steth confused about his new life.
- Seven: "I would like to know why you were reading the captain's personal logs." Steth and Paris: "I wasn't." Seven: "I saw the PADD. It was unmistakably the captain's logs." Steth as Paris: "You're wrong. You're confused. You couldn't possibly have seen anything." Seven: "You know I possess an eidetic memory. I require only seconds to commit what I see to memory. Would you like me to quote the passage you were reading?"

### Comments:

Body switch madness in an episode that is amusing but fails largely to convince. The alien's motivations are not made clear, nor does the "coaxial" warp drive play any kind of important role. All that's left, is the body switches which give the actors a chance to play different roles, which they do well, but it seemed like the plot hinged far too much on exploiting this plot device. A radical new engine technology was completely unnecessary; instead, a discussion regarding the alien's motivations would have been more suited to the plot. But we don't get it. And the episode suffers. Further annoying is the modification of one of Voyager's shuttles, they built a coaxial warp drive. All I can say to this is have the writers not learned from *Voy: Threshold*? Finally, Janeway must have been in Tom's body for a short time, seeing as how the alien in Tom switched with Janeway. It would have been nice to see her reaction to being in Tom's body...



**Star Trek Voy - 4x21 - The Omega Directive**  
Originally Aired: 1998-4-15

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A space phenomenon must be destroyed.*

### Problems:

- Seven claims the Stardate is 15781.2 when it should be 51781.2.

### Factoids:

- The Borg managed to stabilize a molecule of Omega for one trillionth of a nanosecond before it destabilized and destroyed 29 vessels and 600,000 drones.
- A single Omega molecule contains the same energy as a warp core.
- Omega was discovered "over 100 years ago" by a Starfleet physicist named Cataract. He was trying to develop an inexhaustible power source.
- The Borg discovered Omega 229 years ago. They designated it particle 010. Their collective knowledge of it required the assimilation of 13 alien species.
- Borg species designation: 262, name unknown. A primitive species whose oral history referred to a substance which could "burn the sky." The Borg were intrigued.
- Borg species designation: 263, name unknown. A primitive species who believed Omega was a "drop of blood from their creator."
- Janeway states that some Federation scientists believe that Omega was the primary source of energy for the Big Bang, the explosion which created our universe.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Seven: "Daily log, Seven of Nine, stardate 15781.2. Today, Ensign Kim and I will conduct a comprehensive diagnostic of the aft sensor array. I have allocated three hours, twenty minutes for the task and an additional seventeen minutes for Ensign Kim's usual conversational digressions. I am scheduled to take a nutritional supplement at 15:00 hours, engage in one hour of cardiovascular activity, then I intend to review a text the doctor recommended entitled A Christmas Carol. He believes it will have educational value. End log."
- Seven of Nine defeating Tuvok at Kalto.
- The doctor regarding Janeway's medical requests for her away mission: "What are you planning to do? Stroll through a supernova?" Janeway: "Something like that."
- Harry: "This looks like enough for a 50 isoton explosion." Tuvok: "54, to be exact." Harry: "What are we planning to do? Blow up a small planet?"
- Janeway: "The final frontier has some boundaries that shouldn't be crossed."
- Omega spontaneously stabilizing.

- Janeway: "Master Da Vinci doesn't like visitors past midnight." Seven: "He protested. I deactivated him."
- Seven: "For 3.2 seconds, I saw perfection."

**Comments:**

This episode is a "holy grail" of factoids, tidbits, and general fanboyish trivia. Introducing Omega: the most powerful substance in the universe. Some of the technobabble surrounding its existence is shady, such as the repeated designation of Omega as being a "molecule." If Omega is the most potent source of energy in the universe and it must be synthesized, one would imagine the chemical reaction involved in the synthesis of that molecule would require just as much energy as is gained when the molecule is harnessed or is used in an Omega explosion. A literal interpretation of the technobabble suggests that Omega is merely an atomic structure that requires painstaking preparation, but incurs natural properties that can result in perpetual energy. Obviously this is impossible as per the law of conservation of energy, but when taken in context that Omega is the substance which supposedly gives birth to entire universes, it would seem to make sense. Ignoring the bad parts of the technobabble, the rest is pretty good and the episode is exciting. My only other complaint would then be the fear surrounding Omega. I find it a shame that Voyager has to destroy it. While this time I do mostly agree with Janeway's decisions, I think Omega would be an interesting concept for the Federation to further explore. As such, I found the "destroy it at all costs" policy somewhat distasteful. In the end, this episode opens the door for a possible distant-future series in which a more advanced Federation is better equipped to experiment with Omega, like the Borg have been attempting to. Who knows. Maybe one day the Borg and the Federation will have an Omega arms race? A Trek fan can dream...



**Star Trek Voy - 4x22 - Unforgettable**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-22

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A mysterious woman makes an impression on Chakotay.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok's "joking."

**Comments:**

Filler, boring, and technically fuzzy. It would be zero material if the technical problems were actually important problems. Fortunately, I'm not that cruel. The writers seem to have a fetish for putting Chakotay in strange situations, especially strange situations with women. And because no one will remember the events of this episode at all and there are no consequences, it is not only a waste of time for the viewer but a waste of time for the crew as well. This is probably the biggest filler episode ever written!



**Star Trek Voy - 4x23 - Living Witness**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-4-29

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien species duplicates the crew.*

**Problems:**

- At one point, Fake doctor has a comm badge in the simulation. In the next scene it is missing.

**Factoids:**

None

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Fake Janeway: "When diplomacy fails there's only one option, violence. Force must be applied without apology. It's the Starfleet way."
- The Fake Voyager simulation and all its hilarious differences and details.
- The doctor: "Granted, this looks like the briefing room, but these aren't the people I knew, no one behaved like this, well, aside from Mr. Paris."
- The doctor, prepared to die and stop attempting to clear Voyager's name to stop the race riots.
- The final scene, reviewing yet another simulation.

### Comments:

When I first saw this episode, I was convinced we were looking at the mirror universe Voyager. Fortunately, I was wrong. This episode is entirely original. The time in this episode is mostly consumed by the simulations. The fake crew was hilarious. Janeway, evil, impatient, and warlike. The crew with their black gloves. Chakotay, with his tattoo covering half of his face. Neelix, the operations officer. Tuvok, Paris, and Kim, sadistic and evil, just like Janeway. The doctor an android. Seven of Nine a full Borg with a Borg assault team. Torres, a lowly transporter chief, plus a Kazon security officer. Aside from the simulation humor, the episode presents a story that is almost epic. The setting is in the year 3000 and beyond! This conjures up all kinds of curiosities about the Federation. Does the Federation even exist in the year 3000? If so, how far has it expanded? A possible technical problem: at the rate of technological progression displayed between the 1900s and the 2300s, wouldn't the Federation extend well into the Delta quadrant by now? Wouldn't the Kyrians et al have heard of the Federation by now? I can see this becoming a problem as newer, further into the future Star Trek shows develop. That said, it's a minor deficiency. I'm personally in awe of the idea that a copy of the doctor has set out on a journey to return to the Federation in the year ~3000. Opens up all kinds of possibilities.



### Star Trek Voy - 4x24 - Demon

Originally Aired: 1998-5-6

My Rating -  
1

### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*An alien species tries to populate its planet by duplicating the Voyager crew.*

### Problems:

- Why did Janeway wait so long to deal with the fuel problem?
- Deuterium is extremely common. The writers must have mistaken it for dilithium. It's quite an oversight though.

### Factoids:

- Class Y planets are referred to as "demon" class.
- This episode features another ship landing.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- The doctor complaining to Chakotay regarding Neelix and his "squatters" only to have Chakotay blow off his complaint.
- The ship landing.
- Torres: "Take Seven of Nine with you." Chakotay, surprised: "You're recommending her?" Torres: "You said you needed cool heads, didn't you? Nobody's head is cooler than hers."
- The doctor and Neelix fighting with one another.
- Chakotay: "Looks like they went this way." Seven: "My tricorder isn't picking up any life signs. How did you reach that conclusion?" Chakotay: "Footprints. I guess you never assimilated any Indian scouts."

### Comments:

This episode is full of logical and technical problems, but I won't waste my time pointing them all out, for its the premise itself which is flawed. It makes no sense that Voyager would suddenly develop severe power problems out of nowhere. Rather than waste so much time on pointless details that don't make any sense anyway, the writers could have created a situation which justified the sudden power loss. That said, the plot doesn't interest me much. Most of the episode's thrill value is supposed to come from the danger of the planet itself, a manufactured danger. The oddities produced by the sentient "silver blood" fail to enhance the plot, and the revelation regarding what exactly is going on is realized far too late. An interesting note, look at the StarTrek.com description of this episode and the previous one. An interesting coincidence?



---

**Star Trek Voy - 4x25 - One**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-5-13

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Seven faces her deepest fears alone.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- Once when Seven of Nine was a drone, she was separated from the Collective for two hours. She experienced panic and apprehension.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven of Nine interrogating the holographic crew.
- The false alarm.
- The glitchy computer.
- Seven of Nine sucking the air out of the bridge.

**Comments:**

A respectable episode with a decent premise but a poor execution. I was looking forward to watching Seven of Nine and the doctor maintain the ship as it passed through the nebula, but the writers unfortunately had to lean on the illusions crutch again to spice up what they perceived as a dull plot. With a little more effort, the premise would have been all the plot we needed instead of relying on cliches. That said, even the premise can be attacked somewhat. I find Voyager's "the only way out is through" mentality annoying. Space is incredibly vast. If there's no way around something, it must extend in every direction for hundreds, probably thousands of light years, and Voyager must be approaching it from its center. This happens routinely; alien territories, spacial anomalies, and Voyager always seems to clear it by the end of the episode. It gets old. Based on the diagrams shown in astrometrics, I don't see why Voyager couldn't have flown above or below the nebula; it was clearly longer than it was tall. This episode does, however, contribute to Seven of Nine's personality development. After this experience, she understands the need for companionship and doesn't consider it as trivial as she did at the beginning of the episode.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 4x26 - Hope and Fear**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-5-20

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Starfleet sends a ship to bring the crew home.*

**Problems:**

- Voyager remained in the slipstream for an hour before it collapsed and bridged 300 light years. Why can't they just continue to run it for hour-long bursts? They could be home in only 200 jumps! Maybe the damaging effect of the slipstream on Voyager is cumulative. This would seem to be supported by Seven of Nine's statement that she must design a "new method" by which to travel through slipstream.
- Was Voyager's slipstream faster than the Dauntless? The fake message from the admiral claimed a trip to Earth would take a full 3 months. But at a continuous 300 light years per hour, the trip would take only ~8 days. ~16 if they went at half that speed, and ~32 if they went at a quarter that speed. Certainly not three months!

**Factoids:**

- Borg species designation: 116, name unknown. Arturis' people. Assimilated by the Borg when species 8472 lost the war against the Borg. The assimilation of species 116 necessitated hundreds of cubes.
- The Dauntless' registry was NX-01A. This would indicate that the first Federation ship ever built was named Dauntless. Though it also could mean nothing seeing as how the ship is a fake.
- Quantum slipstream is similar to Borg transwarp, according to Seven of Nine.
- The fake message from the admiral said a slipstream trip back to earth would take a full three months.

- Janeway is shot during transport in this episode and is not affected.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene with Seven of Nine and Janeway playing Velocity.
- Tom, upon boarding the Federation ship: "Wow." Tuvok: "Wow, indeed."
- Seven: "I will survive." Janeway: "On what? Borg perfection?" Seven: "Precisely."
- Arturis' betrayal.
- Janeway's innovative trick to use the Borg technology within Seven of Nine to let her pass through the forcefield.
- Janeway: "Understand?" Seven: "No. However if we are assimilated, our thoughts will become one and I'm sure I will understand you perfectly... A joke, captain. You yourself have encouraged me to use my sense of humor."
- Arturis' arrival in Borg space.

**Comments:**

A fascinating episode introducing a new engine technology. "New warp drive of the week" is not an unfamiliar concept to Star Trek, as evidenced by episodes like TNG: New Ground (soliton wave), TNG: Descent (Borg transwarp), Voy: Caretaker (the Caretaker's array), Voy: Prime Factors (extreme long range transporter), Voy: Threshold (ugh), and Voy: Vis a Vis (coaxial warp); and then there's conventional means like wormholes, time travel, or supernatural entities like Q, but this is the first episode to introduce a new technology aside from Borg transwarp that has the prospect of being used again. The soliton wave in TNG was a flawed concept, the Caretaker's array was destroyed, the long range transporter in Voy: Prime Factors was dependent on natural phenomena, though the aliens could have sent Voyager home if they themselves were actually willing, Voy: Threshold... well let's just forget about Voy: Threshold, and we're not entirely sure what happened to the coaxial warp drive in Voy: Vis a Vis. As you can see, Voyager abuses "new drive of the week" more than any other show, thankfully not in this case. Unlike Voy: Vis a Vis, it is made clear at the end of this episode that Voyager has retained detailed specifications regarding the quantum slipstream drive and that they intend to hopefully use it again some day. Techno ranting aside, suffice it to say I liked the "new drive of the week" in both concept and execution in this episode quite a bit. The episode itself is memorable, fast paced, and action packed. Arturis was an interesting character who I believe was wasted. Then again, adding him to Voyager's crew would solve all their problems immediately, and we wouldn't want that, now would we? ;)



**Star Trek Voy - 5x01 - Night**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-10-14

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager traverses a night-like void in space.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- Thanks to the vortex in this episode, and the quantum slipstream in the last, Voyager has shaved about 2800 light years from their journey, almost 3 years. This means Voyager has traveled the equivalent of about 22 years since it began its journey. (10 years [Voy: The Gift] + 5 years [Voy: Year of Hell] + 2 years [Voy: Night, rounded down] + 1 year [Voy: Hope and Fear, rounded up] + 4 seasons of conventional warp = 22 years.)

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kim's "echos of the void." Very nice music.
- Robot: "Citizen of Earth, surrender! Do not resist!" Seven: "I am Borg." She swiftly disables the robot. Seven: "The robot has been neutralized. May I leave now?"
- Janeway: "Time to take out the garbage."
- Voyager riding the shockwave through the vortex.

**Comments:**

So Janeway finally realized that she made a mistake at the beginning of the series. But her redemption quest was equally short sighted. Seems Janeway is always looking for the quick fix. Fortunately, the crew manage to make her come to her senses, though I don't see why Janeway

couldn't have just taught the aliens of this episode how to collapse the vortex themselves, perhaps give them some photon torpedos, then proceed peacefully through the vortex. Except that it would have made the episode less exciting and we can't have that now can we? ;) The Malon captain was a nice character, well portrayed in his luddite desire to preserve the status quo. History has shown us time and time again that conservative viewpoints are often self serving more than they are interested in serving the greater good. Mr. Emck was certainly no exception; he would rather pollute space because it makes him money than embrace new technology and allow it to better his society. Why improve society when you can exploit it? The message the episode sends is true to the spirit of Star Trek but the plot is unnecessarily bloated. The episode is average at best.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x02 - Drone**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-10-21

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A Borg drone is born on Voyager.*

**Problems:**

- Why didn't the Voyager crew extract other technology from One at the end like they did the doctor's mobile emitter?

**Factoids:**

- Seven of Nine suggests that perhaps the Voyager crew should design and build a new shuttle. One that's larger and more efficient. Such a ship will be built in the next episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor: "Early bird gets the gagh!"
- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a peeping Tom!" Count 26 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Mulchaey discovering the Borgified science lab.
- Torres: "How many Borg hitchikers are we gonna pick up on this trip? Maybe this is the Collective's new strategy. They don't assimilate anymore. They just show up and look helpless."
- One: "Joke. A verbal comment or gesture, designed to provoke laughter." The doctor: "I see you've got your mother's sense of humor."
- Janeway and Seven showing One what the Borg are all about.
- One boarding the Borg ship.
- One sacrificing himself.

**Comments:**

A 29th century Borg inspired by the technology of the mobile emitter is an interesting idea; in a way the episode makes fun of Voy: Future's End for allowing a piece of 29th century technology to exist in the 24th century in the first place, which is something that rather annoyed me about Voy: Future's End's ending. I like a mobile doctor, but I dislike technology out of time. That said, I'm unsure how sacrificing One could possibly end the Borg problem. The raw material (the mobile emitter) still exists! Why would the Borg stop looking for the emitter technology after One died? Beyond this, the episode is mostly a Seven of Nine further explores her emotions rehash. While the episode is original and entertaining, I hesitate to give it a higher rating due to the logical and technical problems.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x03 - Extreme Risk**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-10-28

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Torres heads down a path of self-destruction.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode to feature the Delta Flyer. (Obviously.)
- The Delta Flyer has "Borg inspired photonic missiles" in its arsenal.
- The orbital skydiving suit that Torres wears would have been used by Kirk at the beginning of

Star Trek VII: Generations, but the scene was deleted.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres' orbital skydiving and her subsequent conversation with Seven of Nine.
- Tom: "Well if we can't transport it out, we'll just have to fly in and grab it." Tuvok: "Perhaps you weren't paying attention when the Malon freighter imploded?"
- Tuvok and Tom arguing over "dynametric tail fins."
- Seven of Nine spying on the Malon ship.
- Chakotay's intervention with Torres.
- Torres' MacGyver'd forcefield.
- Torres: "Chakotay, what you did on the holodeck today... Thanks. But if you ever do anything like that again, I'll break your neck."

**Comments:**

This episode ties up a few loose threads. First we have the return of the Malon, confirming that Voyager has not fully cleared their space, second we have the construction of that new shuttle Seven of Nine alluded to in the previous episode, and finally we have Torres doing some real grieving over the loss of the Maquis to the Dominion. Her grieving is a bit too late, but otherwise credible. This aspect of the story allows for some nice moments between Torres and Chakotay, though surprisingly not between Torres and Tom. The "space race" was a bit forced, but the action was convincing and entertaining. Overall, the episode was another fairly average one.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x04 - In the Flesh**

**My Rating - 4**

**Originally Aired:** 1998-11-4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager makes a disturbing discovery.*

**Problems:**

- Species 8472 got a few things wrong in their Starfleet Headquarters recreation. The uniforms were outdated, and there were multiple Ferengi in Starfleet. (Nog from DS9 is the only Ferengi in Starfleet...)
- Janeway orders Voyager to charge weapons twice.

**Factoids:**

- The fake Starfleet headquarters was created using a combination of holographic generators and the previously mentioned "particle synthesis" from Voy: Hope and Fear.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Boothby appearance.
- The discovery that species 8472 is behind the training facility.
- The doctor: "Talk about a wolf in sheep's clothing."
- The doctor: "Throughout human history, weapons of mass destruction were designed in the hopes that they would never be used." Seven: "And yet in Earth's third world war, nuclear weapons accounted for 600 million casualties."
- Paris: "It's a date! These things can't be rushed. They've probably just finished dinner, a couple of drinks, and now they are moving past the polite stage." Kim: "The polite stage? The last 8472 I met tried to dissolve me from the inside out!"
- The "class reunion."
- Boothby: "Sit down, Admiral." Bullock: "Sir?" Boothby: "I said sit down, or I'll knock you right on your human butt!"

**Comments:**

Another episode tying up another loose end. We never quite knew how species 8472 was going to react to losing the war with the Borg due to the Federation's help, and now we know. It seems they've built training facilities in which they are training operatives to infiltrate Earth. This was a nice opportunity to show us Starfleet Command for the first time since DS9 and TNG, as well as to bring back the beloved Boothby. He's only been in a few episodes so far, but each time used well. I liked the statement regarding Boothby having given valuable advice to all the captains in Starfleet, including Picard, which is a nice reference to TNG. That said, this episode is a bit annoying. While it is true to the spirit of Star Trek, it reeks of the writers saying, "well, let's wrap up this 8472 thing." But they didn't in fact wrap it up. The ending is \*almost\* a cliffhanger as there is still room for

further conflict. I hate it when writers use this kind of cop out. This plot thread is wrapped up, but not! Additionally, 8472 seemed vastly out of character in this episode. This can be attributed to their "think human, be human" attitude, but again, it reeks of a cop out. Overall, disappointing.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x05 - Once Upon a Time**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-11-11

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Neelix comforts a little girl whose mother is missing.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Naomi: "Neelix, don't move." Neelix: "What's wrong?" Naomi: "The Borg lady." Neelix: "She has a name, you know." Naomi: "Seven of Nine, Tertiary Adjunct of Unimatrix 01. Don't look! She'll assimilate you." Neelix: "Naomi, Seven is a nice person. And she's a valuable member of this crew." Naomi: "I don't want to be in her Collective." Neelix: "I don't think there's much danger of that."
- Naomi: "The doctor talks too much."
- Janeway regarding coffee: "One more cup and I'll jump to warp."

**Comments:**

There's nothing particularly wrong with this episode other than it's boring. The whole episode is an excuse to do something with the Naomi character, which is good in a way, as she's been neglected somewhat, but the way in which it was done was quite annoying. Shuttle crash episodes are a huge cliché, and putting Samantha Wildman in danger just so the writers could write a story around Naomi Wildman was kind of cheap. Getting to see elements of Naomi's daily life however was interesting, as it gives us a chance to see what life in the 24th century would be like for a child. We've had bits of this from TNG and DS9, but this episode is probably the best depiction yet. Still though, the writers have proven that they can write a decent story around children in TNG: Disaster, among others, and I would have expected better here.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x06 - Timeless**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-11-18

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kim attempts to rewrite history.*

**Problems:**

- Chakotay says: "Looks like they hit the ice at full impulse." Uh, Chakotay? Full impulse is pretty close to the speed of light. There wouldn't have been a ship left to excavate if they hit the ice that fast. Just an impact crater.
- The doctor says to Seven of Nine "your blood-synthehol level is 0.5 percent" as an explanation for her drunkenness. But as far as I know, synthehol isn't supposed to get you drunk!
- Why couldn't Voyager use their new engine to make a series of ten second slipstream jumps instead of just using it once?

**Factoids:**

- This story was conceived to celebrate the fact that this is Voyager's 100th episode.
- Voyager's new quantum slipstream drive seems many times faster than the original featured in Voy: Hope and Fear. Instead of 300 light years per hour, they were planning to cross thousands in mere seconds!
- Seven of Nine's translink frequency is 108.44236000.
- Thanks to the brief slipstream flight in this episode, Voyager has shaved about 10 years off their journey. This means Voyager has traveled the equivalent of about 32 years since it began its journey. (10 years [Voy: The Gift] + 5 years [Voy: Year of Hell] + 2 years [Voy: Night, rounded down] + 1 year [Voy: Hope and Fear, rounded up] + 10 years [Voy: Timeless] + 4 seasons of



conventional warp = 32 years.)

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Seeing Voyager buried under ice...
- Harry excavating the doctor.
- The flashback to the party.
- Tuvok: "Mr. Neelix, you are an unending source of astonishment."
- Harry and Chakotay explaining their plan to the doctor.
- The doctor: "Out of the icebox and into the fire..."
- Captain LaForge of the Starship Challenger!
- Harry: "This is no ordinary phone call, Doc. When talking to yesterday, timing is everything."
- Tom: "Captain, we're just a few parsecs from the alpha quadrant!" Janeway: "Not exactly how I wanted to cross the finish line."
- The crash.
- The doctor making Harry realize he can send a set of corrections which will disperse the slipstream entirely, saving their lives, even if not getting them home.
- Harry using the doctor's mobile emitter to power the temporal transmitter.
- Harry sending the message just as the Delta Flyer explodes.
- Harry: "Wait a second. If I sent a message from the future and changed the past, then that future would no longer exist, right? So, how could I have sent the message in the first place? Am I making any sense?" Janeway: "My advice in making sense of temporal paradoxes is simple. Don't even try. To me all that matters is that somewhere, somehow, sometime, you come through for us."

#### Comments:

A quantum matrix, benamite crystals, and Borg technology bring us a new and improved replacement quantum slipstream drive inspired by the one first featured in *Voy: Hope and Fear* that turned out to be in fact too dangerous to use again. The crew believes this new and improved version will work and get them home. But their new version turned out to be even more dangerous than their old one. The best part about this episode is the wonderful directing. The transitions between the past and the future were very well done, such as the scene where Chakotay lays down a PADD, then we see the PADD frozen in the future. We get to hear Janeway's final log entry in the future when Chakotay stumbles on the file, then we get to see her actually make that log entry in the past. I also love the way they alternating showing us Voyager in the past chasing the Delta Flyer and the Galaxy class starship captained by Geordi chasing the Delta Flyer in the future. Finally, we get to see Harry view the message his future self recorded earlier. A surely surreal moment for him. The only thing I don't like about this wonderful episode is the technical issue surrounding why Voyager can never use this technology again, described in the problems section. Otherwise, one of the best time travel episodes and a wonderful celebration for Voyager's 100th episode.



#### Star Trek Voy - 5x07 - Infinite Regress

Originally Aired: 1998-11-25

My Rating - 6

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Seven experiences multiple personality disorder.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- Captain Blackwell and the Federation Starship Tombaugh were assimilated by the Borg 13 years ago.
- Borg species designation: 6339, name unknown. First encountered the Borg about 4 years ago. Since that time 11 billion individuals have been assimilated.
- Borg species designation: 180, Ferengi. A curiously extremely low number signifies that the Ferengi encountered the Borg perhaps thousands of years before humans.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Seven of Nine's odd behavior in the teaser.
- Naomi shadowing Seven.
- Seven of Nine's personality reverting to that of a human little girl.

- Seven, as a Klingon male, seducing Torres.
- Seven becoming a Vulcan, then becoming a Klingon again and attacking Tuvok. I like her Klingon line just before she attacks him: "You will drown in your own blood!"
- Seven of Nine as a Ferengi.
- The doctor regarding mind melds: "Captain! You can't actually be considering this Vulcan mumbo jumbo!"
- The doctor to Tuvok: "With all these new personalities floating around, it's a shame we can't find one for you."
- The mind meld.

**Comments:**

A rehash of TNG: Masks that doesn't suck. Jeri Ryan does a fantastic job acting out all of her multiple personalities, and the rapport she develops with Naomi is pretty neat as well. We get to see a Borg "vinculum," which is supposedly the central processor at the heart of every Borg vessel, purging individual thought and maintaining the central link to the Collective. Or in short, "bringing order to chaos." We also get an interesting look at an unfortunately nameless species 6339. Their species was mostly assimilated by the Borg, the survivors engineered a virus that attacks Borg vessels, creating this Borg multiple personality disorder. This detail shows intelligent writing, Seven of Nine isn't spontaneously freaking out just because she's in the proximity of Borg technology, which would have been cliched. Overall, the episode was slightly above average.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x08 - Nothing Human**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-12-2

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Torres puts her life in the hands of an enemy.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Chakotay: "Harry, you and I were lucky enough to enjoy the Doctor's scintillating exhibition for two full hours, would it really be fair of us to deny our friends the same unforgettable experience?"
- Torres: "What happened to going to yellow alert after half an hour?" Tuvok: "Commander Chakotay appears to have disobeyed a direct order." Janeway: "Definitely grounds for court martial."
- Crell and the doctor arguing ethics.
- Tom, Chakotay, Tuvok, and the doctor debating the medical ethics.
- Janeway ending the debate, making the decision to use Crell's research.

**Comments:**

An otherwise exceptional episode slightly ruined by misguided "superior" morality. Janeway is the star of the show here for me, she nips the ethical debate at the bud and decides to use the unethical research to save Torres' life. I would have made the same decision. But the doctor's decision to "repent" by deleting Crell's program after he'd already used his research is just blatant hypocrisy. Crell Moset was a great character who would have been a worthy addition to the cast. He had a dark side, yes, but frankly it would have contributed positively to future episodes. I would have enjoyed seeing more of "the evil hologram's" clever solutions to medical problems, for the one thing Voyager lacks that DS9 excels at so well is a dark aspect to the show.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x09 - Thirty Days**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-12-9

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Paris is confined to the brig.*

**Problems:**

- The crew "uploads" the gravity core's database. The correct term should have been download.

- The scene when Janeway reduces Tom's rank and sends him to the brig at the beginning of the episode differs in line order from the one shown at the end of the episode. They really should have kept the lines exact.

**Factoids:**

- We get to see Tom Paris as a boy during his nightmares.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing the Delaney sisters, finally.
- Tom: "Well you've done it again, Harry." Kim: "What?" Tom: "Fallen for the unattainable woman. First it was a hologram, then a Borg, and now the wrong twin."
- An all-water planet. Fascinating.
- The Delta Flyer investigating the core of the ocean planet.
- Tom discovering the origins of the ocean planet.
- Tom's "radical action to protect the ocean."
- Janeway deflecting Tom's missile attack on the oxygen refinery.

**Comments:**

Tommy was a bad boy so Mommy threw him in his room for a while... okay, well I can't make fun the episode too much because it's wonderfully original and visually spectacular. The ecological issue is still pretty fresh, it's not often examined in Star Trek. Tom Paris tells us the story from his jail cell of how he ended up in prison again. He tried to take "radical action to protect" a unique alien all-water planet, but Janeway was able to stop him before he completed his task. It's an unhappy ending in a way, even Janeway agreed with Tom's principles, so it would have been nice if he had succeeded. But he didn't. Not only did he accomplish nothing, but he ended up sitting in jail for thirty days for the attempt. I'd be feeling pretty lousy too if I were him. The drama, unique directing, unique aliens, and unique setting make this a most remarkable, if sad episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x10 - Counterpoint**  
**Originally Aired:** 1998-12-16

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Janeway falls for a man who may be using her.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Voyager gives away two shuttles in this episode, and we see a new set depicting the shuttle bay. We are forced to conclude that Voyager has two actual shuttle bays (perhaps the smaller one is on the ventral section of the hull) and that they can construct replacement shuttles (along with torpedos) whenever they need them.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Kashyk: "Your culture has many contradictions. Violence and beauty, science and faith, all somehow mingled harmoniously, like the counterpoint of this music. Mahler, Symphony No. 1, am I correct?"
- Professor Torat: "Federations, Imperiums, why do you people feel such a need to align yourselves with monolithic organizations?" Janeway: "I'd be glad to discuss that and any other philosophical issue you care to raise if you would just slow down and talk." Professor Torat, sarcastically: "Sorry, can't do that. I'm late for a very important conference!" Kashyk: "This is a waste of time. Disable his ship." Janeway: "That's what we call overkill, inspector." Janeway beams Torat to the bridge.
- Kashyk insulting Torat. I love Torat's pump-up nose.
- Kashyk betraying Janeway.
- Janeway to Kashyk after he realizes Janeway had fooled him: "Computer, change music selection. Mahler's Symphony No. 1, Second Movement... maybe this will help you relax."

**Comments:**

This episode is quite original; most remarkable is the music played throughout the course of the episode. The Classical symphonies of Mahler and Tchaikovsky create a surreal atmosphere surrounding Janeway and Kashyk as they both attempt to manipulate each other. The counterpoint in the music symbolized the counterpoint of Janeway and Kashyk's evolving "relationship"

throughout the episode. Another feather in the episode's cap was the briefly shown Professor Torat. He was just the kind of alien I wish we could see more of. His few scenes were not wasted, the guy was hilarious. I just wish he got more time and Kashyk got less as the pseudo romance that evolved between Janeway and Kashyk was on the verge of becoming offensive. Overall though the episode presents a successful story depicting mistrust, innuendo, and deception.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x11 - Latent Image**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-1-20

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor has memory problems.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- I love the way the doctor set up his holocamera to record whoever was tampering with his program.
- The doctor confronting the bridge crew regarding the "conspiracy."
- Seven of Nine's philosophical discussion with Janeway.
- Harry regarding the doctor's decision to beam the alien back to his ship: "You should have beamed him into space."
- The doctor beginning to freak out in his flashback.
- The doctor beginning to freak out after the flashback.
- The doctor: "The more I think about it, the more I realize there's nothing I could have done differently." Janeway: "What do you mean?" The doctor: "The primordial atom burst. Sending out its radiation, setting everything in motion. One particle collides with another, gasses expand, planets contract, and before you know it, we've got starships, and holodecks, and chicken soup. In fact, you can't help but have starships, holodecks, and chicken soup because it was all determined 20 billion years ago!"
- The doctor reading from La Vita Nuova: "In that book which is my memory, on the first page of the chapter, that is the day when I first met you, appear the words, 'here begins a new life.'"

**Comments:**

Another strong episode, the doctor discovers that his program has been tampered with. When he finds out, he realizes it was to erase memories of his that were causing him to act irrationally. The episode touches on two moral conflicts, one on when two people's lives are equally in danger but you can only save one of them, which do you pick? The second regarding when you know a person who is participating in self destructive behavior, do you intervene? The episode is very successful in exploring these concepts, but it is somewhat weak in the overall premise of the plot. Consider that Ensign Ahni Jetal had been on the ship for at least three years. Wouldn't somebody have slipped up and mentioned her to the doctor? Well, fortunately another cover up is avoided, and Janeway decides to treat the doctor less like a malfunctioning replicator and more like a person.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x12 - Bride of Chaotica!**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-1-27

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Janeway and Paris must defeat Doctor Chaotica.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode features a rare mention of a bathroom on a starship.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Neelix mentioning that only 4 bathrooms and 3 sonic showers are operational.

- Tom: "Satan's robot." Tuvok: "Naturally."
- Tom: "Intercepted communications between Doctor Chaotica and Arachnia. Stop. Chaotica at war with aliens from 5th dimension. Stop. Must strike now to disable death ray." Tuvok: "Stop. Please summarize the message."
- Tuvok and Tom meeting the photonic alien. I like how he said "all life is photonic" and that Tuvok and Paris didn't register on his instruments and must therefore be the simulation.
- Janeway: "Let me get this straight. Transdimensional aliens have mistaken your Captain Proton simulation for reality." Tom: "Yes ma'am." Janeway: "And now an armed conflict has broken out between these aliens and Chaotica's holographic army." Tom: "Yes ma'am. His army of evil."
- Janeway being nominated to play Arachnia.
- Tom instructing Janeway on how to best fit into her role: "It helps to say things like: 'The clever fiendishness of your evil plan is brilliant!'"
- The doctor masquerading as the "president of Earth."

#### Comments:

A great humor episode, it was especially fun to watch the various crew's reactions to witnessing elements of the Captain Proton simulation out of context. This episode was meant in many ways to be a parody of Star Trek. Tom is "researching" how ancient humans viewed the future. And they didn't get it quite right. The same may very well happen to us. Additionally, Tom impresses Tuvok with his technobabble, an allusion to Star Trek, Harry wonders why the Planet X set is identical to the Mines of Mercury set, another allusion to Star Trek, and so on. Aside from the general parody, this episode makes me really wish we'd seen more of Bashir's holosuite programs on DS9. I would have liked to have seen Bashir and O'Brien at the Alamo, or at the Battle of Britain. And if it was half as fun as this episode was, it would have been amazing.



#### Star Trek Voy - 5x13 - Gravity

Originally Aired: 1999-2-3

My Rating - 4

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*A stranded Tuvok struggles with his emotions.*

#### Problems:

- Tom says Tuvok's wife is 50,000 light years away. Actually, by my calculations, she's closer to 43,000 light years away.

#### Factoids:

- We get to see Tuvok as a young man in this episode.
- It's remarkable how the doctor was able to speak Noss' language. "A universal translator was written into" his program.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Tom getting "mugged." I loved hearing Noss' native language. Lori Petty did a good job with it.
- Tuvok saving Noss.
- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a battery!" Count 30 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Tuvok telling Tom his story.
- Tuvok mind melding with Noss.

#### Comments:

A rather generic episode, other than the rather interesting time displacement part, the character of Noss, and Tuvok's flashbacks. If it were not for these things, the episode would be hideously cliched. We have yet another shuttle crash (one wonders if by now half the crew is assigned to "shuttle and photon torpedo replacement duty") resulting in yet another rescue attempt. It's rather funny how the writers don't even tell us why Tuvok, Tom, and the doctor were on a shuttle mission in the first place, as if it doesn't matter. My complaining aside, the social situation that developed between Noss and Tuvok was very well written and made the episode most watchable. It's also remarkable how Tom kept encouraging Tuvok to accept Noss' advances, to accept the inevitability of their situation, that this planet was "home" now. It reminded me a lot of Voy: Remember with Chakotay in place of Tom. I also liked how the aliens trying to seal the rift were the same aliens attacking people down on the planet. It certainly makes sense with their claim that they've lost ships to the anomaly too frequently. Even all these nice touches can't save the episode from being below average though. We've just seen too many shuttle crashes.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x14 - Bliss**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-2-10

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*All the crew's dreams seem to come true.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- We get to see Tuvok's wife in this episode.
- The ship eating creature is over 2,000 kilometers in diameter. The largest Seven of Nine has ever seen. The doctor estimates that the life form is at least 200,000 years old.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Naomi, bored with her away mission on the Delta Flyer: "Can't we make first contact with somebody or get in a space battle?" Tom, playing along: "Yeah, can't we?" Seven: "Another time, perhaps."
- Seven regarding the supposed wormhole: "The odds of finding such an anomaly are infinitesimal."
- Seven of Nine's very quick hackjob allowing her access to Janeway's personal logs.
- Seven of Nine enlisting Naomi's support in her little insurrection.
- Seven of Nine beaming into Engineering and shooting everybody.
- Naomi walking into a forcefield.
- Seven of Nine's initial discussion with Qatai after they entered the creature.
- The doctor: "Please state the nature of the medical emergency." Qatai: "Your ship is being devoured. I'd say that's an emergency."
- The doctor: "This is a sickbay, not an arsenal." Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 31 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a dragonslayer." Count 32 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The final scene depicting Qatai flying back into the creature again. Go captain Ahab go!

**Comments:**

A rehash of TNG: The Game. No, really, a complete rehash. Replace Wesley with Seven of Nine, Robin with Naomi, and Data with the doctor and there you go! Except that this version is greatly improved. We do have an additional good guy to add to the plot, the local "dragonslayer." He was a cool character, I liked most the doctor's interactions with him. It's definitely appropriate that a man may become obsessed with hunting Moby Dick style this enormous space "monster", as Naomi put it. Also different from TNG: The Game is instead of brainwashing through pleasure and addiction, the "space monster" uses elaborate telepathy to make the crew of a ship "see exactly what they want to see" thereby making them let down their guard. Ultimately the ending is pretty predictable, obviously they were going to find a way out of the creature. But I liked the way Seven of Nine, Naomi, the doctor, and Qatai went about doing it. The four characters had nice chemistry. Naomi was especially useful, which is rare, and her child's perspective added quite a bit to the plot. I also liked the subtle twist at the end. The teaser depicted Qatai entering the space creature, intent on killing it when in fact it was deceiving him. The final scene depicted the very same thing. The space creature was probably tricking him again...



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x15 - Dark Frontier, Part I**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-2-17

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Seven is lured back to the Collective.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- The actors hired for Seven of Nine's flashbacks are the same actors hired for her previous

flashbacks in *Voy: Scorpion* and *Voy: The Raven*.

- Seven's parents measured the Borg cube at 28 cubic kilometers with 129,000 drones aboard.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Voyager's conflict with the Borg probe.
- Janeway: "Now this is how I prefer the Borg. In pieces!"
- Kim: "Captain! Don't touch that!" Janeway: "What is it?" Kim: "I don't know. But a few minutes ago it was crawling around the floor."
- Janeway's recreation.
- The heist.
- Seven deciding to stay.
- The sight of the unicomplex.
- The Borg queen's assemblage and greeting to Seven.

#### Comments:

This is probably one of Voyager's most controversial episodes, as much of the trivia seems to contradict TNG. The Hansens made first contact with the Borg, not Picard. And it seems the Borg Queen somehow survived the ordeal in *Star Trek VIII: First Contact*. This stuff isn't as bad as it seems though. The Hansens were chasing after a Borg "myth". Nobody in Starfleet took them seriously at all. Also, they crossed the Neutral Zone to do it, which seems continuous with the Romulans complaining that their outposts were being picked off in TNG: *The Neutral Zone*. Additionally, in TNG: *Q Who*, Picard said the Federation needed a "kick" in its "complacency", this could be loosely interpreted as Picard saying, "looks like the Borg rumors were real after all." As for the queen, another body was probably selected to represent her, much the way the Founders are presumed to work on DS9. In short, I don't think this episode really conflicts with TNG. Getting to the good stuff, it's awesome that Janeway is finally starting to realize "hey, let's steal Borg engines and get home really fast!" The writers gave us a convincing model of how it could be done without looking too easy or too hard. I like how they made it possible through a unique situation, mostly explaining why they never tried it before. The Borg Queen's interest in Seven of Nine remains something of a mystery, but then her interest in Picard or Data wasn't exactly easy to explain either. Overall, a highly exciting episode with a decent cliffhanger.



#### Star Trek Voy - 5x16 - Dark Frontier, Part II

Originally Aired: 1999-2-17

My Rating - 9

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Janeway launches a mission to rescue Seven.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- The actors hired for Seven of Nine's flashbacks are the same actors hired for her previous flashbacks in *Voy: Scorpion* and *Voy: The Raven*.
- Borg species designation: 6961, Ktarian.
- Borg species designation: 10026, name unknown. Seven of Nine helped the Borg to assimilate them.
- Borg species designation: 5618, human. "Below average cranium capacity, minimum redundant systems, limited regenerative abilities."
- Borg species designation: 125, name unknown. The Borg Queen, or at least this particular Borg Queen came from this species.
- Thanks to the Borg transwarp in this episode, Voyager has shaved about 15 years off their journey. (or 20,000 light years.) This means Voyager has traveled the equivalent of about 47 years since it began its journey. (10 years [*Voy: The Gift*] + 5 years [*Voy: Year of Hell*] + 2 years [*Voy: Night*, rounded down] + 1 year [*Voy: Hope and Fear*, rounded up] + 10 years [*Voy: Timeless*] + 15 years [*Voy: Dark Frontier*] + 4 seasons of conventional warp = 47 years.)

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Seven's reaction to the Borg Queen: "I expected reassimilation, not conversation."
- Naomi trying to come up with plans to rescue Seven of Nine.
- Janeway: "There are 3 things to remember about being a starship captain. Keep your shirt tucked in, go down with the ship, and never abandon a member of your crew."

- The Hansens cataloging drones. I like how when they beamed one back it used the TNG style transporter effect. Nice attention to detail.
- Seven of Nine assisting with repairs to the shield generator. I love the blood curdling screams in the background...
- The sight of the mass assimilation process.
- Seven of Nine saving some of the aliens.
- Borg Queen: "Congratulations." Seven: "Regarding?" Borg Queen: "Assimilation is complete." Seven: "300,000 individuals have been transformed into drones. Should they be congratulated as well?" Borg Queen: "They should be. They've left behind their trivial selfish lives and they've been reborn with a greater purpose. We've delivered them from chaos into order." Seven: "Comforting words. Use them next time instead of resistance is futile. You may elicit a few volunteers."
- The Delta Flyer approaching the unicomplex.

#### Comments:

It becomes clear in part two that this episode is focusing on Seven of Nine's conflicting families. Her human family, her family on Voyager, and her family in the Borg. If you can call the Borg a family. The Borg Queen and Janeway struggle for control over Seven, like two parents fighting over custody. The Borg Queen's motives were never made quite clear. She said something about "letting" Voyager have Seven of Nine so she could become an individual again. We're not sure how this was supposed to help the Queen assimilate Earth. But then, the Queen never seemed quite all there to me in the first place. I was pleased overall with how the episode progressed; it was nice to see the Delta Flyer flying at transwarp, and it was nice to see Voyager got something out of the transwarp conduit. Probably the most memorable part of this episode is Seven of Nine's witnessing the assimilation of species 10026. They resisted with 39 vessels, the same number of ships that the Federation resisted with at Wolf 359. Once again, we didn't get to see much of the space battle, but we did get to see much of the brutal assimilation process, which was very well done. A great two parter.



#### Star Trek Voy - 5x17 - The Disease Originally Aired: 1999-2-24

My Rating - 6

Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:  
*Kim chooses love over duty.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The opening scenes showing the generational ship. That's some damn nice special effects work.
- Tom: "Oh, here we go again." Harry: "What?" Tom: "You, going after impossible women. Uh, a hologram, an ex-Borg, the wrong twin, and now a girl from a xenophobic species!"
- Tom, impressed with the Varro ship, annoyed that Tuvok isn't very interested in adapting their techniques for Voyager.
- Tom killing Harry's transmission and covering for him.
- Seven of Nine's opinion on love. Hilarious.
- Harry to Tal: "You're beautiful when you're scanning."
- The generational ship coming apart.
- I love the camera work when Kim and Janeway are arguing. The camera rolls from the conference room, to the bridge, to the ready room all in one shot.
- Harry: "Maybe I'm not the perfect officer anymore." Janeway: "Maybe not. But you're a better man."

#### Comments:

A pretty crappy premise spiced up with some interesting details. The aliens of the week were quite interesting, and their generational ship was both an awesome concept and visually spectacular. Tom once again takes a perverse pleasure in making fun of Harry's female escapades, and Harry gets in a lot of trouble for not taking Tom's advice. I also rather liked the detail when Tom prevented Harry from getting caught early in the episode. Too bad he couldn't protect him full time. ;) The contention between Harry and Janeway is well presented and nicely dramatic and the



contention between the conservatives and the dissidents on the generational ship was equally compelling. My only complaint about the episode is the distinct lack of consequences. Once again, introducing a new character such as this warrents recurrence, something I've complained about since TOS. But we don't get it. Anyway, the episode was a nice ride. I liked it.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x18 - Course: Oblivion**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-3-3

**My Rating - 0**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Crewmembers begin dying.*

**Problems:**

- The premise. See comments.

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Worst Episode of Voyager Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

None

**Comments:**

A sequel to Voy: Demon. The writers could have picked any number of wonderful episodes to write sequels to, but no, they had to pick one of the worst episodes they've ever done to write a sequel to. This episode inherits all of the problems both technical and logical of that episode and introduces a few more. It seems the "silver blood" was able to not just duplicate the crew, but the entire ship itself, which seems unlikely to me. Not only this, but the duplicated crew created an enhanced warp drive, which can take them to Earth in just two years! A completely unnecessary and absurd detail. That said, there are some nice details in this episode. Tom is a Lieutenant, not an ensign, because this Tom never broke the rules in Voy: Thirty Days. Additionally, virtually this entire episode takes place on the alternate Voyager, which is a remarkable change of pace. This episode also predicts the wedding of Tom and Torres. And finally, the visual effects are very well done. But none of these details can save the episode from its dreadful premise and the fact that it contributes nothing to the story.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x19 - The Fight**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-3-24

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An alien race communicates with Chakotay through hallucinations.*

**Problems:**

- Janeway orders Chakotay to the bridge. But apparently he didn't think her order was all that important or anything, despite the red alert, because he felt he had time to change into uniform first.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Boothby appearance.
- Confused Chakotay attempting to box with Tuvok. I love Tuvok's swift Vulcan neck pinch.
- Confused Chakotay hallucinating a highly sadistically critical EMH on the concept of boxing.
- The disjointed images and words of the crew, representing the aliens communicating with Chakotay.
- Chakotay figuring a way out of chaotic space.

**Comments:**

A decent attempt at an episode, but too much time is wasted on confusion and fighting. The "chaotic space" was also slightly absurd, but the general idea behind a region of space inhabited by aliens that are too different for us to interact with is a nice idea and is nicely, if briefly explored here. I really liked the end of the episode where Chakotay is having DS9 style prophet-like visions

in order to speak to the aliens, but I think ultimately the aliens were not sufficiently explored at all and the episode suffers from it as it seemed to drag on needlessly.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x20 - Think Tank**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-3-31

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A problem-solving alien comes to Voyager's rescue.*

**Problems:**

- Chakotay speculates that the Malon or the Devore might have hired the Hazari in this episode. This is extremely unlikely though seeing as how Voyager is nowhere near their space as of Voy: Dark Frontier. Thankfully, Chakotay was wrong. Though it doesn't excuse is rather absurd speculation.

**Factoids:**

- Jason Alexander of Seinfeld fame as George, plays Kurros in this episode.
- Borg species designation: 4228, Hazari. Technologically advanced and extremely violent. Usually hired as bounty hunters. They make excellent tactical drones.
- The Think Tank cured the Vidian Phage.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom's little fad.
- The planetoid explosion.
- Janeway discovering the true motivations of Kurros.
- Seven of Nine solving Tom's little puzzle.
- Janeway regarding how Seven solved the puzzle: "Seven, how'd you do that?" Seven: "I scanned the device. Its mechanism operates on a simple fractal regression." Tom: "You scanned it? That's cheating!" Seven: "Cheating is often more efficient."
- The Hazari attacking the Think Tank.

**Comments:**

A decently intellectual episode featuring a group of people who solve other people's problems for a price. Except sometimes they create the problems which they are supposed to solve... Jason Alexander does a wonderful job as Kurros, showing us the same deceitful and conniving personality she showed us as George on Seinfeld. The issue of whether Seven of Nine would be better off with them is both unimportant and barely examined; it was obvious Seven was not leaving the ship. Rather, I liked how Janeway solved her little paradox by conspiring with her would-be enemy to undermine the objectives of the Think Tank itself. It is a little convenient that the Hazari actually cared so passionately about dethroning the Think Tank, but it's too much to the episode's disadvantage. I also like how Janeway's solution nicely paralleled with the little futuristic puzzle B plot. The episode is exciting up to the very end, I loved the battle scenes between the Think Tank and the Hazari. A shame they were so short!



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x21 - Juggernaut**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-4-26

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew races to prevent a catastrophic explosion.*

**Problems:**

- Does Malon territory really extend for tens of thousands of light years? I'd have thought that after Voy: Dark Frontier, Voyager would be long through it by now. Though Chakotay does say, "I thought we'd seen the last of them." I wonder of that line was a reference to the poor timing.

**Factoids:**

- The Malon ship had 42 decks. Impressive.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Malon playing with his ship model.
- Torres: "You as a child. Those pointy little ears. You must have been cute." Tuvok: "Indeed."
- Tuvok's meditation session with Torres.
- Torres: "I suppose it's always going to be like this." Tom: "Like what?" Torres: "Me against the galaxy." Tom: "Well the galaxy doesn't stand a chance."
- The tricorder signals causing electrical surges.
- Torres' fighting the disgruntled Malon.
- Voyager altering the Malon ship's trajectory.
- Fesek: "It's an occupational hazard." I like how he said this three times, each for different reasons. :)
- Seeing a sonic shower in action! And boy did Torres need that shower...

#### Comments:

As I pointed out in the problems section, it seems unlikely that the Malon would be out this far away from their territory, but maybe this episode's script was originally intended to be aired earlier in the season. Once you get past this fairly severe problem with the premise though, the episode is quite entertaining. I especially like the insight we get into Malon culture. We get to learn a bit about the personal lives of a few of them and see that they're not monsters, just a little philosophically misguided. Besides the cultural insight, the episode maintains a fairly high and convincing level of tension and action. And of course, it's Torres' episode. She puts up a convincing display as a person struggling to control her emotions, as she always has. Maybe the whole episode might have been more appropriate earlier in the season when the Malon were still around and Torres was still struggling to deal with the deaths of the Maquis, but it's not too far out of place here and I enjoyed it.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x22 - Someone to Watch Over Me**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-4-28

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Doctor takes an interest in Seven.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- There are 146 crewmembers aboard Voyager according to Neelix.
- Voyager was designed for long range deep space exploration according to Neelix.
- According to the doctor, species 8472 may have as many as 5 sexes...

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Torres discovering that Seven of Nine is following her and Tom.
- Torres: "How the hell do you know when we're having intimate relations?" Seven: "There is no one on deck nine, section twelve who doesn't know when you're having intimate relations."
- Torres: "Borg provokes Klingon. Klingon breaks Borg's nose."
- Janeway: "This is a starship, not a nature preserve." Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 32 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The doctor: "They say gossip travels faster than warp speed."
- The doctor: "You're a woman, Seven." Seven: "Is that an observation or a diagnosis?"
- The doctor's silly slideshow.
- Seven of Nine attempting poorly to get a holographic date.
- Tom making a bet with the doctor.
- The doctor: "Seven, has anyone ever told you you have have a beautiful voice? It's a true gift!" Seven: "The gift is from the Collective. A vocal subprocessor designed to facilitate the sonic interface for Borg transponders."
- Seven of Nine's "flawless" singing, along with the duet.
- Harry discussing Seven of Nine's date candidate selection.
- Seven of Nine asking out Chapman.
- Seven of Nine's behavior on the date.
- Seven of Nine tearing a ligament in Chapman's arm.
- The drunken ambassador.

#### Comments:

This episode is original and a nice change of pace. Neelix' role with the alien ambassador is a lot like the Enterprise crew's roles with the alien ambassadors in TNG: Liaisons (especially Troi's ambassador), which is certainly a compliment. But Seven of Nine steals the show. I don't know whether her attempts to start dating are embarrassing or hilarious to watch, maybe a little of both. The episode is almost tragic, as the doctor desires a relationship with Seven, but is unable to bring himself to ask her out. Maybe he felt it would be a conflict of interest, or maybe he feels more content in a fatherly role than as a lover. In any case, the mingling of the two plot threads worked extremely well and ended up being one of Voyager's surprisingly better episodes. I like being pleasantly surprised.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x23 - 11:59**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-5-5

**My Rating - 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Janeway learns about her ancestor.*

**Problems:**

- Harry's story about his uncle Jack in 2210 contradicts much of established Star Trek history. But with all the historical misconceptions this episode shows us, I'm inclined to believe Harry got his history wrong.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Shannon O'Donnell predicting that the Y2k bug is nonsense. Bold statement for an episode written in 1999.
- Seven of Nine eavesdropping on Tom's and Neelix' contest. When both could not provide an answer to what the seventh wonder of the world was, Seven recited it.
- The doctor: "I too come from a distinguished line." Paris: "His cousin is an electric shaver."
- Chakotay: "Ship status report." Janeway: "Let me guess. The holographic engineer is having problems with her program, Neelix, the Cardassian cook is low on supplies, Seven of Twelve is regenerating, and Captain Chakotay is doing just fine."

**Comments:**

Well I'm not the only fan who found this episode distasteful. The fundamental problem with this episode is that it contributes nothing to the overall story of Voyager. It's nothing but a "feel good" episode for the crew; they all want to get together and tell stories of genealogy and feel good about themselves. There is no contention, other than Janeway's recollection of history isn't as accurate as she thought it was, nor would Kim's be as I would imagine from his tall tale! As for the story of Shannon O'Donnell, that's where the episode starts to get offensive. Henry Janeway is portrayed as a man against progress and for reasons not sufficiently explored, the Millennium Gate was regarded as an undisputed symbol of progress. To me, it seemed absurd that the whole town has to close down so that "progress" could be achieved. The US is a huge place, surely there were other locations available that didn't require bulldozing old buildings! Additionally, it's annoying that the writers just couldn't resist to make an episode exploiting the whole Y2k craze, virtually the only redeeming quality of its inclusion is Shannon's declaration that it was/will be/is total nonsense. This episode bears striking similarity to the similar waste of time that was DS9: Take Me Out to the Holosuite, but the differences is that DS9's version had contention, humor, fun, and a meaningful ending. Voy: 11:59 just didn't. It was mostly pointless and if it weren't for a few funny moments spread lightly across the plot, it would receive a de facto zero.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 5x24 - Relativity**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-5-12

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager's future depends on Seven.*

**Problems:**

- While the activation of the doctor in this episode at Utopia Planitia was funny, it largely contradicts his repeated previous statements that he was first activated in Voy: Caretaker.

**Factoids:**

- Borg species designation: 329, Kazon.
- The Dali Paradox, also known as the "melting clock effect", refers to a temporal fissure which slows the passage of time to a gradual halt.
- The Pogo Paradox: Causality loop in which interference to prevent an event actually triggers same event. Seven of Nine cites the events of Star Trek VIII: First Contact as an example of the Pogo Paradox.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the Utopia Planitia shipyards.
- Seven of Nine wandering around in Voyager's past.
- Carey appearance.
- The sight of the Federation timeship Relativity.
- Braxton: "Tempus fugit." (Latin for "time flies.")
- The doctor: "The next time your human physiology fails you, don't consult the database. Just call me." Seven: "You are the database."
- The ping pong ball freezing in mid air. Harry to Tom: "What do you call that shot?" When the ping pong ball unfroze, I like how Neelix gave Tom his point for scoring. :)
- The doctor: "An injection a day keeps space sickness away!"
- Temporal paradoxes beginning to occur throughout the ship.
- Seven of Nine discussing temporal paradoxes aboard the Relativity.
- Braxton bitching about "the Janeway factor" referencing events from Voy: Future's End.
- Seven: "I can't answer your questions." Braxton, listening on the Relativity: "Good." Janeway: "Why not?" Seven: "It would be a violation of the Temporal Prime Directive." Janeway: "You're from another time?" Seven: "Yes." Braxton: "No!"
- The hunt for the future Braxton.
- Ducane explaining all the temporal paradoxes and cleaning up the timeline.
- Janeway: "Let me get this straight. I'm going back in time to stop Braxton. But you already have him?" Ducane: "And there's a third one in our brig. I arrested him earlier today. But don't worry. They'll all be reintegrated in time for the trial." Janeway: "And Seven?" Ducane: "Oh, I assure you, when all this is over there'll only be one Seven of Nine." Janeway: "All right, let's get started before my headache gets any worse."
- Janeway traveling back in time, interacting briefly with Torres, seeing herself walk down a corridor, then apprehending Braxton.
- Janeway: "See you in the 24th century." Seven: "I look forward to it. Or should I say backward?"

**Comments:**

A very complicated, but extremely fun episode. It's nice to see a bit more of that odd 29th century. A Federation "timeship" denotes a whole fleet of starships with high time travel capabilities in the 29th century Federation. It also tells us that the Federation will still be around in the 29th century. Kind of a spoiler for those of us following the Dominion war, perhaps. Perhaps not. ;) You've got to wonder about the whole plausibility of this episode. I wonder how much work there actually is in repairing the timeline from anomalous influences, or exactly how the physics of it all works. A detailed analysis of the various causes and effects of certain types of time travel technologies would be warranted, though I think with careful planning it might be possible to base a Star Trek series in the 29th century. They could even take the name often used as a parody, "Time Trek", for many fans have complained about frequent time travel episodes. Overall, I found the return of Braxton, the complex approach toward time travel, and the Voyager crew's (especially Janeway's) reaction to the time travel most entertaining. This episode is among Voyager's best.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x25 - Warhead**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-5-19

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*A weapon takes control of Voyager.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The AI commandeering the doctor's program.
- Harry trying to reason with the AI.
- The scene with the guy offering to save Voyager in exchange for the weapon. Janeway sticks to her principles. Hard choice.
- Harry and Torres discovering that the war the warheads were fighting is over.
- Seven of Nine's futile attempt to disarm the weapon.
- Harry convincing the bomb not to complete its mission.
- The bomb: "I am simply completing my mission. Only the target has changed."
- Harry: "I held you up as an example of how an artificial intelligence could exceed its programming. I didn't realize how true that was until today."

**Comments:**

A combination of TNG: Lower Decks, showing us Harry doing a superb job commanding the night cew, TNG: The Quality of Life showing us the doctor's struggle for sentient AI's rights to be observed, and Voy: Dreadnought showing us another devious smart bomb. But not just any smart bomb. This bomb has achieved a true sentience. It takes a while for Harry and Torres to realize and convince the bomb that its war is over and it needs to stand down, but once they do convince it, the bomb sacrifices itself to stop the unevolved others from committing atrocity. It's ironic that in TNG: The Quality of Life an Exocomp sacrificed itself to save the others whereas in this episode the bomb sacrificed itself to destroy the others. Both sacrifices in the interest of saving as many lives as possible. The parallel is very effective; I wonder if it was intentional? Overall, a very successful episode.



**Star Trek Voy - 5x26 - Equinox, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 1999-5-26

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Another Federation starship brings trouble for Voyager.*

**Problems:**

- The enhancements done to the Equinox engines were a lot better than the claimed 0.03% boost. The speeds they were reaching were closer to transwarp or quantum slipstream.

**Factoids:**

- The Equinox is a Nova class starship designed for planetary research.
- Borg species designation: 6291, Yridian. The Borg believe them to be extinct. But Captain Ransom made a second first contact with the Yridians after both the Borg and the Federation determined their extinction.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing the Equinox.
- Torres' "BLT" nickname.
- Janeway confronting Ransom regarding his cover up.
- Ransom: "It's easy to cling to principles when you're standing on a vessel with its bulkheads intact, manned by a crew that's not starving!"
- Equinox EMH attacking Voyager EMH.
- Ransom's escape with his crew, his ship, and Voyager's field generator leaving Voyager stranded to fight the aliens alone.

**Comments:**

On one hand, this is a great episode. I loved seeing another Federation ship in the Delta quadrant! But on the other hand, this episode gets a lot of stuff wrong. The science behind the Equinox' new warp drive is a bit fuzzy, Ransom and crew's behavior is downright traitorous, and Janeway's initial "evacuate everyone off the Equinox" approach was flawed. The episode would have been a lot better if Voyager had helped to restore the Equinox instead of demanding it be abandoned. I personally wouldn't have minded seeing the Equinox and her crew make regular guest appearances on the show in season six. But given the events of this episode, it seems to me Ransom has burned his bridges with Voyager. The ship is probably either going to make it to the alpha quadrant or be

destroyed. Given that Seven of Nine is aboard, Voyager will probably track it to get Seven back, and then destroy it to stop Ransom. I must say, I'm pretty underwhelmed with this cliffhanger. It's pretty obvious Janeway isn't going to die and that the Equinox will be tracked down in order to retrieve Seven. Main characters just don't die like this.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 6x01 - Equinox, Part II**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-9-22

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A renegade starship causes problems for Voyager.*

#### **Problems:**

- How can the Ankari only be 50 light years from Voyager when Ransom has traveled in excess 10,000 light years on the nucleogenic aliens since he first met them? Do they use the nucleogenic aliens to travel too? ;)

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Ransom: "You know, Janeway's not the only captain who can help you explore your humanity."
- Seven: "You would be an inferior role model."
- The evil Voyager EMH singing as he extracts information from Seven of Nine.
- Voyager locating and battling the Equinox.
- Janeway interrogating Lessing.
- Chakotay saving Lessing.
- Janeway negotiating with the nucleogenic aliens.
- The evil Voyager EMH making Seven of Nine sing.
- Burke regarding Ransom's decision to surrender: "Rudy, with all due respect, have you lost your mind?"
- Burke taking over the Equinox.
- Voyager's second battle with the Equinox.
- The Voyager EMH deleting the Equinox EMH.
- Ransom undermining Burke's efforts, letting the aliens destroy his ship.
- Burke's foolish attempt to make it to the shuttle bay.
- Ransom going down with his ship.

#### **Comments:**

Well, it seems my predictions all came true. Nobody important died in the cliffhanger and Janeway tracked down the Equinox and destroyed it. The second part even managed to make another fairly serious distance / speed mistake documented in the problems section. That said though, the second part is a lot better than the first. Janeway becomes Captain Ahab hunting her Ransom and she starts to let her ethics slip, ironically all in the name of protecting ethical behavior. There's a method to her madness though. She's angry that Ransom and his crew are murdering the nucleogenic aliens and she's willing to make sure they pay for their crimes at any cost. Janeway was most certainly in "the ends justify the means" mode here. To her, stopping the killing and salvaging relations with these aliens was more important than the Equinox crew's lives. This of course breeds a nice level of conflict between Chakotay and Janeway. And the various space battles in the episode were quite spectacular. In the end, it's fitting that Ransom finally realizes he'd made a critical mistake and decides to go down with his ship. I liked the look of forgiveness in Janeway's eyes when Ransom was about to meet his end.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 6x02 - Survival Instinct**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-9-29

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Seven is confronted with her past.*

#### **Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Borg species designation: 521, Shivolian.
- Borg species designation: 571, name unknown. Humanoid. They worship Brothera.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the trading outpost and all the people aboard Voyager.
- Seven's flashbacks.
- The former Borg attacking Seven.
- The flashback depicting the crashed drones beginning to regain their memories.
- I like the scene when Tom and Harry get into trouble for getting into a fight.
- The revelation that Seven was responsible for linking the drones together.
- Chakotay arguing to Seven for fleeing freedom while the doctor argues for survival.
- The different reactions of each of the three drones once they were freed of their neural link.

**Comments:**

A great episode exploring both the psychology of the Borg Collective as well as the psychology of Seven of Nine. The three former drones in this episode give a wonderful performance playing mentally tortured pseudo individuals. And the ethical issue of whether a month of freedom is better than a life of slavery was well presented. Additionally, I enjoyed the connection between this episode and *Voy: One*. In that episode, Seven stated that she'd once been separated from the Collective. It's very possible she may have been referring to the events described in this episode. A nice bit of continuity.

**Star Trek Voy - 6x03 - Barge of the Dead**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-10-6

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Torres embarks on a journey to Klingon hell.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Klingons have a legend describing Kortar, the first Klingon, who destroyed the gods that created him and was condemned to steer the Barge of the Dead for all eternity as punishment.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres' shuttle crashing into Voyager's shuttle bay.
- Torres: "We only have one multi spatial probe, I didn't want to lose it." Janeway: "We only have one B'Elanna Torres. I don't want to lose her either."
- Tuvok wielding a bat'leth.
- Seven of Nine and the doctor singing a Klingon drinking song.
- Chakotay: "I accept there are things in the universe than can't be scanned with a tricorder."

**Comments:**

Voy: Coda + Voy: Mortal Coil = Voy: Barge of the Dead. The third "afterlife" plot Voyager's done so far. First Janeway, then Neelix, now Torres. I wonder when the writers will get tired of it. This one's a little better than *Voy: Mortal Coil*, but not quite as good as *Voy: Coda*. Torres' issues weren't quite as annoying as Neelix' were, but the writers made no attempt to explain away the dreams Torres was having like they did with Janeway. So in the end, the episode ended up being slightly below average. Not particularly bad, but not all that good either.

**Star Trek Voy - 6x04 - Tinker, Tenor, Doctor, Spy**

**Originally Aired:** 1999-10-13

**My Rating - 9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor experiences daydreams.*

**Problems:**

None



**Factoids:**

- The title of this episode is a parody of the film "Tinker, Tailor, Soldier, Spy" (1979).

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor singing "La donna è mobile" then altering the lyrics to deal with Tuvok. The complete lyrical score:

*"La donna è mobile  
qual piuma al vento  
muta d'accento  
e di pensier*

*Sempre un' amabile  
leggiadro viso  
in pianto o in riso  
è menzognero*

*La donna è mobile  
qual piuma al vento  
muta d'accento  
e di pensier  
e di pensier  
e di pensier*

*Tuvok I understand  
you are a Vulcan man  
you have just gone without  
for seven years about*

*Paris please find a way  
to load a hypospray  
I will give you the sign  
just aim for his behind*

*Hormones are raging  
synapses blazing  
it's all so very  
illogical  
illogical  
illogical"*

- Janeway, Torres, and Seven fighting over the doctor in another one of his daydreams.
- The Borg daydream. The doctor activates the "emergency command hologram" or ECH. His uniform changes color from teal to red and 4 pips appear on his collar.
- Computer: "Warning, warp core breach a lot sooner than you think."
- Computer: "Warning, last chance to be a hero doctor! Get going."
- The doctor jumping from fantasy to fantasy.
- The doctor painting a nude Seven of Nine.
- The crew's reactions to watching the doctor's fantasies.
- The doctor's "photonic cannon" stunt.

**Comments:**

In the tradition of *Voy: Message in a Bottle*, quite possibly *Voyager's* funniest episode. The humor is superior to my other previously high rated *Voyager* humor episodes *Voy: Message in a Bottle* and *Voy: Death Wish*. The humor in *Voy: Message in a Bottle* was a bit too silly, and the humor in *Voy: Death Wish* was secondary to the actual plot. In this episode, the plot is secondary to the humor! Now while I admit the plot is fairly weak, it doesn't particularly need to be anything grand. I found the wide allotted time to the exploration of the doctor's fantasies well used and the albeit simple solution to let the doctor play out his ECH (Emergency Command Hologram) fantasy to deter the Hierarchy both fitting and hilarious. And of course, who could forget the marvelous teaser in this episode? This episode is a treat, and I recommend it to anyone who needs a good laugh.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 6x05 - Alice**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-10-20

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Paris rebuilds an old shuttle.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Tuvok was married in 2304 and his daughter was conceived during his 11th Pon Farr.
- Chakotay: "We already have a full compliment of shuttles." More evidence that they've been rebuilding them.
- Rules of Acquisition; Not rules, but "The 5 Stages of Aquisition." They are as follows: 1. Infatuation, 2. justification, 3. appropriation, 4. obsession, and 5. resale.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Paris: "Congratulations Tuvok, you just saved us from a flotilla of hostile trash."
- Tom freaking out at Torres.
- Alice at warp. Nice visual effects.
- Alice's destruction.

**Comments:**

This episode thoroughly failed to live up to its premise, mostly I'd say because of the ulterior motives of Alice and her eventual destruction. The episode could have been a lot more interesting if Tom was less reckless and Alice ended up being a permanent addition to Voyager's shuttle compliment; a fast, maneuverable battle shuttle to supplement the Delta Flyer and standard shuttles. I envisioned space battles where Voyager acted as a carrier, deploying its fighters against the enemy. But instead of these grand uses, Alice was reduced to a mere plot device, something to make Tom act all bonkers. Fortunately, Tom did a great job acting all bonkers in this episode; in fact the acting in this episode was superb all around. A decent episode even if not quite what it could have been.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x06 - Riddles**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-11-3

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Tuvok suffers neurological damage.*

**Problems:**

- Tuvok's diagram depicting the cloaking frequency seems unlikely to be useful given that we don't know to what scale it was drawn. Maybe Janeway had the computer loop through all the likely scales?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Neelix' riddle. The ensign survived by eating the "dates" on his calender.
- The doctor: "If anyone can provoke Tuvok, Mr. Neelix, it's you."
- The doctor: "The Vulcan brain: a puzzle wrapped inside an enigma housed inside a cranium."
- Voyager decloaking the aliens.
- Tuvok's "not very logical" alternative answer to Neelix' riddle.

**Comments:**

It seems the writers liked the emotional Tuvok from Voy: Tinker, Tenor, Doctor, Spy so much that they wrote a whole episode around the idea. ;) Tim Russ does a wonderful job playing emotional Tuvok in this episode, an episode which explores how much intelligence and emotional control have over a person's underlying personality. It's remarkable how Tuvok's interests changed after his injury. Also remarkable is our guest star, Naroq. Rarely ever does Voyager present us with a guest star who remains an ally the entire episode, without at least some kind of hostile contention

erupting somewhere in the middle. Not only does Naroq remain an ally the whole episode, but he sacrifices a lot in the end to be able to help Tuvok. I was glad for this detail, as it's truly in the spirit of Star Trek.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 6x07 - Dragon's Teeth**  
Originally Aired: 1999-11-10

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager stumbles into Turei under-space.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- This episode features another ship landing.
- 900 years ago, the Borg had only assimilated a handful of systems.
- The Devore Imperium featured in Voy: Counterpoint occupies former Vaadwaur territory.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The "underspace" dispute, the ensuing battle, and the subsequent ship landing.
- Tuvok: "We don't know anything about this species. They could be hostile." Seven: "Most humanoid species are."
- Seven: "The Collective's memory from 900 years ago is fragmentary."
- Neelix researching the Vaadwaur via his Talaxian database.
- Janeway confronting Gedrin about history.
- Voyager's battle with the Vaadwaur.
- The Vaadwaur battling the Turei.

**Comments:**

This episode introduced many complex plot threads, but never sufficiently elaborated them. The subspace corridors were never revisited; I would have enjoyed seeing Voyager acquire a shortcut using them. The Vaadwaur were a great idea for a species, a civilization of conquered conquerors. Much like the Cardassians were on DS9. But we never see them again, despite Janeway's "I doubt we've seen the last of them" line. Overall, it was a fantastic episode, but I must deduct a point for the episode's inability to resolve its own plot threads and the series' inability to revisit these plot threads.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 6x08 - One Small Step**  
Originally Aired: 1999-11-17

My Rating - 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager searches for a long-lost Mars spacecraft.*

**Problems:**

- You can't inoculate somebody against gravimetric radiation. This would be like inoculating somebody against getting shot in the face. There's not much an inoculation can do to stop the bullet, nor the force of gravity and inertia likewise.

**Factoids:**

- The Borg designated the Graviton Ellipse "Spatial Anomaly 521."
- Before Seven was assimilated, she wanted to be a ballerina when she grew up.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The glitches.
- Seven of Nine debating with Tuvok the logic of exploring the Graviton Ellipse.
- Seven beaming over to the module.
- John Kelly's final log entries.
- John Kelly: "I think we're gonna need to make room on the periodic table..."
- Seven's change of heart.

**Comments:**

A pleasing, if slow episode. I found the idea of the Graviton Elipse fascinating and I was glad they didn't use it as some sort of plot device for yet another alien confrontation, but they were in fact genuinely interested in exploring it. The historical investigation into John Kelly's mission to Mars in 2032 fit well with the story; I liked how the A and B plots were essentially the same plot except stretched over a long period of time, kind of like Star Trek VII: Generations in a way. The episode was good for Seven of Nine's character development too, though that seems to be the trend these days. I could probably list close to a dozen episodes now directly dealing with her humanities education. But that's not necessarily a problem, as it served this episode well.




---

**Star Trek Voy - 6x09 - The Voyager Conspiracy**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-11-24
**My Rating - 6**
**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Seven suspects there is a conspiracy.*
**Problems:**

- It's kind of annoying that there's a "nearby Talaxian outpost" this far away from Talaxian space.

**Factoids:**

- Thanks to the catapult in this episode, Voyager has shaved about 3 years off their journey. This means Voyager has traveled the equivalent of about 51 years since it began its journey. (10 years [Voy: The Gift] + 5 years [Voy: Year of Hell] + 2 years [Voy: Night, rounded down] + 1 year [Voy: Hope and Fear, rounded up] + 10 years [Voy: Timeless] + 15 years [Voy: Dark Frontier] + 3 years [Voy: The Voyager Conspiracy] + 5 seasons of conventional warp = 51 years.)

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven of Nine's complex web of reasoning for how she discovered the parasites Neelix accidentally brought aboard.
- Voyager stumbling on the space catapult.
- Tash regarding his catapult: "Catapult a vessel across space, in the time it takes to say 'catapult a vessel across space.'"
- Seven of Nine speculating that a tractor beam recovered one of the reactors on the Caretaker's array.
- Seven of Nine outlining her conspiracy theory to Chakotay.
- Seven of Nine outlining her new conspiracy theory to Janeway.
- Seven of Nine accosting Naomi.
- Janeway and Chakotay confronting each other with (perhaps not so) subtle innuendo.
- Chakotay: "You didn't poison the coffee did you?" Janeway: "Not any more than I usually do."

**Comments:**

This episode is both annoying and wonderfully hilarious at the same time. Seven of Nine's conspiracy theories reminded me of clinically paranoid people who have nothing to do but study the intricacies of world politics all day so that they can invent government conspiracies. A nice tip of the hat there. But Seven's behavior was hardly rational. It seemed pretty clear early on that Seven's theories were bogus, so it was kind of annoying but also somewhat funny watching as she managed to convince both Chakotay and Janeway of conflicting theories. Kind of reminded me of a sleazy car salesman. While Seven's actions made the plot kind of exciting, I think Voyager's cooperation with Tash is the remarkable part about the episode. Tash's catapult reminds me a lot of Babylon 5's hyperspace gate. A small deficiency, why didn't Voyager get the schematics of this catapult? They could have attempted to build another one; and even if they failed they could at least transmit the schematics to Starfleet so that the Federation could build some and send some to Voyager in sequence. Oh well.




---

**Star Trek Voy - 6x10 - Pathfinder**  
**Originally Aired:** 1999-12-1
**My Rating - 9**
**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Barclay tries to make contact with Voyager.*

**Problems:**

- Voyager has made several major jumps totalling tens of thousands of light years since Starfleet last recieved an update outlining Voyager's position in the galaxy. There's no way their calculations could have been accurate. This isn't a major problem though. Barclay retransmitted the message several times to different locations. He probably varied the locations by thousands of light years in his frenzy.

**Factoids:**

- Barclay refers to Voyager as "the Voyager" in this episode; another rare line prefixing "Voyager" with "the" unlike on TNG when "the" prefixed "Enterprise" constantly.  
- Admiral Paris' picture of Tom Paris on his desk was taken from Robert Duncan McNeill's performance of Locarno from TNG: The First Duty.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing Barclay and Troi.  
- Barclay's cat, Neelix.  
- Barclay: "Has it ever occurred to you that a tachyon beam directed at a class B itinerant pulsar could produce enough gravimetric energy to create an artificial singularity?" Troi: "I can't say it has..."  
- Barclay telling his story to Troi.  
- Barclay breaking back into the lab.  
- Harkins ending Barclay's Voyager simulation by creating a warpcore breach. Awesome. :)  
- Seven of Nine insulting Neelix' singing ability.  
- Barclay's communication attempt succeeding.

**Comments:**

A supremely impressive episode documenting Starfleet Command's efforts to reestablish communication with Voyager that skillfully weaves in a plot thread dealing with Barclay's personal issues and a Troi cameo. Much like Voy: Distant Origin or Voy: Living Witness, I vastly enjoyed the fact that this episode, which largely dealt with Voyager, didn't actually take place for the most part on Voyager. The only annoying detail was Barclay's Voyager recreations in which he was regarded as some sort of god among the Voyager crew. This was of course a new reference to TNG: Hollow Pursuits, but I think in this case it was a bit over the top. The climax of greatness for this episode is of course the ending; I loved watching Barclay succeed in establishing communication with Voyager. It's amazing how good an episode in which nothing really happens can be with a proper storytelling technique.

**Star Trek Voy - 6x11 - Fair Haven**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-1-12

**My Rating - 2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew enjoys the holodeck creation Fair Haven.*

**Problems:**

- A big point is made about transferring energy from the holodecks to another ship system, yet in Voy: Parallax a big point is made about how you absolutely cannot do that under any circumstance. This isn't the first time an episode has contradicted this detail of Voy: Parallax, but I'm starting to wonder exactly why they keep doing this. Are we supposed to believe that they've modified the holodeck power systems such that now they can do this as well as believe they rebuild shuttles and manufacture photon torpedoes?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway reprogramming Michael Sullivan.  
- Tom, Harry, and Neelix unintentionally worsening Tuvok's space sickness.  
- Tom: "You'd make a good barometer, Tuvok. Every time you get queasy, we go to red alert."  
- Seven acing the rings tournament.

**Comments:**

Not very interesting in the slightest. A lot of people complain about how every episode of Star Trek introduces a new dangerous situation and a new conflict; that at times it feels redundant or that we never get a sufficient feel for daily life aboard ship. However, this episode is deficient because of its distinct \*lack\* of any such contention. It's also annoying that in order to show an episode about the day to day life of the characters, there had to be some kind of space anomaly to stop the ship from moving first. That said, the main plot of this episode would have made a decent B plot for a more interesting episode and there were details about the setting and characters of Fair Haven that were quite charming. But ultimately it seemed to be a poor use of episode time.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x12 - Blink of an Eye**  
Originally Aired: 2000-1-19

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager encounters a strange new world.*

**Problems:**

- Why doesn't Voyager send sped up messages to the planet so that they can communicate with them?

**Factoids:**

- Seven said: "For each second that goes by on Voyager, nearly a day goes by on the planet."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom: "That's one planet that never showed up on the multiple choice exam."
- Chakotay: "A few hours? We might miss the rise and fall of a civilization." Torres: "So we'll watch the next one."
- The doctor: "What if they're big purple blobs of protoplasm?" Janeway: "Then you'll be the best looking blob on the planet."
- The doctor's three second away mission, the return failure, and the subsequent scramble to get him back before too much time had passed.
- Naomi regarding the name of her report: "How does this sound? The weird planet where time moves very fast and so do the people who live there, by Naomi Wildman." Seven: "Your title is... verbose. I suggest you try to condense it." Naomi: "The weird planet." Seven: "Better. But it lacks precision. The weird planet displaced in time?" Naomi: "Perfect."
- The first alien space vehicle approaching to and docking with Voyager.
- The aliens collapsing on the bridge and transitioning into Voyager's timeframe.
- The attack on Voyager.
- The aliens making first contact in advanced space ships, pulling Voyager out of orbit of their planet.

**Comments:**

Add this species to the list I hope we see again, like the Voth. This episode was excellent in many ways. First, it's important to point out that the very premise of the episode is fascinating. An extremely fast rotating planet, affected by spatial anomalies on which time moves extremely fast. Truly science fiction at its best. Second, the idea to place a civilization on this planet may have been a little convenient, but it's exploited well. Chakotay's admittedly brief anthropological enthusiasm works much better in this episode than in Voy: One Small Step, and the implications of watching this entire civilization evolve are both enormous and fun to watch. Finally, another nice detail is that Voyager stays true to the Prime Directive all throughout. I enjoyed the fact that the interaction between Voyager and the planet was initiated by the aliens, not by Voyager. Overall the episode was well above average.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x13 - Virtuoso**  
Originally Aired: 2000-1-25

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Doctor experiences fleeting fame.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Qomari city's graphics were a re use of the Zahl homeworld from *Voy: Year of Hell*.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The first scene with the Qomari.
- The recital.
- The doctor: "If you consider the height of the average Qomar, it's obvious that anyone seated in the back five rows will have an obstructed view!" Torres: "You're right. They won't be able to see anything but the top of your head. The glare could blind them."
- Torres: "I'm an engineer, not a costume designer." Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 33 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Seven of Nine's red alert scene.
- Seven reading the doctor's fan mail: "What does he do in his spare time? To how many decimal places can he calculate Pi? This one wants to know his favorite quadratic equation."
- The doctor's final performance.
- Seven reading the doctor's fan mail: "Dear Doctor: I regret that your last performance was not as successful as you'd hoped. There are still those who appreciate your unique talents and admire you as an individual. I'll always consider myself your loyal fan." Doctor: "Who is it from?" Seven: "It's signed, 'Seven of Nine, Tertiary Adjunct of Unimatrix Zero-One.'"

**Comments:**

This episode is highly innovative, funny, and entertaining. It's nice to see the extremely talented Robert Picardo get to flex his singing muscles again. It's pretty clear the doctor isn't leaving the show, but the moral dilemma the show presents regarding the doctor beginning to mirror the arrogant, egotistical behavior of the Qomari is genuinely interesting and the the way the doctor falls out of favor with his new fans is pretty sad. I most enjoyed Seven of Nine's part in the story. She had so few scenes, but each was so well used. The episode would have been lacking without her scenes. As such, it was most fitting to have Seven of Nine do the final scene. A nicely done episode.

**Star Trek Voy - 6x14 - Memorial**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-2-2

**My Rating - 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew experiences strange visions.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres and her television set from the 1950s complete with commercials.
- Neelix freaking out after Naomi burns her hand.
- The Delta Flyer crew reconstructing their memories.
- Seven of Nine trying to cheer up Neelix.
- The crew discovering the source of the memories.
- Chakotay: "Words alone cannot convey the suffering. Words alone cannot prevent what happened here from happening again. Beyond words lies experience. Beyond experience lies truth. Make this truth your own."
- The debate about whether or not to leave the memorial running.

**Comments:**

Chakotay, Tom, Harry, and Neelix reconstructing their memories reminded me much of TNG: Schisms. In fact, most of the episode is a rehash of several others. Other notable examples are the monument being kind of like the probe in TNG: The Inner Light, and the forced war experiences being kind of like Chakotay's experience in *Voy: Nemesis*. The rehash itself is only slightly boring and minorly annoying, but the episode starts to really miss the mark with the ending. Nobody should be forced to experience something they don't want to. Janeway's decision was wrong. So given all of this, it's hard to give this episode much of a rating.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x15 - Tsunkatse**  
Originally Aired: 2000-2-9

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Seven must fight for the entertainment of others.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Dwayne Douglas Johnson plays the people's champion in this episode, otherwise known as wrestling star "The Rock".
- Jeffrey Combs, who plays Penk in this episode, played Weyoun (among others) on DS9.
- J.G. Hertzler, who plays the Hirogen hunter in this episode, also played General Martok on DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres: "The Borg wouldn't know fun if they assimilated an amusement park."
- Seven: "Two hours, 37 minutes, 13 seconds. That's how long we've gone without verbal communication." Tuvok: "Why is that remarkable?" Seven: "The Doctor encourages me to engage in conversation during awkward silences." Tuvok: "Did you find the silence awkward?" Seven: "No." Tuvok: "Nor did I."
- Chakotay, Kim, Tom, and Torres discussing Tsunkatse.
- The people's champion fighting Seven.
- Seven fighting the Hirogen while Voyager fights the "traveling circus" ship.
- Seven of Nine and the Hirogen being beamed away just as Seven's about to kill her opponent.
- Tuvok consoling Seven in the end.

**Comments:**

Good continuity with Voy: The Fight regarding Chakotay's fascination with boxing. I am quite surprised though how excited everyone was, until they saw seven in the pit of course. It's as if the crew has an aristocratic opinion of the whole thing. They're above doing this sort of behavior, but not above watching it. Aside from that admittedly small deficiency, the episode is exciting. I can't say I was all that excited about "The Rock" and his guest appearance, but he didn't play a major role, nor was his role anywhere near as annoying as "real life professional wrestling" is. Though this episode seems to be remarkable guest star central. Two former very important DS9 actors in the same episode along with "The Rock." Very strange casting. Jeri Ryan (and perhaps a stunt double ;) ) gave a spectacular athletic performance in this episode. Her acting as also top notch. It's not as if Star Trek (especially TOS) hasn't done "let's make our crew fight for the amusement of others" before in excess, but this particular gladiator rehash was quite well done and remains one of my favorite generic action episodes. It just goes to show how much the little details can sometimes contribute to a meager plot.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x16 - Collective**  
Originally Aired: 2000-2-16

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager encounters Borg children.*

**Problems:**

- Why didn't the Borg destroy the cube instead of just arbitrarily declaring it irrelevant? If the Borg children hadn't accidentally blown it up, it would have just sat there for any alien species to salvage. Which brings me to my next point. Why didn't Voyager steal transwarp coils? You could argue that they didn't have the time; that all their resources were directed at saving the away team, but given the heist they made in Voy: Dark Frontier, you'd expect they could pull off another one with a quickness.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser. Holy crap! Just like TNG: The Mind's Eye ;)



- The Delta Flyer fighting the Borg cube.
- Voyager's encounter with the Borg cube.
- Seven of Nine encountering the "neonatal" drones.
- Harry, within the Delta flyer, within the Borg cube.

**Comments:**

Mixed feelings about this one. On one hand it's got great special effects, a compelling story (mostly), and very real consequences. On the other hand the episode utterly fails to live up to its premise. The story it decides to tell isn't half bad, but the story they could have told with it could have been much better. And the flaws a long the way ruin some of its greatness. Specifically, the idea of rescuing Borg Children from the maturation chambers is a good one, but the idea of a Borg ship with all the drones excepting the children dead was a bad one. It's also inconsistent with Borg behavior. The cube should have been destroyed. I would have liked to see this story but with a full compliment of Borg on board anyway. It would have been more exciting. Voyager could have encountered a damaged Borg ship and gone hunting for transwarp coils again (why didn't they do that by the way?) and they could have accidentally destroyed the power source to the maturation chambers. So now Voyager is faced with recuing the dying children or completing their heist. They choose to save the children. Same outcome, better story. With a full compliment of Borg aboard, a much more exciting one too. In short, this was a fair episode, great consequences, decent ride, below average plot. Could have been improved upon easily.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x17 - Spirit Folk**  
**Originally Aired:** 2000-2-23

**My Rating -**  
**3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Problems arise when Voyager runs a holodeck program non-stop.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tom turning Harry's girl into a cow.
- The doctor's sermon.
- Neelix being compared to the likeness of a Leprechaun.
- Sullivan "playing along."

**Comments:**

An improvement upon Voy: Fair Haven, but not by much. The episode is better in that they didn't have to find some external space anomaly to have an excuse to spend all the episode in the holodeck, but we did get some cliched holodeck malfunction action. We also got a slight rehash of TNG: Elementary, Dear Data. It's remarkable to point out how Moriarty had to be more or less eliminated, but since the Fair Haven characters were not villainous, the same was not necessary of them. With all these things considered, the episode is quite pleasant; my fundamental problem is with the whole idea of Fair Haven in the first place. I just don't find the crew escaping into a stereotypical Irish town all that interesting.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x18 - Ashes to Ashes**  
**Originally Aired:** 2000-3-1

**My Rating -**  
**4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A crewman returns to Voyager.*

**Problems:**

- Why have we never, ever seen Ballard before?
- How could Ballard have ever possibly caught up with Voyager?
- If Ballard died 3 years ago, how could she have been killed by a Hirogen? For that matter, don't the Hirogen claim their trophies?
- Why hasn't Mezoti been returned to Norcadia? They rescued her from the Borg one episode after

Voyager made first contact with her home planet!

**Factoids:**

- Borg Species Designation: 689, Norcadian.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The opening scene. I liked Ballard switching from Kobali to English.
- Seven of Nine: "Fun will now commence."
- Seven of Nine's less than perfect parenting skills.
- Tom: "For those of us keeping score, Harry Kim has fallen for a hologram, a Borg, the wrong twin, and now the dearly departed!"
- The doctor: "Hair is one of my specialties, despite evidence to the contrary."

**Comments:**

Good concept, nice premise, a well flowing story, and a great guest starring actress playing Ballard, but the flaws in this one spoil the ride. With more careful writing the episode could have been a lot better. It's hard to watch an episode like this because the execution of the premise was nicely done. If continuity did not exist, there wouldn't be a problem with this ep at all. But there are things in this episode that are hard to justify which wreck a lot of the fun. For details, see the problems section. Otherwise, this episode would have scored well above a 5.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x19 - Child's Play**  
**Originally Aired:** 2000-3-8

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Icheb returns to his family.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Morn Appearances; 1. Mark Allen Shepherd, who plays Leucon in this episode, played the infamous Morn on DS9. In some ways, this is the first episode in which Morn gets lines. ;)

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway: "Why potatoes?" Seven of Nine: "Their first idea was to clone Naomi. But I suggested they start with something smaller."
- Seven accosting Icheb's parents.
- Seven debating her objections to returning Icheb to his parents with Janeway.
- Seven discovering holes in Leucon's story.
- Icheb's parents' true motives being revealed.
- Voyager rescuing Icheb.

**Comments:**

A good connection with Voy: Collective, giving us the story of Icheb. Now we know where that pathogen came from. Unfortunately much of the plot concerns Icheb returning home unwillingly, something we've seen before in TNG: Suddenly Human and with Seven of Nine in a way. The revelation explaining Icheb's parents' true motives comes far too late and is resolved far too easily. This has the nice side effect of catching the viewer totally off guard, but I would have rather had a deeper story than a surprising one. Overall the episode is fairly decent though.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x20 - Good Shepherd**  
**Originally Aired:** 2000-3-15

**My Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Underperforming crewmembers go on a mission.*

**Problems:**

- There's some kind of Windows or Mac error dialog box message on the computer screen on the bio bed in this episode. But I couldn't make out the details.

**Factoids:**

- The man who directs Janeway on deck 15 is Tom Morello, guitarist of Rage Against The Machine.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser with the both cool and symbolic zooming effects.
- Seven of Nine complaining about the ship's lack of efficiency.
- Janeway handing out away missions to the underperforming crewmembers.
- Janeway getting a bit lost on deck 15.
- Janeway trying hard but poorly getting along with Mortimer Harren.
- Harren trying to sacrifice himself.
- The sight of a Delta Flyer escape pod.
- The Delta Flyer's escape.

**Comments:**

TNG: Lower Decks meets Voyager. Or, Voy: Learning Curve done right. This episode lacks the profoundness of TNG: Lower Decks, but also does not make as many of the mistakes of Voy: Learning Curve. Still, this episode would have been better suited for showing in an earlier season. I enjoyed many aspects of the otherwise mediocre premise. Janeway and the three guest crewmen all gave marvelous performances. They are all characters I would enjoy seeing again. The actual alien of the week plot wasn't very interesting, but I felt the character story made up for any deficiencies in that department. Finally, while the episode was perhaps belated, I am pleased to see Voyager exploiting its premise. None of these crewmen would have remained aboard Voyager if the ship were still in the alpha quadrant. They could have been put off the ship for their underperformance. But since Janeway doesn't have that option, she feels personally obligated to help them. As such, this episode has a certain charm to it that I enjoyed very much.

**Star Trek Voy - 6x21 - Live Fast and Prosper**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-3-19

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager encounters con artists.*

**Problems:**

- It is said that Voyager has 30,342.4 light years to go. This would seem inconsistent with my calculations that they in fact have about 24,000 light years to go. According to my calculations, Voyager has traveled the equivalent of about 51 years since it began its journey. (10 years [Voy: The Gift] + 5 years [Voy: Year of Hell] + 2 years [Voy: Night, rounded down] + 1 year [Voy: Hope and Fear, rounded up] + 10 years [Voy: Timeless] + 15 years [Voy: Dark Frontier] + 3 years [Voy: The Voyager Conspiracy] + 5 seasons of conventional warp = 51 years.) If you factor out five or six seasons of conventional warp and blame it on Voyager's extensive exploration and various delays, the 30,000 figure seems to make more sense though. At least they didn't over estimate distance traveled.

**Factoids:**

- Kaitlin Hopkins, who played Dala in this episode, played the Vorta captain in DS9: The Ship.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway's sonic shower malfunction.
- Tuvok complaining about Harry and Tom altering his holodeck programs.
- Tom and Neelix trying and failing to fool the doctor.
- Janeway confronting Dala.
- Tuvok's improvisation.
- The doctor posing as Dala.
- Mobar encountering Tuvok.

**Comments:**

A light hearted, funny episode. The thieves with their good, but not quite perfect impersonations and costumes reminded me of the scene of a Star Trek convention. I wonder if this was intentional. I most enjoyed Mobar's complete and utter admiration of Tuvok which, again, reminded me of a rabid Trek fan. The Voyager crew using the imposters' own tactics against them was ironic, funny, and fitting; rarely is the doctor used so well. Overall entertaining, but nothing too terribly special.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 6x22 - Muse**  
Originally Aired: 2000-4-26

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Torres is stranded.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Torres beginning to "play along" with her "captor," sending him on a mission chasing after dilithium.
- Kelis to his actor: "They'll realize that beneath your unfeeling exterior is a heart that's breaking. Silently and in more pain than any of us can possibly understand. Because that's what it is to be Vulcan."
- Tuvok snoring in the captain's chair.
- The improvisation at the end.

**Comments:**

Not a very "inspiring" premise... another shuttle crash. One wonders if they crash or damage shuttles more often than they don't. But in this case, it was appropriate. Never have I seen a more captivating shuttle crash story. Torres, rescued by a local alien, discovers her savior is in fact using details from her life as material in his plays. The story's focus remains off of Torres and her shuttle problems; we're shown more instead about Kelis and his troubles maintaining his relationship with his patron. While at this point neither plot thread is all that interesting, Torres does a masterful job walking the line of the Prime Directive, giving her savior just enough information without going too far. I like how she referred to Voyager as a ship on the sea and the Borg as a vast army of soldiers who all think alike. The play plot becomes interesting when Kelis decides he wants to expand the Voyager play to convince his patron not to go to war with his neighbor. He cites his culture's history, claiming that many years ago a play took the place of a ritual sacrifice, saving a single life, and all those who'd have been sacrificed in the future. Kelis asks if a play can stop a murder, why can't a play stop a war? At some point, these words hit home for Torres. For she decides to help Kelis after all, when news arrives that his attempt to quell the war goes badly. To enrich his play, Torres uses transporter technology to "ascend to the heavens." I liked their conversation at the end. They weren't just improvising an act for the crowd, they were actually talking to each other. There may have been symbolism in the words for the play, but Torres at the same time was discussing the nature of inspiration with Kelis. The conversation made clear to me that Kelis knew or at least had some kind of idea what Torres actually was and where she actually lived. But he wasn't half as interested in her advanced culture as he was saving his own. In many ways, he was more enlightened than she. The whole story is true to the spirit of Star Trek and charming to watch. A bonus point for the marvelous symbolism.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x23 - Fury**  
Originally Aired: 2000-5-3

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Kes returns to Voyager.*

**Problems:**

- While not impossible, Tuvok being less than 100 years old in this episode is hard to rationalize with Voy: Flashback. Maybe like Klingons, Vulcans reach maturity much faster than humans, for Tuvok would have been a very young teenager whilst aboard the Excelsior.

**Factoids:**

- Kes' shuttle's internal set is another reuse of captain Braxton's shuttle.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok's excuse for blowing out the candle: "It was a fire hazard."
- Kes' appearance and subsequent telekinetic attacks on the ship.
- Kes traveling back through time.
- The doctor lamenting about not having a name.
- Tuvok mentioning the Delta Flyer whilst in the briefing in the past.
- The Vidiian attack.
- Chakotay: "Reverse thrusters, full power!" Harry: "That could tear the hull apart!" Chakotay: "Then tear it apart!"
- Janeway deactivating the EMH in the middle of talking to Kes.

**Comments:**

This is an episode which gets lost in its own premise. The idea was to have Kes come back, but for only one episode. Which is fine, it was fun. But examining the episode more deeply shows its flaws. First of all, the episode takes place in Voyager's past, probably season 1. Again, it's fun to revisit this, but having a "modern" Kes return to us, then tossing the episode in the middle of the past was a grand waste of time. By the time we finally got the "real" Kes back and Janeway + Tuvok managed to quell her evil plan, the episode was pretty much over. Kes and Janeway have an extremely short conversation, and off Kes goes in Braxton's, er, I mean her shuttle to the Ocampa homeworld. Several things are not explained. Where did Kes get that shuttle? How fast is it? How did she locate Voyager? How did she catch up with Voyager? Why is she not as powerful as she was in Voy: The Gift? The question of why she was so angry throughout the episode is only barely answered. Suffice it to say, either a longer episode or an episode devoid of time travel would have been a better episode. And frankly, this likely being the final Kes episode leaves me more than a little annoyed. She already had one relatively bad send off, now two? I'm surprised Jennifer Lien actually did this episode after reading the script. This episode could have been the perfect opportunity to show us what Kes' life has been like for all these years or to even reintroduce her character. What a monumental waste. An extra point for the Vidiian plot and doing a good job making a season 1 set though.

**Star Trek Voy - 6x26 - Unimatrix Zero, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-5-7

**My Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Borg Queen returns.*

**Problems:**

- Voyager fires a phaser from one of its nacelles in this episode...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Harry bemoaning about not being promoted: "I didn't notice a little box on my chair!"
- The Borg Queen bribing Voyager with transwarp technology.
- Voyager attacking the cube.
- The destruction of the Delta Flyer.
- Janeway, Tuvok, and Torres being assimilated.

**Comments:**

A decent premise but a fairly weak episode. I liked the idea of Unimatrix Zero. Reminded me of a Borg version of the Matrix, where the Collective itself is the Matrix and those in Unimatrix Zero are the freed people of Zion. Unfortunately the episode gets several things wrong. I'm forced to question Janeway's and her crew's extreme recklessness, only Tom and the doctor seem to question the whole idea of invading the Borg in such a manner. The cliffhanger is totally ineffective; are we led to believe it's possible Janeway, Tuvok, and Torres are all lost? Obviously this will not be the case. There are even subtle hints that this is all going according to plan, such as the doctor's "no change yet" line followed by Chakotay's "so far so good" line after the doctor reported that Janeway, Tuvok, and Torres had been assimilated. The writers aren't fooling anybody here. I'd rather have had a more interesting plot in place of this ineffective attempt at misdirection.



**Star Trek Voy - 6x24 - Life Line**  
Originally Aired: 2000-5-10

My Rating - 9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The Doctor's creator is dying.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- Dr. Zimmerman won the Daystrom prize for holography.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway regarding Zimmerman: "Unusual man. I met him once at a conference. Managed to offend just about everyone there. But he was certainly brilliant."
- Zimmerman to Barclay: "You don't have any friends."
- EMH: "What were your initial symptoms?" Zimmerman: "Radical hair loss."
- The doctor meeting his creator.
- The speaking iguana, Leonard.
- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not a zookeeper." Count 34 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- The doctor squishing the holographic spy fly.
- Troi's appearance.
- Troi: "You're both jerks!" Leonard: "Jerks."
- The revelation that Haley is a hologram.
- The doctor regarding Barclay's Voyager recreation: "For one thing, Neelix doesn't purr." Nice connection with Voy: Pathfinder.
- The doctor regarding Troi: "She's a counselor, Lieutenant, not an engineer!" Not exact, but I'll count it. Count 35 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Zimmerman trying to improve the doctor.
- Zimmerman: "Emergency Medical Hotheads! That's what everybody used to call the mark ones."
- Zimmerman: "Do you know how humiliating it is to have 675 mark ones out there, scrubbing plasma conduits all with my face?"

**Comments:**

An episode loaded with goodies. Another Barclay and Troi guest appearance giving us a nice sequel to Voy: Pathfinder, an update on Starfleet's efforts to bring Voyager home; apparently two deep space vessels could reach Voyager in five to six years! Yeah, well Voyager isn't going to be running five or six more years. I think we're going to get another speed boost. ;) Also we get to see that wonderful Dr. Louis Zimmerman again, for probably final time. The whole story is wonderfully entertaining and quite funny without degrading the seriousness of Dr. Zimmerman's condition. I enjoyed Janeway's short line about how impression of Zimmerman when she met him. But the devil is in the details. You've got to love all the little things in this episode, like finally seeing Jupiter station, or seeing Zimmerman's holographic lab, or Zimmerman's holographic iguana Leonard, or his holographic companion Haley, or his holographic spy fly, or the various one liners throughout the episode that just make you laugh. Because of all these things, this episode remains one of my favorites. Even if some of the details are a rehash, the basic story isn't. And both of Robert Picardo's roles steal the show. :)



**Star Trek Voy - 6x25 - The Haunting of Deck Twelve**  
Originally Aired: 2000-5-17

My Rating - 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Neelix spooks the Borg children.*

**Problems:**

- I fail to see how shooting a computer console can deactivate a forcefield.
- Tuvok says to Neelix: "Concentrate on the rhythm of your breathing. Envision your lungs filled with light." But Neelix has only one lung.

**Factoids:**

- Borg Species Designation: 5973, name unknown. The Borg encountered them in galactic cluster 8. They're multispectrum particle life forms.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Neelix: "But I'm warning you. This is not a tale for the faint of heart." Mezoti: "We're not faint of heart." Icheb: "Our cardiopulmonary systems are reinforced."
- The replicator malfunction, replicating the coffee, it spills, then the cup. :)
- The computer telling the bridge crew where everyone on the ship is.
- Tom: "Don't you ever sweat?" Tuvok: "Not unless the temperature reaches 350 degrees Kelvin with a humidity factor of approximately--" Tom: "Forget I asked."
- The life form communicating with Janeway using the computer.

**Comments:**

A rehash of several previous episodes, but told in a unique manner. Instead of just telling us the story directly, we watch as Neelix tells the story to the Borg children. Among this there are other details redeeming the episode. It was nice to see Tal Celes from *Voy: Good Shepherd* again, and I much enjoyed the various system malfunctions, as well as the alien using the computer to communicate. All things considered though, the episode is largely an unexciting rehash that remains most predictable throughout.

**Star Trek Voy - 7x01 - Unimatrix Zero, Part II****My Rating - 6****Originally Aired:** 2000-10-4**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***The crew infiltrates Unimatrix Zero.***Problems:**

- Tuvok's birth date of stardate 38774 isn't correct.
- Tuvok having been born on "Vulcanis Lunar Colony" would seem to contradict Spock's assertion that Vulcan has no moon. Perhaps "Vulcanis Lunar Colony" refers to a moon orbiting some other planet in the Vulcan system.
- Janeway orders Torres to "download" the virus when she meant to "upload" the virus.

**Factoids:**

- Tuvok's daughter Asil was born in the city of T'Paal.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway and Torres deploying the virus.
- Voyager getting pummeled thanks to the Borg having Tuvok's access codes.
- The Borg Queen self destructing ships with drones she cannot hear.
- Borg Queen: "Assimilation turns us all into friends. In fact, it brings us so close together we can hear each other's thoughts." Boy: "Is that fun?" Borg Queen: "Yes. It's fun."
- The Borg Queen self destructing her long range tactical cube, trying to kill Janeway.

**Comments:**

The episode ends much as you'd expect it to. Janeway finds a way to use Unimatrix Zero to attack the Borg Collective. She also finds a way to get her and her crew unassimilated. The whole episode was much too routine. It lacked the danger that episodes like *TNG: The Best of Both Worlds*, *Voy: Scorpion*, or even *Voy: Dark Frontier* offered. The Borg resistance was a good idea, but isn't sufficiently elaborated. Overall, between its numerous flaws and lack of originality, this episode felt more like a routine action episode than the stunning season finale / premiere that it should have been. It was quite entertaining as a two part episode, but most disappointing as a season finale / premiere.

**Star Trek Voy - 7x02 - Imperfection****My Rating - 8****Originally Aired:** 2000-10-11**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Seven suffers a breakdown.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Janeway is shot during transport and is not hurt.
- This episode was meant to be set after *Voy: Drive*, but the air date order was changed.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Mezoti, Azan, and Rebi departing.
- Icheb expressing interest in joining Starfleet.
- Tom pointing out that the last time she took the Delta Flyer it ended up being destroyed. :)
- Janeway extracting a cortical node from a dead Borg in a Borg debris field.
- The Delta Flyer battling the alien scavengers.
- The doctor's surgery simulation.
- Seven discussing with Torres afterlife.
- Icheb disconnecting his cortical node himself so as to force the doctor to give it to Seven.
- Seven: "This debate is pointless, I won't accept the node." Icheb: "And I won't keep it." The doctor: "Someone had better use the damn thing! If it stays disconnected much longer it won't do either of you any good."
- The surgery.

**Comments:**

Out of left field, we're shown a wonderful episode. It has all the components necessary for a good Star Trek episode. A contention, namely Seven's illness, putting her in danger. An attempt to save her that doesn't go so well, namely stealing a cortical node from a dead drone. A decent helping of action, namely the aliens who attacked the Delta Flyer at the Borg debris field. And finally a genuine moral issue concerning Icheb's radical solution to Seven's problem. I liked how mature and grown up Icheb has become and how logical his plan is. Most of all, I loved how he forced this plan upon everyone in order to save Seven's life when he realized he would fail to convince anyone. The ends justified his means, and Seven has grown much closer to Icheb as a result. Maybe our Borg action thriller that was last episode wasn't so great, but the drama in this episode is top notch.

**Star Trek Voy - 7x03 - Drive****Originally Aired:** 2000-10-18**My Rating - 6****Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Paris and Torres compete in a race.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser's little competition.
- Tom and Harry selling the idea of the race to Janeway.
- Tom's chat with Assan.
- The start of the race.
- The accident.
- Tom: "She's not a Borg, she's not a hologram, and she's not dead. Looks like you might have finally found yourself the perfect woman."
- Irina betraying Harry.
- Tom and Torres working out their problems.
- Tom and Torres discovering the bomb.
- Tom: "Will you marry me?" Computer: "Warp core breach in 15 seconds." Torres: "You're proposing now?" Tom: "It's as good a time as any."

**Comments:**

A pleasant light hearted episode with only a minor contention resulting in Tom and Torres finally getting married. I much enjoyed the race and the marvelous eye candy sprinkled about. It was



kind of a nice homage to Voy: Day of Honor that the marriage proposal required another extreme situation. The way the episode wove together the alien race event with Harry's women problems and the Tom and Torres conflict was quite nice as well. Overall very decent, slightly above Voyager's average.



---

### **Star Trek Voy - 7x04 - Repression**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-10-25

**My Rating - 4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Maquis crewmembers are mysteriously attacked.*

#### **Problems:**

- Tuvok runs out of his quarters without a comm. badge. But when we see him in the hall in the next scene, he's mysteriously acquired one.
- Janeway says Voyager is 35,000 light years from Earth in this episode. This corrects the previous incorrect statements that it was in fact 30,000 light years from Earth. Unfortunately, the previous claim was made several times across several episodes. Still, I'm more willing to believe this episode.
- A female Vulcan aboard is hard to rationalize with Voy: Counterpoint and Voy: Blood Fever. In the former, she would have had to have been shown hiding among the transporter people. And in the latter, she could have served as Vorik's new mate...

#### **Factoids:**

- Voyager is said to be 35,000 light years from home in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- "Let me get this straight. You've gone to all this trouble to program a three dimensional environment, that projects a two dimensional image, and now you're asking me to wear these to make it look three dimensional again?" Tom: "Great, isn't it?"
- Tuvok discovering himself to be the guilty party.
- Tuvok "activating" Chakotay.
- Chakotay "activating" Torres.
- The ensuing Maquis takeover.
- Tuvok shooting Janeway with a defective phaser.
- Tuvok undoing the damage he did.
- Tuvok explaining to Janeway how he knew the phaser would be defective.

#### **Comments:**

An episode with a poor premise spiced up with great acting by Tuvok and some fun action scenes. Yeah, the timing is way off for a Maquis takeover. But at the same time, this exact story couldn't have been done until Voyager reestablished contact with Starfleet. There were two remarkable details that I thought made this better than the average mind control plot. Contrast this episode with TNG: The Game where everyone is totally out of their minds. Now look at how it's done here. Tuvok, after having mind melded with everyone, simply says "pah'tem'far, b'tanay" to Chakotay. Chakotay simply responds with "understood", and in that instant he is "awakened." He says the same to Torres, who replies with "I understand." The two of them probably went on to "activate" more people. The "activated" Maquis didn't act any different than they normally do, with the exception of to whom their loyalties lied, which I thought was kind of creepy, but cool. Overall, not too bad.



### **Star Trek Voy - 7x05 - Critical Care**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-11-1

**My Rating - 7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor is stolen.*

#### **Problems:**

- Iridium is not radioactive.

**Factoids:**

- As of this episode, Star Trek special effects are now done by Eden.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The graphics in the teaser.
- Tom and Harry discussing Hockey with Nausicaans. Sounds nasty.
- The idiot EMH on Voyager.
- Janeway's and Tuvok's investigaton.
- Janeway professing Tuvok her boyfriend.
- Voyager apprehending Gar.
- The doctor's revenge.

**Comments:**

We've seen the doctor stolen before, but never for the purpose of using him as a doctor. This episode is uniquely remarkable in this respect, and well used he is. We're shown an alien society which has very strict policies on who can be treated in a hospital which is determined by social status. The way these policies are presented makes them seem understandable, even if a bit chilling. It's not until late in the episode that it's revealed that it might all just be Chellick's sick little scheme for using resources more efficiently. In truth, neither is made entirely clear. the most remarkable aspect about this episode is the doctor's use of torture on Chellick to invoke change. The ends most certainly justified the means, but the doctor's methods to me seemed just about as chilling as Chellick's (former?) policies. But then, you're supposed to fight fire with fire, right?

**Star Trek Voy - 7x06 - Inside Man**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-11-8

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager gets an unexpected delivery.*

**Problems:**

- "Geodesic radiation" is a pretty annoying term. It would seem to connote radiation generated by gravity.
- We have yet another case of inoculation against the said "radiation", but we've seen it so many times now that I'm gonna have to just accept that in the 24th century, an injection can do much more than it can today... somehow.
- There's another case of an upload/download term mixup by the writers in this episode.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Holographic Barclay appearing on board.
- Holobarclay telling Seven that on Earth she's famous.
- Barclay's conspiracy theories regarding how his transmission was blocked.
- The revelation that the Ferengi are exploiting Barclay's program.
- Barclay surprising Troi with another counseling session.
- Barclay imitating the crew.
- Admiral Paris interrogating Barclay's ex girlfriend.
- The geodesic pulse.
- Holobarclay attacking Seven.
- Barclay pretending ot be Holobarclay.
- Tom and Torres picking on Harry.
- Reprogrammed Holobarclay accosting Troi.
- Rules of Acquisition; 74. Knowledge = profit.

**Comments:**

Not quite as good as Barclay's previous three appearances, but still very good. It's remarkable how personally different Barclay's hologram was compared to the real thing. Holobarclay was so much more confident, even downright arrogant at times. I would assume this was done by Barclay intentionally, and not by the Ferengi. There are some directing issues in this otherwise wonderful episode though. Some scenes are in the wrong order, some are too long, some are too short. It would have been nice to see Holobarclay imitate the crew before we find out he's evil, and the

scene when he gets angry at the doctor was just totally unnecessary. The biggest thing redeeming this episode is that it's a continuity goldmine. There are countless connections with TNG, too many to list. But all of them well placed. And finally the plot is amazingly original. The writer really knew his Trek and how to combine previously introduced elements into quite a story. With a little more care, this episode could have been among the top. But it's still quite good.



---

**Star Trek Voy - 7x07 - Body and Soul**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-11-15

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor experiences actual human senses.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to Tuvok, the Vulcan libido increases with time.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven's decidedly odd behavior once the Flyer was boarded.
- The doctor in total control of Seven's body.
- The doctor smelling Harry.
- The doctor enjoying eating.
- The cheesecake scene.
- The drunken Seven/doctor.
- The doctor as Seven: "It wasn't not my fault, Sevne's unique physiology is... unique. It doesn't react well to synthehol."
- Seven recovering her body, decidedly pissed at the doctor.
- Tom offering to make Tuvok a hologram of his wife.
- Tuvok's fun being disrupted by the battle.
- Janeway: "We're both reasonable people. I suggest a compromise. Your vessel will escort us through Lokirrim territory. That way you can keep an eye on us; make sure we don't reactivate our holodecks. The other alternative is we destroy your ship."
- Seven getting pissed at the doctor a second time.
- The waltz.
- Neelix' faux pas with Tuvok.
- Janeway sucker punching her escort and running.
- The doctor saving the life of his captors.
- Seven and the doctor making up at the end.

**Comments:**

We have both an interesting plot concerning racism against holograms, as well as the body switching plot in the tradition of TOS: Turnabout Intruder, among others. It goes without saying that Jeri Ryan did an amazing job playing the doctor's character, and the writing for both characters was great. It was more than fitting that the doctor would immediately over indulge and Seven would object to any indulgences whatsoever. The aliens of the week weren't very interesting, but served as successful plot devices. My favorite scene with them was when Janeway arrogantly threatened to destroy her opponent's ship, then later surprise attacked them to make a clean getaway. Rarely have we seen Janeway act so maliciously. Tuvok's Pon Farr was a nice secondary plot. The writers knew this had to come some time, and having the doctor away so Paris had to treat him was very nice writing. All things considered, this is a very intelligently written episode that combines humor with danger and action very successfully. Most impressive.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x08 - Nightingale**

**My Rating - 5**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-11-22

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Harry Kim takes command of a ship.*

**Problems:**

- So if the "passengers" aboard Nightingale were all cloaking tech scientists and not just

passengers after all, how come they knew nothing of ship operations?

- Was the border of Annari space ridiculously close to the planet Voyager landed on? They seemed to cross the border without ever reaching warp speed in short order...

**Factoids:**

- Another ship landing.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway complaining about the extended maintenance stay.
- Harry saving the alien ship.
- Harry complaining about still being an Ensign.
- Icheb concerned that Torres is attracted to him.
- Icheb confronting Torres about her "attraction."

**Comments:**

On the surface, this is an above average episode, but an analysis reveals several weak points. The technical problems which I've outlined in the problems section contribute quite negatively to the plot, seeing as how they do much to ruin the premise. I also was annoyed that the Nightingale was just a reuse of the Maquis raider. There isn't much excuse for that in today's high budget Trek. Finally, I was rather annoyed Janeway didn't put a stop to Harry's mission. It had obvious negative consequences for Voyager, and even considering the actual events of the episode, there's no way to be sure Harry was in fact helping the "right" side. It would have been much smarter for Voyager to stay out of the conflict, complete the trade negotiations, and leave peacefully, rather than being escorted out of the combat zone having not completed repairs and not made any trades. There are several nice details about the episode though which keep me from rating it any lower. I loved the plot concerning Icheb's mistaken romance. I especially love the way it ended. Torres just played along and let Icheb believe whatever he wanted to believe so she didn't have to explain to him what her actual motives were. Seeing Kim complain about his rank and get some time to play captain on another ship was nice too. And to be honest, despite the inherent flaws, I much enjoyed the "smuggle the cloaking device behind the lines" story. In short, this episode is a lot of fun if you don't think about it too much. So I tend to be fairly forgiving.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x09 - Flesh and Blood, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 2000-11-29

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager's holo-technology comes back to haunt them.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Tylium is said to be used as a power source for Hirogen ships. This is a reference to Battlestar Galactica on which it was used by the Galactica as a power source too.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor pressing Chakotay to let him take a shuttle to attend the symposium.
- Seven shutting down the hologrid, revealing the hirogen bodies.
- The doctor: "I'm a doctor, not an engineer." Count 36 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.

**Comments:**

I was a little annoyed that Voyager seems to be vastly more powerful than Hirogen ships now, a big change since Voy: Hunters. Holographic rights are the center of attention in this episode and Janeway puts forth a remarkably Draconian view on the subject. Finally, the doctor makes an amazingly stupid decision, betraying his crew like that. Flaws notwithstanding, this was a fairly successful action episode. It was nice to see that not all Hirogen are hunters; not all Klingons are warriors likewise. While this is a fun action episode with a fair amount of eye candy spread throughout, the flaws do add up and I can't justify giving it any higher a rating.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 7x10 - Flesh and Blood, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 2000-11-29

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*The renegade Holograms abduct Torres.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode (both parts) features a myriad of familiar species from all corners of the galaxy. Alpha quadrant humans and Bajorans, beta quadrant Romulans and Klingons, as well as gamma quadrant Jem'Hadar, and delta quadrant Borg.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Voyager hiding in the wake of a Hirogen ship.
- Tom regarding following the Hirogen ship's rear end: "Not exactly the scenic route is it?"
- Chakotay: "We're not here for the view."
- Torres: "It may be the warriors who get the glory but it's the engineers who build societies."
- Iden revealing that he's the center of a religion he created.
- Voyager's sneak attack on the Hirogen.
- The holograms hunting the Hirogen on the surface.

**Comments:**

Okay, so Voyager is a bit more careful about fighting Hirogen ships now. They seem to be a little more threatening too. Maybe the ship Voyager defeating last episode was just a weaker model or something. The issues the first part thoroughly failed to deal with are tackled here. Janeway finally realizes that much of this situation is her fault and the doctor realizes the idiocy of his decision. Additionally, part two loses none of the nice action and none of the nice eye candy. As a result of all this, part two is quite a bit more successful. The only negative aspect to the story is Iden, who turned into a megalomaniac. It would have been a much better episode if Iden and his followers weren't so clearly portrayed as bad guys. And the whole "rescuing the mindless holograms" scene was just unnecessary. The two episode as a whole probably would have been better if it were compressed into a single episode, simply removing the bad elements.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x11 - Shattered**  
Originally Aired: 2001-1-17

My Rating - 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Chakotay experiences different eras of Voyager's history.*

**Problems:**

- You've got to wonder how ships systems can possibly function under such circumstances.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Naomi with her LCARS puzzle.
- Janeway taking apart her replicator.
- Janeway: "Once, a long time ago, I called this replicator a glorified toaster. It never forgave me."
- The doctor complaining about his underappreciation and his lack of mobility.
- Janeway and Chakotay stumbling on a future Icheb and Naomi.
- Chakotay walking through the ship, moving through time.
- Janeway: "Sounds like it's going to be one disaster after another on this ship."
- The whole Chaotica scene.
- Chaotica: "Eighth? Everyone knows there are only five dimensions."
- Janeway: "The delta quadrant is a death trap!"
- Rules of Acquisition; ?. A good lie is easier to believe than the truth.

**Comments:**

So, what did I think of this episode? Sorry. Can't tell you. Temporal Prime Directive. Has it occurred to anyone that this has got to be the biggest Trek inside joke around? Boy, if I were a kid attending school in the 24th century Federation, I'd use that excuse all the time. "Why's your homework not done?" My response? "I can't tell you. Temporal prime directive." Joking aside, the episode itself is pretty funny. While completely implausible, it's fun to watch Chakotay wander through Voyager's different time periods. This episode was also a nicely clever way to bring back Seska and the Kazon. I am only curious as to why Seven of Nine was so willing to help Voyager. She should have been more like Seska for her behavior to be consistent. In the end, it's just another reset button though. Voyager has done these to death. At least it's a light hearted entertaining one though.

**Star Trek Voy - 7x12 - Lineage****My Rating - 6****Originally Aired:** 2001-1-24**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Torres worries about her unborn child.***Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- A normal Klingon pregnancy lasts 30 weeks.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Icheb speculating that Torres' pregnancy is in fact a parasitic infection.
- The doctor accidentally revealing the baby's gender.
- Torres desperately trying to get everyone's support in resequencing her baby's DNS so it is no longer any part Klingon.
- The revelation that Torres tampered with the EMH.
- Torres telling the story of why her father left.

**Comments:**

A revisit of Torres' personal conflict shown in Voy: Faces, among other episodes. What's interesting about this episode is that it has no secondary plot, and doesn't in fact need one. The issue of racial, or rather species (im)purity is obviously very real in the 24th century Federation, and this episode explores the concept well. I like the way this episode shows us how much the characters and crew have matured over the years. An episode like this couldn't have been done in the first season. I also like how not only did the entire episode focus on a single plot thread, it was something of a bottle show. It's nice to explore the characters every once in a while instead of showing us alien or anomaly of the week. And it's done well here.

**Star Trek Voy - 7x13 - Repentance****My Rating - 4****Originally Aired:** 2001-1-31**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:***Voyager transports prisoners.***Problems:**

- Why didn't Voyager share the results of the doctor's research with the Nygeans so that future birth defects could be corrected before they become a problem?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven of Nine's valiant escape.
- Tuvok shooting the prisoner through the doctor.

- The doctor: "This is a Federation starship, not the barge of the dead."
- The doctor curing the neurological disorder in Iko's brain which caused him to be violent.
- Iko ending the prisoner revolt, proving he's changed even to the warden.

**Comments:**

An episode dealing with prisoner ethics. Is an eye for an eye wrong? Should the death penalty be exacted on murderers? What if it's discovered that the murder was only committed due to mental illness? And what if that mental illness can be cured? The episode doesn't much deal with these issues other than skimming over the obvious. It's obvious Iko should not have been executed. And it's obvious that people like him should be cured. Unfortunately, no attempt is made to check to see if any of the other prisoners suffered from this condition, nor did Voyager share this medical finding with the Nygeans for some reason. Instead we get character drama, some pointless action, and more of Seven feeling guilty about being formerly Borg. I would have preferred an episode less unoriginal, but the one we got wasn't too bad.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x14 - Prophecy**

**My Rating - 7**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-2-7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Torres' unborn child may be a Klingon " Savior. "*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The battle with the Klingons.
- the Klingons blowing up their own ship.
- Neelix and Tuvok becoming bunk mates.
- Neelix: "Good! Because I promise you we're going to have fun, Mr. Vulcan. I learned some Klingon drinking songs."
- Torres meeting with the Klingons.
- Kohlar: "Where are the images of Kahless? Where is your family crest?" Torres: "They clashed with the carpet."
- The doctor authorizing Kim to have sexual relations with the Klingon females. Nice connection with Voy: The Disease ;)
- Tom accepting the Klingon challenge.
- Neelix taking Harry's woman. ;)
- The fight on the bridge.
- The aftermath of Neelix' relationship with the Klingon woman in Tuvok's quarters.

**Comments:**

A smart episode. The timing is right, Voyager is over half way home, close enough to encounter a Klingon generational ship. I am just disappointed that they are eliminated at the end of this episode. They're guided to a new home and never seen again. This episode suffers from the same problem that Equinox did in this respect. It would have been nice to keep the Equinox and her crew around. Likewise it would have been nice to keep the Klingon ship and her crew around. The episode bears nice continuity with Voy: Lineage, just two episodes ago. I'm glad the writers found a way to do something with Torres' pregnancy beyond the initial episode. Overall, I thought this episode ended up being much better than and not as silly as it could have been. Sure, it does seem the writers are pouring too much alpha quadrant into the writing lately, but they're being very careful about it.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x15 - The Void**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-2-14

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Voyager is pulled into a void.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Vaadwaur, or at least the remnants of the Vaadwaur are mentioned as being present in the void.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seven chiding Chakotay for wanting to change his wine and Paris for wanting some salt regarding the meal she prepared.
- Seven: "In six years you haven't chosen a name for yourself but you've given Fantôme one in a few days." The doctor: "Choosing the right name for myself is extremely difficult. I'm a complex individual." Seven: "And Fantôme isn't?"
- Seven of Nine teaching Fantôme to communicate.
- Janeway forming an alliance.
- The native void species communicating through music.
- The alliance making it through the vortex.

**Comments:**

Rarely do we ever see such brilliant displays of the spirit of Star Trek. This episode could have been just another boring anomaly of the week episode, but instead we're given a character driven drama depicting the struggles many groups of people trying to survive in a barren environment. Indeed, survival is impossible unless you prey off of the other prisoners. Janeway's idealism is exactly the kind of thinking which made the Federation so great in the first place. Pooling the resources of many ships in the void was exactly what was necessary for a long term survival plan. I most enjoyed Janeway's dedication to her principles even when things seemed grim. In the end, we had five alien cultures (including the Hierarchy) cooperating toward their common goal of escape. Probably the most impressive aspect of the show are the native aliens of the void. Initially regarded as vermin, or parasites by the other aliens, and an unintelligent burden to some of the Starfleet crew, Seven and the doctor devise a way to communicate with them, and they repay Voyager for their kindness. The message there is to never discriminate. All things considered, this episode is kind of like a much improved version of TAS: The Time Trap. I wonder if the author was inspired by that episode.

**Star Trek Voy - 7x16 - Workforce, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-2-21

**My Rating - 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew works on an unknown world.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Quarran ships are a reuse of the Breen ships from DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the impressive Quarren city.
- Janeway to her supervisor: "I can already tell it's going to be much better than my last job."
- Seven the "efficiency monitor."
- Tom having discipline problems
- Tuvok, the funny man, a joke teller.
- The doctor as the Emergency Command Hologram. Nice reference to Voy: Tinker Tenor Doctor Spy.
- The sight of Neelix' ship leaving the shuttle bay.
- Neelix and Chakotay "abducting" Torres.

**Comments:**

Impressive. Voyager has been abusing two part episodes lately, squandering time. But this is a case where the two part episode is used well. Part one is sufficiently complex, giving us many sets and many problems. I was very pleased to see the doctor get to play Emergency Command



Hologram for real, fantastic continuity with Voy: Tinker Tenor Doctor Spy. The way he and eventually Chakotay, Harry, and Neelix all deal with the problem was very professional and a lot of fun to watch. Part one has thus far made great use of Voyager's diverse elements and continuity. Besides the ECH, we see the return of Neelix' shuttle, Torres' pregnancy is used in the story again, Tom's delinquency is made an issue, Janeway's desire for a relationship shows up again, and even Seven of Nine's efficiency fetish plays a role. It's remarkable how the characters were selectively brainwashed so the essence of who they were remained, even if their memories were tampered with. The episode's climax is exciting, leaving us with a (most literal) cliffhanger after Chakotay had been discovered and Torres "abducted." Finally, the graphics in this episode were spectacular, some of the best ever shown.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x17 - Workforce, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 2001-2-28

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Chakotay tries to rescue his lost comrades.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- The reactors on the Quarren planet are said to use Tylum fuel. Another reference to Battlestar Galactica.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- The doctor outwitting the Quarren ships.  
- Remarkable technobabble: "Triaxialating frequency on a covariant subspace band."  
- Seven: "More than a hundred skilled employees, most of them the same species, acquired in a single day during a labor shortage?"  
- Yerid investigating the conspiracy.  
- Ravoc uncovering the conspiracy.  
- Voyager coming under attack when they tried to rescue their crew.  
- Kim outwitting the Quarren ships.

**Comments:**  
Not quite as exciting as the first part as we by now well knew exactly what was going on. Watching Ravoc so slowly (ad nauseum) uncover the source of the conspiracy was the weakest use of time yet displayed in the episode. However, the extensive guest character involvement was also still quite to the episode's advantage. I felt we really got to know Curren well, and it was nice to see the crew's efforts to rescue their comrades finally begin to show some progress after much trial and error. And like part one, part two manages to display more spectacular graphics. Workforce was an unusual episode on any scale, but definitely a surprisingly nice treat and a gem of season seven.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x18 - Human Error**  
Originally Aired: 2001-3-7

**My Rating - 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Seven experiences more emotions.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- The teaser of this episode is the shortest ever on Voyager at only 43 seconds long.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Seven's opening piano performance.  
- The doctor: "Rock-a-bye baby, in the spacedock. When the core blows, the shuttle will rock. When the hull breaks, the shuttle will fall. And down will come baby, shuttle and all."  
- Seven discussing hairstyles with Torres...

- Seven: "Slice these vegetables transversely in five millimeter increments."
- The metronome scene.
- Seven's medical emergency and the doctor stumbling on her fantasy.
- Seven disarming the alien weapon.

**Comments:**

Great continuity with Voy: Unimatrix Zero. I was wondering if they'd pick up on Seven's behavioral changes whilst within Unimatrix Zero and thankfully they did. Unfortunately this episode ends with the biggest anticlimax in Voyager history for which I subtract points. I couldn't believe the way the episode just ended well before it began. I was totally enthralled in the story of Seven of Nine finally becoming truly human, jumping over that last hurdle to humanity. But instead of letting the doctor treat her and instead of picking up on the real Chakotay's advances, she dismisses them both right out of hand so she could remain a workaholic. How sad. This episode parallels TNG: Lessons in that it features some more extremely beautiful piano music. I'll never forget the Moonlight Sonata scene in the Jeffries Tubes in that episode. Likewise I'll never forget the metronome scene between Seven and holographic Chakotay here. With only eight episodes left, the plot thread left wide open in this episode is at the top of my list for loose threads to resolve. Never end a story this way!



**Star Trek Voy - 7x19 - Q2**  
**Originally Aired:** 2001-4-11

**My Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Q and his son visit Voyager.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- According to Icheb, Captain Kirk completed his historic five year mission in 2270
- Q and his son Q2 were played by father and son actors as well. Q = John de Lancie. Q2 = Keegan de Lancie.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Janeway: "How many more chapters are there?" Icheb: "Thirty four." Janeway: This was supposed to be a twenty minute presentation." Icheb: "I was trying to be thorough."
- Q and Q2 appearing.
- Q2: "I've been through every deck on this ship. And do you know what I've seen? Bipeds pushing buttons. Bipeds replacing relays. Bipeds running diagnostics."
- Q2 removing Seven of Nine's cloths...
- Janeway: "Cofee. Black." Computer: "Make it yourself."
- Q2 having 3 Borg cubes attack Voyager.
- Q getting advice from Janeway.
- Q2: "What was that for?" Q: "What's wrong? You didn't enjoy life as an Oprelian amoeba?" Q2: "No! I was shapeless and slimy. The only thing to eat was paramecia!"
- Q2 asking Seven if he can see her naked again...
- Chakotay making Q2 solve a diplomatic problem.
- Q: "Potential isn't going to be enough for the Continuum." Janeway: "Then what will be enough?" Q: "The boy needs to display nothing less than exemplary Qness." Janeway: "And what exactly is Qness?" Q: "Oh it's impossible for your miniscule mind to comprehend."
- Q2 stealing the Delta flyer and blowing up the door on the shuttle bay.
- The alien Q2 fired upon revealing himself to actually be Q.
- Q rewarding Janeway by taking two years off her journey.

**Comments:**

Marvelously hilarious. It is slightly annoying that the Q are being used for nothing more than comic relief, and this likely being the final Q episode is hardly a good send off. For some reason on TNG Q felt the need to be profound, and on Voyager he felt the need to be funny. With the exception of his first appearance on Voyager in Voy: Death Wish, which was one of Voyager's best episodes, all his appearances on Voyager have been little silly. This episode being absolutely no exception. And even Voy: Death Wish was quite silly compared to some of Q's TNG appearances. (Okay, I guess Q was trivialized on TNG a bit too.) That said, I don't mind it so much, it's just worth pointing out. It was a nice idea to have Keegan de Lancie play as Q's son, seeing as how he's the son of the actor

playing Q. It made their interactions that much more realistic. It's interesting to compare and contrast this episode with the last one. *Voy: Human Error* was a profound character analysis of Seven of Nine. This episode is nothing more than cheap humor with a rather basic lesson in morality. Nevertheless, as fond as I was for *Voy: Human Error*'s basic plot, the ending was quite lacking. *Voy: Human Error* was a better story for the most part, but this episode was much more entertaining, and lacked the fatal flaw of an anticlimax. Besides, it's fun to laugh, and this episode has lots of humor.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x20 - Author, Author**

**My Rating - 8**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-4-18

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Doctor works on his new holo-novel.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The intro to the doctor's holonovel is a nice bit of special effects.
- Tom playing in the doctor's inflammatory holonovel.
- Torres playing in the doctor's holonovel, complete with the mobile emitter backpack.
- Harry finding out his character is a hypochondriac.
- Janeway watching her character condemn the doctor.
- The doctor trying to justify his story to the crew.
- Harry explaining to his parents why promotions are in short supply when there is only one ship in the delta quadrant.
- The doctor experiencing Paris' sabotaged version of the doctor's holonovel.
- The doctor: "My publisher assures me he won't distribute the program until he receives the revised version." Torres: "That must be the one where we assimilate the Borg and take over the quadrant."
- Torres talking to her father.
- Broht legally stealing the rights to the doctor's holonovel, which satires the lack of holographic rights in the Federation, because the author (the doctor), as a hologram, has no legal rights in the Federation.
- The arbitrator contending that the doctor is not a real person.
- Annika meeting her aunt Irene Hansen.
- The doctor winning the case gaining the right to control his own work.
- The scene on the dilithium refinery.

**Comments:**

Lots of mud gets thrown at this episode for being mindless entertainment and in some ways downright offensive. But I personally enjoyed the doctor's absurd recreation. I also think that it's important that the doctor learned not to use such a provocative tone in his writing so as not to offend his friends. The absurd recreation while a fine plot in and of itself is expanded into an episode with a much more serious tone though, which is why I ended up liking it so much. *Voy: Author, Author* becomes for holograms what *TNG: The Measure of a Man* was for androids. Granted this episode lacks the level of profoundness the *TNG* episode had, it retains quite a bit of it. The ending of the episode more than peaked my interest, and I thought it was handled well. What better irony is there than Broht stealing the doctor's work, which satires the lack of holographic rights in the Federation, because the author, the doctor is a hologram and has no legal rights in the Federation! The timing is perfect too. We've seen so many episodes already dealing with holographic persecution, such as *Voy: Flesh and Blood*, among others. I was waiting for an episode that would spearhead the issue, tackling it once and for all. I'm annoyed that the arbitrator would not declare the doctor a person, closing the issue once and for all, but then again for the sake of the plot I'm kind of glad he didn't. You don't want to do too much in a single episode, now do you? ;) Overall, I think this episode is quite underrated.

---



**Star Trek Voy - 7x21 - Friendship One**  
Originally Aired: 2001-4-25

My Rating - 2

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Starfleet orders Voyager to locate the titular probe.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
- Admiral Hendricks claims Janeway has made first contact with more species than anyone since James Kirk.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Janeway discussing the Voth with Admiral Hendricks.  
- Carey's death.

**Comments:**  
Weak. Lt. Carey appeared in season one, then was remarkably absent from future episodes. They brought him back for episodes that dealt with "Voyager's past" connotating that he was lost some time in season one. Now it's revealed that he's always been around and that he never died... only so they could kill him off here! His death was utterly pointless and Janeway's speech about how exploration at the cost of loss of life being unacceptable is just downright offensive. Every starship we've seen on Star Trek has lost life in the name of exploration. That's what makes it so "bold" when they go "where no one has gone before." It's not unrealistic that Janeway, who has just lost a friend (okay, maybe that's a stretch seeing as how he was already a ghost) might be feeling shaky about her convictions but such feelings could have been expressed better. On the other hand, the idea of having Voyager go on a mission to retrieve Friendship One was a good one. I did indeed like the premise of the episode. It's just a shame that instead of getting a discussion about this being the reason the Prime Directive exists, all we got was a dumb hostage story instead.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x22 - Natural Law**  
Originally Aired: 2001-5-2

My Rating - 1

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Seven and Chakotay are stranded.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**  
Borg Species Designation: 312, name unknown. They used Tetryon based technology.

**Remarkable Scenes:**  
- Tom getting stuck with piloting lessons.  
- The Ledosians attacking Voyager.  
- Tom diverting from his "training" to go on Janeway's "mission."

**Comments:**  
Another disappointment. I expected since the teaser that this episode would make Seven begin to pursue the real Chakotay, but it never happened. Additionally, I'm disappointed at the unprecedented level of arrogance displayed in this episode. What right did Voyager have to make decisions for the Ventu? If I were Janeway, yes, I would have wanted my deflector back. But I would have shared with the Ledosians how to defeat the barrier. It just made no sense that the Ventu should be shielded from "medicine, infrastructure, and education" based on some misguided belief that their primitive culture should be preserved. The Ledosians had every right to be angry.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x23 - Homestead**  
Originally Aired: 2001-5-9

My Rating - 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Voyager discovers a Talaxian settlement.*

**Problems:**

- Neelix says it is the 315th anniversary of the Vulcan first contact with Earth, but it's actually the 314th.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tuvok's "hypothetical" advice to Neelix.
- Neelix leaving Voyager with his shuttle.
- Naomi: "Thanks, Neelix. But I can put myself to bed. I'm not a little girl anymore."
- Neelix' send off.

**Comments:**

My first reaction to this episode... wow. Naomi looks a lot older since the last time we saw her. Funny how those kids just shoot right up in size. Well, the episode is adequate as a send off for Neelix, but unremarkable as an episode. I just felt that Neelix' character never got used to its full potential, so his send off didn't feel very meaningful. To be honest, I would have rather seen Neelix return to Earth with Voyager. But what's done is done. In a way, I'm glad the writers decided to give Neelix some closure. But it's always sad to see a long time character go. First Kes, now Neelix. It's not like he's really going anywhere though. With only three episodes of Voyager left, I'm sure he'll pop up again on long range communications. So again, the send off didn't feel very meaningful.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x24 - Renaissance Man**  
Originally Aired: 2001-5-16

My Rating - 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Janeway is held hostage.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The doctor: "I'd never admit this to anyone else, but there was a time when I would have given anything to be flesh and blood. But I've come to realize that being a hologram is far superior."
- Janeway's freakishly weird behavior.
- Chakotay discovering Janeway is an imposter.
- The doctor pretending to be Torres.
- The doctor jumping through the wall and grabbing his mobile emitter. Nice!
- The doctor hiding in a sea of copies within the holodeck.
- The doctor as Torres defeating Tuvok.
- The doctor as a Hierarchy member.
- The doctor's program destabilizing.
- Tuvok and Tom retaking the Delta Flyer.
- The doctor's confessions.
- Torres casually explaining that she's fixed the doctor.

**Comments:**

A lot of nice details in this episode. I was fond to see the return of the Hierarchy. Probably most amusing was the doctor's clever use of holographic technology. We get to see the Emergency Command Hologram again too. And we get some incredible special effects as well. I am particularly

fond of all of the doctor's athletic maneuvers. There's no doubt that just about everything the doctor did in this episode was one blunder after another, but it made for such wonderful story. Like *Voy: Workforce*, this episode makes great use of *Voyager's* continuity. *Voy: Renaissance Man* remains one of my favorites of the season. Maybe one of the best performances of the doctor ever.



**Star Trek Voy - 7x25 - Endgame, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 2001-5-23

My Rating - 7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Admiral Janeway travels back in time.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- In the future, Harry Kim commands the U.S.S. Rhode Island.
- In the future, Admiral Janeway switches from coffee to tea.
- Some time between *Voy: One Small Ship* and *Voy: Virtuoso* on Stardate 53317, captain Janeway was abducted by an alien race called the Kellidians. I wonder why the writers didn't pick some other similar episode to reference instead of this made up occurrence.
- In the future, Naomi Wildman has a daughter, Sabrina.
- In the future, Miral Paris is an ensign in Starfleet.
- In the future, Seven of Nine and Chakotay will both die.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Seeing *Voyager* flying over San Francisco.
- The doctor finally chose a name... Joe. I agree with Mr. Paris. Not the greatest choice!
- The doctor: "You're going to have a very healthy baby. But not tonight." Torres: "Tell me you're joking. You're experiencing false labor, lieutenant." Tom: "Again?" The doctor: "As I explained the last time, it's a common occurrence. Especially among Klingons." Torres: "I want this thing out of me! Now!" The doctor: "Misdirected rage. Another common occurrence among Klingons."
- Icheb defeating Tuvok at Kalto.
- Future Tuvok freaking out about Janeway leaving.
- Janeway arriving at the house of Korath.
- *Voyager's* near miss colliding with a Borg cube.
- Seven having the doctor eliminate Seven of Nine's emotion blocker first discovered in *Voy: Human Error*.
- Korath: "You question my honor?" Janeway: "If you were honorable, you wouldn't have changed the terms of our agreement."
- Janeway's heist. That's some shuttle!
- Admiral Janeway traveling back in time.
- Admiral Janeway giving captain Janeway orders.

**Comments:**

Well, in the tradition of *TNG: All Good Things* and *DS9: What You Leave Behind*, another relationship between characters is made up on the spot. First it was Troi and Worf, then it was Ezri and Bashir, and now Seven and Chakotay. Granted, they've hinted at this relationship between Seven and Chakotay in *Voy: Human Error* and almost in *Voy: Natural Law*. Anyway, *Endgame, Part I* was a sufficiently entertaining episode. I am only slightly annoyed that Admiral Janeway seems to have no problem breaking all kinds of laws just to get her crew home a little faster. Though it seemed obvious *Voyager* was going to need some kind of major speed boost to make it home before in time for the finale. The 30,000 light years have to come from somewhere! ;)



**Star Trek Voy - 7x26 - Endgame, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 2001-5-23

My Rating - 9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**  
*Janeway tries to change *Voyager's* history.*

**Problems:**  
None

**Factoids:**

- There are only six transwarp hubs in the galaxy.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Admiral Janeway boarding Voyager.
- Admiral Janeway spilling details about Voyager's future to captain Janeway.
- Janeway: "Though I've had some strange experiences in my career, nothing quite compares to the sight of my future self briefing my officers on technology that hasn't been invented yet."
- Voyager deploying their new armor.
- Voyager shrugging off attacks by three Borg cube.
- Voyager destroying two Borg cubes.
- Voyager discovering the transwarp hub.
- Admiral Janeway spilling the beans to captain Janeway about all the bad stuff that'll happen to her crew.
- Admiral Janeway showing up in Unimatrix One.
- The Borg Queen assimilating admiral Janeway.
- Admiral Janeway infecting the Borg Collective with a neurolytic pathogen.
- Unimatrix One's destruction.
- The transwarp network's destruction.
- The Federation ships battling the Borg sphere.
- Voyager reaching the alpha quadrant.
- Janeway: "Set a course for home." Final line spoken on the show.

**Comments:**

Why oh why didn't captain Janeway just stroll right on through the transwarp hub? We seriously didn't need this whole "have your cake and eat it too" crap. I would have much preferred that admiral Janeway had told captain Janeway about the hub first and had the argument over whether or not to destroy it or use it before entering the nebula. The admiral could then have convinced the captain to use it instead of destroy it, correcting the mistake she made in *Voy: Caretaker*. Yes, Janeway made a mistake. It would have been a massively awesome humbling experience to see her truly admit it by making the right choice. But no. The writers wanted more than that. The writers not only wanted Janeway to deliver a major blow to the Borg, but to reach Earth while doing it. (You'll note that they did much the same thing in *Voy: Night* that they did in this episode.) Hell, the writers even almost saved it by having admiral Janeway "betray" captain Janeway. But again, nope. It was a farce! So in the end, a lot of time in the finale is wasted on this pointless contention between the Janeways and almost zero time is spent on Voyager's homecoming. I was profoundly disappointed that we didn't get to see family reunions, or even Voyager landing on Earth. We're not even told just what exactly happened to the Borg. The way it's shown they could have been either extremely wounded or totally and utterly destroyed. They really should have clarified this. Not only that, but captain Janeway brought loads of technology from the future to Earth and we're not shown the repercussions of that at all! I've wanted to know since *Voy: Future's End* what the repercussions of the mobile emitter would be once Voyager reached Earth. Now we have futuristic stealth technology (which is banned in the Federation as far as I know since *TNG: The Pegasus*), some really kick ass armor technology, and "transphasic" torpedoes to contend with too! Don't get me wrong. I really liked *Voy: Endgame*. Maybe if we substituted *Voy: Unimatrix Zero* with *Voy: Endgame* and gave us a season of Voyager in the alpha quadrant, it would have been more fitting. But as I always say, what's done is done. We don't quite get the closure I hoped for like in *DS9: What You Leave Behind*, and the episode wasn't quite as good as *TNG: All Good Things*, but it was still a damn fine episode and a mostly fitting end for *Star Trek Voyager*.

---

**STAR TREK**

**ENTERPRISE**





## **Star Trek Ent - 1x01 - Broken Bow, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-9-26

**My Rating**

**- 8**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew sets on a maiden voyage with a mission to return a wounded Klingon to his people.*

### **Problems:**

- Four days to reach the Klingon homeworld from Earth on a ship as slow as Enterprise puts the Klingon homeworld way too close to Earth.

### **Factoids:**

- Scott Bakula, who plays Captain Archer, is formerly of Quantum Leap. He has been quoted as being reluctant at first to play the lead in this show, but eventually the idea of playing the first captain of any Earth starship named Enterprise appealed to him after all.

### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The human farmer shooting a Klingon.
- Archer and Trip admiring Enterprise.
- Trip bumping the shuttlepod into Enterprise, scratching the paint.
- Archer making a scene regarding the injured Klingon.
- Archer to T'Pol: "Volatile? You have no idea how much I'm restraining myself from knocking you on your ass."
- Reed and Travis expressing fear of the transporter.
- Cochrane: "Imagine it, thousands of inhabited planets at our fingertips. And we'll be able to explore those strange new worlds and seek out new life and new civilizations. This engine will let us go boldly where no man has gone before."
- Phlox' absurd smile.
- The "sweet spot" scene.
- Hoshi trying to communicate with the Klingon.
- Trip's various reactions to the people on Rigel X.

### **Comments:**

Preliminary remark, I'm going to talk about the premise in part I and the plot of the pilot in part II. So here goes nothing. "Enterprise" - Perhaps the most controversial Star Trek series yet. There are many things about this show that are... different. First of all it's a prequel, taking place before TOS. It manages to present a convincing setting without looking too cheesy like the low budget TOS show did nor too much like TNG, DS9, or Voyager. The name of the series deviates as well, there's no "Star Trek" in it, which is annoying. I'm also slightly annoyed that they named it something so generic as "Enterprise." This creates a lot of confusion with TOS, and TNG. TOS was "the old" Enterprise. TNG was "the new" Enterprise. Is "Enterprise" supposed to be "the new old" Enterprise? The opening theme is a deviation too, no longer being a classical composition accompanied by special effects. Instead, it depicts various NASA accomplishments along with some selected Star Trek history. A lot of people complained about the new opening theme, but to be completely honest, I like it. Although I would have preferred the traditional style more. The opening themes of DS9 and Voyager were much better. (Voyager's was probably the better of the two, but I just liked DS9's more...) Anyway, enough of that. Broken Bow, Part I presents us with an interesting glimpse of the 22nd century. A lot of people complained about the behavior of the Vulcans, but I loved it. No, really! Remember back in Star Trek VIII: First Contact in the short scene in which we glimpse Cochrane confusing his new Vulcan friends with his music and other customs? I knew right from that moment that the road to friendship between humans and Vulcans would be shaky. I was hoping for this kind of conflict. In the future, a luddite-like McCoy still pokes at Spock. And in the distant future, people still make fun of Vulcans in a joking manner. Doesn't it at least stand to reason that at the developmental stage of the human-Vulcan relationship that the various insults might have been real and not sarcastic? I think so anyway. The only thing that really bothered me about this pilot episode was the introduction of two new alien species. You know, as a prequel, Enterprise really shouldn't introduce new alien species. Especially one as a main character! Don't get me wrong, I like Phlox. But if you think about it, is there any reason Phlox can't be of a species we already know about, like the Bolians? I would have loved Phlox as a Bolian! The potential for comedy would have been even higher! While the Suliban are convincing villains, as a prequel, I'm looking forward to Klingon first contact and the Earth Romulan wars as being the center of attention. Not new aliens. Anyway, considering all the initial bad press the show got from various

sources, I think for the most part it turned out fairly well. It's not without its flaws though. Only time will tell if they can be ironed out.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 1x02 - Broken Bow, Part II**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-9-26

**My Rating**  
- 7

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew sets on a maiden voyage with a mission to return a wounded Klingon to his people.*

#### **Problems:**

- Picard in TNG: First Contact (the episode, not the movie) said that first contact with the Klingons was disasterous. Okay... Archer makes first contact with the Klingons in this episode and I can't say it was very disasterous. Obviously something is going to go wrong between Earth and Klingons sometime between now and TOS, but sure didn't happen during first contact!

#### **Factoids:**

- The Suliban weapon did no damage to Archer whilst being transported.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Even if it is Klong, we're going to have a tough time getting him out of there." Reed: "We could always try the transporting device." Archer: "We've risked too much to bring him back inside out."
- Enterprise stealing a Suliban ship.
- Reed: "They're called phase pistols. They have two settings. Stun and kill. It would be best not to confuse them."
- Trip scraping the hull of the Suliban superstructure, just like he scraped Enterprise in part one. ;)
- Archer and Trip disabling the Suliban superstructure.
- The fight inside the freaky room.
- Archer's reaction to being beamed up.

#### **Comments:**

I'm really starting to like Silik. He reminds me of Scorpius from Farscape. He even calls the captain by his first name, Jon, the same way Scorpius does to Crichton. :) I wonder if the parallel is intentional. Part two wasn't as exciting as part one, mostly because what happened was largely predictable and some of it redundant. I did like more of the smaller details in part two though. We already got a little bit of the crew's aversion to the transporter when Reed and Travis discussed it in the previous episode. But I rather liked Archer's rather blatant statement of distrust of the transporter in this episode, claiming that it would bring back the user "inside out." A nice irony that Trip would be later forced to use the transporter to rescue Archer. I loved the look on Archer's face after having been transported. The symbolic meaning in Archer's dreams is finally clarified. In part one they didn't seem to serve much of a purpose. Now Archer is recalling his father's advice and applying it to try and quell his natural distrust of Vulcans and to command with no fear. I loved the scene when Henry Archer said "don't be afraid of the wind," showing a picture of T'Pol. The only thing I didn't like about this episode, besides the technical problem listed in the problems section and the things I complained about in part one was the highly inappropriate decontamination chamber scene. What can I say? That was just totally unnecessary. Overall though, I thought the pilot episode was quite good, much better than I thought it would be.



### **Star Trek Ent - 1x03 - Fight or Flight**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-10-3

**My Rating** - 6

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The crew comes across an abandoned ship of dead aliens.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- According to T'Pol, one out of every 43,000 planets supports intelligent life.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Come on, Travis. We've got to find Mr. Reed something to blow up!"
- Phlox sharing his observations of humanity with Trip.
- Hoshi freaking out about the alien corpses.
- Archer second guessing himself and deciding to turn back and go back to that ship to investigate.
- The alien ship thoroughly kicking Enterprise's ass.
- Hoshi defeating the language barrier.

**Comments:**

This episode outlines Earth's first contact with the Axanar, a species we've heard of before in TOS (mentioned in TOS: Court Martial and in TOS: Whom Gods Destroy). I'm glad the writers didn't repeat the mistake here that they made with the Suliban and the Denobulans. Granted, nobody knows who was in that alien ship that almost tore Enterprise a new rear end, but I don't think that it's very important. Personally I think this episode belongs to Reed and especially to Hoshi. Reed was concerned that Enterprise would do poorly in a fight due to its primitive and improperly configured weaponry, and he was right. Hoshi was concerned that she'd have no grace under pressure, and she was right too... for a while anyway. It's kind of annoying that she doubted her ability right up to the point when Enterprise was about to be destroyed before finally showing some courage. But it was easily realistic and it was nice to watch her character evolve from a scared little girl to a confident young woman in the course of a single episode. As a more general analysis, this episode does well to further elucidate the fact that Earth is hardly prepared for exploration. This mission would have hardly been worth a full hour on any other Star Trek show, so the writers are taking full advantage of Enterprise's weaknesses, for they are a strength in terms of writing for a prequel.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x04 - Strange New World**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-10-10

**My  
Rating -  
2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Crew members go on a survey mission to a seemingly uninhabited Earth-like planet where a mysterious alien presence sends them into a state of paranoid overdrive.*

**Problems:**

- Dr. Phlox talks of some "tropolysine" atoms in the pollen that were brought by the storm. Phlox says that they have an extra neutron which breaks down into a poison inside the body. This doesn't make any sense from a physics point of view though. A poison would be a complex molecular structure. Not a stray neutron or a single atom.

**Factoids:**

- T'Pol has been to 36 Minshara class planets.
- This episode establishes that there are 82 crewmembers aboard Enterprise.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip: "Where no dog has gone before."
- The transporter accident.
- T'Pol using the Vulcan neck pinch for the first time.

**Comments:**

A nice premise goes sour. First we had the introduction of a few interesting minor crewmembers, of which I especially liked Elizabeth Cutler, then the peaceful exploration of a new world. The episode lacked contention, but it was far more pleasant than the previous two which were relatively dark and dreary. But night falls and the episode turns into a generic horror story quickly. The whole thing looked to me like an excuse to get the characters down on the planet acting all crazy. And it's not as if we haven't seen this cliché several times over in TOS, TNG, DS9, and Voyager...



**Star Trek Ent - 1x05 - Unexpected**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-10-17

**My  
Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*After discovering the presence of a damaged alien vessel, Archer dispatches Tucker to its aid, but the engineer's encounter with a Xyrrillian female has an unexpected side effect.*

**Problems:**

- This episode aggravates the holodeck invention date problem. See comments.

#### Factoids:

- According to Archer, Trip's case is the first interspecies pregnancy involving a Human.
- According to T'Pol, Trip is the first human male to ever become pregnant.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- The loss of gravity while Archer was taking a shower. :)
- Trip trying to adapt to the truly alien environment aboard the Xyrillian ship.
- T'Pol: "Three days. You were only there for three days and you couldn't restrain yourself."
- Trip defending himself against allegations of ungentlemanly behavior.
- Archer's less than perfect attempt at diplomacy with the Klingons regarding the Xyrillian ship.
- T'Pol using her knowledge of Klingon culture to diffuse the situation somewhat.
- The Klingons ridiculing Trip.
- Klingon, impressed by the holodeck: "I can see my house from here!"

#### Comments:

Like Ent: Fight or Flight, this is another well thought out episode that uses the prequel premise well. We are shown a few annoying things though. For one, the Xyrillians are a new, made up race. Again, I'm wondering why it was necessary to introduce a new race rather than use one shown before. I am willing to cut a lot of slack in this case though seeing as how I'm at a loss to come up with a race anything like the Xyrillians previously featured that would have been appropriate for use here. I was also pleased at how alien the Xyrillians were. It was a most credible rare treat to show Trip having such a hard time adapting to the Xyrillian atmosphere. Unfortunately though, the episode is clouded a bit because we're shown a fully functional holodeck, sans interactive characters. We've seen technology this advanced as early as TAS, but that's still a very long way off. Granted, Enterprise did not acquire this technology. But the Klingons did. This episode, as well as the use of a holodeck on TAS both seem to contradict TNG, in which all the characters were amazed at the holodeck. This is only a minor inconsistency though. It's possible creating landscapes was nothing new by the 24th century, but creating people and interactive settings was. Then again, in *Voy: Once Upon a Time*, Janeway mentioned having played the Flotter program when she was a child. Given that she's middle aged, this connotes interactive holodeck technology being in widespread use at least twenty or thirty years before the first episode of TNG. It would seem TNG has been contradicted on three fronts now. We'll just have to accept that on TNG, holographic technology was "new to them," or that it made significant advances, warranting a renewed "wow" reaction. That said, this episode's story was quite amusing without becoming too silly. I love how Trip was forced to admit to Klingons that he was pregnant. It much reminded me of Spock's line in *Star Trek V: The Final Frontier*: "Please, Captain. Not in front of the Klingons." (Which was a relatively nice scene in an otherwise abysmal movie.) The crew handles the situation as professionally as they can; I rather liked how arrogant and presumptuous T'Pol was in the beginning regarding Trip's alleged behavior. I also liked how she made up for it by using her superior knowledge of Klingon culture to assist in the diplomatic negotiations. She damn near cracked a joke at the end too with her little history book statistic. Suffice it to say, I liked T'Pol more in this episode than in previous ones. She's starting to show that, yeah, she's a stuffy annoying killjoy, but she can be cool at times.



#### **Star Trek Ent - 1x06 - Terra Nova**

**Originally Aired:** 2001-10-24

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and the Enterprise crew set out to learn what happened to the lost human colony of Terra Nova, and discover a tribe of human-hating cave dwellers.*

**My  
Rating -**

**2**

#### Problems:

- Archer tells us that at one time, all of Earth's colonies were within Earth's solar system. Then an M class planet is discovered a mere 20 light years away and is selected for the first extrasolar colony. This planet was named Terra Nova and was colonized in 2078. This, however, contradicts what Harry Kim said in *Voy: The 37s* regarding early Earth colonies. Kim claimed that Mars was not colonized until 2103. It's very hard to rationalize this, because Archer specifically said Utopia Planitia had been built before Terra Nova was colonized in 2078. Maybe Utopia Planitia was built before the bulk of the actual Mars colony?
- Additionally, Alpha Centauri is closer than Terra Nova. Why wasn't it selected as Earth's first extrasolar colony? It was certainly colonized at some point, because Zefram Cochrane moved there

some time during his lifetime...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer showing Nadet who she is with old photographs.
- Archer and T'Pol arguing about what to do about the colonists.
- The shuttlepod sinking into the ground on Terra Nova.

**Comments:**

A real mixed bag. It was a good idea to show details regarding Earth's early extrasolar colonies, but they couldn't have done it in a worse way. This whole episode is more or less a rehash of *Voy: Friendship One*. And indeed smaller plot elements in this episode resemble numerous other episodes. Suffice it to say, this plot is hardly original. But at least it's appropriate. Unfortunately, the already weak plot strains the hell out of credibility. For one, there's the Alpha Centauri technical problem, which is documented in the problems section. Suffice it to say, Alpha Centauri would have made much more sense as a setting for Earth's first extrasolar colony. Then there's the timing. Also documented in the problems section, this episode contradicts *Voy: The 37s* regarding when Mars was colonized. All of the technical problems could have easily been avoided by simply not making Terra Nova Earth's first extrasolar colony and giving specific dates, but by making it one of many of Earth's first extrasolar colonies. In this respect, the plot could be viewed exactly the same way as intended, except in a more credible manner. There were a few details to redeem the episode, though. One thing I liked was that the Novans had a unique vocabulary, using strange terms much like the Vori from *Voy: Nemesis*. I was also quite fond of how patient Archer and his crew were with the rather uninformed Novans. I also liked T'Pol's objective opinion once again. Unfortunately, these details do little to enhance this rather ill conceived episode.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x07 - The Andorian Incident**  
Originally Aired: 2001-10-31

My  
Rating -  
5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When Archer and his crew pay a friendly visit to an ancient Vulcan monastery, they stumble into an interstellar conflict between the Vulcans and their militaristic rivals, the Andorians.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- In this episode, the Andorian character Shran was played by Jeffrey Combs, who played Weyoun on DS9.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer and Tucker discovering an Andorian. Wow, the makeup on the Andorians is awesome!
- A Vulcan monk making a comment about how humans smell to T'Pol.
- Archer, committing a faux pas: "So if anyone has a suggestion, I'm all ears. No offense."
- T'Pol's reason for not cuddling up with Archer: "The cold is preferable to the odor."
- Archer's performance with the Andorians.
- Hoshi and Reed's officer expressing fear of the transporter.
- Archer discovering the hidden Vulcan base.
- Shran to Archer: "We're in your debt."

**Comments:**

Here's a small taste of the prequel we've been waiting for. A thoroughly underfeatured race from TOS, the Andorians, are given a bit of a backstory in this episode. Their reputation as being aggressive is upheld and they're not abused by being made into generic bad guys either. I'm not exactly happy that the Vulcans are turning out to be more and more evil, but it stands to reason that since the Andorians neighbor the Vulcans that these kinds of petty conflicts would ensue. Overall the episode was convincing. No major continuity issues this time. But the plot wasn't anything special. If it weren't for the plot twist at the end and the promise of some political intrigue as a result, I wouldn't have given this episode as high a rating. We've seen far too many hostage episodes before. I'm just glad this one had something of a purpose.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x08 - Breaking the Ice**  
Originally Aired: 2001-11-7

My  
Rating -  
7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While the Enterprise crew researches a newly discovered comet, Archer tries to deal diplomatically with a Vulcan ship that is suspiciously watching them.*

**Problems:**

- Why does the comet have Earth-like gravity?

**Factoids:**

- Trip has only been in three relationships. "They all went bust."

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The children's drawings.
- The discovery of and landing on the comet.
- Archer answering the 4th grade children's questions.
- Trip: "A poop question, sir?" I almost died laughing.
- Phlox talking too much on the recording.
- Travis and Reed building a snowman.
- The discovery that T'Pol's communications were personal, not malicious.
- Trip apologizing to T'Pol.
- Archer to T'Pol regarding Vanik: "Help me make him go away."
- Reed enhancing the snowman with Vulcan ears.
- Vanik's behavior at the dinner.
- Vanik: "Your inexperience and your arrogance are your enemies, not us."
- Trip advising T'Pol.
- The shuttlepod sinking into the ice.
- Trip trying unsuccessfully to use the grapples to retrieve the shuttlepod.
- Archer finally giving in and accepting the Vulcan ship's help.

**Comments:**

And now for some hardcore character development. This episode was most successful because it didn't involve any alien conflict or phaser fights, but just chronicled the ship as they investigated a comet. Rarely do we get something so mundane in Star Trek done so well. I was worried that Vanik might end up having some silly hidden agenda and that T'Pol might be involved in some kind of Vulcan conspiracy, like was revealed at P'Jem last week. But thankfully I was wrong. Instead, we watch as Trip helps T'Pol bridge her cultural barriers. She accepts his advice to make her own decision instead of letting rigid Vulcan custom determine her marriage and her career. She even tries some of Trip's pecan pie in the final scene. Archer learns to back away from his Vulcan prejudice too when he accepts help from Vanik. I'm just glad Archer didn't ask Vanik a "poop question" at the dinner among is many attempts at small talk. And Reed... well, I think Reed's just happy he found something to blow up again. Although I think he (along with Travis) took just as much perverse pleasure in building the Vulcan snowman with the oversized ears too. One lingering question... why do shuttlepods seem to have a dangerous habit of sinking into whatever they land on? ;)



**Star Trek Ent - 1x09 - Civilization**  
Originally Aired: 2001-11-14

My  
Rating -  
4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The Enterprise crew encounters a pre-industrial society that is afflicted with a plague caused by exploitative secret visitors.*

**Problems:**

- Archer claims that they have traveled 78 light years. But the current date of the episode is July 31st, 2151. Given this date and comparing it to the date in the first episode, Enterprise couldn't have possibly traveled more than 40 light years from Earth.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Earth has not yet adopted Vulcan's original version of what became the Prime Directive, their non interference policy.

- Garos is from the Malurian system which will be destroyed by Nomad in TOS: The Changeling.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Starfleet could have sent a probe out here, to make maps and take pictures, but they didn't. They sent us, so that we could explore with our own senses."
- Archer discovering Garos.
- Archer kissing Riann as an excuse to fix his translator.
- Archer winning a fight!
- Trip beaming the reactor up then beaming it aft Enterprise so Reed could fire a torpedo at it to detonate the reactor, dropping the shields of the Malurian ship.

**Comments:**

An average episode with not much wrong with it other than one detail. It could have easily been done on any of the other Star Trek series. And if you think back to Star Trek IX: Insurrection, or episodes like it, it already has been. So I subtract a point for the episode not being very original. Other than that though, it was well done. I was pleased to see continuity with TOS: The Changeling, showing us a little about the Malurian culture destroyed in that episode. I can't say I mourn them as much now! It's remarkable that Earth doesn't have a non interference policy like the Vulcans do. Trip didn't even think it served much of a purpose! Another good point in the episode... Archer finally won a fist fight. ;)



**Star Trek Ent - 1x10 - Fortunate Son**  
Originally Aired: 2001-11-21

**My Rating**  
- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise must intervene when the leader of a human freighter crew sets out for revenge against alien pirates.*

**Problems:**

- Travis says that even with a warp 3 engine that a 5 year trip at warp 1.8 would be cut down to 6 months. Close, but no cigar. The figure is actually closer to 12 months.

**Factoids:**

- According to Travis, there are 3 more NX class ships on the drawing boards.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The low gravity football scene.
- Ryan regarding the transporter: "They say that for a split second you can actually feel yourself in both places at once."
- T'Pol covering for the kid playing hide and seek.
- Ryan betraying the crew of Enterprise.
- Enterprise saving the Fortunate.

**Comments:**

Another fairly good offering from Enterprise, using the prequel premise well. We're shown that fear of change extends well into the 22nd century. The "boomers" are quite set in their ways, for "warp 1.8 is good enough." We're shown that the boomers running cargo get attacked by pirates occasionally, in this case the Nausicans. It makes sense that long periods of time alone would cause the boomers to develop their own (closed) culture and their unwillingness to receive help from their own people seems like a natural result of their isolation. I was pleased to see the episode make rather extensive use of Travis, a character I felt was being underused. I just hope his extensive experience in space starts to pay off some more, instead of constantly relying on T'Pol's Vulcan database.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x11 - Cold Front**  
Originally Aired: 2001-11-28

**My Rating**  
- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While Enterprise joins an alien pilgrimage to witness a religious stellar occurrence, Archer finds himself again faced against the Suliban warrior Silik.*

**Problems:**

- The explosive decompression featured in this episode was extremely unrealistic.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that several human religions are still in existence and in practice at this time, including Buddhism and Christianity.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Looks like we could be having guests. Tell chef to prepare... something."
- Trip describing how the warp engines work.
- Daniels revealing himself.
- Archer: "Are you human?" Daniels: "More or less."
- T'Pol denying that time travel exists.
- Daniels making vague remarks about the future of Earth.
- Daniels' little walk through walls device.
- Silik confronting "Jon."

**Comments:**

This is the first episode since the pilot which deals with this Temporal Cold War thing. Silik's return is a welcome one, and this episode introduces a new player in the Temporal Cold War, Daniels, who is apparently killed. This episode blurs the image of who's good and who's evil though in the Temporal Cold War. The man who Silik is working for wanted to see the Klingon Empire destroyed, but also wanted to save Enterprise here. My first instincts told me he was a Romulan from the future. But if this were the case, why would he want to save Enterprise? Daniels appeared to be a more advanced version of Captain Braxton and crew from *Voy: Relativity*, but again, it's hard to be sure of any of this. Cold Front was a sufficiently entertaining episode, but the ending was anticlimactic. This episode may be worth more points than I'm giving it, but it's hard to rate an episode whose ending raises more questions than it answers. And to be honest, I'm not sure if a Temporal Cold War is a particularly good idea for Enterprise. This is Star Trek, not Time Trek.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x12 - Silent Enemy**

Originally Aired: 2002-1-16

**My Rating**

**- 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An ill-prepared Enterprise is under attack by mysterious aliens with unknown motivations.*

**Problems:**

- Reed says that the phase cannons have a power output of 500 gigajoules. But that is a unit of energy, not power. Additionally, this number seems way too high when compared to TNG.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer contacting Reed's parents.
- The alien ship attacking Enterprise.
- Archer: "Did your people run into as many hostile aliens when they first went into deep space?" T'Pol: "It was a different time." Archer: "How so?" T'Pol: "There were fewer warp capable species." Archer: "This ship just isn't equipped to handle some of the threats we're coming up against."
- Reed and Trip vowing to get the phase cannons online before Enterprise returns to Earth.
- Hoshi trying to figure out what Reed's favorite food is.
- Hoshi asking Reed what his favorite food is, only to have him accidentally take the question as an invitation to romance.
- Archer: "This time we won't be leaving before we're ready." Trip: "Are your ears a little pointier than usual?"
- Reed's test firing.
- Hoshi consulting the doctor about Reed's favorite food.
- Enterprise battling the alien ship, defeating it.
- The celebration at the end.

**Comments:**

Preliminary remark, it's annoying that we're shown a hostile alien of the week that we've never seen before and will probably never see again. However, we aren't told their names. Maybe they



were one of the many hostile aliens mentioned in previous Trek series but never shown. Regardless, it would have been a better idea to show the Klingons, Romulans, or even the Suliban, not introduce something new. With so many hostile aliens lurking about, it's a wonder that Earth wasn't wiped out years ago. Maybe the Vulcans protected it. Anyway, the basic idea of the episode is fascinating. I'm glad Reed's concerns in Ent: Broken Bow and in Ent: Fight or Flight about the ship being fairly defenseless are finally being addressed. In many ways, this was entirely Reed's episode. He got to blow some stuff up and he got to eat his favorite food! But I think the episode has a much more profound effect on Archer. At the beginning, he was very excited to make another first contact but as this soon leads to yet another conflict, Archer starts having his first real doubts about his mission and wonders if the Vulcans were right. It's interesting and quite consistent that the only person he could talk about this was Trip. Finally, I thought this musical score in this episode was way above average. If only this episode had featured a familiar alien to give us some valuable backstory, it would have been worth eight points.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 1x13 - Dear Doctor**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-1-23

**My Rating**

**- 1**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Dr. Phlox faces a serious dilemma as a dying race begs for help from Enterprise.*

**Problems:**

- This episode's ethics are a problem.

**Factoids:**

- Denobulans don't like to be touched.
- The Ferengi once visited the Valakian homeworld. This implies that the Ferengi have had warp drive just as long as humans, maybe longer.
- This episode establishes the annual Denobulan hibernation cycle. It lasts six days.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Phlox watching the crowd react to the movie instead of watching the movie.
- Cutler displaying affection for Phlox.
- Hoshi learning Denobulan.
- Phlox discovering that the Valakian epidemic is genetic.
- T'Pol: "The Vulcans stayed to help Earth 90 years ago. We're still there."
- Archer: "Some day, my people are going to come up with some sort of a doctrine, something that tells us what we can and can't do out here, should and shouldn't do. But until somebody tells me that they have drafted that directive, I'm going to have to remind myself that we didn't come out here to play god."

**Comments:**

I liked this episode, but I hated its ethics. The (future) Prime Directive is shown as a rather arbitrary standard in this episode. Help is refused to a species that goes into space for the sole purpose of seeking help from alien civilizations. Just because they don't have warp drive, they're regarded as unworthy or something. Well, a strict interpretation of the Vulcan (and seemingly Denobulan) non interference policy allows for Archer's actions to be correct. But we've seen even in the 24th century starship crews bending the rules for the greater good in exactly the fashion Archer refused to. There's that, and the events of this episode aren't at all consistent with the "to hell with a non interference policy" attitude taken in Ent: Civilization. What I really didn't like about this episode was how Phlox developed a cure but refused to share it with the Valakians. I 100% agree with Archer about not letting the Valakians have warp drive, but why not cure their freaking plague?! Because Dr. Phlox just arbitrarily decided to let the Valakians die off because he THINKS the Menk might evolve into a better species? Isn't this just a little racist? Isn't making this kind of decision for the Menk exactly the kind of interference the Prime Directive prohibits? Maybe not giving the Valakians the cure was within the bounds of the future Prime Directive, but the way it was shown here was needlessly cruel and wholly hypocritical.

---



**Star Trek Ent - 1x14 - Sleeping Dogs**  
Originally Aired: 2002-1-30

My  
Rating -  
4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*T'Pol, Reed and Hoshi get stranded on a Klingon "shipwreck" sinking inside a gas giant. Archer tries to convince a captured Klingon to help before his crewmates get crushed in the intense pressure of the planet's atmosphere.*

**Problems:**

- T'Pol says Klingons don't use escape pods. So exactly what did Worf use in DS9: Penumbra?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Hoshi's target practice.
- Reed: "We can travel faster than the speed of light. You'd think we could find a cure for the common cold!"
- Hoshi, translating a console: "Something they call photon torpedoes?" Reed: "Photon torpedoes? Never heard of anything like that. What else?"
- Bu'Kah: "I've never seen your kind before, but you have made an enemy of the Klingon Empire!" Archer: "From what I've noticed, that's not hard to do."
- Hoshi's reaction to the Klingon galley.
- Hoshi and T'Pol stumbling on targets.
- Archer doing his Klingon homework.
- T'Pol, Reed, and Hoshi using the Klingon photon torpedoes to push the ship up in altitude.

**Comments:**

A reasonably entertaining episode, but devoid of consequences, which is annoying. As Archer complains, why does his help always go unappreciated? Archer has helped Klingons three times now and received no gratitude. Did the war with the Klingons start because Earth kept being really nice guys around the Klingons? What we're shown hasn't been very credible so far.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x15 - Shadows of P'Jem**  
Originally Aired: 2002-2-6

My  
Rating -  
3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When T'Pol is ordered by her superiors to leave Enterprise, she goes on one last away mission with Archer to planet Coridan, where they are taken captive by a militant faction and once again encounter the volatile Andorians.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there are 15 phase pistols aboard Enterprise.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer teasing Trip about not going to Coridan.
- T'Pol passing Archer off as a steward.
- Shran declaring that he can't sleep at night knowing he still owes Archer for what he did for him.

**Comments:**

This is a somewhat odd episode. Not only did the characters have to deal with the hostage situation on Coridan (a nice reference to TOS: Journey to Babel), but they also had to deal with the repercussions of the destruction of the P'Jem monetary due to the events of Ent: The Andorian Incident. Both situations seem to come to a head simultaneously. Unfortunately the two plots don't mingle very well. The primary plot seemed to be the hostage situation while the secondary plot seemed to be the aftermath of P'Jem when it should have been the opposite. Seems the writers couldn't make an interesting story out of just the aftermath, so they conjured up a reason for some generic action. The result is a kind of mash up that makes for a rather mediocre episode.



### Star Trek Ent - 1x16 - Shuttlepod One

Originally Aired: 2002-2-13

My  
Rating -  
4

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*During a shuttlepod mission, Tucker and Reed are cut off from Enterprise and become convinced the starship has been destroyed and that their days are numbered.*

#### **Problems:**

- Your hair and nails do not continue to grow when you die. Instead, the skin around the hair and nails desiccates and therefore shrinks.

#### **Factoids:**

- Reed's attempt to attract Enterprise's attention in this episode is an homage to Spock's similar attempt in TOS: The Galileo Seven.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip and Reed picking on each other's heritage.
- Trip complaining about Reed's pessimism.
- Reed dreaming about T'Pol.
- Trip and Reed getting roaring drunk and discussing T'Pol.
- Trip and Reed blowing up the impulse engine in an attempt to attract Enterprise's attention.
- Trip trying to sacrifice himself to save Reed.

#### **Comments:**

Like Ent: Dear Doctor, this episode is a mixed bag. I loved the episode, but some of the plot logic just didn't make any sense. Why didn't Enterprise retrieve Shuttlepod One immediately after the accident with the Tesnians instead of abandoning them to the asteroid field? Maybe the Tesnians couldn't survive on Enterprise very long and getting them back to Tesnia as soon as possible was the only way to keep them alive, but this is never explicitly stated, nor does Enterprise ever even contact shuttlepod one to explain the change of plans until well after they're underway! For this annoyance, I subtract points, but beyond this the episode is a lot of fun. Watching Trip and Reed pick at each other on that shuttle was some great humor, especially after they got drunk and started discussing T'Pol. With some more careful writing, this episode could have been above average easily. I'm also kind of annoyed that we never got to see the Tesnians.



### Star Trek Ent - 1x17 - Fusion

Originally Aired: 2002-2-27

My Rating  
- 4

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A group of atypical Vulcans visiting Enterprise subject T'Pol to uncomfortable new ideas.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip: "Where'd you hear that?" Kov: "A Vulcan anthropologist told me he'd seen the ritual during an Earth expedition." Trip: "They're not trying to kill the quarterback. They're just trying to keep him from throwing the ball and running with it. It's only a game. Not a... fight to the death." Kov: "I see."
- T'Pol dreaming.
- The mind meld scene.
- Archer confronting Tolaris about his assault on T'Pol.

#### **Comments:**

This episode outlines a Vulcan subculture, a group of Vulcans who embrace emotion and practice mind melds. So now we know of two 22nd century Vulcans. "Evil" Vulcans, who are logical and mostly kind, but arrogant and push hidden agendas. And emotional Vulcans, who tend to lose control, but practice mind melds and are a lot less arrogant for the most part. I think it's obvious

that the Vulcans we come to know in the 23rd and 24th century end up being a hybrid of these two groups. Certainly by the 23rd and 24th century, mind melds are no longer a taboo. So there's that evidence at least. Well, while this episode is an interesting Vulcan introspection, it is little more. T'Pol's character is abused for the third time in a row... first a bondage scene, then Reed dreams about her and runs his mouth about her ass, and now she's mind raped. I wonder how much further the writers will take this crap. It's getting worse than Seven of Nine was.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 1x18 - Rogue Planet**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-3-20

**My  
Rating -  
3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While exploring an uncharted planet, Enterprise crew members encounter a group of aliens who are hunting down indigenous creatures for recreation.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Hunting went out of style on Earth over 100 years ago according to Archer.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Do Vulcan captains have their portraits hanging at the high command?" T'Pol: "Vulcans are revered for their accomplishments, not for the way they look." Tucker: "Except for the really important ones who get mummified."  
- Reed: "Follow me." Archer: "Why don't you let me play captain for a while, Malcolm?"  
- T'Pol to Archer: "With respect, captain, I wonder if you would be so determined to find this apparition if it were a scantily clad man?"

#### **Comments:**

A painfully slow plot. This episode has the honor of being the first Star Trek episode I've ever fallen asleep to during my first viewing. It probably has a lot to do with the fact that the setting is so dark and that very little actually happens. I was also disappointed that this episode was so much of a rehash. We've seen too many shape shifters before. Hell, we've even seen shape shifters living on a rogue planet before, when Sisko first visited the Founders' homeworld! We've also been told in DS9: Treachery, Faith, and the Great River that the Founders were hunted. So, let's recap. Founders: 1. live on a rogue planet, 2. are shape shifters, 3. are hunted. The aliens of this episode: 1. live on a rogue planet, 2. are shape shifters, 3. are hunted. Throw in the fact that the hunters in this episode have a similar moral structure to the Hirogen, and the rehash-o-meter starts going through the roof! Ranting of rehashes aside, I thought the episode was morally correct. I found the whole hunt as distasteful as the crew of Enterprise and I was glad they found a way to sabotage the hunt without actually attacking the hunters directly. It was a clever solution.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 1x19 - Acquisition**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-3-27

**My  
Rating -  
3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When the Ferengi, a group of intergalactic thieves, stun the Enterprise crew and try to rob the ship, it's up to Trip to work covertly to stop them.*

#### **Problems:**

- The whole premise is a rather annoying continuity problem. See comments.

#### **Factoids:**

- There are only 172 rules of acquisition at this time.  
- Jeffrey Combs (Weyoun, Brunt, Shran) and Ethan Phillips (Neelix) play Ferengi characters in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer getting beat up by the Ferengi...  
- Archer regarding Vulcans: "They're really not all that interesting once you get to know them."  
- Archer: "Trust me, she's got no sense of humor, she's always complaining..."  
- T'Pol: "There are times I wish Vulcans hadn't learned to repress their violent tendencies."

- The Ferengi pulling a gun on the retractable medical scanner bed as it approached him.
- The Ferengi talking to Porthos.
- Trip being hit by a Ferengi whip. Nice reference to TNG: The Last Outpost.
- Archer and Trip putting on a show for the Ferengi.
- T'Pol picking on Archer for the things he said about her to the Ferengi.
- Rules of Acquisition; 6. Never allow family to stand in the way of profit. 23. Nothing is more important than your health, except for your money. 45. Expand or die. ?. A man is only worth the sum of his possessions.

#### Comments:

I suppose it was only a matter of time before something like this had to happen. Well, I'm not going to rant about how this episode tramples all over continuity like a fanatic at a convention, because with some rationalization it's not so bad. With some more careful writing, it could have even been a great episode. I liked the detail showing the Ferengi whip, and I liked how Archer seems to have scared them all the way back to their homeworld. Knowing the Ferengi, who are driven by fear more than other species, they probably avoided Earth's corner of the galaxy for a long time and once the Federation was formed they probably avoided that too until contact became absolutely necessary in TNG: The Last Outpost. That said, I'm not happy that the writers decided the Ferengi needed a cameo and that they did it in such a careless manner. In order to rationalize this episode, we're forced to believe that these Ferengi were a very long way away from home and that records concerning this incident were not kept in very good detail. Both are distinct possibilities, so I'm just going to leave it at that. Continuity does suffer because of this episode though, and I've forced to mark it down thusly. When you stop caring about such things though and watch the episode for its raw merits, what you find is that its marvelously hilarious. Watch this episode to find the basis for Quark's future "Vulcan Love Slave" holosuite program. ;)



#### Star Trek Ent - 1x20 - Oasis

Originally Aired: 2002-4-3

My  
Rating -  
1

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*The crew is directed to a barren planet, where a derelict ship may be salvagable for supplies. But the crew quickly learns that rumors about the shipwreck being haunted may be true.*

#### Problems:

- This episode further aggravates the holodeck invention date problem. See comments.

#### Factoids:

- René Auberjonois, who played Odo on DS9, plays Ezral in this episode.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- T'Pol reminding Trip of his encounter on the Xyrillian ship.
- Trip: "What if she gets hurt? What are you going to do then, program up a holographic doctor?" Ah, if only Trip could see Voyager. ;)

#### Comments:

A rehash of DS9: Shadowplay regarding living one's life in a holographic world, with a bit of DS9: Progress. Ezral is a lot like Mullibok. And the treatment of Liana is a lot like Vina from TOS: The Cage, or Kes on Voyager. I think the rehash-o-meter is going through the roof again! As a result, we have a most unremarkable episode. In some ways, annoying too. Ent: Unexpected aggravated the holodeck invention date problem enough, but this episode contributes to it even more. Not only do we have Trip experiencing a holographic system, but he's experiencing a holographic system with holographic people, along with his entire crew! That, and they get a long hard look at the technology too. Finally, unlike Ent: Unexpected, this episode doesn't even have an excuse to show this kind of plot. Like Ent: Civilization, it could have been done on any other Trek series much more appropriately. Given all these problems and the horribly slow plot, I must declare this episode as the second biggest disappointment of the show.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x21 - Detained**  
Originally Aired: 2002-4-24

My  
Rating -  
5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and Mayweather are detained by the Tandarans in a Suliban internment camp. Learning of the Suliban's persecution by the Tandarans, Archer enlists the aid of Enterprise and his crew.*

**Problems:**

- This isn't the first case of this, but I wonder how an alien nursery rhyme translated by the universal translator retains its rhyme.
- Enterprise is 5.2 light years away from the prison, but reaches it in only a few days. That would have required a speed of a lot faster than warp 5.
- So the shuttlepods have phase cannons now?

**Factoids:**

- Dean Stockwell who plays Colonel Grat in this episode is old friend of Scott Bakula (Captain Archer). The two friends starred on Quantum Leap for many years.
- The Suliban homeworld became uninhabitable 300 years ago.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip: "A Vulcan lawyer? We'd be better off getting the electric chair."
- Colonel Grat interrogating Archer about the Cobal and the Temporal Cold War.
- T'Pol toying with Colonel Grat.
- Reed to Travis: "You look worse than I do."
- Reed'd boyish smile as he destroys the door.
- The shuttlepod strafing the prison.

**Comments:**

This episode gives us some nice background on the Suliban race, as well as a possible explanation for their extinction in the 23rd and 24th centuries. Since their homeworld became uninhabitable 300 years ago, they're nomadic, and they're being discriminated against en masse, I imagine that mass genocide might have wiped out most of their race. Now all that's left is to find out why the Denobulans are extinct in the 23rd and 24th centuries. ;) In any case, it seems not all Suliban are members of the Cabal, which is understandable. It seems Enterprise has meddled in the affairs of another sovereign alien species, but at least it was for a good cause. Racial discrimination sucks. Which reminds me, I love the scene when Travis got accused of being racist against Suliban. There's a certain irony to that scene. Travis, a man whose race was discriminated against hundreds of years ago, now is accused of repeating the mistakes his ancestors fought against. Obviously, Travis wasn't being a racist, but I still found the scene ironic. I also enjoyed seeing Travis take a more active role after he'd been thoroughly underused in the last several episodes. Overall, I'm glad to see an episode that isn't below average for the first time in a long while.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x22 - Vox Sola**  
Originally Aired: 2002-5-1

My  
Rating -  
10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a strange, symbiotic alien creature boards Enterprise and captures several crew members, it's up to Hoshi to decipher the creature's complex language.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is the winner of my "Best Episode of Enterprise Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Best Episode Ever Award".
- "Vox Sola" means "solitary voice" in Latin.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip trying to cheer up Archer about the bad first contact.
- Travis: "Why don't you stay for the movie tonight?" Reed: "What's playing?" Travis: "Uh..."

'Wages of Fear'. Classic foreign film." Reed: "Hmm." Travis: "You'll like it. Things blow up." Reed: "Hmm. Sounds fun."

- Trip: "I wouldn't want to be taking a swim if the gravity plating went offline." Archer: "No... no." I wonder if he's remembering his issues with the shower in Ent: Unexpected. ;)
- The alien creature capturing crewmembers, including Archer and Trip.
- Reed's EM emitters injuring the captured crew.
- The captured crew reading each other's thoughts.
- Phlox fighting for the rights of the severed tentacle.
- Travis answering the hail from the Kreetassans.
- Travis finding out why the Kreetassans were offended.
- Trip: "When Zefram Cochrane talked about new life and new civilization, do you think this is what he meant?"
- Reed testing his forcefield.
- Hoshi communicating with the life form.
- The crew visiting the life form's homeworld, returning it to its home.

#### Comments:

This isn't the start of the war with the Klingons that we've been waiting for, or the start of the war with the Romulans that we've been waiting for, or anything that we've been waiting for, for that matter. But *Vox Sola* has a special charm to it. This episode was exceptional from start to finish. It's not filled with cliches or recycled plots; this episode is totally original and a perfect fit for *Enterprise*. It begins when Hoshi fails to communicate adequately with the Kreetassans. They storm off the ship for some unknown reason, and nobody gives it a second thought. But when the web aliens of this episode start gobbling up crewmen, they decide to contact the Kreetassans again and see if they know anything about the web aliens. Because of circumstances, it's up to an underused character, Travis, to bridge the cultural barrier and make up for old mistakes. Normally, it would have been better to show Hoshi doing this, but I was pleased that Travis was given a chance to shine here. And shine he did. His solitary dealings with the Kreetassans in this episode was probably his best scene yet on the show. In fact, not a single character in this episode is neglected. Phlox gets to play the humanitarian, fighting for tentacle rights. Reed gets to play with gadgets and new technology, Archer and Tucker get several nice scenes depicting friendship and camaraderie, and Hoshi and T'Pol get several nice scenes showing contention and eventually the resolution of their differences as they work together to decipher the language of the web aliens. But what I liked most about this episode was the web aliens themselves. Never have we seen a more unique alien on *Star Trek*. And it was the perfect opportunity to get the *Enterprise* crew thinking outside the box. I liked how everyone worked together well. Reed built the first prototype forcefield, T'Pol helped Hoshi decrypt the mathematical portions of the web alien language, and Hoshi reprogrammed the universal translator to adapt it to the alien language. The scene when Hoshi stood behind Reed's forcefield and tried her best to communicate with the web aliens, going from a hostile demeanor to an understanding in just a few minutes was the high point of the episode. Then the scene when we watch as *Enterprise* returns the aliens to their homeworld was as symbolically impressive as it was visually impressive. Finally, all throughout the episode played this wonderful music, way above the average. The whole episode was true to the spirit of *Star Trek* moreso than most others and a pleasure to watch. I've read a lot of other reviews of this episode and I've got to say that *Vox Sola* is highly underrated.



#### **Star Trek Ent - 1x23 - Fallen Hero**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-5-8

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer is ordered to transport Vulcan Ambassador V'Lar, an early role model of T'Pol's, from a planet where her integrity has been called into question.*

**My  
Rating -**

**7**

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the phase cannons can't be fired at warp. Reed thinks the problem can be solved later though.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- T'Pol's expression of concern in the teaser.
- V'Lar's strange behavior when boarding *Enterprise*.

- Trip insinuating that Reed enjoys space battles.
- Archer deciding to outrun the Mazarite ships.
- V'Lar explaining that Earth's World War III was the reason for her mistrust of humans.
- Archer: "Archer to Engineering." Trip: "Please tell me you're ready to slow down." Archer: "Sorry Trip, but we need a little more speed." Trip: "I don't know how much more I can give you!" Archer: "It's called a warp five engine!" Trip: "On paper!"
- Enterprise reaching warp 5.
- The Enterprise crew putting on a performance for the Mazarites.
- V'Lar regarding Archer and T'Pol: "I sense a great bond between you. A bond of trust and respect. But also a bond of friendship. I think it bodes well for the future relations of our two peoples."

**Comments:**

A nicely entertaining action episode with another embedded Vulcan mystery. But unlike episodes like Ent: Breaking the Ice, we get valuable insight into why Vulcans distrust humans so much. It's humanity's history. Having barely survived a global war, Vulcans offer their assistance but remain skeptical that Earth has really learned from its mistakes. Even the nicest Vulcan we've met so far, V'Lar, has trouble trusting humans. But alas, she does. Her giving into her preconceptions symbolizes the "bond of friendship" that humans and Vulcans will one day have.



**Star Trek Ent - 1x24 - Desert Crossing**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-5-8

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When Archer and Trip are invited to a desert-like planet by an alien leader, they discover he is a terrorist who has lured them there under false pretenses.*

**Problems:**

- So in Ent: Detained, shuttlepods had phase cannons. Now they have plasma cannons?

**Factoids:**

- Clancy Brown who plays Zobral in this episode played the Kurgan in the Highlander film.
- It's been said that three of the extras seen in engineering in this episode are sailors from the real life United States Aircraft Carrier Enterprise.
- There are eight major components to a warp engine.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Enterprise's trip to Risa being interrupted... again!
- Archer citing the events of Ent: Silent Enemy as the only time he ever seriously thought about turning back to Earth.
- The Geskana match.
- Archer and Trip crossing the desert.
- T'Pol, Reed, and Zobral rescuing Archer and Trip.
- Archer: "The irony is I have a feeling his cause is worth fighting for."

**Comments:**

I loved the guest star Zobral in this episode. Magnificent actor who played his part very well. This episode features great continuity with Ent: Detained too. I loved how Zobral heard things about Archer from the Suliban who escaped their imprisonment thanks to Archer. Zobral said he heard that Archer was an explorer who was also a great warrior and as a result of this impression he wants to enlist Archer and his crew into his fight by any means necessary. Archer is finally learning that there are consequences for his actions. It's interesting that even after his ordeal, Archer remains sympathetic to Zobral's cause, even if he doesn't agree with his methods. Not only is Archer learning there are consequences for his actions, he's learning that the Vulcan non interference policy makes a lot of sense. Maybe the episode was yet another annoying rehash of the Enterprise crew gets involved in an alien conflict plot, but this episode used it well. We got some real character development for Archer and Trip, and the desert scenery was a nice change of pace. I especially liked the Geskana match.





**Star Trek Ent - 1x25 - Two Days and Two Nights**  
Originally Aired: 2002-5-12

**My  
Rating - 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Shore leave takes some interesting twists when the Enterprise crew finally arrives at Risa, the famous pleasure planet.*

**Problems:**

- In TOS: Amok Time, the Vulcan Pon Farr was regarded as something no non Vulcan may ever know of. But everyone on Enterprise seems to know about it. It's been mentioned in several episodes. They even joke about it in this one. It can be forgiven in TNG, DS9, and Voyager episodes because the events of TOS: Amok Time would be fairly well known by then, thanks to Kirk. So, if the Pon Farr is common knowledge in Enterprise, why is it the secret no one may ever know of in TOS?

**Factoids:**

- Dr. Phlox usually hibernates six days per year, but two is enough.  
- Hoshi learned 38 languages before she left Earth. She knows about 40 now.  
- Earth is 90 light years from Risa. This is the farthest any human has ever traveled, according to Archer.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Tucker: "Malcolm and I plan to uh... broaden our cultural horizons." Hoshi: "Is that all you two think about?"  
- Keyla: "You should always listen to your science officer." Archer: "She'd be the first to agree with you."  
- Hoshi speaking in Risian.  
- Keyla: "I wouldn't be surprised if they're naming schools after you back on your world." Archer: "Arhcer Elementary. Has a nice ring to it!"  
- Tucker: "I saved the captain's life." Alien women: "I thought you were the captain." Tucker, pointing to Reed: "We rotate. He's captain next week."  
- Travis: "Have you ever been to an alien hospital?" T'Pol: "Yes. In San Francisco."  
- Cutler waking up Phlox.  
- A disoriented Phlox trying perhaps not so successfully to treat Mayweather.  
- Archer discovering that Keyla was actually a Tandarans spy. (The race from Ent: Detained)  
- Phlox very quickly falling back asleep after having treated Travis.  
- The awkward conversation at the end.

**Comments:**

So the crew of the Enterprise finally gets a chance to experience Risa. Aside from featuring very nice continuity, the episode is filled with irony. Trip and Reed go looking for women and find themselves mugged. Archer goes looking for a woman and finds himself interrogated and drugged. And Hoshi, the only person not looking for a companion, (she even expressed disgust at the entire idea...) ends up finding one and having a great time. It's also kind of funny how Mayweather should suddenly need expert medical attention from Phlox right as Phlox decides he needs to hibernate. In fact, Phlox' very brief scenes in this episode were probably the best parts. In the end, there's a scene with Archer, Trip, Reed, and Hoshi all in a shuttlepod together having an awkward conversation about the "good time" they had. Archer, Trip, and Reed are covering for their naivety, while Hoshi is covering for her arrogance. None of them spent the time as they expected to. ;)



**Star Trek Ent - 1x26 - Shockwave, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 2002-5-22

**My  
Rating -  
8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*After apparently causing the obliteration of an alien colony, Enterprise is ordered to return to Earth, until a surprise visitor offers Archer startling evidence about what really happened...*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Daniels comes from the 31st century.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- The shuttlepod igniting the atmosphere of the mining colony.
- The resulting confusion after the shockwave.
- Reed denying pilot error at all costs.
- Archer announcing the mission's been canceled.
- T'Pol trying to cheer up Archer.
- Trip venting to Phlox.
- Archer waking up in San Francisco in his past.
- Daniels revealing that the explosion at the mining colony wasn't caused by Enterprise.
- Archer confusing Trip with technobabble.
- Enterprise revealing a cloaked Suliban vessel.
- Archer, T'Pol, and Trip performing their heist.
- The shuttlepod ripping away its docking interface.
- T'Pol: "As I've told you, the Vulcan Science Directorate has concluded that time travel is impossible."
- Trip regarding the Suliban ships: "It looks like we're in a swarm of cloaked bees!"

### Comments:

At first it looks like the crew of Enterprise made a major mistake costing the lives of thousands of innocent colonists. But as it turns out, Enterprise didn't cause the shockwave, but a cloaked Suliban vessel toying with the timeline did. The Temporal Cold War arc comes to a head here. Archer's "noble sacrifice" and departure of the ship, only to have Daniels interfere, Enterprise attacked, and Earth's future devastated leave us with a major cliffhanger. Personally, I'm not so fond of the Temporal Cold War arc, but at least it was well used here. I'm hoping part II finally gives us some progress after a total lack of progress in the previous episodes dealing with this arc. One thing I liked a lot about this episode was the running fear, uncertainty, and doubt concerning Enterprise's mission after the shockwave that ignited the mining colony's atmosphere. The cancellation of Enterprise's mission could easily spell disaster for all of humanity. Which brings up another point. Is this Temporal Cold War intended to be an excuse to alter continuity permanently? Is Enterprise the start of a new Trek timeline set in a parallel universe? I sincerely hope the answers to these questions is no.



### Star Trek Ent - 2x01 - Shockwave, Part II

Originally Aired: 2002-9-18

My Rating

- 6

### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*With Enterprise held hostage and Archer mysteriously missing, the crew faces its biggest challenge yet.*

### Problems:

- Since when can Enterprise fire phase cannons at warp? Seems Reed fixed that problem. But it would have been nice to have some dialog explaining that he fixed it, instead of the rather tasteless beating he received instead.

### Factoids:

- When the Federation was destroyed, not only does Daniels' future cease to exist, but Future Guy's too.
- Future Guy is from the 28th century. In the 28th century, they could communicate through time, but not actually travel through time.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Archer and Daniels exploring a destroyed 31st century.
- Archer: "The Romulan Star Empire. What's that?" Daniels: "Maybe you shouldn't be reading that."
- T'Pol: "The Vulcan Science Directorate has determined that time travel is impossible." Silik: "Does Archer agree with that opinion?" T'Pol: "It's not an opinion." Silik: "Does Archer agree with that determination?"
- The dazed and confused T'Pol.
- Hoshi's experience in the shafts that house the EPS conduits.
- Archer to Silik: "I said you're an ugly bastard!"
- Archer's infamous gazelle speech: "When I was in my early twenties on a trip to east Africa, I saw a gazelle giving birth. It was truly amazing. Within minutes the baby was standing up. Standing up on its own. A few more minutes and it was walking, and before I knew it was running alongside its

mother, moving away with the herd. Humans aren't like that, ambassador. We may come from the same planet as those gazelles, but we're pretty much helpless when we're born. It takes us months before we're able to crawl, almost a full year before we can walk. Our deep space mission isn't much different. We're going to stumble, make mistakes; I'm sure more than a few before we find our footing. But we're going to learn from those mistakes. That's what being human is all about. I'm sorry you can't see that."

- T'Pol referencing the events of P'Jem as evidence that like humans, Vulcans are not perfect and that Enterprise's mission should continue.

- T'Pol: "I still don't believe in time travel." Archer: "The hell you don't."

#### Comments:

Little progress concerning the Temporal Cold War is given here. In fact, the events of this episode make guessing at who Silik's boss is even harder. If wiping out the Federation wipes out Future Guy, then I'm totally out of guesses. Sorry. It seems the Temporal Cold War is nothing but a series of events like *Voy: Relativity*. Malicious person A starts messing with the timeline. Federation time traveler B corrects it. The main characters of the show suffer while this happens. *Time Trek* is most boring and I hope it doesn't last. I sincerely hope season two does something useful with the Temporal Cold War. In any case, part II of this episode was a disappointment. Besides not getting the Temporal Cold War conclusion I was expecting, the episode resorted to some of the tasteless trends established in season one. T'Pol gets tortured in revealing clothing, Hoshi loses her shirt, and Reed gets severely beaten. And I'm just not even gonna talk about Archer's rather embarrassing gazelle speech. The conclusion to this otherwise decent action episode seemed rather tasteless to me. An extra point for the episode not featuring a reset button though.



#### **Star Trek Ent - 2x02 - Carbon Creek**

Originally Aired: 2002-9-25

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*T'Pol's recollection of the Vulcans' first encounter with Humans conflicts with what Archer and Trip learned from history books.*

My  
Rating -  
4

#### Problems:

- Sputnik was launched in 1957. Velcro was invented in 1955. The episode was close at least. ;)

#### Factoids:

- Trip confirms what Geordi said in *Star Trek VIII: First Contact* that a statue of Zefram Cochrane would be built in Bozeman Montana.

- In the real world, Velcro was invented by a man named Mestral, which is also the name of the Vulcan who stayed on Earth.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Trip wondering just how old T'Pol is.

- Mestral: "It's unfortunate that you'll be leaving these people without experiencing one thing they have to offer." Stron: "Such as alcohol, frozen fish sticks, the constant threat of nuclear annihilation?"

- Trip: "This is like finding out Neil Armstrong wasn't the first man to walk on the moon!" T'Pol: "Perhaps he wasn't."

- T'Pol winding up Archer and Trip over whether or not her story was true.

#### Comments:

T'Pol's story is captivating, and the Vulcan actors do a superb job. The episode leaves you wondering if any of it is true, but like *Voy: The Haunting of Deck Twelve*, there's clear evidence that it is true shown in the final scene. Besides, I find it hard to believe T'Pol would lie when she said the incident was well documented on Vulcan. Unfortunately, these plots are poor recipes for episodes and seldom make good ones. I was pleasantly surprised that this episode didn't turn into another *Voy: 11:59*, which was totally irrelevant. But then again, an episode like this is something the writers can only get away with once a long while. It was done well and it was a nice change of pace, but we just don't watch *Star Trek* these kinds of stories.



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x03 - Minefield**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-10-2

**My Rating**

- 9

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise becomes disabled by an alien orbital mine while trapped in hostile Romulan territory.*

#### **Problems:**

- Why didn't Worf's space suit in Star Trek VIII: First Contact have the self sealing mechanism that Reed's does in this episode?

#### **Factoids:**

- Reed suffers from aquaphobia.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Reed's uneasy breakfast with the captain.
- Archer to T'Pol regarding the landing site for the planet: "Find a volcano with a gentle slope, preferably one that's not erupting."
- Enterprise slamming into a mine.
- T'Pol regarding why the beacons weren't revealing anymore mines: "They were designed to penetrate Suliban cloaking devices." Archer shoots her a quick highly annoyed look. T'Pol quickly says: "I'll try shifting the phase variance."
- Reed's spacewalk on the hull, examining the mine.
- The Romulan ship decloaking before Reed's eyes and firing warning shots.
- Archer: "Our friends seem anxious for us to leave. We're going to break orbit, nice and slowly."
- Reed: "Understood. If plan to go to warp, sir, you'll let me know?" Archer: "I'll try to remember."
- The mine impaling Reed.
- Reed: "I would consider letting you amputate but if chef got hold of it, he'd be serving 'roast Reed' for Sunday dinner."
- Reed regarding the painkillers: "Please sir... may I have some more?"
- Archer and Reed chatting while attempting to disable the mine.
- Archer saving Reed.

#### **Comments:**

Romulans at long last. It's annoying that they're shown with cloaking devices when they were regarded as something new in TOS: Balance of Terror, but the problem existed since the first episode when the writers decided to give the Suliban cloaking devices. It's at least plausible that the Romulan cloak was defeated during the Earth Romulan war, and that in TOS: Balance of Terror they designed a more perfect cloak just as was done in TNG: The Neutral Zone to warrant the various reactions to the cloak seen over time. Anyway, enough of that. Minefield was the best Enterprise episode so far, besides of course Vox Sola which is an exception. I was hoping since day one that Enterprise would document the Earth Romulan war. This incident could very well spell the beginning of the said war. Besides the cloaking oddities, which really aren't that bad a continuity problem, the writers were true to TOS' portrayal of the Romulans. Spock said that in TOS: Balance of Terror that that was the first time the Federation had ever seen a Romulan. As unlikely as this may sound, the writers stayed true to it. There was no visual communication between the Romulans and Enterprise. I was also happy that first contact with the Romulans happened in this manner. The Klingons have been abused since the first episode, but this is just the abrasive first contact I would have expected to see with the Romulans. (The Klingons likewise, but oh well.) Finally, the interaction between Archer and Reed in this episode was great. Reed's interaction with Trip in Ent: Shuttlepod One was funnier, yes, but on the whole I found this episode to be vastly more entertaining and the Archer / Reed interplay was one of the reasons. Overall, most excellent. I want to see more like this!



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x04 - Dead Stop**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-10-9

**My Rating**

- 8

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise docks with a mysterious high-tech space station which proves too good to be true.*

#### **Problems:**

- So the station gets its processing power from people. All right. So where's it getting it's energy

from?

- Rigelian fever sure is a lot more harmless in this century. (See TOS: Requiem for Methuselah)

**Factoids:**

- The Enterprise computer is 3 decks high and is the most advanced in the fleet, and is three decks tall.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer and Trip surveying the damage from the last episode.
- Enterprise transmitting a distress call.
- Reed: "It can't be ethical to cause a patient this much pain." Phlox: " It's unethical to harm a patient. I can inflict as much pain as I like."
- Trip: "They've isolated every hull breach, every damaged system... I'll be damned. We scratched the hull right there a year ago. I bumped it with the inspection pod, remember?" Archer: "I thought I told you to have that repainted?"
- Trip and T'Pol playing with the replicator.
- The automated station repairing the ship section by section.
- The automated station repairing Reed.
- Trip and Reed being most embarrassingly beamed from the station to the Enterprise bridge.
- Hoshi describing a prank Travis pulled on her with strawberry jello.
- Phlox discovering that Travis' body is not really Travis.
- Archer and T'Pol recovering Travis and escaping the station, destroying it in the process.

**Comments:**

Another above average offering from Enterprise. The story is fairly original, but the devil is in the details. The damage from last episode's minefield is still very much a problem. How often has Voyager suffered severe hull breaches only to repair them in short order a week later? And remember when the Jem'Hadar destroyed an entire pylon on Deep Space Nine? That was sure fixed fast. This episode is a reminder of just how low tech the 22nd century really is. The alien space station is of course an exception to this. It featured some amazing replicator technology. You've got to wonder what kind of power requirements a station like that would need in order to sustain the advanced bio computer and the advanced replicator. Personally, I don't think 200 liters of warp plasma will sustain all that technology for long. It would have been nice if we could get a look at the power source as well as the computer core. There's some other great continuity in this episode, besides last week's damage. I liked how Reed was still injured. I also liked the mentioning the scratch Trip made on the hull when he bumped it with the inspection pod in the first episode. I also liked Archer getting annoyed with his squeaky floor again. A Tellarite freighter responds to Archer's distress call, they were an alien species featured in TOS. Finally, Phlox says mentions Rigelian fever, which was featured in TOS: Requiem for Methuselah. Obviously by then it mutates into something more deadly. While the episode is not without its flaws, it was a pleasure to watch. It managed to retain almost as much excitement as Ent: Minefield. In fact, it almost felt like Ent: Minefield, Part II. I hope we see more of this careful attention to continuity.



**Star Trek Ent - 2x05 - A Night in Sickbay**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-10-16

**My Rating -**  
**0**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer spends a fretful night in sickbay with Porthos and Dr. Phlox.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Worst Episode of Enterprise Award".
- Phlox holds six degrees in interspecies veterinary medicine. He also holds degrees in dentistry, hematology, and botanical pharmacology, and psychiatry.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- T'Pol revealing the reason for the Kreetassans taking offense... again.
- Phlox: "Have you considered that your anger may encompass more than just Porthos and the Kreetassans?" Archer: "What?" Phlox: "How long has it been since you were intimate with a woman?" Archer: "What?" Phlox: "How long has it be--" Archer: "I heard you!"

- Archer to Phlox: "From what you're telling me, the closest thing your people have to pets are furry little things that go well with onions!"
- Archer discussing with Phlox his extended family.
- This episode features another huge Phlox smile at the end.

#### Comments:

In the tradition of DS9: Profit and Lace, this episode gets a de facto zero. DS9: Profit and Lace didn't have technical or continuity problems, but it was so distasteful that I couldn't give it any points. Like DS9: Profit and Lace, this episode is at least mildly entertaining. DS9: Profit and Lace showed us some real progress in Ferengi women's rights. In this episode, it was nice to see that Enterprise is still searching for spare parts to repair their minefield damage. And it was nice to see Archer have to deal with his intolerance of other cultures. But also like DS9: Profit and Lace, this episode is so distasteful that I can't give it any points. Now, granted, nobody dresses in drag here, the problem with this episode is the sheer number of annoying scenes. They easily outnumber the good scenes. Some of these bad scenes include Phlox trimming his toenails and grooming his long tongue. That just wasn't necessary to see. The treadmill race between Archer and T'Pol. Why does Archer feel the need to engage in pissing contests with her so often? The bat scene with Phlox was just redundant. Yes, we got the point. Sleeping in sickbay with Phlox around create distractions. Did we really need to see another one? Throughout the episode Archer ignored the Kreetassans, in favor of throwing his temper tantrums, ranting at his crew like a child. Archer dreaming of Porthos' death and of being intimate with T'Pol was just downright inappropriate. The climax of absurdity came with Archer's "doing the breast i can" and "send me your lips" lines. Even the scene in which Archer finally apologizes to the Kreetassans was silly, though that one's not so bad compared to the rest. Ent: A Night in Sickbay has a few good scenes and quotes. And I did like the connection between this episode and Ent: Vox Sola, showing us the Kreetassans again. But the nonstop tastelessness in this episode ruins what little fun this episode had to offer. It's really not so bad if you like watching immaturity at its best, but you know what? This is Star Trek, not a teenie bopper film.



#### **Star Trek Ent - 2x06 - Marauders**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-10-30

**My  
Rating -  
3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*In need of fuel, Enterprise discovers a mining colony that is being controlled by Klingons who are bullying the inhabitants and hoarding their supplies.*

#### **Problems:**

- Like Voy: Demon, the writers apparently don't know what deuterium is. It's a type of hydrogen. It can be extracted from anything, including from water! It's hardly a valuable commodity. There's no need to "mine" it. Again, the writers are confusing deuterium with dilithium.

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "There's a saying on my world. Give a man a fish and he eats for a day. Teach a man to fish and he eats for a lifetime."
- Hoshi demonstrating how to hit a target. Oh the irony! ;)
- T'Pol: "Try to strike me." Travis hesitates. T'Pol: "You won't hurt me." Travis: "It's not you I'm worried about."
- Archer recalling the events of Broken Bow to encourage confidence in Tessic.
- The victory against the Klingons.

#### **Comments:**

This is a decent episode, but it drowns under the weight of that rather nasty technical problem regarding how the authors don't have the slightest clue what deuterium is and some mildly poor writing. The technical problem is documented in the problems section, so I won't get into that. The Klingons are shown rather out of character here. They put up an amazingly weak fight. They fall for simple tricks and when told to leave and never come back, that's exactly what they do. This logical problem could have been solved if the Enterprise crewmembers taught the colonists more sophisticated ways to defend themselves, but it seems the writers have just as much a taste for guerilla warfare as they do for misusing the term deuterium. ;) On the other hand, this episode contributes positively to continuity. Repeated incidents like this one could very easily get the

Klingons pissed off enough at Earth to start a war. So it's a mixed bag. Not all that great, but not all that bad either.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 2x07 - The Seventh**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-11-6

**My  
Rating -  
2**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*T'Pol is dispatched by the Vulcan High Command to capture a fugitive that has eluded their authorities for nearly two decades.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- T'Pol's vague behavior when she tells Archer about her impending mission.
- Tucker having trouble being the acting captain.
- The Vulcan captain confusedly informing "Captain Archer" of the recent water polo scores.

**Comments:**

A meager plot. There are only two redeeming qualities in this episode. It's a nice character building piece between Archer and T'Pol and it was very well acted all across. Jolene Blalock's portrayal of a Vulcan whose emotions are bleeding into the surface was quite good. I guess there are a few other, minor things to redeem the episode too. We don't get to watch another atrocious decon scene, even though it was hinted at. And Mayweather isn't totally ignored. What's annoying is that we're shown yet another wayward Vulcan plot. There would seem to be three types of Vulcans in the 22nd century. Right wing, emotionless, arrogant Vulcans like Soval, left wing, emotional, unstable Vulcans, like the people from Ent: Fusion or this episode, and those that fall somewhere in between like V'Lar from Ent: Fallen Hero or more recently, T'Pol. It seems the lefty righty extremist types die off by the 23rd century. Personally, I'd like to see stories explaining how they die off, not more stories demonstrating that this social structure exists. There's been enough of them.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 2x08 - The Communicator**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-11-13

**My Rating  
- 3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Reed and Archer retrieve a communicator left behind on an alien planet, but are captured in the process.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Reed: "Captain, my carelessness was inexcusable. I'm prepared for whatever reprimand you feel is appropriate." Archer: "How about 30 years in the brig? Or maybe a good flogging?"
- Trip accidentally cloaking his arm.
- The aliens examining the humans, astonished at their alien physiology.
- T'Pol, Trip, and Travis rescuing Archer and Reed.

**Comments:**

Another fairly unremarkable episode. It was a good idea in the sense that Archer learns another lesson about contaminating cultures, but even that is starting to get a bit old. I suppose it felt so old in this episode because it was only discussed in a limited capacity. An episode with less violence and paranoia and more discussion about consequences for these types of actions would have been a better episode. Even then, we've seen enough of it already. TNG did it to death, for example. Instead though, we got Archer and Reed getting beaten up again and a firefight in the end. Not exactly true to the spirit of Star Trek. T'Pol even admits in the end that they damaged this alien

culture. And for what? So Archer could be taught a lesson he's already learned? Well, perhaps I'm wrong. Given the events of this episode, seems he hasn't learned it yet!



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x09 - Singularity**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-11-20

**My  
Rating -  
4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On a "typical" day on Enterprise, the crew finds their routine tasks turn into uncharacteristically strange obsessions over trivial matters.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew starting to obsess over trivialities.
- Reed's various obnoxious alert sounds.
- Hoshi freaking out at people.
- Everybody starting to freak out.
- T'Pol waking up Archer.
- Archer piloting while T'Pol determines the course corrections.

#### **Comments:**

We've seen it all before. TOS: The Naked Time, TNG: The Naked Now, DS9: Dramatis Personae, Voy: Bliss and even Ent: Strange New World. There've been far too many "the crew is acting strangely..." episodes. Hell, the whole flying between the stars thing reminded me a lot of Voy: Scientific Method too. Suffice it to say, the writers seem to lack originality. Fortunately, aside from the fact that the episode is unoriginal, it is genuinely entertaining and funny. I enjoyed watching Archer obsess over writing the preface to his father's biography, Trip obsessing over redesigning the captain's chair, Reed obsessing over his "Reed alert" which may be the precursor to the "red alert" ;), Hoshi obsessing over food, and Phlox obsessing over Travis' "medical condition." It's yet another cliché that T'Pol, as a Vulcan, is immune to the radiation's effects, but I'll let that one go. The episode may not be spectacular, but it's an improvement over the last four episodes anyway.



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x10 - Vanishing Point**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-11-27

**My  
Rating -  
1**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Following her first experience in the transporter, a series of eerie events leads Hoshi to question whether she is the same person.*

#### **Problems:**

None that aren't dreamed up by Hoshi.

#### **Factoids:**

- This is the first time Trip and Hoshi use the transporter.
- We get to see Hoshi's father in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Just one scene after Phlox tries to give Hoshi a sedative, Trip says: "If I were you, I'd ask the doc for a sedative. Nothing like crawling into bed." Hoshi: "You men are all alike."

#### **Comments:**

It was all a dream! My least favorite plot device. In a way though, the "it was all a dream" plot device saved the episode from a zero. Hoshi's dream made less and less sense as it went on, to the point where I was getting ready to write a big rant about all the technical problems. Fortunately, I don't have to do that, because it was just a dream. The actual episode lasted no longer than a few minutes though, so even if all the technical problems aren't really technical problems, stripping them away doesn't leave much an episode afterward. Linda Park did an excellent job playing Hoshi



in this episode, especially considering the poor material she was given to work with. But this can't save the episode from its dismal premise.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 2x11 - Precious Cargo**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-12-11

**My Rating**

**- 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Trip rescues an exotic alien woman from her kidnappers, but ends up on an unexpected romantic adventure.*

**Problems:**

- Archer suggests that the Retellians should dock in Enterprise's launch bay so that Enterprise can take them to their destination quite a bit faster. But how exactly was the alien ship supposed to at all fit in Enterprise's launch bay? It was almost as big as Enterprise herself!

**Factoids:**

- Kaitaama is a Kriosian. Her race was last featured in TNG: The Perfect Mate.  
- Trip once owned a car.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip trying to get the Universal Translator to work.  
- The evil Archer and evil T'Pol scene.  
- Trip's fight with Goff.

**Comments:**

Remember TNG: The First Mate? It's likely Kaitaama in this episode is one of those very rare empathic Kriosian females. But it seems Kaitaama was already married. It's interesting to see that while Trip finds her attractive, he doesn't at all fall for her immediately, like he would with an unbonded equivalent. Eventually, they start to hit it off though. Still, you've got to wonder why the Retellians stole her if she's already married. Not that they seemed very bright, though. Anyway, this episode is your rather generic abduction / hostage situation plot. It's rather annoying that there's a handy M class planet immediately available for Trip and Kaitaama to land on when they steal the escape pod. Other than that, the episode is another improvement over the not so good episodes season 2 has been serving up lately.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 2x12 - The Catwalk**

**Originally Aired:** 2002-12-18

**My**

**Rating -**

**5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a deadly radioactive storm threatens Enterprise, the entire crew must take refuge for eight days in a small maintenance shaft.*

**Problems:**

- How are you to see through a window something approaching you at warp speed? Assumedly, the storm would be outrunning the light it emits!

**Factoids:**

- We finally get to see Chef in this episode. But only from the chest down...  
- The population of Denobula consists of 12 billion people, all living on one continent.  
- T'Pol once participated in the kas-wahn ritual in which she was taken to the desert and left to survive for ten days.  
- Enterprise has traveled over 100 light years from Earth.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Alien Captain: "Once we're aboard, I suggest you go to warp 7 immediately." Archer: "Our top speed is warp 5."  
- Reed mentioning that cadets used to call the EV simulator the "vomitorium."  
- Archer: "You know, there is a bright side to all of this." T'Pol: "Really?" Archer: "It's bringing the crew closer together. If you forget about the storm outside, this is almost like going on a camping trip." T'Pol: "Perhaps we can sing a few songs later."

**Comments:**

And another improvement in the writing. Ent: The Catwalk is the most original story since Ent:

Minefield and Ent: Dead Stop. I liked that there are plenty of natural phenomena in the galaxy that can endanger Enterprise. Without shields and without a top speed of faster than warp 5, we see how vulnerable the ship really is compared to even TOS standards. There was good continuity with TOS: The Naked Time regarding how long it takes to cold start a warp engine. The warp engine trivia was good all around in fact. I enjoyed seeing the catwalk itself. A nicely constructed set. I wonder if the planet they were planning to explore in this episode was the planet Trip discovered in the last episode. The descriptions sound about the same. Would have been nice to insert a line of dialog confirming this. The alien takeover wasn't exactly original, but well played. I liked how the alien enemy captain guy had read Archer's logs. I also liked how Archer faked his attempt to destroy the ship so as to convince the aliens to leave. A question remains regarding why the aliens didn't come back when Enterprise very clearly changed course after the aliens disembarked. However, their sensors could have been fooled. That would have been another nice one liner to have in the episode. Overall, pretty average stuff, but it's certainly above Enterprise's average lately!



---

**Star Trek Ent - 2x13 - Dawn**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-1-8

**My Rating -**

**6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Trip is fired upon by a territorial alien and forced to land on the night side of a moon.*

**Problems:**

- T'Pol takes temperature measurements in Fahrenheit.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip beginning to communicate with Zho'Kaan.
- Zho'Kaan healing Trip's scratch wound with his spit. An interesting ability.
- Trip regarding talking to Zho'Kaan: "It's like talking to Porthos!"
- Trip doing his best, despite the language barrier, to attempt to cooperate with Zho'Kaan, only to have Zho'Kaan attack him again.
- Zho'Kaan finally starting to cooperate with Trip.
- Trip recalling the interesting things that happened to him on his mission.
- Archer: "I guess we won't be adding the Arkonians to our list of friends." T'Pol: "The encounter was less volatile than I expected. You managed to establish better relations in a single day than the Vulcans have in a century."
- Trip finally being able to talk with Zho'Kaan with the aid of a translator in sickbay.

**Comments:**

Well, they should have just named the episode Enemy Mine to complete the plagiarism! The alien makeup was similar to the movie, the premise was similar to the movie, and the plot was similar to the movie! Keeping the review a little more confined to Star Trek, the episode was also a bit like TNG: The Enemy. Despite the lack of originality, this was a very nice episode. Trip's compassion for his would be sparring partner is commendable. I like how he threw away his weapon, which started a fight, then after he barely won the fight he threw away his weapon again! Even when Trip had the ability to escape, he stayed to make sure that Zho'Kaan would be all right. This episode nicely demonstrates human compassion. Perhaps the lack of human compassion is why the Vulcans never established good relations with the Arkonians in the past. ;) While maybe not so original, the episode was most true to the spirit of Star Trek; nicely above average.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 2x14 - Stigma**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-2-5

**My Rating**

**- 6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*T'Pol's standing on Enterprise is threatened when it is learned that she has contracted a deadly disease.*

**Problems:**

- Only a small minority of Vulcans can perform mind melds? This can't be right...

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer and Trip meeting Phlox' second wife Feezal. She finishes the scene with one of those big Denobulan smiles.
- Phlox and T'Pol being questioned by the Vulcan doctors.
- Archer finding out about T'Pol's illness.
- Trip fighting off advances from Phlox' second wife.
- Archer approaching the Vulcan doctors demanding a hearing.
- Trip talking to Phlox about Feezal's advances.
- Dr. Yuris revealing how T'Pol contracted her disease to the other doctors.

**Comments:**

This episode demonstrates more clearly than any other the vast differences in social structure on Vulcan compared to that of TOS and later. The two most shocking differences are the insinuation that mind melds can only be performed by certain Vulcans and not any Vulcan, and that the right wing Vulcans are practicing eugenics. I've said before that we've seen enough proof that the Vulcans are different than in the other shows. In a way, I found this episode redundant too. But it was also a nice idea, to show that T'Pol has incurred consequences due to the events of Ent: Fusion. This episode is also very clearly an AIDS allegory. Why find a cure when you can just let the infected die off? The disease is only transmitted by "undesirable" people anyway... Sound familiar? Despite my disagreements with the way Vulcans are being shown on Enterprise, this ended up being a nice episode. And at least the writers are being consistent with their portrayal of Vulcans. I just hope they finally get around showing us what changes them by TOS sometime soon. On a lighter note, the Denobulan subplot was much more successful. Phlox' second wife was just hilarious. I wonder how many times Trip (or Archer) has said the words "perfect gentlemen" on the show now? ;)



**Star Trek Ent - 2x15 - Cease Fire**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-2-12

**My Rating**

**- 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a military conflict erupts between the Vulcans and Andorians, Archer is brought in as negotiator.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Suzie Plakson, who plays Tarah in this episode, played Alexander's mother in TNG and the female Q on Voyager.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Maybe we're not out here just to scan comets and meet new species. Maybe we're out here to prove that humanity is ready to join a much larger community."
- Archer: "No offense but my ears are less likely to draw fire than yours." Soval: "What is their fixation with our ears?" T'Pol: "I believe they're envious."
- Soval laying into T'Pol for not having left Enterprise.
- Soval getting shot.
- Archer wins a fight! Against a girl...
- Trip placing Enterprise between the Vulcan and Andorian ships.
- Shran: "Join me in a drink. To our mutual dissatisfaction."
- Shran: "I think he likes you, pinkskin." Archer: "I wouldn't go that far."

**Comments:**

Easily the best of the Andorian episodes so far, Ent: The Andorian Incident and Ent: Shadows of P'Jem both had annoying qualities to them which sort of wrecked the chance for some insight into the most canonically neglected Andorian culture. This episode doesn't repeat that mistake. We're given some fascinating trivia regarding the history of the Vulcan and Andorian people. Apparently, the Andorians colonized a planet in the Vulcan solar system! I rather liked T'Pol's comment about

what Earth would do if the Klingon Empire annexed Pluto. ;) It was a good point. And a hard conflict to resolve. I was glad to see that this episode made progress, but didn't totally resolve the conflict. Logically such a conflict should take time to resolve. The episode had a shot at being profound, but the writers decided to waste a great deal of time on the worthless hostage situation. Why does every Andorian episode have to have Vulcans and Andorians shooting at each other? Fortunately it was toned down this time, but not in time to do some real laying down the groundwork for the Federation. Maybe in another episode. Another nice quality is that Shran is becoming more and more a likable character. After only three episodes, I'm already starting to like him just as much as Weyoun from DS9, who was also played by Jeffrey Combs. The actor is just fantastic at playing characters that have a dark side. Finally, Trip placing Enterprise between the Vulcan and Andorian ships before they went to battle was just perfect practically and symbolically.



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x16 - Future Tense**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-2-19

**My  
Rating -  
7**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise finds a small craft adrift in space that contains what appears to be a human corpse, one the Suliban and the Tholians both try to retrieve.*

#### **Problems:**

- Reed takes temperature measurements in Fahrenheit.

#### **Factoids:**

- At one time the Denobulans believed that they were the only intelligent life in the galaxy.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip and Reed discovering that the ship is bigger on the inside than it is on the outside... literally. :)
- Reed: "This gives space exploration a whole new meaning!"
- Phlox discovering that the dead pilot is actually a hybrid of several species, including human and Vulcan.
- Archer: "If a human and a Vulcan did have a child, I wonder if he'd have pointed ears?"
- The Tholians!
- Trip and Reed getting stuck in a time loop.
- Enterprise battling the Suliban.
- The Tholians battling the Suliban.
- Time repeating for Archer and Reed.
- Archer regarding the Vulcan High Command: "I wonder if they'll believe that humans and Vulcans will be swapping chromosomes one day?" T'Pol: "They're more likely to believe in time travel."

#### **Comments:**

Ent: Future Tense is yet another Temporal Cold War episode which depicts conflict and action without much explanation. Reminds me a bit of Ent: Cold Front. This episode is quite a bit more successful though. The object of the plot itself was most original. The ship itself and the body inside were fascinating. The Temporal Cold War is further aggravated by the appearance of the Tholians. Despite my lack of appreciation of the Temporal Cold War in general, this was a really great use of the Tholians. TOS: The Tholian Web utterly failed to show us anything of significance when it introduced the Tholians. This episode is a continuity goldmine concerning them, and manages not to create any problems too! As exciting as the episode is, I'm only annoyed that we learn nothing new about the Temporal Cold War other than that the Tholians may be working for one of the factions and that they're opposed to the Suliban. So this episode ends up being a grand, albeit exciting, waste of time from a developmental standpoint.



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x17 - Canamar**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-2-26

**My  
Rating -  
5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and Tucker are mistakenly arrested and placed on a prisoner transport vessel bound for the penal colony Canamar.*

#### **Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The prison ship coup.
- Archer passing himself off as the smuggler he was accused of to gain the prisoners' trust.
- Zoumas talking Trip's ear off.
- Kuroda: "I may not know how to fly this ship, but I am sure I can figure out how to crash it!"
- Trip defeating the Nausican.
- Archer shooting off his mouth to the Enolian official.

**Comments:**

An episode much like TNG: Gambit, Archer gains the trust of Kuroda in much the same way Picard gained the trust of his captors. We get another dose of fighting and guns, Archer gets beaten up again, though he does manage to do fairly well in a fight this time. It's remarkable that the episode doesn't really have a B plot. The two settings were largely contributing to the same plot. The "Enterprise chases the prison transport" plot though was rather dull and predictable. What little surprise it had to offer, it spoiled by having T'Pol ask Reed about the armaments of the ship that was about to dock with the prison transport. Personally, I thought the scene when Archer blew off the Enolian official was too short. Archer's anger was understandable, but a longer scene would have been a better scene. In addition, the fight between Archer and Kuroda went on far too long. And I was kind of looking forward to watching that prison transport break up in the atmosphere. I wonder why they didn't show it? Maybe because of the Columbia disaster? In any case, this episode was more original than most, but the ending was somewhat anticlimactic.

**Star Trek Ent - 2x18 - The Crossing**

Originally Aired: 2003-4-2

**My  
Rating -  
3**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise is swallowed by an otherworldly vessel occupied by noncorporeal creatures who seek to trade consciousness with the crew members.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Enterprise is 150 light years from Earth.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip being disembodied.
- Reed: "Are you a female?" Crewman: "Sir?" Reed: "Your gender, you are a female, correct?" Crewman: "Last time I checked." Reed: "I am a male." Crewman: "I'm aware of that Lieutenant." Reed: "There seem to be a number of anatomical differences."
- Reed coming on to T'Pol.
- Reed to T'Pol: "Would you mind taking off your clothing? I'd like to learn more about your anatomy."
- Rostov being possessed.
- Trip slugging Travis.

**Comments:**

It's remarkable how suspicious Archer is of the wisp aliens at first. As harmless as they looked, Archer just seemed so xenophobic about it all. This is all excused of course because of the fact that Archer's instincts were correct. It annoyed me that when T'Pol found out the aliens' true intentions, Archer doesn't try to reason with the aliens, but instead exploits their weaknesses and destroys them. Maybe this is better for continuity and maybe this is more realistic for the 22nd century, but it was hardly in the spirit of Star Trek. The ethics are almost as questionable as is shown in Ent: Dear Doctor. There's a decent helping of humor in this episode and the plot advances well. I enjoyed the reuse of the catwalk and I found the episode genuinely entertaining up until that seemingly Enterprise patented anticlimactic ending. Another disappointment.



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x19 - Judgment**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-4-9

**My  
Rating -  
4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer stands accused before a Klingon tribunal of conspiring against the Empire, and faces a lifetime sentence on Rura Penthe.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- J. G. Hertzler who plays Kolos in this episode played Martok on DS9.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Duras telling his colored story.
- Archer telling the real story.
- Kolos telling Archer that not all Klingons are warriors, complaining about the new trend among young people.

#### **Comments:**

A fairly unremarkable episode, but interesting. It's a shameless blatant rip off of Star Trek VI: The Undiscovered Country and DS9: Rules of Engagement. It also tried to generate some ratings by using J. G. Hertzler to play Kolos. But I don't really care about any of these things. What I enjoyed about the story was that we got to see some of the origins of the Klingon warrior culture. Obviously, Klingons were always warriors. But I like how Kolos described the difference in generations and how the acquisition of honor has somewhat depreciated over time. For this insight into Klingon culture, I give the episode extra points. So yeah, the general plot may have been ripped off, the seemingly important detail of exactly how Archer fell into the hands of the Klingons was omitted, and resolution was rather convenient, but at least they weren't mining "deuterium" at Rura Penthe. ;)



### **Star Trek Ent - 2x20 - Horizon**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-4-16

**My  
Rating -  
5**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While Enterprise investigates a planetary phenomenon, Mayweather takes the opportunity to visit the cargo ship where he was born and raised.*

#### **Problems:**

- The ship travels almost 30 light years in a matter of days. Maybe a couple weeks. This would require a speed of a lot faster than warp 5!
- Nora says the Horizon is low on deuterium... surely she meant dilithium.

#### **Factoids:**

- There was a time, before Starfleet was chartered, when Archer considered serving on a cargo ship.
- According to Trip, Zefram Cochrane designed the cargo ships like the J class cargo ships himself.
- This episode establishes that Enterprise has visited 22 inhabited planets and traveled 150 light years in 18 months.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Travis hanging out at the sweet spot.
- Travis: "Starfleet really ought to think about putting families on starships." Reed: "You must be joking!"  
Mayweather : "No one would ever get homesick."  
Reed : "Yes... well they'd better post a psychologist on board. Because I'd need one if my parents were roaming the corridors."
- Archer joining Travis at the sweet spot.
- Archer telling Travis about the letter of recommendation he got from Travis' father.

- The Horizon being attacked.
- T'Pol's reaction to the movie.
- The Horizon battling the aliens.

**Comments:**

Ent: Horizon is a good episode, worthy of the series. Unfortunately, it's nearly identical to Ent: Fortunate Son. Some of the nuances of the rehash could have been avoided. For one, I would have preferred Travis' father had not died and instead of a sibling conflict we could see a father son conflict. That would have been more interesting in my opinion. Most importantly this episode features yet another stubborn leader who refuses help and yet another alien attack on a cargo ship. This is beginning to strain credibility. Are all cargo ship captains stubborn luddites who are under constant attack by pirates? The episode's basic premise could have been made into something better if the writers had decided to write a bit more original story. Instead, we're shown a pretty blatant rehash that only a year ago was a pretty nicely original idea.



**Star Trek Ent - 2x21 - The Breach**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-4-23

**My  
Rating -  
7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise is asked to evacuate a group of Denobulan geologists from a world that has been taken over by a militant faction.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The Denobulans and the Antareans fought a series of wars, which ended 300 years ago.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Phlox feeding a tribble to one of his pets...
- Phlox finally breaking after his patient's constant insults.
- Trip and Reed encountering the Denobulan scientists.
- Phlox confronting the Antarean, answering his questions, making the case for anti racism.
- Trip: "If you don't start moving in the next five seconds, I'm gonna take my phase pistol and shoot you in the ass!"
- The Denobulans climbing the slope with ease, using some kind of natural sticky hands or some such.

**Comments:**

Dr. Phlox steals the show in this episode. The backstory we get on the Denobulans and the Antareans is fascinating and the moral dilemma Phlox' character faces regarding his patient's racism is captivating. This obviously is not the first episode to tackle racism in Star Trek, but it does it in an interesting way. The war between the two species was long over. Three centuries had passed, but the hate was still prevalent. You shake your head during the scene when Phlox loses his patients with his patient, but I much enjoyed when Phlox revealed to T'Pol that his shame wasn't due to his outburst but due to the racism his people still feel. After Phlox' bad ethics displayed in Ent: Dear Doctor, I was sure Phlox would end up being racist, just like the rest of his people. But I was pleasantly surprised to find out that not only did he not share those beliefs, but he'd worked to spread the message of anti racism to his children. I was also pleased to see Phlox' message got through to his patient by the end. The racism is beginning to die. The secondary (?) plot with Trip, Reed, and Travis was less successful. Once again, Travis contributes the least, being put out of commission early. It's as if the writers just personally hate the guy. There were a few funny moments with the Denobulans, but ultimately, and I think Captain Archer would agree with me, the climb took way too long. Instead of all the climbing, a better episode would have focused more on showing us a little about this alien culture whose planet was the setting. They weren't sufficiently elaborated upon. As a result, a fairly profound episode is reduced to above average. Still a great ep, but not as good as it could have been.



**Star Trek Ent - 2x22 - Cogenitor**  
Originally Aired: 2003-4-30

My  
Rating -  
9

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise encounters a race called the Vissians who feature a third sex of "cogenitors" who are treated as second-class citizens.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- At this time, Earth has only discovered 92 naturally occurring elements.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip asking T'Pol her age again when she admitted that in another 100 years she'd probably still be around.
- Trip discussing the cogenitor with Phlox.
- Phlox: "I imagine the cogenitor provides an enzyme, which facilitates conception." Trip: "What do you mean by provides?" Phlox: "Well, first the female has to..." Trip: "No... no, no. Don't tell me. I don't think I wanna know." Phlox: "Oh well. Hmm. I have pictures!"
- Trip: "They treat her like a pet. Kept in her room, not taught to read or write, no name. Porthos has a name!"
- Reed's cheese scene.
- Trip teaching the cogenitor to read.
- Archer: "I might have expected something like this from a first year recruit, but not you. You did exactly what I'd do? If that's true then I've done a pretty lousy job setting an example around here. You're a senior officer on this ship, you're privy to the moral challenges I've had to face. You know I've wrestled with the fine line between doing what I think is right and interfering with other species. So don't tell me you know what I would have done when I don't even know what I would have done!"
- Archer revealing to Trip that the cogenitor killed itself.

**Comments:**

And Enterprise chucks up another winner. Multigender species is something Star Trek hasn't really covered, so the episode is refreshingly original. This episode was a joy to watch from start to finish. There are many quotable dialogs, more than I've marked. Nearly all the dialog was nicely pointed, showing intelligent writing. There were a few unnecessary details though. Similar to Ent: The Breach's climbing scenes, Archer's piloting extravaganza seemed to go on too long. We probably could have done without Reed's promiscuous behavior too. Finally, Trip seemed way too obsessed with the cogenitor. His constant changing of the subject in conversation got a bit tiresome. But these flaws are extremely minor. Archer's and Reed's more than positive first contact intensifies the magnitude of the effect Trip's actions had on relations. And while I probably wouldn't have been so hard on Trip if I were Archer, I can understand his reaction. Even if I don't agree with it. It's easier to understand Trip's position. The way the cogenitor was being treated most certainly looked like sexism. But then again, as the Vissian Engineer pointed out, and as T'Pol did in Ent: Broken Bow it's easy to incorrectly judge a culture which you don't understand. This makes the viewer come to his own conclusion. Were the Vissians practicing discrimination? Or were the humans making unfounded assumptions? These kinds of moral issues are exactly what make Star Trek so great.



**Star Trek Ent - 2x23 - Regeneration**  
Originally Aired: 2003-5-7

My  
Rating -  
3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An arctic research team discovers debris from an alien vessel, buried in a glacier along with the bodies of two cybernetically enhanced humanoids.*

**Problems:**

- The transport the Borg assimilated is said to have left Earth at warp 3.9, yet reaches Enterprise in an impossibly short time at that speed.



- The Borg adapt to the phase pistols on Enterprise, but on the Borg ship, the phase pistols still worked for a while. Not a very efficient collective.

**Factoids:**

- The wreckage found in Antarctica is left over from Star Trek VIII: First Contact.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Phlox telling Reed about the Bynars.
- Archer telling T'Pol about Zefram Cochrane's story about the Borg.
- Archer decompressing the hatch the assimilated Tarkaleans were in.
- Archer: "Sounds to me like we've only postponed the invasion until... what? The 24th century?"

**Comments:**

This episode at first would seem to heavily aggravate the Borg's apparent inconsistent portrayal on Star Trek. But I'm a little more forgiving. Consider Seven of Nine's past. By the time of TNG, there was a group of people who defied Starfleet by searching for the Borg, who were only rumored to exist at that time. This episode could in fact provide the necessary background information for where Seven of Nine's parents got their wild ideas. There are two questions to answer if we're to buy into this rationalization. Why did Picard and more importantly Data know nothing about them? It's at least possible that even after the events of this episode, Starfleet lacked any interest in these aliens. Cochrane's statements about the Borg were largely considered ridiculous both before and after this episode. It's likely that officially this episode was considered an isolated incident, and that a connection was never drawn by Starfleet. It was up to minority groups like Seven of Nine's parents, to draw these connections. The second question to answer is what happened to the Borg wreckage and the detailed medical scans of the bodies? Given that the Borg never showed up again until the 24th century, neither the the data nor the wreckage was of any use. I wouldn't be surprised if it never got any recognition outside the scientific minority that Seven of Nine's parents belonged to. Yes, this episode is annoying, to put it mildly. And it would have been nice if the writers payed better attention to continuity, by supporting these rationalizations in the episode. But like Ent: Acquisition, it's not a devastating blow to continuity. No, Enterprise does not exist in a new timeline. No, these types of episodes are not impossible to rationalize. Yes, this was a reasonably entertaining episode, but I do hope this trend stops before it really does become a problem.



**Star Trek Ent - 2x24 - First Flight**  
**Originally Aired:** 2003-5-14

**My  
Rating -  
5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While Enterprise is investigating a nebula, Archer hears that A.G. Robinson, his old rival in the early days of the NX test program, has died.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Given Archer's statements in this episode and that Archer met Trip 10 years prior to Ent: Unexpected, we can assume that Robinson broke the warp 2 barrier in 2141, warp 3 was broken some time between 2142 and 2144, and that construction of Enterprise started sometime between 2147 and 2149.
- Trip stands for "triple" because Trip is Charles Tucker III.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- T'Pol imposing herself on Archer's mission into the dark matter nebula. :)
- Archer: "You remember what Buzz Aldrin said when he stepped on the moon?" Ruby: "No." Archer: "Nobody does. Because Armstrong went first."
- The warp 2 test and the destruction of the NX-Apha.
- The flashback to when Archer and Trip first met.
- T'Pol: "I suppose we'll never know who would have won." Wow, was that T'Pol making a joke about all the fights Archer loses?
- The launch of the NX-Beta.

**Comments:**

An unremarkable episode in terms of the sci fi plot, but a good story in terms of the history lesson.

The details we got on the early NX program were fascinating and I most of all enjoyed seeing Archer meet Trip for the first time. The story manages to convince and entertain without resorting to the rather common retconning we've seen lately. I'm only a little annoyed that Robinson had to die meaninglessly before we were told this story. It's also a bit strange that T'Pol endeavored to cheer Archer up in this episode instead of another character.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 2x25 - Bounty**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-5-14

**My Rating**

**- 3**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A Tellarite bounty hunter captures Archer intending to turn him over to the Klingons for a substantial reward.*

#### **Problems:**

- Archer uses a Klingon escape pod in this episode. Yet in Ent: Sleeping Dogs T'Pol said Klingons don't use them.

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Tellarite's appearance.
- Archer won a fistfight! Against a Klingon!
- Enterprise defeating the Klingon ship.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is good and bad at the same time. On one hand, I like the fact that relations with the Klingon Empire have finally soured after Ent: Judgment and this episode. I also like how the Tellarites, a future Federation member, have been introduced and are depicted to be on relatively good terms with Earth. On the other hand, the whole secondary plot concerning T'Pol's unscheduled Pon Farr was just unnecessary and totally obnoxious. I'm really getting tired with 1. the decon chamber being used for sex appeal and 2. the inappropriate use of T'Pol's character. I really hope this stops, along with the annoying retconning.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 2x26 - The Expanse**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-5-21

**My**

**Rating -**

**4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a probe from an unknown alien source unleashes a devastating assault upon Earth, Enterprise is recalled, then sent to search for the perpetrators.*

#### **Problems:**

- The date in the last episode was given to be March 21st and the date given in this episode when they reach Earth is April 24th. The idea that Enterprise could have traveled 150 light years in one month is rather ridiculous. Maybe their exploration was in a spiral pattern?
- How stupid could the Xindi possibly be? Gee, let's test our prototype on Earth directly, so they have a chance to exact a retaliatory mission against us before the final version of the weapon is completed!

#### **Factoids:**

- Photon torpedoes were first used on a starship in this episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The probe cutting a swath through Florida.
- Archer speaking with Future Guy.
- Earth ships coming to Archer's rescue when Duras attacked. Nice to see there are other Earth ships.
- The Vulcan "doctor" questioning Archer.
- Trip and Reed examining the damage first hand.
- Reed: "Photonic torpedoes. Their range is over fifty times greater than our conventional torpedoes. And they have a variable yield. They can knock the comm array off a shuttle pod without scratching the hull, or they can put a three kilometer crater into an asteroid."

- Archer and Trip discussing T'Pol and their mission.
- Duras: "Surrender, or be destroyed!" Archer: "Go to hell!"
- Enterprise destroying Duras' ship.

**Comments:**

Hoo boy. Now here's an episode to get the opinions flaring. The obvious question was as to why the Klingons or the Romulans weren't the ones who attacked Earth. Duras and his crusade against Archer seemed to play little importance in this episode, as if the writers wanted to wrap up that whole Klingon thing so they could focus on this "expanse" storyline. It would seem that the writers were more interested in following in the tradition of Ent: Shockwave and Ent: Broken Bow by making this season finale further complicate the Temporal Cold War. Now Archer is taking orders (in a sense) from Future Guy! It would seem that the writers would much rather take Enterprise in a "bold new direction" than stay true to the prequel they created. Two seasons have gone by and we've seen only one episode dealing with the Romulans and only a smattering of episodes dealing with the Klingons. No war has been declared and it doesn't look like much more time is going to be spent on the Klingons at all, much less the Romulans. This is depressing to say the least. Maybe the Xindi will be interesting and maybe the Temporal Cold War will stop sucking, but I'm getting the feeling that this new arc they're developing is nothing but filler.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x01 - The Xindi**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-9-10

**My Rating**

**- 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Captain Archer and his crew set out to gain information about the mysterious and antagonistic Xindi race.*

**Problems:**

- Trip claims that platinum becomes unstable at 30 degrees Celsius... This isn't true. For that matter, why does the administrator insist on "liquid" platinum? Platinum melts at well over 1700 degrees Celsius. What purpose does constantly keeping it that hot serve?

**Factoids:**

- This episode featured a change to the opening credits. The music has been reworked to be a bit more upbeat.
- The Xindi council is 50 light years from Earth.
- T'Pol has no siblings.
- The outer hull of Enterprise is lined with duranium.
- There are five distinct species of Xindi.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The cargo containers bouncing off the walls.
- T'Pol: "Delicate is not a word I associate with Mr. Tucker."
- Tucker freaking out at the Xindi slave.
- The MACOs rescuing Archer and Trip.

**Comments:**

My primary complaint was addressed here. The Xindi aren't exactly as stupid as I originally thought. It seems the rather ill advised move (sending the prototype to Earth) I commented on in the problems section of the last episode was caused by the remarkable disunity of the Xindi council. The Xindi themselves are sufficiently interesting for a multi episode arc; their council reminded me somewhat of the Jedi council from the Star Wars films. It's remarkable how there can be five distinct species of Xindi, especially when it's a rarity for even two distinct species to be native to a single planet. Unfortunately, the episode itself was similarly flawed to Ent: The Expanse. I liked the Trellium-D mining complex though. The administrator was most amusing. What I disliked was Archer's bad attitude and especially the Vulcan neural pressure scenes. Somehow I doubt either will go away. Hopefully they can be presented with better taste in the future.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x02 - Anomaly**  
Originally Aired: 2003-9-17

My  
Rating -  
6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise starts experiencing effects of the spatial distortions pervading the Delphic Expanse, and falls victim to predatory aliens.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode of Enterprise in which a crewmember dies.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The anomalies in the teaser.
- Archer's coffee cup still just floating there in his ready room.
- The decompression chamber scene.
- The battle with the Osaarian ship.

**Comments:**

Ent: Anomaly brings us some excitement after a dull and cliched season finale and season premiere. While little more than an action episode, this episode establishes a number of interesting facts regarding the current arc. The action is sprinkled generously across the episode, but all of it is well placed. I'm pleased to note that all of the characters got a good showing in this episode, which is the exception rather than the rule. We now know that it is impossible or at least difficult to leave the expanse once you've entered it, creating a situation similar to Voy: The Void. The Osaarian pirates in this episode certainly reinforced that tone. Speaking of the Osaarians, we learn from them that Trellium-D is necessary to protect a ship against the spatial anomalies of the expanse. I wonder when Enterprise will finally procure some.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x03 - Extinction**  
Originally Aired: 2003-9-24

My  
Rating -  
3

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*On a mission to investigate an abandoned Xindi vessel on a jungle planet, Archer, Reed and Hoshi succumb to a virus that mutates them into a primal life form.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- There was another change to the opening credits starting with this episode. The show is no longer called "Enterprise" but has been renamed to "Star Trek Enterprise" instead.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew transforming into the Loque'eque
- Archer dreaming of the Loque'eque city.
- Archer, Hoshi, and T'Pol discovering the destroyed Loque'eque city.
- Archer: "This was created as a final effort to preserve a civilization of people. That species we became, they cease to exist the moment this virus is gone."

**Comments:**

What we have here is the first filler of the new season. Granted Archer justifies this deviation by saying that he's discovered evidence that a Xindi ship visited this planet, which I liked, I personally feel we just didn't need to sit through an hour of the crew acting like alien neanderthals, complete with Alpha Male Archer beating up Reed, especially when it's been done better by episodes like TNG: Identity Crisis. It's remarkable how much Archer's opinions have changed since Ent: Dear Doctor. Phlox refused to cure the Valakians, for "natural selection" reasons and uses the same logic to justify the eradication of the Loque'eque. In this case, the Loque'eque were already extinct long before this episode. This virus that was created is totally unethical and never should have been created. In this respect, I agree with Phlox. Yet Archer does an about face on his morals and orders

it preserved. Moral strike two Archer! I wonder why the writers have a fetish for bad ethics? DS9 did some morally shady stuff, but this is getting downright ridiculous.



### **Star Trek Ent - 3x04 - Rajiin**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-10-1

**My  
Rating -  
4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The NX-01 gets closer to a showdown with the Xindi when Captain Archer takes on an enigmatic passenger: a beautiful slave named Rajiin.*

#### **Problems:**

- Reed refers to the "smaller" Xindi ship, but they were both identical in size.

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer still suffering from his experiences in Ent: Extinction.
- Archer winning a fight!
- Trip and Reed trading Earth spices to the chemist for the Trellium-D formula. I loved his silly little laugh.
- T'Pol, observing the destroyed lab: "Some of our calculations may have been slightly off."
- Rajiin's interesting athletics in the engine room.
- The Xindi boarding Enterprise.

#### **Comments:**

Ent: Rajiin was a better episode than I thought it would be. But this is largely due to the parts of the episode that didn't deal with Rajiin. She seemed largely unnecessary to me. If the Xindi needed scans of humans, why didn't the reptilians and the insectoids just abduct one, then scan it all they wanted? They certainly seemed more than capable. Some things I liked were the Xindi and their unique weapons when they boarded Enterprise. I also enjoyed the scene when T'Pol and Trip tried to synthesize Trellium-D. Finally, the chemist on the trading colony was just great. These are the details which make a Trek episode great. They do a lot to enhance this rather ill conceived episode.



### **Star Trek Ent - 3x05 - Impulse**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-10-8

**My  
Rating -  
2**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When Enterprise responds to a distress call from a Vulcan ship stranded in the Delphic Expanse, Archer and his boarding team are attacked by insane zombie-like Vulcans.*

#### **Problems:**

- Why did the asteroid have Earth like gravity?

#### **Factoids:**

- Maybe obvious, but this was a Halloween episode.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The sight of the chaotic asteroid field.
- The transporter malfunction.
- T'Pol explaining the history of and reason for the Vulcan emotion suppression to Corporal Hawkins.
- Archer: "I can't try to save humanity without holding on to what makes me human."
- Trip: "Part of the fun of a mystery is trying to solve it before it ends. Using logic. You of all people should appreciate that." T'Pol: "Then use logic more quietly."

#### **Comments:**

I found this episode largely appalling. Most importantly, it was violent to an extreme. The brave crew shooting Vulcan zombies left and right sounds more like something out of a bad fanfic than a real Star Trek episode. Secondly, all that incessant flashing is enough to induce an epileptic seizure. Finally, T'Pol's character is abused once again. Jolene Blalock sports an amazing performance, making the blatant abuse of her character not so bad, but it's still annoying. Finally,

far too much time was spent on that dreadful A plot concerning the crew stuck trying to escape Vulcan zombies; that extension at the end was just awful, and not nearly enough time was spent on studying the Trellium-D. Fortunately, the time mismanagement doesn't disadvantage the B plot too much. There's a decent amount of continuity here, we learn that Trellium-D poisons the Vulcan mind and that it's likely that the reason the crew of the Vankara from Ent: The Expanse went crazy was due to the Trellium-D. I was also liked Archer's declaration that he won't use the Trellium-D if it hurts T'Pol. These two details are what scores the episode two points, nothing more.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x06 - Exile**  
**Originally Aired:** 2003-10-15

**My Rating**  
**- 4**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A powerful telepath makes contact with Hoshi and offers to help Enterprise find the Xindi ... for a price.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Among the images Hoshi saw using Tarquin's telepathy device were stock footage of the Klingon homeworld (x2), the image of a moon Reed used for target practice (x4), the image of Jupiter used in Ent: First Flight, an image of the aliens from Ent: Silent Enemy (x2), an image of the alien ship from Ent: The Crossing, the Klingon ship from Ent: Sleeping Dogs, a targ from Ent: Sleeping Dogs, the sphere from Ent: Anomaly, an image of the storm that hit Enterprise in Ent: The Catwalk, an image from the planet Trip was on in Ent: Dawn, an image of an alien ship from Ent: Civilization, an image of the battle between the two aliens from Ent: Fight or Flight (x2), pictures of some Xindi, a number of other images I couldn't identify, and some which were repeated.
- Shuttlepod one is now insulated with Trellium-D

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "Did you bring a phase pistol?" Hoshi: "I'll keep it under my pillow."
- Tarquin describing the circumstances of his exile.
- Archer's water polo ball getting stuck to the wall due to an anomaly.
- Anomalies occurring throughout the ship.
- Hoshi using Tarquin's telepathy device. Holy stock footage Batman!
- Tarquin: "No one will ever understand you the way I can."
- Archer and Trip almost losing shuttlepod one. Hilarious.
- T'Pol discovering that there are dozens of spheres.

**Comments:**

Ah, my thoughts exactly. I was wondering if they'd ever use the Trellium they found on a shuttlepod and just order T'Pol to keep away. ;) Speaking of that shuttle, the scene when Archer and Trip almost lost it was just too cute. One of the more memorable things I've seen on Star Trek lately. Unfortunately, we have another case where the A plot isn't very interesting. Linda Park did a wonderful job playing Hoshi in this episode, just like Jolene Blalock did a great job playing her dreadful role in Ent: Impulse just one episode ago. But good acting doesn't save poor writing. Tarquin was an interesting alien, but his ulterior motive and his attempt to force Hoshi to stay with him was just petty. The whole plot just reeked of "Beauty and the Beast" in space too. We get a good deal of progress though, such as more information on the spheres, and the location of a Xindi colony. Hopefully the future of this arc holds less filler and more getting to the point.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x07 - The Shipment**  
**Originally Aired:** 2003-10-29

**My Rating**  
**- 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer, Reed and Major Hayes infiltrate a Xindi-Sloth industrial colony to learn more about the weapon of mass destruction that will be used against Earth.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- There used to be six Xindi species. The ones that went extinct were called the Aviens. They never fled when the Xindi homeworld was destroyed. The Xindi reptilians and insectoids were the ones that destroyed the planet.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer, Reed, and Hayes eavesdropping on the Xindi in their own lab.
- Archer, Reed, and Hayes forcing their way into Gralik's home.
- Archer interrogating Gralik.
- Trip and Phlox examining the Xindi weapon.
- Gralik and Archer finding some common ground and Gralik telling Archer a bit about the history of the Xindi and their conflicts.
- Gralik: "I'm proud of my craft, captain. I've practiced it for many years. I won't let my work be corrupted in this way. Seven million people. If I'd chosen my clients more carefully that tragedy might not have happened. I don't intend to let it happen again."
- Trip frantically running to the transporter to beam the weapon off the ship.
- Gralik freaking out at the Xindi reptilian.

**Comments:**

This episode was progress of exactly the type that I was hoping for. Obviously with the level of disunity among the Xindi, there are going to be those that either don't agree with a preemptive strike against an unknown species based on questionable intelligence, or at least don't agree with how its being handled. In this episode, Archer meets a Xindi who doesn't want to see his work used to murder innocent people. I complained about Archer's bad attitude before. In this episode, it's Reed and Major Hayes that annoy me. They're quick to offer their opinions, claiming that blowing up the Xindi colony is what Archer must do. Instead, Archer keeps a cool head and makes a Xindi friend. After all, Archer's absolutely right their mission is to stop the Xindi weapon from destroying Earth and/or make peace with the Xindi. Not to start a war.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x08 - Twilight**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-11-5

**My  
Rating -  
9**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A spatial distortion leaves Archer unable to form any new long-term memories. Years in the future, he wakes up one morning and is stunned to learn the outcome of the human-Xindi conflict.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The human refugees settled on Ceti Alpha V, which is the same planet Kirk dumped Khan on in TOS: Space Seed. Sure would've sucked for them in a hundred years or so, if they were still around, when Ceti Alpha VI exploded!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser, depicting the sight of Earth's destruction... wow.
- Archer: "I suppose there's not much point in thanking me. A few hours from now I won't remember."
- The Xindi attacking Enterprise. I loved the scene when Archer fought the reptilian in his quarters, stabbing him with the statue of Zefram Cochrane.
- T'Pol's collision course maneuver.
- Trip laying into T'Pol for her collision course maneuver.
- Trip and Reed interrogating the Yridian. Nice connection with TNG and DS9.
- The space battle with the Xindi.
- The bridge of Enterprise being destroyed.
- Phlox' and T'Pol's death.
- The destruction of Enterprise.
- Phlox: "How do you feel?" Archer: "Like a shuttlepod landed on my head."

**Comments:**

This episode is kind of a hybrid of TNG: All Good Things, DS9: The Visitor, and Voy: Before and After. There's a little Voy: Year of Hell in there too, regarding Archer's sacrifice. Yes, the episode is a conceptual rehash, but easily forgiven. I'd say episodes like this are less a rehash and more a tradition. Besides, the four episodes I previously mentioned were all spectacular, two of them even

receiving a rating of ten. Well, one thing's for sure. T'Pol and Trip sure made a bad captains! T'Pol permanently wrecks a warp nacelle and Trip gets the ship destroyed! Gold star! ;) We've seen Earth in jeopardy many times, even destroyed offscreen. But we've never seen Earth downright explode in an episode before. An interesting stunt to pull. Additionally, I was fascinated to see the bridge of Enterprise shot off during this episode, much the same way the viewscreen of the Enterprise E was blown out and the bridge was exposed to space in Star Trek X: Nemesis. Indeed, this episode features a myriad of wonderful visual effects. Aside from that, an obvious discussion point about this episode concerns the Archer / T'Pol relationship. We know, painfully, from Ent: A Night in Sickbay how much Archer is attracted to her, but this episode presents the information much more tastefully. Their relationship isn't elaborated a great deal though. It's hard to get someone to fall in love with you if they can't form any new long term memories. My one complaint about this episode is that it doesn't end the way DS9: The Visitor does in the sense that Archer did not retain a memory of the events. If he had, this episode could have easily been worth ten points.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x09 - North Star**  
Originally Aired: 2003-11-12

My  
Rating -  
5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When a settlement of humans living a 19th-century Western lifestyle is discovered on a Delphic Expanse planet, Archer and crew set out to learn how they got there.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Archer was born in upstate New York and spent most of his life in San Francisco.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Trip attempting to ride a horse
- Archer using the transporter in front of all the bewildered townspeople.
- Archer regarding the Skagarans: "They kidnapped the wrong people."
- Archer landing a shuttle in front of the bewildered townspeople.
- The gunfight, and Archer getting shot.
- Reed's "shoot the hostage" trick! Genius!
- Archer won another fight, even after being shot!

**Comments:**

Just when you think that this episode is gonna make some real progress, Bennings starts shooting people randomly! Then again, it's not much of a Western cameo without a gunfight, is it? ;) The action wasn't excessive, only the timing was a bit strange. Then again, the episode was going too well to have the timing get much better. What I liked the most about this episode is the parallel to Voy: The 37s. The society Voyager discovered was a kind of new Earth founded on the other side of the galaxy. Like the people of this episode, the 37s overthrew their oppressors and created an independent society. The 37s though continued to evolve and didn't suffer from the fear mongering that the people of this episode succumbed too. They weren't as advanced as the Federation, but they were pretty advanced. In contrast, this society never grew out of the old west and had to be helped by the crew of Enterprise and eventually others from Earth. My only complaint about this episode is the timing. It has absolutely nothing to do with the Xindi. Why was it done? Between this episode and the last one, we've had two in a row that are technically filler, and we've not even seen very much advancement in the Xindi arc! Time shouldn't be wasted in such fashion. If this episode had been done in season 1 or 2, and it showed us other Earth ships later arriving at this planet helping / relocating these people, it would have been worth more points.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x10 - Similitude**  
Originally Aired: 2003-11-19

My  
Rating -  
10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When Trip suffers a catastrophic injury, his only hope for survival is a transplant from a "mimetic simbiot" which Phlox grows from one of his exotic creatures.*

**Problems:**

None



**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Enterprise Award".

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Phlox growing a Trip clone.
- Sim asking hard questions.
- Sim playing with Archer's model starship, breaking a nacelle just as Archer did in Ent: Broken Bow.
- Sim using the phase cannons to fire at Enterprise's hull so as to reveal the shuttle bay doors.
- Phlox revealing that Sim won't survive the transplant after all.
- Archer declaring that he'll kill Sim to save Trip.
- Sim, after T'Pol kissed him: "I couldn't have asked for a better going away present."
- Sim voluntarily giving his life to save Trip.

**Comments:**

I usually hate episodes that reveal the ending in the teaser, such as Ent: Impulse, but this one uses that trick more skillfully. It wasn't Trip in the teaser, it was Sim. This is the first episode in a long while to really touch me. Far moreso than Ent: Twilight did. There are similarities to Voy: Tuvix in the plot, in which another new crewmember was "created" and had to be sacrificed to save others likewise. The difference here is that there was every intention to let Sim live out his normal lifespan in this episode. It was only discovered later that he would have to be sacrificed, whereas with Tuvix, we knew it would be necessary all along. One of the big reasons this episode worked better than Voy: Tuvix was the way in which the sacrifice was handled. Sim went through phases. First he did the Tuvix thing accusing Archer of being a murderer for not letting Phlox try to extend his life, then he tried to escape, then he finally though painfully saw Archer's point. Sim sacrificed himself more honorably than a thousand Klingons. Another thing I liked was that the story didn't trivialize itself by saying "hey, whatever, he was only gonna live a week anyway." I got the impression that Sim was on to something regarding the proposal to extend his life. If Phlox was right at the beginning, and Sim wouldn't have had to have been sacrificed to save Trip, I'm sure Archer and Phlox would have tried Sim's idea. Then they'd have two Trips! Maybe they should have renamed Sim to Quad? ;) In the end, Ent: Similitude is a profound look at the ethics of cloning as a means to save lives.

**Star Trek Ent - 3x11 - Carpenter Street**

**Originally Aired:** 2003-11-26

**My Rating -**  
**5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and T'Pol travel back in time to 2004 Detroit to stop a Xindi plot.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Leland Orser, who played Loomis in this episode, also played Gai in DS9: Sanctuary, Colonel Lovok in DS9: The Die Is Cast, and Dejaren in Voy: Revulsion.
- According to Archer, in 2061 something important (exactly what he doesn't say) will happen regarding the Earth oil crisis.
- Archer has B-negative blood.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Loomis going around abducting people.
- Daniels' appearance.
- Archer and T'Pol walking through a door, suddenly appearing in Detroit. I like how even after that, T'Pol still didn't believe in time travel!
- T'Pol: "Have you ever operated a vehicle from this period?" Archer: "I can pilot a starship."
- Archer hacking an ATM.
- T'Pol: "Were they aware at this time that Earth's supply of fossil fuel was nearing depletion?" Archer: "They had been for 30 years, but it wasn't until 2061 that they finally--"
- Loomis suspecting that the Xindi are Taliban terrorists... hah.
- T'Pol Vulcan Neck Pinching Loomis.
- Archer having T'Pol untie Loomis so he could hit him because Archer didn't feel comfortable

hitting a man who was tied up. ;)

- T'Pol: "In one individual we have managed to find the worst qualities of this era. Greed, violence, moral corruption."
- The drive through scene. I love how they kept asking to super size everything. ;)
- Loomis: "Nice ray gun. Am I supposed believe that thing's for real?" T'Pol shoots the wall with it. Loomis suddenly got cooperative. :)
- T'Pol to Loomis: "You've been abducting people for money, and you're questioning our honesty?"
- T'Pol quicking incapacitating Loomis.
- Archer and T'Pol returning to Enterprise.
- Loomis getting arrested and the cops not buying his stories.

#### Comments:

Although the episode was poorly recieved by most fans, I thought Ent: Carpenter Street was a clever, entertaining episode. There are several nice details going for it. The Xindi bio weapon that was being discussed in Ent: Rajiin is in its final stages in this episode, but the Xindi need samples of the 8 human blood types. This is where Loomis comes in. I found his involvement in the story to be the best part. His nonchalant attitude toward kidnapping and his blatant display of greed was quite realistic; I can see people actually doing this for modern day terrorists if sufficiently motivated as Loomis was. There's a great deal of humor sprinkled about the episode. The fast food scene was probably the most amusing. Finally, the episode featured some interesting camera work. There wasn't anything special in this episode setting too much apart from previous "time travel back to present day" episodes, but it was at least a decent offering.



#### Star Trek Ent - 3x12 - Chosen Realm

Originally Aired: 2004-1-14

My Rating

- 5

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Religious zealots hijack Enterprise to use it as a weapon against the enemies of their faith.*

#### Problems:

None

#### Factoids:

- D'Jamat erased 19.3 XB of data from the Enterprise computer... exabytes?

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- D'Jamat and T'Pol having a science vs. religion debate.
- The human bomb demonstration.
- Archer faking out D'Jamat with the transporter.
- Archer: "These people you're fighting, what makes them heretics?" Yarrick: "We believe the Makers created the Chosen Realm in nine days. They believe it took ten." Archer: "For that you've been at war for over a century?"
- Reed throwing his gun at one of the aliens when it ran out of power.
- Archer: "Go ahead, try to blow yourself up. I'll wait."
- Archer showing D'Jamat the aftermath of his war.

#### Comments:

This episode is a rehash of TOS: Let That Be Your Last Battlefield. While a decent episode to do over again, I should point out that this is yet another filler episode with nothing to do with the Xindi. In fact, this episode erases progress (literally) made in Ent: Anomaly by having D'Jamat delete data regarding the spheres from Enterprise's computer. This annoys me greatly. Some other complaints, this episodes focuses entirely on Archer. Phlox and Reed get a good showing, but T'Pol, Trip, Hoshi, and Travis all get severely neglected. Fortunately, the episode manages to do fairly well for itself. The science vs. religion controversy is made very clear at the beginning of the episode and then the episode spends most of its time pointing out the hypocrisy and stupidity of religion as it proceeded further. If there was still any doubt that Star Trek was anti religion, that doubt is gone now. The demonstration culminates nicely at the end when Archer shows D'Jamat the result of his religious zealotry. I wonder if even that is enough to make him change. Furthermore, I wonder if Archer just left the Triannons on their planet after the episode ended.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x13 - Proving Ground**  
Originally Aired: 2004-1-21

My  
Rating -  
7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An Andorian ship led by Commander Shran arrives in the Delphic Expanse to help Enterprise hone in on the Xindi superweapon.*

**Problems:**

- So it seems the Andorians are capable of leaving the expanse. And it also seems Enterprise is able to get messages back to Starfleet. Maybe the Osaarians just didn't know how to get past the barrier while Starfleet and Andoria does?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser, showing us Shran and the inside of his ship!
- Shran's antennae appearing over Archer's head... hah!
- The Xindi testing their weapon.
- Shran: "We are looking for a rare element... Archerite!"
- Shran: "Take us out of the system. But not too quickly. The Andorian mining consortium runs from no one!"
- Talas and Reed starting to get along.
- Archer crediting Gralik (Ent: The Shipment) for the Xindi prototype weapon's spectacular failure.
- The Kumari stealing the weapon.
- Shran betraying Archer.
- Archer threatening to use the Xindi activation codes to blow up the Xindi prototype while it's still aboard Shran's ship.

**Comments:**

Well, my complaint about wasting time that could be used on the Xindi arc with filler has finally been put to rest here. We get to see a new prototype for the planet killer weapon in action, we get to see an Andorian ship strut its stuff, and we get to see humans and Andorians working together, even if there is an ulterior motive for the Andorians. The ulterior motive was actually quite cool. The Andorians were totally in character the whole time and the cameo was more than welcome; this episode was just as good as the last Andorian showing, Ent: Cease Fire. My only complaint was that Shran was too loyal to the corrupt Imperial Guard. I would have liked to have seen a permanent human-Andorian alliance after this episode. Oh well. Hopefully they'll play a role again. I want to see more of Shran! What an awesome character.



**Star Trek Ent - 3x14 - Stratagem**  
Originally Aired: 2004-2-4

My  
Rating -  
6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer finds himself face-to-face with Degra, the designer of the Xindi superweapon, and tries to trick him into revealing its location.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This is the first episode in which we see the often mentioned Regulan Bloodworms.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser. One of those "what the hell?" moments. :)
- The revelation that the whole devastated future story was just a ruse to gain intelligence from Degra... wow!
- Archer referring to the Xindi insectoids as "overgrown grasshoppers."
- Archer faking out Degra one last time.

**Comments:**

Like Ent: Anomaly, Ent: Stratagem provides sufficient entertainment and nicely advances the Xindi arc. Once again the crew is shown to be clever, using well their limited resources and taking

advantage of the circumstances. I'm quite fond of the continuity with the previous episode, Ent: Proving Ground regarding Degra's ship being damaged by the malfunctioning prototype and the fake shuttle rouse was absolutely incredible; and an ingenious way to rehash the "lets fake out some aliens using the holodeck" idea without actually introducing a holodeck. Indeed, the whole plot was a wonderful way to gain intelligence information from Degra. I was surprised by the originality and I was pleased that the episode didn't turn into another Ent: Twilight, even if it seemed to have shades of Voy: Counterpoint. In short, Ent: Stratagem is another above average episode and a nice contributor to the current arc.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 3x15 - Harbinger**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-2-11

**My Rating**

**- 4**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*As Archer tries to unravel the mystery of a rescued alien, long-simmering feelings explode among his senior officers.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that Vulcan females can have sex whenever they want, not just during their Pon Farr.
- This episode was set one day after Christmas! I guess it's no longer celebrated in the 22nd century...

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Anomalies floating around the bridge.
- Trip and Reed getting hostile over Reed's conflict with Major Hayes and the Vulcan neural pressure thing.
- T'Pol and Trip discussing Sim declaring his love for T'Pol.
- Trip: "I can't believe this... I'm jealous of myself?"
- T'Pol offering herself to Trip.
- Reed and Hayes sparring.
- Reed and Hayes disabling the alien.
- T'Pol writing off her sexual encounter with T'Pol as an experiment in human sexuality.
- Archer laying into Reed and Hayes for their fighting.

#### **Comments:**

This has got to be the most juvenile episode of Star Trek I've ever seen, but it was reasonably entertaining. I know some fans complained that Ent: Harbinger was needlessly childish, that Trip and T'Pol's long awaited sexual encounter was handled poorly, that Reed and Hayes' showdown was immature, and that the alien plot in this episode was inadequate at best. All of these things I agree with, to a point. First there's Trip and T'Pol. I think their relationship was handled well for the most part. There was some immaturity to it, but it was mostly Trip in my opinion. T'Pol was just dropping herself to his level, in their little verbal pissing contest. After all, she has to endeavor to become more human in order to have a human sexual encounter. Then there's Reed and Hayes. This was much more easy to swallow. Their poor relations was hinted on as early as Ent: The Xindi but was never followed up on. I'm glad it resurfaced here. I've been waiting for this kind of conflict for a while. I'm glad they had a chance to fight and a chance to realize how stupid it is to compete with each other. Finally, there's the alien plot. I think it's obvious that their involvement in the arc will be elaborated further later, so I don't want to discuss the fact that we learned next to nothing about them. In short, this episode was a decent contributor to the current arc. Yes, it was juvenile, but everyone is a little immature now and then, even the crew of a starship. I'm much more forgiving of this episode than others may be; hell I genuinely enjoyed it. So there.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 3x16 - Doctor's Orders**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-2-18

**My**

**Rating -**

**1**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The fate of Enterprise is in Dr. Phlox's hands as the rest of the crew must be induced into a coma in order to survive a trans-dimensional disturbance.*

**Problems:**

None that aren't hallucinations.

**Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that there are 7 decks on Enterprise.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Phlox seeing a Xindi insectoid.
- Phlox: "I'm a physician, not an engineer!" Count 37 for "I'm a doctor, not a (blah)" style lines, which McCoy was famous for.
- Phlox realizing that his T'Pol was an hallucination.

**Comments:**

This episode is blatant rehash of *Voy: One*, and a combination of the bad elements of other episodes. First of all, Phlox' the hallucinations were just as boring as Hoshi's dream in *Ent: Vanishing Point*. It was all too obvious that he wasn't himself and that nothing bad actually was happening to the ship. The rest of the episode is comprised of elements from *Ent: Dear Doctor* and *Ent: A Night in Sickbay*. Suffice it to say, bad combinations. I was glad that this episode contributed to the "I'm a doctor, not a..." running joke, and John Billingsley is a remarkable actor. But the writing for this particular bottle show as unbelievably boring, perhaps moreso than any other Enterprise episode.

**Star Trek Ent - 3x17 - Hatchery**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-2-25

**My Rating**

**- 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer goes to extreme lengths to save an abandoned nest of Xindi-Insectoid eggs ready to hatch.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Archer's great grandfather fought in the Eugenics wars.
- Xindi insectoids are genderless and they reproduce asexually. Their usual life span is 12 years.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The crew exploring the insectoid ship.
- Reed and Hayes hauling the insectoid shuttle back to Enterprise.
- Trip and Travis trying to figure out the insectoid shuttle.
- T'Pol disobeying Archer's orders.
- Enterprise destroying the Xindi insectoid ship.
- Archer relieving Reed.
- The mutiny.
- Archer letting baby insectoids crawl around on him.
- Trip shooting Archer.

**Comments:**

This episode is a missed opportunity to show something really profound. Instead of having Archer take a general interest in the welfare of these infant insectoids, a mind control story is fed to us instead, as if caring for these infant Xindi is unquestionably stupid. I found that notion offensive, and slightly disturbing. My only comfort is that Trip begins to see Archer's point even if he doesn't agree with it. He only starts to get a little nervous when Archer starts doing truly irrational things. The mutiny was well presented, but again, it would have carried more weight if Archer wasn't under the weather. Instead, the personal conflicts that could have arose were extinguished before they began. Even Reed and Hayes began to settle their differences in this episode. I guess the writers just didn't want to repeat *Ent: Harbinger*. Maybe they think keeping the crew unified in their struggle against the Xindi makes for better episodes or something... I don't agree. The episode was otherwise successful though. Enterprise stole an insectoid shuttle! And the space battle was quite something, even if short. Not bad.



### **Star Trek Ent - 3x18 - Azati Prime**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-3-3

**My Rating**

**- 8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer sets out on a suicide mission to destroy the Xindi superweapon as Enterprise faces a brutal attack.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode establishes that the Klingons will one day join the Federation.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Travis and Trip grazing the Enterprise hull with the insectoid shuttle.
- Archer destroying the remote Xindi lunar outpost.
- The sight of the underwater complex and the weapon.
- Daniels bringing Archer to Enterprise-J.
- Archer's interrogation.
- Dolim: "Is this a preemptive strike?" Archer: "I thought that was your specialty." Dolim: "You don't want to know my specialty." Archer: "Let me guess, stinking up the room?"
- Archer telling Dolim about the Earth dinosaurs and turtle soup.
- Archer meeting with Degra.
- The Xindi ships devastating Enterprise.

#### **Comments:**

A real thriller, but brings up some important questions. We learn that the sphere builders are transdimensional aliens who are terraforming the expanse to suit their needs. But if they can go back 1000 years and build the spheres, why can't they go back 1000 years and destroy Earth? Did they simply communicate with a species 1000 years ago and instruct them to build the spheres like they're instructing the Xindi to destroy Earth? If so, why didn't they instruct that species 1000 years ago to destroy Earth while it was still totally helpless? Furthermore, what's going on with T'Pol? Her blatant displays of emotion over the last several episodes have been not very Vulcan. One wonders if this is leading up to something or if the writers are just abusing her character again. Other than this, Azati Prime is a satisfactory climax for the Xindi arc. I'm a little annoyed that we get another overdose of time travel, but it doesn't really spoil the fun of Archer's capture and the Xindi nearly destroying Enterprise. Lots of eye candy, lots of fun to watch.



### **Star Trek Ent - 3x19 - Damage**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-4-21

**My Rating**

**- 6**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While dissension among Xindi ranks festers, Enterprise tries to recover from a devastating attack.*

#### **Problems:**

- T'Pol says they need warp 3 to reach a system 4 light years away in 3 days, but they actually need quite a bit more speed than that to bridge 4 light years in 3 days.
- This episode gets wrong the definition of a warp coil. The proper term would have been something like a dilithium matrix.

#### **Factoids:**

- Casey Biggs, who plays the Illyrian captain in this episode, also played Damar on DS9.
- Phlox has been a doctor for 40 years. He believes that he has acted unethically twice.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The attack suddenly stopping.
- T'Pol and Reed surveying the damage.
- Archer aboard an aquatic ship.
- Hoshi analyzing the aquatic language.
- T'Pol using the Trellium-D like a narcotic.
- T'Pol arguing with Archer.
- T'Pol revealing her Trellium-D to Phlox.

- Archer and crew boarding the Illyrian ship.

**Comments:**

This episode is a fair sequel to Ent: Azati Prime, but technical and logical problems spoil some of the fun. The sudden stop of the attack on Enterprise and the return of Archer to the ship by the Xindi struck me as far too convenient. Explanations for these unlikely events are satisfactory at best. Conversely, the revelation that T'Pol's been trying to develop a tolerance for Trellium-D so that the crew can line the hull with it as an explanation for her emotional behavior is very cool. I'm glad the writers weren't just making her inexplicably emotional. I also enjoyed the "dark Trek" DS9 style attack Archer ordered on the Illyrian ship. Complete with a DS9 guest star! ;) So while Ent: Damage fails to capture the spirit and adventure of Ent: Azati Prime and leaves far too many loose ends, it works well on its own. Hopefully the Xindi arc will stop neglecting itself. A final note, I was impressed by the level of damage and the repair efforts. It all looked very realistic and was visually impressive.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 3x20 - The Forgotten**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-4-28

**My  
Rating -  
6**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Two high-ranking Xindi offer to stop the launch of their superweapon if Archer can prove they've been manipulated. Meanwhile, the crew mourns their lost mates.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The engineer Trip complains to in this episode about microfractures was played by Seth MacFarlane, the creator of Family Guy.
- Trip claims that it's take at least a thousand starships like Enterprise could blow up an entire planet. This may be a reference to Star Wars Episode IV, in which is a similar line was used to compare the capabilities of the Death Star.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer meeting with Degra and Jannar.
- Trip laying into Degra.
- Trip and Reed repairing the plasma fire.
- Degra destroying the reptilian ship.

**Comments:**

Another slightly above average episode. Less exciting than Ent: Damage, but a little better thought out. The meeting between Archer and the Xindi was well handled, and used well the continuity of the previous episodes. But this is Trip's show. All of his scenes, everything from his difficulty writing the letter, to his confession to T'Pol, to his mouthing off at Degra was great. Some of the finest acting I've seen for his character in quite some time. The plasma fire was also a nicely interesting diversion that couldn't have been done before the ship was damaged so, finally I really like how the ship seems to remain in perma-damaged mode. I'm glad we get to see the realistic effects of such a brutal attack. A closing remark, Degra says that a hostile species preys on ships attempting to use the shortcut he gave Archer to reach the Xindi council chamber... gee... isn't that some rather obvious foreshadowing?



---

**Star Trek Ent - 3x21 - E2**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-5-5

**My  
Rating - 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*An attempt to use a Xindi subspace corridor leads the Enterprise crew to a bizarre encounter with their own descendants.*

**Problems:**

- It seems unlikely that the transporter could be used to remove working components from a starship. I imagine Archer only risked it because he knows what moving parts can be removed on the fly without destroying his ship? Still, a big risk.

**Factoids:**

- Ent: E<sup>2</sup> is the shortest name for an episode in Star Trek history, beating Voy: Q2 by half a character. ;)
- The NX-02 is called Columbia. A nice homage to the lost space shuttle Columbia.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Enterprise meeting Enterprise!
- Archer visiting the other Enterprise and meeting aged T'Pol.
- Reed, Hoshi, and Travis discussing who they married on the other Enterprise.
- Trip and T'Pol arguing about the complications to their relationship that Lorian presented.
- Enterprise battling Enterprise.
- Archer using the transporter as a weapon.
- Archer: "This is captain Archer. Looks like we've got some things thagt belong to each other. Why don't we call a truce and return our respective property?"
- T'Pol meeting T'Pol.
- Enterprise and Enterprise fighting the Corvallens side by side.
- Archer and T'Pol discussing whether or not the other Enterprise never existed.

**Comments:**

Well, the episode is more filler. But it's up there on the quality level of other Xindi filler such as Ent: Twilight and Ent: Similitude. There's some plot logic in this episode that doesn't make any sense, such as how the future Enterprise could have possibly fouled up their attack on the Xindi probe, or why they made the remarkably stupid decision to not interfere with Earth's timeline. But then again, if they'd done either of those things, it would have brought a most anticlimactic end to the Xindi arc. In short, this episode shouldn't have been done in the manner that it was, because it had reset button written all over it. Ent: Twilight, on the other hand, was a marvelous way to execute such a reset button style episode. This episode tried too hard to be like Ent: Similitude, and failed. That said, if you forgive the problems with plot logic, the episode is exciting and well played. It offers insight into Trip and T'Pol's relationship and as all reset bottom episodes do, offers us a fascinating what-if style episode. There are shades of DS9: Children of Time in this episode, but I like how the ending was open ended. It's fairly certain that the other Enterprise was destroyed, but was it due to their never existing or that they were destroyed? Who knows.

**Star Trek Ent - 3x22 - The Council**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-5-12

**My Rating**

**- 8**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and Hoshi stand before the Xindi Council as T'Pol and Reed lead a team into the heart of a Sphere.*

**Problems:**

- So if the Xindi have had transporter technology all this time, why didn't they beam Rajiin off Enterprise when they retrieved her?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Degra profiling the members of the Xindi council.
- Archer, Degra, and Hoshi appearing at the Xindi council.
- The Xindi insectoid throwing Archer on the table.
- Degra making an appeal to Trip, trying to get him to lose his grudge.
- Archer presenting a holographic representation of a sphere builder.
- Trip and Degra finally making up.
- Dolim murdering Degra.
- Trip talking to Phlox about his weight loss.
- T'Pol: "The needs of the many outweigh the needs of the few."
- The battle at the end.
- Hoshi being abducted.

**Comments:**

This episode was extraordinarily exciting. I complained a number of times about the Xindi arc not advancing sufficiently... well here it gets a kick in the pants! I was sorry to see Degra go, as he



was a character I was really beginning to enjoy. The killing of the MACO redshirt was a bit obvious from the beginning as well. Reminds me of the old Family Guy episode when they reenacted Star Trek. Kirk: "The landing party will consist of myself, Mr. Spock, Dr. McCoy, and Ensign Ricky." Ricky then says, "aw crap" foreseeing his fate. In this episode, the landing party on the sphere consisted of T'Pol, Reed, Travis, and minor character Corporal Hawkins. How stereotypical! The reptilians and insectoids betraying the council didn't surprise me in the least; it even kind of annoys me. I would have rather have seen the insectoids as and reptilians as the good guys and the arboreals and primates as the bad guys, but the arc is as I've said stereotypical, portraying the reptilians and insectoids as less intelligent, emotional, and confrontational to an extreme which is obviously supposed to be the norm for their species. I think it's racist and unnecessary. Both entire species were totally two dimensional. Only the single reptilian lieutenant even questioned the motives of the sphere builders. One wonders how the reptilians and insectoids didn't end up like the aviens with such arrogance, bigotry, and zealotry in their ranks. It certainly explains the war and why they destroyed their own homeworld.



---

### **Star Trek Ent - 3x23 - Countdown**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-5-19

**My Rating**

**- 9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*With help from Xindi allies, the Enterprise crew attempts to stop the arming of the Weapon aimed toward Earth.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Dolim explaining to Hoshi why he needs her.
- Dolim injecting Hoshi with neural parasites.
- Archer meeting with the aquatics.
- Hoshi trying to kill herself rather than help the reptilians.
- Trip: "Can you imagine the look on Soval's face when he sees her in a Starfleet uniform?" Heh... I can. Remember Ent: Twilight?
- The battle at the weapon.
- The destruction of the aquatic vessel.
- Hayes: "I could use a change of scenery!"
- Hayes taking injury during transport!
- Hayes' death.
- The reptilians betraying the insectoids.

#### **Comments:**

Ent: Countdown is an amazing action thriller, a wonderful climax to the Xindi arc. Yet another great character dies... Hayes. And we're left with yet another cliffhanger. But overall, I didn't really care because the episode was just so much of a fun ride. I complained in my last review about the reptilians and insectoids being shown as too stereotypically evil with the single exception of the one reptilian officer who questioned the sphere builders. I was pleased to see that the insectoids were beginning to question the sphere builders as well at the end of this episode. This means that only Dolim is a ridiculous, overzealous, arrogant moron and not the entire reptilian and insectoid Xindi species. The Xindi arc comes to a head here, of course. The space battle shown here is even more spectacular than any of the previous ones. We don't know the aquatics very well, but the destruction of their ship was downright sad. As much a loss as Hayes and Degra were. There were two scenes in particular where (good guy) Xindi ships were destroyed that were unbelievably visually impressive. And of course the way that Hayes died is an interesting point of discussion as well. It's always nice to see that 22nd century technology isn't infallible. I was annoyed that the transporter was sufficient to beam in four people at once, but the episode kind of redeemed itself when Hayes was able to be shot during transport. I'm not sure how all the mechanics of that work out, but I'm sufficiently convinced it's at least possible, even if the same thing happened to Archer (among other people) earlier in the series and he wasn't hurt. A final remark, Linda Park did an excellent job playing Hoshi in this episode and I thought it was an excellent use of her character, for once.

---



**Star Trek Ent - 3x24 - Zero Hour**  
Originally Aired: 2004-5-26

**My Rating**  
- 6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer puts his life on the line in a risky gambit to intercept the Xindi superweapon and disarm it from within.*

**Problems:**

- So did that aquatic ship get transported back in time too..?

**Factoids:**

- This episode confirms that the Federation will be formed in 2161.
- This episode establishes that humans, Vulcans, Andorians, and Tellarites are the founding members of the Federation.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The reptilians eating mice.
- Archer working with a confused Hoshi.
- Enterprise entering the anomaly field.
- The weapon reaching Earth.
- The reptilians destroying Yosemite 3.
- Shran showing up to help.
- Shran: "Go! And tell Archer, we're not even anymore! He owes me!"
- The battle aboard the weapon.
- The destruction of the sphere network.
- Archer battling Dolim.
- Archer blowing up Dolim.
- Trip: "You look nice like this. Kind of like an old oil painting." T'Pol: "I'm not old. I will only be 66 years old on my next birthday."
- The shuttlepod being shot at by ancient Earth aircraft.

**Comments:**

Well, first the good things. This episode is marvelously successful as the ending to the Xindi arc (on most fronts). The space battle stuff was toned down a bit, but the overall level of action and conflict was even higher. Shran showing up to save Archer's ass was really cool, and Archer's fight with Dolim was even better; I'd say the greatest moment of the episode. I only wish I could have seen Sisko blow up Dukat into tiny little bits like that. ;) But that ending was just atrocious. Now, I'm not an oversensitive German citizen trying to forget 12 years of Nazi dictatorship or anything, but don't you think three stories about evil Nazis on Star Trek is just pushing it? TOS: Patterns of Force was already easily obnoxious. The use of Nazis in Voy: The Killing Game was better, but still unnecessary. (They could have used any number of conflicts in Earth's history for that episode. The battle of Wolf 359 would have been perfect!) Finally there's this. Not only are alien Nazis annoying and offensive, but it totally destroys the ending of a great episode at the same time. At the end of this episode, I was just waiting to get a hail from the Kumari with Archer standing next to Shran on his bridge; Shran yelling triumphantly to T'Pol, "we beamed him out just in time!" Then with the remaining time, victory celebration on Earth ensues. The season 4 premiere could then have Earth meeting with the Xindi, Enterprise being repaired, and Enterprise resuming its original mission; possibly then we could finally get on with the Earth-Romulan wars or getting some real Klingon conflicts started. But instead of properly wrapping up the Xindi arc, the writers confusedly and enigmatically throw us in the middle of yet more Temporal Cold War nonsense. So to recap, we've got more offensive alien nazis (-1), an anticlimactic ending to the Xindi arc (-1), and more Temporal Cold War nonsense (-1). An episode that would otherwise receive a 9 is reduced to a 6. Why has Star Trek been consistently delivering poor season finales for the last few years?



**Star Trek Ent - 4x01 - Storm Front, Part I**  
Originally Aired: 2004-10-8

**My Rating**  
- 4

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and the NX-01 find themselves in Earth's past, with events of World War II altered by the Temporal Cold War.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- Season 4 is being done by a new showrunner, Manny Coto.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- German Soldier: "Americans are good at making movies. They're not so good at fighting."
- Trip: "I was just all set to get home... I wasn't expecting to be in the middle of another... situation." Preach on, brother!
- Daniels showing up in Enterprise's sickbay.
- Alicia: "Patch on your ship says Enterprise! You musta made it off before it sank!"
- The sight of a conquered White House with Nazi flags draped over it.
- Silik's appearance.
- Trip's fight with Silik.
- Archer confronting the alien Nazi.
- Trip and Reed destroying a shuttlepod.
- Archer and Alicia beaming to Enterprise.

**Comments:**

Well I must say that I was more impressed with this episode than I originally thought I would be. Maybe it's the new showrunner, Manny Coto, making the best of the dismal cliffhanger Rick Berman and Brannon Braga left him. I get the feeling Coto wants to wrap up the whole Temporal Cold War thing right here and do it with style. Yes, he's being forced to use alien Nazis, and yes the Xindi conflict is still left with loose ends, but at least this episode is presented in a convincing and mostly intelligent fashion. Ever since TOS: The City On The Edge of Forever, I've been fascinated with the idea of time travel being used to alter Earth's history, making WWII end a different way. We get to see the effects of such an alteration first hand with the Nazis having conquered Europe, Africa, and large portions of North America. They were able to do this thanks to help from a future alien species, a faction in the Temporal Cold War. Their motives remain a mystery, other than the obvious notion that a totalitarian government dominating Earth would drastically reshape future politics.

**Star Trek Ent - 4x02 - Storm Front, Part II**

Originally Aired: 2004-10-15

**My  
Rating - 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*With Silik's help, Archer hones in on the temporal operative who altered Earth's past and threatens to destroy all of time.*

**Problems:**

- What was that huge fleet doing there at the end of the episode?

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser. Hilarious!
- Alicia regarding the transporter: "How does that thing work anyway? ...on second thought I'd rather not know."
- Silik masquerading as Trip.
- Silik helping Enterprise.
- Silik as a human!
- Silik bickering with Carmine.
- Silik taking out several Nazi officers.
- Silik being shot!
- Trip thinking Archer is Silik.
- The upgraded German dive bombers.
- Daniels saying goodbye to Archer, declaring the Temporal Cold War over.

**Comments:**

And so the Temporal Cold War is over. Ent: Storm Front wasn't the best two parter, but consistent with Star Trek's lackluster season finales and premieres of late. I gave Ent: Storm Front, Part II extra points because the Temporal Cold War and hopefully all of Time Trek has finally been put to rest. I also gave the episode a higher mark due to Silik's involvement. I was really sad that they

killed off Silik. I was really beginning to like him as a character, but the Temporal Cold War was just the wrong direction for the series and killing off the Temporal Cold War means putting Silik out of the picture. I'm sure the new direction the show is taking is due to the new showrunner, Manny Coto. One can only hope he finally kickstarts the Earth-Romulan wars and the conflict with the Klingons.



**Star Trek Ent - 4x03 - Home**  
Originally Aired: 2004-10-22

My  
Rating -  
6

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Once the NX-01 finally returns to Earth, the weary crewmen face repercussions of their journeys, both positive and negative.*

**Problems:**

- A WWII epic won several movie awards, but in TNG: The Neutral Zone, Data said TV became obsolete by 2040. Maybe conventional TV died, but movies were still made?

**Factoids:**

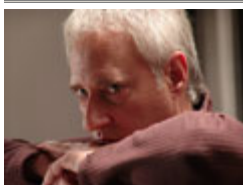
- Erika Hernandez is the captain of the NX-02 Columbia.
- Vulcan is 16 light years from Earth.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer: "I've been told that people are calling us heroes. When it comes to my crew, you won't get any argument from me."
- Archer freaking out at Soval for his questions about the events of Ent: Impulse.
- Archer: "Things have changed since Enterprise left spacedock. You spend a lot of your time boldly going into battle."
- Phlox' blow up face trick.
- The joke references to the kalifee from TOS: Amok Time when T'Pol first met with Kos were nicely placed.
- T'Pol and Trip visiting the Fire Plains of Vulcan.
- Archer and T'Pol making up.
- The Vulcan dignitary performing the marriage ceremony. He used the exact same words as T'Pol did in TOS: Amok Time.

**Comments:**

Somehow I expected this episode to be just as good as TNG: Family, but it fell short on several levels. There are three plot threads in this episode, one dealing with Archer and his difficulty in accepting hero worship, another dealt with T'Pol and Trip and their relationship, and another dealt with xenophobia on Earth. There is nice continuity all throughout the episode such as that with Ent: The Andorian Incident and Ent: Shadows of P'Jem regarding T'Les and her forced retirement which makes it pleasant to watch and a nice change of pace, but this episode left me with a feeling of inadequacy. More time should be spent on Earth exploring these and other issues, but unfortunately we're not going to get it. Archer was the most interesting character in the episode, with all his self doubt and anger. It was also nice to see more of Vulcan, even if the scope was still somewhat limited. Finally, the xenophobia on Earth is definitely something that wasn't sufficiently elaborated, but a nice idea. Ent: Home is merely a nice idea for an episode incomplete at best. Each plot thread cannibalized the others until none were sufficiently developed. This episode could have easily been a two parter. Or some of the plot threads could have been saved for later episodes. Less time spent on things like Archer dreaming of fighting Xindi reptilians which was totally inappropriate and more time spent on developing the plot threads would have made for a better episode.



**Star Trek Ent - 4x04 - Borderland**  
Originally Aired: 2004-10-29

My  
Rating -  
7

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*When genetic supermen left over from the Eugenics Wars hijack a Klingon ship, Archer must rely on their creator, the criminal Dr. Arik Soong, to help hunt them down.*

**Problems:**

- Why doesn't Commander T'Pol get a Starfleet uniform? Oh I know why, because she looks sexier

with less clothing. (Sigh.)

**Factoids:**

- J. G. Hertzler plays the Klingon captain who dies in the teaser. He's played two other Klingons. Archer's lawyer in Ent: Judgement and Martok on DS9.
- Brent Spiner who plays Arik Soong in this episode played Data on TNG. This is actually a nice homage, because Spiner is playing his own ancestor in a way, for Arik Soong is the ancestor of the man who created Data.
- Henry Archer died very painfully from Clarke's disease, but genetic engineering could have cured him.
- Archer's new chair was actually rescued from a deleted scene from Star Trek X: Nemesis.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The augments attacking the Klingon bird of prey.
- Archer meeting with Arik Soong.
- "Jonathan Archer. What brings you here? They naming the prison after you?"
- Enterprise's relaunch.
- The Orions attacking Enterprise.
- T'Pol being auctioned off at the slave market.
- An Orion female being auctioned off at the slave market. The first time we've seen one since TOS: The Cage!
- Archer and Soong invading the Orion slave market freeing all the slaves.
- Soong using the (Klingon?) painstick to disable the transponder that Enterprise was using to track him.
- Archer's clever recapture of Soong.
- The augments saving Enterprise from the Orions.

**Comments:**

I am still annoyed that Enterprise is ignoring its loose threads, such as the Xindi, the Temporal Cold War, Earth's response to the Xindi crisis, and Earth's xenophobia, but I think we can safely assume some things. The Xindi are probably reorganizing their government and probably looking for a new homeworld. Now that their guardians are gone, they probably don't want to attack Earth anymore. Still, it would have been nice to get a post Xindi-arc Xindi cameo to canonize the armistice. We can also safely assume that the Temporal Cold War is over and we'll never see more of it. Can't say that bothers me very much other than the fact that it made very little sense. We can only hope that these loose threads are tied up later. But for now, Enterprise has finally become relevant. What we were shown here in Ent: Borderland is the first real material convincing me of the reasons for a long term conflict with the Klingons. From their perspective, a group of humans stole a Klingon bird of prey and that's all the reason they need to go to war with Earth. There's also quite a bit of foreshadowing in this episode indicating that that may very well happen. Using the augments for this purpose was an extremely clever idea and getting Brent Spiner to play his own ancestor was an equally terrific move. The main plot is a wonderful connection to both TOS and TNG; what marvelously clever writing. I think here Manny Coto is finally flexing his showrunning muscles, as Ent: Borderland was a great way to start a story arc with the augments and the Klingons whilst giving us some fascinating insight into the much speculated about Orion syndicate at the same time. Nicely done.



**Star Trek Ent - 4x05 - Cold Station 12**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-11-5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Arik Soong leads his band of Augments to a medical facility where hundreds of genetically enhanced embryos are still stored, intending to retrieve them and bring them to life.*

**My  
Rating -  
7**

**Problems:**

- Persis uppercuts a Starfleet security officer and it sends him into a 360 degree backflip. Taking a hit like that would most certainly kill you, but he gets up right after that and keeps on fighting!
- Why did Archer tell Soong that he was going to blow up the station? It gave the augments all the time they needed to prevent it from happening!

**Factoids:**

- Archer's father died when he was 12.
- The diseases stored on Cold Station 12 that were listed on the screen Malik was reading are all

references to previous Trek episodes. Xenopolycythemia; TOS: For the World is Hollow and I Have Touched the Sky, Synthococcus Novae Type A; TOS: The Way to Eden, Rigelian Fever; TOS: Requiem for Methuselah, Tellurian Plague; TNG: A Matter of Time, Anchilles Fever; TNG: Code of Honor, and Andronesian Encephalitis; TNG: The Dauphin.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Finally seeing Dr. Lucas!
- Soong torturing the doctors on Cold Station 12.
- Archer: "Why are you so surprised? Whenever a group of people start believing they're better than everyone else, the results are always the same."
- Enterprise battling the Klingon bird of prey.
- Archer's fight with Malik.
- Malik murdering Smike.
- Dr. Soong and the augments escaping.

#### Comments:

Ent: Cold Station 12 is another good episode moving on with the augments arc. It would seem Dr. Soong is losing control of his "children." Malik seems all too willing to use violence, which in a way is a deficiency of the plot, but it also contributes well to the theme that Soong's repeating the mistakes of history. Brent Spiner continues to fascinatingly and skillfully play Arik Soong. I only wonder why Enterprise is doing such a poor job catching the augments. Two episodes in a row now they've failed to capture the augments because they keep getting overpowered. Maybe this is a sign that Enterprise should call for some help? Maybe from the Vulcans?



#### Star Trek Ent - 4x06 - The Augments

Originally Aired: 2004-11-12

My  
Rating -  
7

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*In defiance of their "father," Arik Soong's Augments devise a heinous plot against the Klingons which will surely lead to interstellar war.*

#### Problems:

- I would imagine that by now that T'Pol is eating her words about Klingons not using escape pods.

#### Factoids:

- The current Klingon Chancellor is named M'Rek. He likes to head into the Borderland every so often to enjoy the company of Orion slave girls.

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- Archer's decompression beam out trick. I was surprised by the realism.
- T'Pol: "I wasn't aware the doctor discharged you." Archer: "He didn't. What's our status?" T'Pol: "Holding position near the Klingon border." Archer takes his seat. Poor Phlox... always getting ignored. ;)
- Enterprise engaging the Klingon bird of prey.
- Soong dumping the Denobulan shuttle in into the gas giant.
- Archer pretending to be a Klingon captain, bluffing to the other Klingon captain.
- Soong running back to Archer in a Klingon escape pod.
- Archer: "Superior ability breeds superior ambition. One of their creators wrote that. He was murdered by an augment."
- Soong: "How long can we sustain warp 5?" Trip: "As long as the captain wants it. Or until we blow up, whichever comes first."
- Enterprise using the grappler as a weapon on the D5 battlecruiser's warp nacelle.
- Enterprise destroying the bio weapon and engaging the Klingon battlecruiser.
- Malik destroying
- Soong: "I've been thinking... perfecting humanity may not be possible. Cybernetics... artificial life forms." Archer: "Goodbye, doctor." Soong: "I doubt I'll finish the work myself. Might take a generation or two."

#### Comments:

This is the best of the three augments episodes. Firstly, there was marvelous continuity. Soong wanted to take his "children" into the Briar patch, which was the setting of Star Trek IX: Insurrection. The scene when Malik dumps the Denobulan doctor and her shuttle into the gas giant is a nice parallel to Eddington's similar move in DS9: For the Uniform. The scene when Malik crawls

around on the floor of the bird of prey is also a cute reference to a Star Trek film, in this case Star Trek II: The Wrath of Khan in which Khan did the same thing on the Reliant. Finally, Arik Soong at the end of this episode declares that he's now going to study cybernetics and that his work will take generations to complete. Maybe it was tacky, but I liked it. Unfortunately, the episode like the previous two fell short of being profound. Here it was a real missed opportunity. The biggest problem for which I subtract one point is that Malik never succeeded in releasing the bio weapon against the Klingons. Oh how perfect it would have been if he had! Now we'd have a legitimate reason for the Klingons to go to war with Earth. Not that murder and attempted murder of loads of Klingons doesn't work, but it would have been much more believable if Malik had been successful. Additionally, the scene when Malik returns from the dead to try and kill Soong was just petty, forced, and totally contrived. For that I subtract another point. But overall, the arc was pretty nice and it was thoroughly enjoyable.



### **Star Trek Ent - 4x07 - The Forge**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-11-19

**My  
Rating -  
9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Earth's embassy on Vulcan is bombed, and the ensuing investigation puts Archer and T'Pol on the trail of a Vulcan religious faction hiding in a treacherous desert.*

#### **Problems:**

- So if it took Vulcans 1500 years to recover from their wars and begin space travel and Surak lived 1800 years ago, it can be inferred that Vulcans have been in space for 300 years. This is a far too short period of time, why, even the monastery on P'Jem is supposed to be 3000 years old, which is before the time of Surak! Maybe Vulcans had space travel many years before their great wars, then fell into a bout of war, and Surak returned them to their original golden age?

#### **Factoids:**

- T'Pol is 32 years old in 2154.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Soval and Forrest discussing Vulcan's relationship with humanity.
- Soval: "We had our wars Admiral, just as Humans did. Our planet was devastated, our civilisation nearly destroyed. Logic saved us, but it took almost 1,500 years for us to rebuild our world and travel to the stars. You Humans did the same in less than a century. There are those on the high command who wonder what Humans would achieve in the century to come. And they don't like the answer."
- Phlox... the natural at basketball.
- Reed and Travis discovering another bomb in the Earth embassy on Vulcan.
- Soval vouching his support for Archer beginning his own investigation.
- Trip referring to the Forge, a Vulcan desert, as a "hell hole."
- T'Pol: "Over the centuries his followers made copies of his teachings." Archer: "Let me guess, With the originals lost whatever's left is open to interpretation." T'Pol: "You find this amusing?" Archer: "I find it familiar."
- Archer and T'Pol being chased by a sehlat.
- T'Pol regarding domesticated sehlat: "They're smaller, slightly." Archer: "How slightly?" T'Pol: "You have Porthos." Archer: "Porthos doesn't try and eat me when I'm late with his dinner." T'Pol: "Vulcan children are never late with their sehlat's dinner." Archer: "I can believe that."
- Archer regarding the sehlat: "Sounds like that Klingon opera that Hoshi made us listen to."
- T'Pol telling Archer about her lack of need for water for several more days and about her inner eyelid, a nice connection with TOS: Operation: Annihilate. I like her little quote, justifying these physical qualities... "My species evolved on this planet." As if to say, why didn't you know these things about us?
- Arev: "What is Kiri-kin-tha's first law of metaphysics?" Archer: "I'm familiar with Newton's first law of motion. I imagine they're pretty much the same!"
- Soval performing a mind meld on the comatose witness to the bomber.
- Arev giving Archer Surak's katra.
- Archer finding the Syrranites.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is the culmination of the odd Vulcan behavior arc that Enterprise started and never went anywhere with since the pilot. The new showrunner, Manny Coto has become the loose thread man. We learn in this episode that the root of the "evil Vulcan syndrome" is not just a conservative

vs. liberal societal clash like we were led to believe in episodes like Ent: Fusion and Ent: Stigma, but in fact has more to do with the Vulcan religion centered around Surak (which is somewhat similar to Buddhism) and the two different interpretations of it. This nicely parallels human history and serves as a marvelous explanation for the behavior of the Vulcans over the last few seasons. The bombing of the Earth embassy on Vulcan and the handling of the situation couldn't have been more perfect. The tragic loss of Admiral Forrest brings out the true loyalties in Soval, and we finally get to see the guy stand up for what he believes in, performing a mind meld against the High Command's wishes. It can be inferred that sometime between now and TOS that the Syrranites will prevail over the Vulcan High Command--this may perhaps have something to do with why the Federation is formed--for all Vulcans will believe as Arev and T'Pol do. In fact, we know T'Pol from the previous Star Trek episode TOS: Amok Time. She performed Spock's wedding ceremony and was a respected figure at that time. (And very old!) Indeed, this episode is a continuity gold mine. Firstly, when Archer received Surak's katra from Arev, Arev spoke the same words Spock did to McCoy in Star Trek II: The Wrath of Khan... he said "remember," albeit, in Vulcan. We also get to see a sehlat for the first time since TAS: Yesteryear. We get another mention of the Vulcan inner eyelid that was first revealed by Spock in TOS: Operation: Annihilate. We get to see the T'Pol Sanctuary again, which was last featured in TNG: Gambit, Part II. A Surakian artifact was discovered there 12 years prior to this episode. This detail is fascinating seeing as how it was stated in the TNG episode that one of the last conflicts of the Vulcan civil war was fought there. A marvelous site for the discovery in this episode. Finally, the two questions that Ariv asked Archer regarding Vulcan philosophy were taken directly from the questions that Spock was asked by the Vulcan computer in Star Trek IV: The Voyage Home during his re-education. Obviously, Manny Coto has done his homework. Bravo.



### **Star Trek Ent - 4x08 - Awakening**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-11-26

**My  
Rating -  
8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer and T'Pol encounter the Syrrannites, a radical group hiding in the Vulcan desert, while the NX-01 crew contends with Vulcan power plays.*

#### **Problems:**

- You've got to wonder why T'Pol doesn't speak in funky language like she does in TOS: Amok Time. ;)

#### **Factoids:**

None

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer having visions of Surak and the Vulcan wars.
- T'Pol mind melding with Archer.
- Soval: "I lived on Earth for more than 30 years, Commander. In that time I developed an affinity for your world and its people." Trip: "You did a pretty good job of hiding it." Soval: "Thank you."
- Archer regarding T'Pol's "logical" explanation of what Archer is going through: "So I'm suffering from a mind meld hangover?"
- Archer undergoing the katra transfer ritual.
- Surak: "Logic has not won this day. But this day won't last forever."
- Surak instructing Archer to find the Kir'Shara.
- The Enterprise shuttle battling the Vulcan shuttles.
- Archer upon waking up after the katra ceremony: "I feel like I just pulled by head out of a plasma relay."
- Trip: "How many warning shots to Vulcans usually fire?" Soval: "None."
- Vulcan ships attacking Enterprise.
- Vulcan ships destroying the sanctuary.
- Soval revealing that Vulcan is planning to attack Andoria.

#### **Comments:**

Another excellent episode picking up where the last one left off. It's revealed in this episode exactly what the purpose of V'Las' behavior is. He wants to attack Andoria because he believes they're building a weapon of mass destruction based on Xindi technology, a good connection with Ent: Proving Ground. V'Las and his followers have been suppressing the Syrranites for years because of their pacifist beliefs. V'Las wants to wipe them out because having a group of pacifists around doesn't help when you're preparing to go to war. You can see that V'Las is losing control of the



situation as he begins to rely on aggressive tactics more and more, culminating to when he attacked Enterprise and threatened to destroy it. Even some of his cabinet are beginning to question his actions. The episode ends with a nice plot twist in the end with Trip ordering Enterprise to Andoria to warn them of the preemptive strike, leaving Archer and T'Pol back on Vulcan.



---

**Star Trek Ent - 4x09 - Kir'Shara**

**Originally Aired:** 2004-12-3

**My  
Rating -  
7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer, T'Pol and T'Pol attempt to bring the Kir'Shara (an artifact believed to contain Surak's original writings) to the Vulcan capital, as the NX-01 gets involved in a Vulcan-Andorian military clash.*

**Problems:**

- While I enjoyed seeing Archer fight so well, and I realize that Surak's katra had quite a bit to do with this, Archer was performing athletic moves that just don't seem possible in air that's so thin.

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Soval meeting with Shran.
- T'Pol curing T'Pol of her Pa'nar syndrome!
- Shran torturing Soval.
- Soval: "I'll tear the antennae from your skull!"
- Soval: "Do you know the story of Nurak?" Shran: "What?" Soval: "He was a soldier who lived a long time ago. He was standing watch over the gates of the city of Gaul. He saw a cloud on the horizon moving toward him. He thought it was a sandstorm, so he told no one. It was an army. They destroyed the city. But they let Nurak live. His name now means fool in our language! Just as yours will in Andorian!"
- Archer fighting the Vulcan soldiers.
- T'Pol lying to the Vulcan soldiers cover Archer's tracks.
- Archer Vulcan neck pinching somebody!
- The Vulcans, Andorians, and Enterprise doing battle.
- Archer presenting the Kir'Shara to the Vulcan high command.
- The revelation that V'Las was working with the Romulans.

**Comments:**

Another good episode, but not quite as good as the previous two. Most of the lesser rating stems from the fact that the plot had no major turning points or plot twists other than the ending, which chillingly reminded me of Ent: Zero Hour, except without the alien Nazi silliness. What this episode did do is wrap up several plot threads nicely. T'Pol was cured of her Pa'nar syndrome (Ent: Stigma); it seems the syndrome is actually caused by poorly trained mind melders and the Vulcan high command suppressed the true nature of the syndrome to try and kill off Syrranites and other deviants. T'Pol's marriage was dissolved (Ent: Breaking the Ice, Ent: Home), V'Las was removed from power, and since the leader of the Vulcan high command was a Romulan, or at least a Romulan collaborator, his removal signifies the end of "evil Vulcan syndrome." The ending to the mini arc was satisfactory regarding all things, delivering some nice action and excellent continuity in the process. The Romulan revelation at the end is probably the most interesting detail of the plot, but since it's a cliffhanger, there's not much to discuss about it except for the fact that it seems that the writers are going to continue to honor TOS and never show Romulans onscreen, which pleases me. I'm also pleased that this may be the precursor to the Earth Romulan wars, though I'm not sure how.



**Star Trek Ent - 4x10 - Daedalus**

**Originally Aired:** 2005-1-14

**My Rating  
- 5**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*The inventor of the transporter, Emory Erickson, comes aboard Enterprise for a risky experiment.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- The original transporter took a full minute and a half to cycle through.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Erickson discussing the old metaphysical debate about whether or not someone was the same person or just some weird copy after going through the transporter.
- Erickson discussing the original transporter, going through it, and getting drunk with Zefram Cochrane.
- Trip questioning Archer's decision to help Erickson, despite his deception.
- Trip: "The transporter can't do that!" Erickson: "I built the damn thing!"
- Erickson beaming in Quinn despite the fact that he knew he'd die just so he could save him one last time.
- Erickson: "Why settle for making myself miserable when I can spread the misery around to an entire class of students?"

**Comments:**

A decent, though fairly average episode. The plot is rehashed from episodes like DS9: The Visitor, Voy: Jetrel, and Voy: Year of Hell in all of which a character struggles to bring someone back to life. It was a nice idea to bring the inventor of the transporter aboard for an experiment, but I was annoyed that he used deceit and subterfuge to hide his true motives. I would have preferred honesty from the beginning so the plot could focus on something more interesting. The metaphysical discussion about whether a person was still the same person and not some "weird copy" would have been a more interesting topic to cover. The plot to save Erickson's son gains some extra points though thanks to the wonderful acting by all those involved, especially Bill Cobbs as Erickson. He did a marvelous job and really brought a dull episode to life. I would have liked to see him again. One thing I noticed was several long scenes with no musical score. It stuck out to me like a sore thumb, much to the episode's disadvantage. Overall, a decent attempt.



**Star Trek Ent - 4x11 - Observer Effect**

**Originally Aired:** 2005-1-21

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Noncorporeal aliens study the Enterprise crew as they respond to a fatal viral infection brought on board from an away mission.*

**My  
Rating -  
4**

**Problems:**

- This episode is hard to rationalize with TOS: Errand of Mercy regarding the behavior of the Organians.

**Factoids:**

- Organian-Mayweather mentions that Cardassians have been to the planet featured in this episode.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The Chess scene between possessed Reed and Travis in the teaser.
- Trip: "I remember Exobiology 101, Captain. Humans are carbon based. Our immune system can't fight silicon."
- The Organians revealing themselves to Phlox after he discovered Trip's and Hoshi's anomalous behavior.
- Archer and Phlox desperately trying to save Trip's and Hoshi's life.
- Hoshi and Trip dying.
- The Organians inhabiting Trip and Hoshi and talking to Archer.
- Archer: "Maybe you've evolved into beings with abilities I can't comprehend. But you've paid a hell of a price. You've lost compassion and empathy. Things that give life meaning. If that's what it takes to be advanced, I don't want any part of it."
- Archer: "If you want to know what it means to be Human, you need to do more than observe."

**Comments:**

This episode was, of course, a bottle show. No guest stars and no special effects other than stock footage. There's no fighting and no weapons fired. Not even the Organians entering and leaving people's bodies is animated. Instead of all this eye candy, we get marvelous performances from all

actors involved. Another nice detail was the portrayal of the Organians themselves. All throughout the episode we're given the impression that they're vastly superior to corporeal species in every way. Not in a cheesy direct manner either. Subtle things, like the Chess scene at the beginning or the way they so easily manipulate corporeal bodies were all we needed. All of this put a marvelously different spin on the episoder, telling us the story from the Organian perspective. The audience is just as detached as the the observing Organians. What annoys me about this episode is that the Organians shouldn't have been used as the aliens here, as it fouls up continuity with TOS: Errand of Mercy. It could be argued that the Organians went through a radical behavioral change in just 100 years, but given their absurd timeframes to exact any kind of change and their radically different behavior in the TOS episode, this doesn't seem likely. A better choice would have been Q. No, seriously. Q, or a group of Q could have easily filled in this role and used the same memory wiping trick. We know how quickly their opinions on things can change. We could have even gotten a cheesy line at the end from Q about visiting in 200 years to see how far humanity has progressed, kind of like the line Arik Soong made about wanting to study Cybernetics at the end of Ent: The Augments. In the end, this was a marvelously well played episode, but for the blunder regarding the Organians, I must strike points.



### **Star Trek Ent - 4x12 - Babel One**

**Originally Aired:** 2005-1-28

**My  
Rating -  
8**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Enterprise journeys to Babel with a Tellarite ambassador on board for peace talks with the Andorians, when a distress call from Shran is received.*

#### **Problems:**

- You can easily tell when a stunt double is used for Talas during her fight with the guard. Her stunt double has a vast difference in breast size!

#### **Factoids:**

- Shrna commanded the Kumari for twelve years. It was the first ship of its class.  
- Thanks to Enterprise's upgrades, the ship can now hold warp 5.06 safely.  
- Enterprise was officially canceled at about the time this episode aired. Amazing timing, isn't it? Just when the show starts to get bloody good. Just like Farscape.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Hoshi and Archer pretending to argue.  
- Archer to Gral: "You people are even uglier than I remember."  
- Gral: "I've heard this ship is the pride of Starfleet. I find it small, and unimpressive." Archer: "Funny, I was about to say the same thing about you."  
- Archer insulting Trip, tricking him.  
- Shran and Gral getting into a fight.  
- The revelation that the mystery attack ship was in fact Romulan.  
- The Romulan ship suddenly coming ot life.  
- Reed regarding the alien life support system: "With our luck, they probably breathe flourine!"  
- Reed: "There's no rule that says the bridge has to be on the top of the ship!"  
- Talas being shot.  
- The zoom out at the end when its revealed that the ship was being controlled from Romulus.

#### **Comments:**

And season 4 continues to deliver the prequel we've been waiting for. This episode expands on the Romulan aspect of the show, showing us once again that in their early days, they tried to manipulate galactic politics from afar, rather than attempt to directly participate. Again, this is perfect for continuity, because Spock said no one had ever seen a Romulan prior to TOS: Balance of Terror. I also liked the nice reference to Babel, which was also the site of a conference in TOS: Journey to Babel. Bringing back the Andorians; especially Shran, and the Tellarites was a perfect development. Daniels once told Archer that Humans, Vulcans, Andorians, and Tellarites were the initial members of the Federation. And T'Pol told Archer that the Romulans probably fear an alliance between these parties. What they fear is the Federation itself. I wouldn't be surprised if the Earth-Romulan wars were a direct attempt by the Romulans to disrupt the founding of the Federation in 2161, which is six years from this episode and plenty of time to wage such a conflict. The Romulan ship itself was fascinating. Controlling a ship remotely could have several advantages, but many disadvantages as well. If these are the types of ships that will be used during the Earth-Romulan wars, I can see how a stalemate might be possible. Earth might even

find a way to jam the transmitters so those ships can no longer receive instructions. That could be why the Romulans eventually abandon the design. There was only one thing that annoyed me... I wish we'd got to see a little bit more of that ship. I want to know how it works and why they designed it like that. It's fascinating. Okay, I was wrong, there was one other thing that annoyed me. Did anyone else catch that Travis was interrupted in the middle of one of his lines? First they give him barely anything to say, now they're not even letting him finish sentences! ;) Anyway, this episode was marvelous, and I'm looking forward to seeing more.



### **Star Trek Ent - 4x13 - United**

**Originally Aired:** 2005-2-4

**My  
Rating -  
9**

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer tries to unify the Andorians, Tellarites and Vulcans in a plan to capture a marauder ship threatening to destabilize the region.*

#### **Problems:**

- The pale skinned Andorian pilot was clearly a "pinkskin" type alien when you viewed his neck in this and the previous episode. He was not turned into a blue skinned alien until his helmet was removed at the end of this episode.

#### **Factoids:**

- This episode features two Reman guards. The Remans were featured for the first and only other time in Star Trek X: Nemesis.
- The drone prototype ship is a modified warbird.
- The Kumari was named after the first ice cutters to circumnavigate Andoria.
- Andorian metabolism is higher than that of humans.
- Antennae take nine months to grow back.
- It would seem given Shran's reaction to losing an antenna, that the antenna are necessary for balance.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer getting the Andorians and Tellarites to work together.
- Reed saving Trip from the Romulans.
- Reed blowing up a power conduit disabling the Romulan link to the drone ship.
- Archer taking
- Reed: "You're good at building things, I'm good at blowing them up."
- Travis and Hoshi looking for a loophole.
- Archer receiving fighting advice from Hoshi, Gral, and Phlox.
- Archer's fight with Shran.
- Archer cutting off one of Shran's antennae!
- Enterprise battling the drone ship.
- The drone ship performing some crazy maneuvers.
- Trip and Reed diving out of the drone ship so they can be beamed aboard.
- Alliance ships arriving to continue the battle against the drone ship.
- Enterprise rescuing Trip and Reed.
- Trip pulling Reed's leg. Trip's taking out what Archer did to him in Ent: Babel One on Reed. ;)
- The sight of Shran and Gral making up in the end and the joint fleet.

#### **Comments:**

This episode is one of the best ones shown yet on Enterprise, and certainly one of the most memorable. It's fairly obvious that this episode is supposed to serve as a precursor to the alliance that humans, Vulcans, Andorians, and Tellarites will one day form as the founding members of the Federation and it was done well here. What I liked most was the fight between Archer and Shran. I was thoroughly convinced one of them would die and was pleasantly surprised when Travis and Hoshi found a way for that not to happen. Additionally, I was glad to see Travis and Hoshi play a real role in the story for once as well. Archer cutting off Shran's antenna is of course an homage to TOS: Journey to Babel in which we saw the antenna of a fake Andorian break off, which was nicely clever. The whole incident served as marvelous character development for Shran and Archer. I really like the relationship those two have forged. Besides that, Trip's and Reed's escape from the Romulan drone ship was extremely exciting to watch. I loved how they just dived into space like that, and finally the special effects depicting the arrival and departure of some of the alliance ships were just spectacular. Ent: United is showing us a pattern of writing not present in seasons 1-3. Manny Coto is taking this show exactly where it needs to go, but too little too late. Maybe if we

could have had Coto as the showrunner from the beginning, Enterprise would have more than 4 seasons. Season 4 has been excellent so far, but it's too little, too late.



### Star Trek Ent - 4x14 - The Aenar

Originally Aired: 2005-2-11

My  
Rating -  
6

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*Archer visits Shran's icy homeworld to find an Andorian subspecies called the Aenar, to determine their connection to the marauder destroying ships in the region.*

#### **Problems:**

None

#### **Factoids:**

- Andorian cities are built underground and make use of geothermal energy. Shran didn't see the sun until he was 15.
- Andoria is actually a moon of a ringed gas giant. This could put an end to the Andor / Andoria naming problem, possibly signifying that Andor is the gas giant and Andoria is the moon.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- Shran revealing the existence of the Aenar to Archer.
- The sight of Andoria... beautiful.
- Archer and Shran visiting the Aenar compound.
- Shran being impaled by a stalagmite.
- The sight of the Aenar city.
- Enterprise battling the Romulan drones.
- The two Romulan drones attacking each other.
- Trip declaring he's going to leave Enterprise.

#### **Comments:**

This episode was a bit of a let down compared to the previous two, but charming in its own light. The biggest problem was that the Romulan plot was totally exhausted at this point and probably shouldn't have continued. With the writing a bit more careful in Ent: Babel One and Ent: United, they could have been a simple two parter instead of a 3 episode mini arc. The Aenar themselves however were totally fascinating. Rarely is a new alien species presented so well on Enterprise. I was also fascinated to see that Andoria is actually a moon of a ringed gas giant. It's nice to see this kind of planetary diversity every once in a while. The Aenar themselves were convincing as recluses and pacifists. Their makeup and acting was superb all throughout. If there were another suitable reason to feature them again, I'd love to see more of the Aenar. I'm curious to know if they're still around after the Federation was formed. Trip leaving the ship in the ending brought an anticlimactic moment to an otherwise decent episode. I'm wondering why the writers are dragging out the T'Pol / Trip relationship thing. It's starting to become tiresome. I mean, obviously, Trip is not leaving the ship permanently. This is Star Trek Enterprise. Not Star Trek Enterprise + Columbia. Maybe that sounds cruel, but that's how it is. Trip will be back. So the ending, albeit a surprise, was a let down.



### Star Trek Ent - 4x15 - Affliction

Originally Aired: 2005-2-18

My  
Rating -  
6

#### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*While Enterprise visits Earth for the launch of Columbia, Phlox is kidnapped and forced to help the Klingons deal with a grave threat toward their species.*

#### **Problems:**

- What do those silly pillars of light do on the bridge of the Columbia? They're just as retarded looking as those from Ent: E2.

#### **Factoids:**

- Enterprise sets a new speed record in this episode, warp 5.2.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- T'Pol performing a mind meld on Hoshi with Archer's guidance.

- T'Pol and Trip meeting in a communal daydream.
- The Klingon General shooting the patient. Awesome. :)
- The revelation that the Klingon disease was actually caused by messing around with Augment DNA.
- Hoshi describing dreaming of Trip the same way T'Pol was.
- Reed to Archer: "There are some obligations that go beyond my loyalty to you and this crew."
- Phlox suggesting the Klingons should have abducted Dr. Soong and the Klingons responding with "we tried, he was under heavy guard." :)
- The launch of the Columbia.

**Comments:**

Ah, the infamous Klingon Forehead Problem. This is probably the most amusing continuity-centered episode ever done. Before I begin my review, let me briefly outline the Klingon Forehead Problem. In TOS, Klingons had no facial makeup, other than some interesting haircuts and a darker complexion. They had no cranial ridges. In the TOS films, Gene Roddenberry did an about face on this and made the Klingons look more alien. He claimed that's how he always wanted them to look, but TOS lacked the budget. A reasonable explanation. And it fell through with DS9 when TOS era Klingons made their cameos. They had full ridged Klingon makeup. But in DS9: Trials and Tribulations, the equivalent of an atomic bomb was dropped on Roddenberry's argument. Now don't get me wrong, that episode was a wonderful homage to TOS. But when Bashir et al noticed the difference between the Klingons of TOS and Worf and started speculating as to the reasons why this could have happened and Worf just cryptically responded with "we don't talk about it," it made canonical this Klingon Forehead Problem. An explanation was demanded and none was ever given. Then Enterprise as a series further aggravated the issue by depicting pre TOS Klingons with ridges! Well, Manny Coto hates loose ends and here we are with Ent: Affliction. The solution to the Klingon Forehead Problem. The Klingons during the late Enterprise era began experimenting with human Augment DNA. The result? A ridgeless, TOS style Klingon. Now, there are still questions to be answered. How far does this plague spread? Why is every Klingon we see in TOS ridgeless? Why is every Klingon we see post TOS ridged? I have my own theories, but I'll wait to postulate them until the second part has aired. My only comment regarding this is wow, Coto has lots of bravery to attempt this. He's trying to correct the biggest continuity error in Star Trek history! That's no small feat. The episode itself was fairly by the book. Trip's emotional problems didn't interest me very much, but I was kind of glad that it gave us a chance to see the Columbia. T'Pol and Hoshi were given a decent showing as well; I loved the mind meld scene. I'm not sure Reed's conflict with Archer was such a good idea. The idea to bring Section 31 to Enterprise is acceptable from a continuity standpoint, but given the limited time left on Enterprise thanks to that asinine cancellation, introducing new complex long term plot threads seems ill advised. Probably the best part about the episode though was Phlox working with the Klingons. They were in character all throughout and I thus found the episode sufficiently convincing. I am impressed with Coto's audaciousness!



**Star Trek Ent - 4x16 - Divergence**  
**Originally Aired:** 2005-2-25

**My  
 Rating -  
 7**

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*With Columbia's help, the Enterprise crew grapples with sabotage to their ship as they pursue the truth behind the kidnapping of Phlox.*

**Problems:**

- You've got to wonder why Bashir was so surprised just like O'Brien in DS9: Trials and Tribulations. Didn't he study medical history? Maybe he was just playing dumb to put Worf in an embarrassing situation. ;)

**Factoids:**

None

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- The zooming scene just after the teaser. Holy wow!
- The two NX class ships matching course and speed.
- Watching trip climb from one ship to the other.
- Trip doing a cold start of the warp reactor.
- Archer uncovering Reed's connection with Section 31.
- K'Vagh drinking to the bravery of the four Klingon warriors who volunteered to test the various

attempts at a cure.

- Enterprise and Columbia battling the Klingon ships.
- Phlox beaming the virus to the attacking Klingons to persuade them to let Phlox cure the virus.

#### Comments:

I must say, that's a damn fine resolution of the Klingon Forehead problem. The only remaining question is why do the "shamed" ridgeless Klingons get so powerful in TOS? It's possible that the virus spreads further and since it only can do "stage 1" it alters ridged Klingons for a hundred years and their cosmetic surgery techniques aren't quite up to the task of fixing the problem until post TOS. That would seem to make sense with why all the ridged Klingons in Star Trek I: The Motion Picture have the same ridges and why post Star Trek I: The Motion Picture productions have progressively better ridges... they were perfecting their cosmetic surgery techniques! ;) Still, you've got to wonder why it would take them 100 years to develop them. But then, given how valued doctors are in the Klingon Empire, it's not all that surprising. Aside from resolving the Klingon Forehead Problem, this episode presents a great action episode at the same time. Trip's leap from Columbia to Enterprise was just the kind of innovative stuff that keeps Star Trek exciting. Phlox bending his ethics with the Klingons added further to the episode's intrigue. Finally, letting the Columbia strut her stuff in battle side by side with Enterprise was just great fun to watch. All in all, a nicely successful episode.



#### Star Trek Ent - 4x17 - Bound

Originally Aired: 2005-4-15

My Rating

- 3

#### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*As a gift for negotiating with the Orion Syndicate, Captain Archer receives three Orion Slave Girls.*

#### Problems:

- Trip calls Kelby a lieutenant, when he actually holds the rank of commander.

#### Factoids:

None

#### Remarkable Scenes:

- T'Pol: "They did report one distinctive feature which bears mentioning." Archer: "Which is?" T'Pol: "A species of flying reptiles, some reportedly over 200 meters long. They're also said to breathe fire. There has been lingering questions over the accuracy of this report." A nice reference to TOS: This Side of Paradise.
- The Orion slave girls putting on a show for Archer and Reed.
- The various crew's reaction to the Orion women.
- Enterprise battling Harrad-Sar's ship.
- Enterprise disabling the grappler on Harrad-Sar's ship.
- T'Pol: "At least we've learned something about the Orions." Reed: "Yeah, the women are in charge." T'Pol: "It proves that even the most disagreeable species have some positive attributes."

#### Comments:

Ent: Bound is a rehash of TOS: Mudd's Women. Here is where Manny Coto's fetish for TOS continuity is starting to get a little over the top. While it was a good idea to give us more information about the Orions, the episode was done in a very immature way. Basically the episode floats around between the men tripping over themselves, the women getting annoyed, and Trip and T'Pol having relationship problems. This episode seemed more to me like a teeny soap opera than an episode of Star Trek. Only the short space battle and the fact that the Orions were aliens made the episode reminiscent of Star Trek. Fortunately, the episode manages to salvage some dignity over similar attempts like Ent: Harbinger (which was actually a better episode, even if less mature) and the dreaded Ent: A Night in Sickbay. For one, the revelation that the Orion women actually control Orion society is an interesting one. This episode also ended the annoying "lets push Trip over to Columbia" mini arc. I had a feeling it was going nowhere... now we know for sure. Finally, the little joke T'Pol made at the end was genuinely funny and a nice homage to TOS when Spock would make similar closing comments at the end of episodes. These details hardly make up for the general immaturity of the episode, but I generally felt somewhere in between liking and hating this episode. It's not very good, but it's not that bad either. Certainly better than most poor episodes of Star Trek.



## **Star Trek Ent - 4x18 - In a Mirror, Darkly, Part I**

**Originally Aired:** 2005-4-22

**My  
Rating -  
10**

### **Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*In the mirror universe, Commander Archer mutinies against Captain Forrest in order to capture a future Earth ship found in Tholian space.*

### **Problems:**

None

### **Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Enterprise Award".
- This is the 700th episode of Star Trek when you exclude the movies and TAS.
- Trip's facial damage is a reference to what happened to captain Pike in TOS: The Menagerie.
- Tholians require temperatures of 480 degrees kelvin.
- Tholians reproduce asexually.
- Tholians can use their crystalline exoskeleton to act as a naturally resonating transmitter.

### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The teaser with Zefram Cochrane shooting the Vulcans who made first contact with Earth, then stealing their ship... hah!
- Oh my, the opening credits! Didn't see that coming.
- The torture scene in the beginning.
- Archer taking over Enterprise.
- Finally seeing a Tholian!
- Phlox gradually decreasing the temperature in the Tholian's airlock.
- Archer briefing the senior staff about the Earth ship from 100 years in the future from the other universe.
- Cloaked Enterprise arriving at the Defiant.
- Phlox: "Will you kindly die!" Ah, the best Phlox quote ever.
- The Tholian ships deploying their web and attacking Enterprise.
- Archer activating the Defiant.
- Enterprise being destroyed by the Tholians.

### **Comments:**

Continuity Coto writes his masterpiece. This episode is a sequel to TOS: The Tholian Web. In that episode, the USS Defiant disappeared, never to be seen again. Now we know where it went... the mirror universe, during the Enterprise era! Aside from this marvelous detail, there are numerous others to redeem it. First of all, a common complaint about DS9 was that it consistently abused the mirror universe. This episode presents the mirror universe exactly faithful to how TOS does, finally. All things from Cochrane firing on the Vulcans during first contact, to the personalities of the characters aboard the ISS Enterprise, to the command structure about the ISS Enterprise were spot on. Additionally, bringing in TOS technology from the regular universe in the form of a sequel to TOS: The Tholian Web was just brilliant. We know that the Terran Empire conquered much of the alpha quadrant by the time of TOS: Mirror, Mirror. We also know humans started off inferior to most of the species they conquered. If Archer successfully captures this TOS vessel of the future, it can explain how humanity became so powerful! Another nice touch was being able to see an actual Tholian. We got a crude drawing of one in TOS, but we never actually got to see any. The Tholian presented in this episode is perfectly faithful to the TOS drawing, whilst expanding on it creatively. Another wonderful detail is the use of the Tholian Web itself. When the Tholians deployed their web on Kirk's Enterprise, it took hours to complete. In this episode it takes mere seconds. You might first assume this is a technical problem, but if you notice in this episode, the Tholians have an entire fleet deploying the web. We can infer that the more ships working on the web, the faster it gets deployed. Finally, the opening credits of this episode are a great touch as well. Long have fans complained about the opening theme, claiming it'd be better as an orchestral version. The opening theme presented in this episode is kind of making fun of all the fan criticism, whilst being totally appropriate at the same time! Coto has really outdone himself here. This episode is absolutely hilarious, the writing is wonderfully careful, the special effects are marvelous, and the acting is superb. Bravo!

---





**Star Trek Ent - 4x19 - In a Mirror, Darkly, Part II**  
Originally Aired: 2005-4-29

**My Rating**  
- 10

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*In the mirror universe, Archer commandeers the 23rd-century Defiant from the Tholians and uses it in a nefarious power grab.*

**Problems:**

None

**Factoids:**

- This episode is a candidate for my "Best Episode of Enterprise Award".
- Hoshi Sato created a "linguacode translation matrix" in her late 30s.
- Archer's mother's name is Sally Archer.
- Archer's name is among the most recognised in the Federation. Historians called him the greatest explorer of the 22nd century and two planets were named after him.
- Archer retires as an admiral and commander in chief of Starfleet and goes on to become the President of the Federation at some point!

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Archer and crew stealing the Defiant.
- Archer sporting a TOS style captain's uniform.
- Archer and Hoshi discussing the Federation and their alter egos' personal biographies.
- Archer defeating the Gorn.
- Phlox regarding Earth's literature: "I skimmed a few of the more celebrated narratives. The stories were similar in some respects but their characters were weak and compassionate. With the exception of Shakespeare, of course. From what I could tell his plays were equally grim in both universes."
- The Defiant crushing a rebellion.
- Archer executing Admiral Black.
- T'Pol and Soval persuading Phlox to join their rebellion.
- T'Pol to Hoshi: "I'm surprised you're not exhausted from all the beds you've jumped into recently!"
- The Avenger battling the Defiant.
- The Defiant destroying the Avenger.
- Hoshi poisoning Archer.
- Hoshi: "You're speaking with Empress Sato. Prepare to receive instructions."

**Comments:**

Part II is every bit as good as part I. In this episode, we get to see the Defiant strut its stuff with Archer loving every minute of it. He obviously has issues with anger and paranoia, as well self doubt which manifests itself as regular-universe Archer constantly taunting him, which was a nice touch. All the characters act as you would expect them to, with the aliens forming a rebellion on the Avenger, only to be destroyed, and Archer getting rid of anyone he even remotely sees as a threat. A possible deficiency is the Gorn stuff. We got a nice mention of the Gorn in Ent: Bound, but fans have been asking to actually see another Gorn for a while now. The usage was appropriate here, but in some ways it felt more like filler. I felt that the whole Gorn sequence was obtrusive and that it should have either been elaborated more or not done at all. The CGI Gorn was extremely well done though. The updated Gorn reminded me a lot of the Skaarans from Farscape. Now, I might have struck a point for the Gorn sequence if it had really wasted time, but it didn't. The episode's pace was sufficient that the ending was still amazing. Empress Hoshi Sato schemes her way to the top! I didn't see that one coming at all, and I wholeheartedly enjoyed it. She reminded me of Persis from the Augments arc. She did the very same thing, but eventually she stood up for what was right and died because of it... not Hoshi! Immoral and corrupt all the way, and it allows her to rise to the top! How viciously nasty! It should be noted that the fan reaction to this two parter has been mixed. Yes, these two episodes waste a great deal of time that could be otherwise spent on more relevant episodes; none of the events of these two episodes actually even take place in the real universe! Yes, I too found it somewhat annoying that Enterprise is squandered what little time it had left. But Ent: In a Mirror, Darkly was just so well written and so entertaining that I simply couldn't strike points from it due to timing and circumstance. The episode probably would have made more sense in season 1 or 2, but better late than never.

---



**Star Trek Ent - 4x20 - Demons**  
Originally Aired: 2005-5-6

**My Rating**  
- 5

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A xenophobic faction of humanity threatens to undermine talks to form a new coalition of planets.*

**Problems:**

- Why were Trip and T'Pol selected for this undercover mission? Isn't this kind of personal involvement exactly the reason why you wouldn't select them?

**Factoids:**

- We get extra information about Colonel Green, who was first featured in TOS: The Savage Curtain. In that episode, he was said to be known for attacking his enemies whilst negotiating with them. In this episode we find that he exterminated millions of people suffering from radiation sickness after World War III to prevent future generations from inheriting deformities.

**Remarkable Scenes:**

- Samuels: "With this Coalition of Planets we seek to strengthen our bonds of friendship, render permanent the peace that now exists among us for the ongoing exploration of our galaxy. Let us dedicate ourselves to these worthy goals so that future generations can look back upon this moment with pride and eternal gratitude."
- Samuels regarding the universal translator: "They are extremely precise. Though when I'm listening to the Tellarite Ambassador I wish they were a little less precise."
- The revelation that the child was somehow T'Pol's and Trip's.
- Reed contacting Section 31.
- Paxton and Greaves watching an historic Colonel Green speech.
- Trip meeting with Greaves, then attending the Terra Prime meeting.
- Trip and T'Pol being captured.
- The moon mining facility taking off.
- The lunar colony going to warp, arriving at Mars, and landing on it.
- Paxton firing on the Moon.

**Comments:**

This episode is nothing special, but not bad at the same time. It picks up on the xenophobia that humanity faces which first flared up in Ent: Home. I'm glad they're going somewhere with this, but I was hoping it wouldn't be taken in the direction of a KKK of the future. Unfortunately, this is exactly what Paxton represents. His racism is blatantly impractical and he's clearly a madman, just like the Colonel Green from 100 years before he admires so much, or Hitler from 200 years before. Only the minor details of this episode redeem it. For one, it's interesting to get a chance to see the Luna colony. I also enjoyed the special effects with the colony lifting off and traveling to Mars. Good stuff there. The most appealing aspect of this episode was the seeming preliminary talks regarding the formation of the Federation. Otherwise, the motives and intent of the antagonist remain unclear, and it's hard to give the episode much more than an average rating. On a side note, Travis gets lots of lines! It's a shame the small part of the story he was conceded was so full of cliché though...



**Star Trek Ent - 4x21 - Terra Prime**  
Originally Aired: 2005-5-13

**My Rating**  
- 8

**Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:**

*A human isolationist leader threatens to destroy Starfleet Command unless all aliens leave Earth immediately.*

**Problems:**

- Why didn't Archer just shoot Paxton instead of letting him make his speech to buy time while the window got ready to explode?

**Factoids:**

- This is the 32nd planet Reed has set foot on.
- This is the 248th planet Phlox has set foot on.
- The guy who played Masaro wasn't an actor. He won the role in a contest.

### Remarkable Scenes:

- Trip: "Do you really think I'm going to help you turn that array into a weapon?" Paxton: "Do you really think I'm going to give you choice?"
- Enterprise hitching a ride to Mars using a comet.
- Archer putting Hoshi in command!
- Archer, Reed, Phlox, and Travis taking a shuttlepod down to Mars.
- The sight of the Carl Sagan Memorial Station and the first Mars Rover. Aww, how cute. :)
- T'Pol: "Tagart syndrome. Since you obviously didn't die by age twenty, you're receiving treatment. Rigelian gene therapy?" Paxton: "You're not a doctor." T'Pol: "They very thing you're warning humans to avoid is what's keeping you alive. Alien knowledge, freely shared. You're not only a terrorist, you're a hypocrite." Paxton: "This is not the time for timidity and second guessing. We cannot afford to doubt ourselves." T'Pol: "Colonel Green also said to be human is to be pure. Under his rule you would have been euthanized for having a genetic disorder. I'm not the first significant leader who failed to measure up to his own ideals."
- T'Pol revealing that she had named her dying baby Elizabeth, after Trip's sister.
- Masaro killing himself in front of Archer.
- Phlox' speech about how Enterprise has become his family and how he desperately wishes for Archer to make something good come from this.
- Archer: "Up until about a hundred years ago, there was one question that burned in every human, that made us study the stars and dream of travelling to them. Are we alone? Our generation is privileged to know the answer to that question. We are all explorers, driven to know what's over the horizon, what's beyond our own shores. And yet, the more I've experienced, the more I've learned that no matter how far we travel, or how fast we get there, the most profound discoveries are not necessarily beyond that next star. They're within us, woven into the threads that bind us, all of us, to each other. A final frontier begins in this hall. Let's explore it together."

### Comments:

The sequel to Ent: Demons impressed me. Coto didn't do such a good job setting up the premise of Ent: Demons to be very interesting, but where he went with it in Ent: Terra Prime was downright moving and would have made a fitting end to the series. Many fans actually consider this episode to be the end of Enterprise because they hate the next one so much, they refuse to believe it's canon. But discussions about the next episode should be held off until my next review. The story shows the almost tragic downfall of Paxton, who's true nature is revealed. He's another Hitler who never had a chance to do any real damage, except of course, to Trip and T'Pol. With regards to them, their relationship has finally shown real progress, something that is much appreciated. I loved how even Phlox broke down when the baby died. The emotion in this episode was well played and totally appropriate. Giving Hoshi command of Enterprise while Archer led the rescue team was also a nice touch. Imagine the frightened little girl that she was in Ent: Fight or Flight taking this kind of responsibility. The scenes on Mars were visually spectacular and the comet ride getting there was even moreso. While in reality this episode isn't much more than your average action episode, the emotional scenes at the end depicting how the alien crew has all become one family is what made me like the episode so much. It's Star Trek at its best.



### Star Trek Ent - 4x22 - These Are the Voyages...

Originally Aired: 2005-5-13

My  
Rating -  
0

### Official Synopsis From StarTrek.com:

*Six years in the future, an emotional Captain Archer and the crew return to Earth to face the decommission of Enterprise and signing of the Federation charter.*

### Problems:

- There are two Rikers in the opening scene just after the teaser due to oversights in the stock footage.

### Factoids:

- This episode is the winner of my "Worst Episode of Enterprise Award" and is therefore a candidate for my "Worst Episode Ever Award".
- The TNG stuff in this episode is a connection, or rather an expansion, to TNG: The Pegasus.
- Jhamel, from Ent: The Aenar, and Shran had a child 5 years prior to this episode.
- It's something of a sick joke that we never once get to see Chef on Enterprise, and now that we finally do, it's Commander Riker playing his part. :)
- Much of the crew of the Pegasus on the screen Riker read were people involved in the production of Star Trek.

- The NX-01 was made into a museum ship after it was decommissioned.
- Trip never graduated from college.
- The admiral behind Reed during the signing ceremony is Manny Coto.
- Enterprise is the only Star Trek series which never added or removed a main character throughout its entire run.
- Thanks to this episode, Commander Riker has appeared in all the Star Trek series at least once, except for TOS and TAS.

#### **Remarkable Scenes:**

- The CG Enterprise-D. Wow!
- Troi: "How could Archer survive without a fish tank?"
- Trip: "Been a hell of a run, Malcolm. I never thought it would come to an end." Reed: "All good things..."
- Talla: "Thanks, pinkskin."
- CG Enterprise entering CG asteroid field.
- The (pure voice) Data cameo.
- Phlox discussing with Riker-Chef the time during Ent: The Forgotten when he had to haggle with Trip regarding the hours of sleep he was being forced to "endure."
- Archer: "Here's to the next generation."
- Trip just before he sacrificed himself to save Archer and the ship: "There's just one other thing I need to tell you. You can all go straight to hell."
- Phlox doing another super smile.
- With images of the 3 Enterprises... Picard: "Space, the final frontier. These are the voyages of the starship Enterprise. It's continuing mission--" Kirk: "To explore strange new worlds. To seek out new life and new civilizations." Archer: "To boldly go where no man has gone before."

#### **Comments:**

In interviews before this episode was aired, Rick Berman said, "One of the reasons we did it is we wanted to say kind of a 'thank you' to people who watched not only Enterprise but some of the other shows." Brannon Braga was also interviewed about the episode and referred to it as a "valentine to all of Star Trek." I think it's very clear Berman and Braga have lost their perspective. Over the years, they've taken Voyager, and later Enterprise in directions they shouldn't have gone and ignored fan criticism. This episode went so far, that even Jolene Blalock referred to the episode as "appalling" before it aired; I couldn't agree more. Here, I will create a list of reasons why Ent: These Are the Voyages... is a failure as a finale to Star Trek Enterprise. First of all, this episode spends about one third of its time focusing directly on Riker and/or Troi. Their cameo was easily bad enough; Enterprise should have been given a chance to finish on its own two feet. The cameos were bad enough, but focusing that much time on them was pushing it beyond the tolerance limit. It's an insult to the actors and characters of Star Trek Enterprise. As if they aren't enough to end their own series. As if that weren't bad enough, the whole justification for the TNG cameo was shoddy. TNG: The Pegasus wasn't the most spectacular episode ever written, but it was solid, and didn't need a coda. Aside from that, even the Enterprise-specific writing was annoying. Take Trip and T'Pol's relationship for example. In Ent: Terra Prime, there was hinting that their relationship would finally go somewhere. But here we are 6 years later. Did it? Nope! Sorry! And if that weren't bad enough, proverbially they kick a man when he's down by abruptly killing Trip for absolutely no reason. Yes, we get it, Trip sacrificed himself to save Archer. Yes, we get it, when you have this kind of friendship with somebody you'll do anything for them. Yes, we get it, Riker has this kind of friendship with Picard and by watching this he realized that he shouldn't have kept secrets from Picard. Yes, we get it! But you don't have to insult the entire series of Enterprise by driving this point home! And then, yes, brace yourself, it gets even worse! After Trip's meaningless death, Riker rewinds the program back to the point when Trip consulted Chef to \*further\* make obvious this whole friendship thing. Good lord. There's beating a dead horse, but what they did here was more like putting a firing squad to the dead horse, chopping it up limb by limb, and shooting it into the sun in a rocket! And just when you think it couldn't get worse, there's yet more in store. Riker skips the speech Archer makes during the Federation charter signing ceremony. Now, I don't know about you, but I found the whole idea of Enterprise being decommissioned and the Federation being founded a lot more interesting than Riker's edutainment. Troi even says Federation citizens must memorize the speech. But it's not important enough for us to hear it here? And finally, yes, it gets even worse. The final space the final frontier line... why exclude Sisko and Janeway? Because their ships weren't named Enterprise? Why not just let Archer do the line himself? The line tried to be touching, but came off as just as offensive as the rest of the episode. And there you have it... the worst finale a Star Trek series has ever had. Now, don't get me wrong. The basic idea of the episode wasn't too bad. I think the idea of bringing the TNG crew into a holographic NX-01 was a pretty damn good idea. It would have made a really great stand alone episode, perhaps even set

on Riker's new ship the Titan! But not as the finale... and not set in the middle of an existing TNG episode; do I even have to bring up the fact that Riker and Troi looked nothing like their younger selves? If Berman and Braga really wanted to make a pleasing finale, they'd have not included cameos from other series, they'd have not killed off Trip, and they'd have shown us Archer's speech and the founding of the Federation as the final scene. And I dare say, my biggest disappointment with Enterprise's cancellation and rushed finale is that we never, ever got sufficient prequel information regarding the Earth-Romulan wars and the start of the war with the Klingons. Enterprise was a great series with a great deal of potential (especially after Manny Coto started doing the writing) that was killed off prematurely. And the sad thing is, thanks to this episode, it'll never be revived and ended properly like TOS was. So, in conclusion, this episode gets a de facto zero. There's no reason not to consider it canon, but I find the episode too offensive to give it any points.

---